



3 1761 07473541 6

First Edition

f 3.3.-

C



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
University of Toronto





RT  
THE  
**GREAT EXEMPLAR**  
OF  
S A N C T I T Y and H O L Y L I F E  
according to the Christian Institution.

DE S C R I B E D

In the History of the **LIFE and DEATH**  
of the ever Blessed  
**JESUS CHRIST the SAVIOUR of the World.**

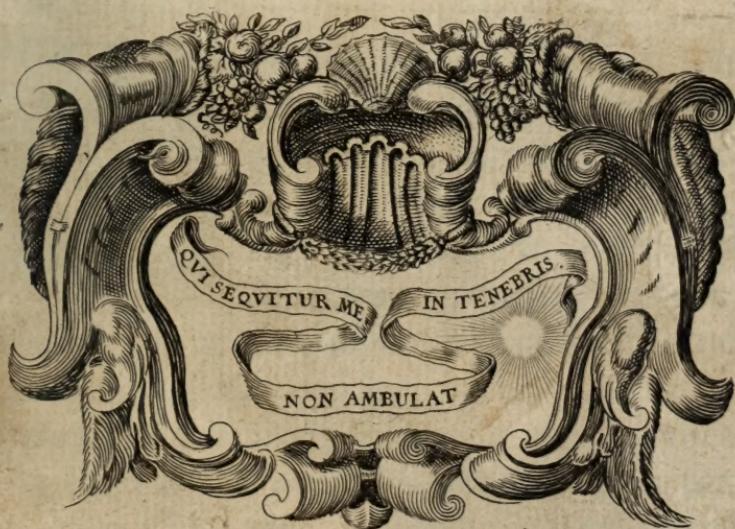
W I T H

CONSIDERATIONS and DISCOURSES  
upon the several Parts of the Story, and Prayers  
fitted to the several Mysteries.

*IN THREE PARTS.*

By *Jer. Taylor*, D. D. Chaplain in Ordinary to his MAJESTY.

541028  
19 6.52



L O N D O N,

Printed by *R. N.* for *Francis Aſh*, and are to be sold at the three Pigeons in  
*S. Pauls Church-yard.* 1649.

INT  
GREAT EMPEROR  
OF  
THE CHINESE PEOPLE  
AND  
THEIR  
CONSTITUTIONS AND DISCOURSES  
WITH  
THEIR  
INSTITUTIONS  
AND  
THEIR  
MANNERS  
IN  
CHINA  
BY  
JOHN HODGE  
LONDON  
1790

RECORDED  
IN  
1790

1790



TO THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE  
and most truly Noble Lord,  
**CHRISTOPHER**  
LORD HATTON.

Baron HATTON of *Kirby*, &c.

My L O R D,

**W**HEN interest divides the Church, and the calentures of men breathe out in problemes and unactive discourses, each part in pursuance of its owne portion followes that proposition which complies with, and bends in all the flexures of its temporall ends; and while all strive for truth, they hug their owne opinions dressed up in her imagery, and they dispute for ever, and either the question is indeterminable, or

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

which is worse, men will never be convinced. For such is the nature of disputings, that they begin commonly in mistakes, they proceed with zeale and fancy, and end not at all, but in schismes and uncharitable Names, and too often dip their feet in blood; In the meane time, he that gets the better of his adversary, oftentimes gets no good to himselfe, because although he hath fast hold upon the right side of the probleme, he may be an ill man in the midst of his triumphant disputationes. And therefore it was not here that GOD, would have mans felicity to grow: For our condition had been extremely miserable, if our finall state had been placed upon an uncertain hill, and the way to it, had been upon the waters, upon which no spirit but that of contradiction and discord did ever move; for the man should have tended to an end of an uncertainte dwelling, and walked to it by wayes not discernable, and arrived thither by chance, which because it is irregular, would have discomposed the pleasures of a Christian hope, as the very disputing hath already destroyed charity, and disunited the continuity of Faith, and in the consequent there would be no  
virtue,

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

verte, and no felicity. But GOD who never loved, that man should be too ambitiously busiy in imitating his wisdome (and Man lost Paradise for it) is most desirous we should imitate his goodnesse and transcribe copyes of those excellent Emanations from his Holinesse, whereby as he communicates himselfe to us in mercyes, so he propounds himselfe imitable by us in graces. And in order to this, GOD hath described our way plaine, certaine, and determined; and although he was pleased to leave us indetermined in the Questions of exteriour communion, yet he put it past all question, that we are bound to be charitable. He hath placed the question of *the State of separation* in the darke, in hidden and undiscerned regions; but he hath opened the windowes of heaven and given great light to us, teaching how we are to demeane our selves in *the state of conjunction*. Concerning the salvation of *Heathens* he was not pleased to give us account, but he hath clearely described the duty of *Christians*, and tells upon what termes alone *wee* shall be saved; And although the not inquiring into the wayes of GOD

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

and the strict rules of practise hath been instrumentall to the preserving them free from the serpentine enfoldings and labyrinths of dispute; yet God also with a great designe of mercy hath writ his Commandements in so large characters, and engraved them in such tables, that no man can want the records, nor yet skill to reade the handwriting upon this wall, if he understands, what he understands, that is, what is placed in his own spirit. For God was therefore desirous that humane nature should be perfected with morall, not intellectuall excellencies, because these onely are of use and complyance with our present state and conjunction. If God had given to Eagles an appetite to swim, or to the Elephant strong desires to fly, he would have ordered that an abode in the sea and the aire respectively should have been proportionable to their manner of living; for so God hath done to man, fitting him with such excellencies which are *usefull* to him in his wayes and progresse to perfection. A man hath great *use* and need of justice; and all the instances of morality serve his naturall and politicall ends, he cannot live without

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

without them, and be happy; but the filling the roomes of the understanding with aery and ineffective notions is just such an excellency , as it is in a man to imitate the voice of birds ; at his very best, the Nightingale shall excell him , and it is of no use to that end, which G o D designed him in the first intentions of creation.

In pursuance of this consideration I have chosen to serve the purposes of religion by doing assistance to that part of Theology which is wholly practicall, that which makes us wiser, therefore, because it makes us better. And truely (My Lord) it is enough to weary the spirit of a Disputer, that he shall argue till he hath lost his voice , and his time, and sometimes the question too, and yet no man shall be of his minde more then was before. How few turne Lutherans, or Calvinists , or Roman Catholikes from the religion either of their Country or interest? Possibly two or three weake or interested, phantastick and easy , prejudicate and effeminate understandings passe from Church to Church upon grounds as weake as those for which formerly they did dissent , and the same arguments are good or bad as ex-

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

terior accidents , or interior appetites shall determine. I deny not, but for great causes some opinions are to be quitted ; but when I consider how few doe forsake any , and when any doe , often-times they choose the wrong side , and they that take the righter , doe it so by contingency , and the advantage also is so little , I believe that the triumphant persons have but small reason to please themselves in gaining proselytes , since their purchase is so small , and as inconsiderable to their triumph , as it is unprofitable to them who change for the worse , or for the better upon unworthy motives. In all this there is nothing certain , nothing noble. But hee that followes the worke of G O D , that is , labours to gaine soules , not to a Sect , and a subdivision , but to the Christian Religion , that is , to the Faith and obedience of the L O R D J E S U S , hath a promise to be assisted , and rewarded ; and all those that goe to *Heaven* , are the purchase of such undertakings , the fruit of such culture and labours ; for it is onely a holy life that lands us there.

And

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

And now (My Lord) I have told you my reasons, I shall not be ashamed to say that I am weary and toyled with rowing up and downe in the seas of questions, which the interests of Christendome have commenced; and in many propositions of which I am heartily perswaded, *I am not certaine* that I am not deceived; and I find that men are most confident of those articles which they can so little prove, that they never made questions of them; But *I am most certaine* that by living in the Religion and feare of God, in obedience to the King, in the charities and duties of communion with my *Spirituall Guides*, in justice and love with all the world in their severall proportions, I shall not faile of that end which is perfective of Humane nature, and which will never be obtained by disputing.

Here therefore when I had fixed my thoughts, upon sad apprehensions that God was removing our Candlestick (for why should he not, when men themselves put the light out, and pull the stars from their orbs, so hastening the day of Gods judgement) I was desirous to put a portion of the holy fire

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

fire into a repository, which might help to reenkindle the *Incense*, when it shall please God Religion shall return, and all his servants shall sing [*In convertendo captivitatem Sion*] with a voyce of Eucharist.

But now (my Lord) although the results and issues of my retirements and study, doe naturally run towards you, and carry no excuse for their forwardnesse, but the confidence that your goodnesse rejects no emanation of a great affection, yet in this ad-dresse I am apt to promise to my self a faire interpretation, because I bring you an instrument, and auxiliaries to that devotion, whereby we beleeve you are deare to God, and know, that you are, to good men. And if these little sparkes of holy fire which I have heaped together doe not give life to your prepared and already enkindled spirit, yet they will sometimes help to entertaine a thought, to actuate a passion, to employ and hallow a fancy, and put the body of your piety into fermentation, by presenting you with the circumstances and parts of such meditations, which are symbolicall to those of your daily office, and which are the *passe-temps* of your severest houres. My Lord,

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

Lord, I am not so vaine, to thinke that in the matter of devotion, and the rules of justice and religion (which is the buisinesse of your life) I can adde any thing to your heape of excellent things; but I have knowne and felt comfort by reading, or hearing from other persons, what I knew my selfe; and it was unactive upon my spirit, till it was made vigorous and effectiue from without; and in this sense, I thought I might not be uselesse and impertinent.

My Lord, I designed to be instrumentall to the salvation of all persons that shall reade my booke; but unlesse (because soules are equall in their substance and equally redeemeed) we are obliged to wish the salvation of all men, with the greatest, that is, with equall desires, I did intend in the highest manner I could to expresse how much I am to pay to you, by doing the offices of that duty, which although you lesse neede, yet I was most bound to pay, even the duties and charities of religion; having this designe, that when posterity (for certainly they will learne to distinguish things and persons) shall see your honoured Name employed to separate and rescue these papers from contempt

*The Epistle Dedicatory.*

they may with the more confidence expect  
in them something fit to be offered to such  
a Personage. My Lord, I have my end if I  
serve GOD, and you, and the needs and in-  
terest of soules ; but shall think my returne  
full of reward, if you shall give me pardon,  
and put me into your Letanies, and account  
me in the number of your relatives and ser-  
vants ; for indeed , My Lord , I am most  
heartily

*Your Lordships most affectionate  
and most*

*Obliged Servant,*

**TAYLOR.**



## THE PREFACE.

**C**hristian Religion hath so many exterior advantages — *Fatis ac-*  
ges to its reputation and advancement, from the Author, and from the Ministers; from the fountain of its Origination, and the channels of conveyance; (*GOD* being the Author, the *word incarnate* being the great Doctor and Preacher of it, his life and death being its confignation, the holy Spirit being the great argument and demonstration of it, and the Apostles the organs and conduits of its dissemination) that it were glorious beyond all opposition and disparagement, though we should not consider the excellency of its matter, and the certainty of its probation, and the efficacy of its power, and the perfection and rare accomplishment of its designe. But I consider that Christianity is therefore very little understood, because it is reproached upon that pretence, which its *very being* and *designe* does infinitely confute. It is esteemed to be a Religion contrary in its principles, or in its precepts to that *wisdom*, \* whereby the world is governed, and Common-wealths increase, and greatness is acquired, and Kings goe to warre, and our ends of interest are served, and promoted, and that it is an institution so wholly in order to *another* world, that it does not at all communicate with *this*, neither in its end, nor in its discourses, neither in the policy nor in the philosophy: and therefore as the doctrine of the *Crosse* was entertained at first in *scone* by the Greeks, in *offence* and *indignation* by the Jewes; so is the whole sytene and collective body of Christian Philosophy esteemed imprudent by the politicks of the world, and flat and irrationall by some men of excellent wit and sublime discourse; who because the permissions and dictates of naturall, true, and essentiall reason are at no hand to be contradicted by any superinduced Discipline, think, that whatsoever seems contrary to their *reason* is also violent to our *nature*, and offers indeed a good to us, but by wayes unnaturall and unreasonalbe. And I think they are very great strangers to the present affaires and persuasions of the world, who know not, that Christianity is very much under-

cede, Deisque,  
Et cole felices,  
miseros fuge,  
sidera terra  
*Ut distant, &*  
*flamma mari sic*  
*utile recto.*

*Sceptrorum vis*  
*tota perit, si*  
*pendere justa*

*Incipit: ever-*  
*titique arcis re-*  
*spexit honesti.*

*Libertas scele-*  
*rum est, qua*  
*regna invisa*  
*tuerit,*

*Sublatusque*  
*modus gladii:*

*facere omnia*  
*saepe*

*Non impune li-*  
*cet nisi dum fa-*  
*cis, exeat aula*

*Qui volet esse*  
*pius, virtus &*  
*summa potestas*

*Non coēunt:*

*Semper metuet*  
*quem sava pu-*  
*debunt. Lucan.*

## THE PREFACE.

valued upon this principle, men insensibly becoming unchristian, because they are perswaded, that much of the greatnesse of the world is contradicted by the Religion. But certainly no mistake can be greater. For the holy JESUS by his doctrine did instruct the understandings of men, made their appetites more obedient, their reason better principled, and argumentative with lesse deception, their wills apter for noble choyces, their governments more prudent, their present felicities greater, their hopes more excellent, and that duration which was intended to them by their Creator he made manifest to be a state of glory ; and all this was to bee done and obtained respectively, by the *ways of reason and nature*, such as GOD gave to man, then, when at first he designed him to a noble, and an immortall condition; the Christian Law being for the substance of it, nothing but the restitution and perfection of the Law of Nature. And this I shall represent in all the parts of its naturall progression, and I intend it not onely as a Preface to the following books, but for an *introduction* and *invitation* to the whole Religion.

<sup>2</sup>  
*Ratio Dei De-*  
*us est humanis*  
*rebus consulens,*  
*qua causa est*  
*hominibus bene*  
*beataque vi-*  
*vendi, si non*  
*concessum sibi*  
*minus a sum-*  
*mo Deo negli-*  
*gant. Chalced.*  
*ad Time. 16.*

For GOD, when he made the first emanations of his eternall being, and created man as the *end* of all his productions here below, designed him to an end such as himselfe was pleased to choose for us, and gave him abilities proportionable to attaine that end. GOD gave a man a reasonable and an intelligent nature. And to this noble nature he designed as noble an end ; *an end of happinesse* certainly. For since GOD gave him proper and peculiar appetites with proportion to their owne objects, and gave him reason and abilities, not only to perceive the sapidnesse and relish of those objects, but also to make reflex acts upon such perceptions, and to perceive that they did perceive, which was a rare instrument of pleasure and paine respectively, it is but reasonable to think, that GOD, who created him in mercy, did not onely proportion a being to his nature, but also a *perfect* being proper to its capacities. For if this being should be a state of affliction, that is, of objects disproportionate to his naturall appetites, it would have beeene the greatest unmercifulnesse in the World ; disproportionate objects being meere instances of affliction, and those unsatisfied appetites nothing else but instruments of torment.

<sup>3.</sup>  
The end therefore of man, that which is perfective of his being, and the completion of all his orderly desires, is that which we call, *a happy life*, or *happy being*, [*a being*] according to the intention of nature, [*and a happinesse*] according to his appetites. Now concerning *his being* I consider, that it was in nature and in GODS prime intention designed to be *for ever*. Here or otherwhere is not materiall to the consideration, whether in earth, or in heaven, in Paradise or out of it. For whensoever GOD should alter the manner, and the circumstances of the abode, yet if man did remaine happy, there was no deficiency from the end of his first intention; but *for ever* he ought to live, by the design of GOD. For man was created with an immortall spirit. It matters not, whether he knew it then or no. For birds, and beasts, and bees are directed and infallibly carried to that end, to which they are fitted with organs and intermediall appetites, and do all things towards it but understand it. And it matters not, whether we can now, or ever could prove it by an infallible demonstration, or come to know it by a meere naturall instrument. For it is now revealed to us by JESUS CHRIST, that the soul cannot be killed ; and in all ages men did

# THE PREFACE.

did heartily believe it, and had appetites either produced by that opinion, or by the thing it self proper for an immortall creature. But in the thing it selfe it is true (however we come to know it) that GOD breathed into man a living, and an incorruptible never dying spirit.

Now upon supposition of this proposition, which was always true, and is long since by revelation (if not by philosophy) made evident, we shall finde, that whatsoever instruments GOD fitted in order to mans last end, that is, of *living happily* according to the duration of an immortall creature, must also be sufficient towards the *life of immortality*; or else it was insufficient in the nature of the thing. There is no peradventure but that GOD did furnish his nature with abilities to arrive to the end of his nature, just as all other creatures had sufficient instruments, appetites and powers to arrive to that end, which God designed to them in their creations. And if it had been otherwise, Man had been a creature imperfect, and therefore not good: for all such imperfection, which is a deficiency from the naturall end, is monstrofity, and an evill naturally and physically, and contrary to the saying of *Moses* [and GOD saw all, that he had made, and behold it was very good.]

Only this, because all the changes and varieties of state were not revealed to man, he had only explicite appetites to what he saw before him, that is, towards a happy life indefinitely, and (because he knew of nothing else) of living well in this world, and as long as he could, that is, as much as he could obtaine, for ever. And when GOD gave him appetites in order to *live well and happily*, when ever GOD should take him from this state, which he onely knew and was in possession of, it is certain, that the same instruments, which served the regular ends of nature here, would also serve it for ever, because man had no other way of obtaining it. And therefore GOD, who in mercy designed him to an eternall being, and yet tooke him from this, to the securing of which man did the worke of nature and Gods intention, it must follow that God will either give it him, as a gift or as reward, or as a naturall consequent of living according to Gods intention, all which will be alike in the thing and make a difference in Logicke, but nothing in the substance of affaires.

That this intendment of GOD and nature should be effected, that is, that man should become happy, it is naturally necessary, that all his regular appetites should have an object appointed them, in the fruition of which felicity must consist. Because nothing is felicity, but when, what was reasonably or orderly desired is possessed: for the having what is not desired, or the wanting of what we desired, or the desiring what we should not, are the severall constituent parts of infelicity; and it can have no other constitution.

Now the first appetite man had in order to his great end was to be as perfect as he could, \* that is, to be as like the best thing he knew, as his nature and condition would permitt; and although by Adams phansy and affection to his wife, and by GODS appointing fruit for him, we see the lower appetites were first provided for; yet the first appetite which man had, as he distinguishes from lower creatures, was to be like God; (for by that the Devill tempted him) and in order to that he had naturally sufficient instruments and abilities. For although by being abus'd with the Devils sophistry he chose an incompetent instrument, yet because it is naturally certain, that love is the greatest assimilation of the object and the faculty, Adam by loving God might very well approach neerer him

4.

5.

6.

7.

\* E, τις φύσις  
δεῖ το βίοντας,  
ιανδράς πατέρας  
κόρης καὶ πόνες  
τῶν οἰκείων  
το βίοντας. Αριζ  
2. de cato.

## THE PREFACE.

according as he could. And it was naturall to *Adam* to love GOD, who was his Father, his Creator, the fountaine of all good to him, and of excellency in himselfe, and whatsoever is understood to be such, it is as naturall for us to love, and we do it for the same reasons, for which we love any thing else, and we cannot love for any other reason, but for one or both these in their proportion apprehended.

8. But because GOD is not onely excellent and good, but by being *supreme* Lord hath power to give us what lawes he please, obedience to his lawes therefore becomes naturally, but consequently necessary, when GOD decrees them, because he does make himselfe an enemy to all rebells and disobedient sons by affixing penalties to the transgressors : and therefore disobedience is naturally inconsistent, not onely with love to our selves, because it brings afflictions upon us, but with love to our supreme law-giver ; it is contrary to the naturall love we beare to GOD so understood, because it makes him our enemy, whom naturally and reasonably we cannot but love, and therefore also opposite to the first appetite of man, which is to be like GOD, in order to which we have naturally no instrument but love, and the consequents of love.

And this is not at all to be contradicted by a pretence that a man does not naturally know, there is a GOD. Because by the same instrument, by which we know, that the world began, or that there was a first man, by the same we know, that there is a GOD, and that he also knew it too, and conversed with that GOD, and received lawes from him. For if we discourse of man and the law of nature, and the first appetites, and the first reasons abstractedly, and in their own complexions, and without all their relations and provisions, we discourse jejunely, and falsly, and unprofitably. For as man did not come by chance, nor by himself, but from the universall cause, so we know, that this universall cause did doe all that was necessary for him in order to the end he appoynited him. And therefore to

begin the history of a mans reason, and the philosophy of his nature, it is not necessary for us to place him there, where without the consideration of a GOD, or society, or law, or order he is to be placed, that is, in the state of a thing rather than a person; but G O D by revelations and Scriptures having helped us with propositions and parts of story relating mans first and real condition, from thence we can take the surest account, and make the most perfect derivation of propositions.

From this first appetite of man to be like GOD, and the first naturall instrument of it, *love*, descend all the first obligations of religion. In which there are some parts more immediately and *naturally expressive*, others by superinduction and positive command. *Naturall religion* I call such actions, which either are proper to the nature of the thing we worship (such as are giving praises to him, and speaking excellent things of him, and praying to him for such things as we neede, and a readinesse to obey him in whatsoever he commands) or else such as are expressions proportionate to our natures that make them : that is, giving to G O D the best things we have , and by which we can declare our esteeme of his honour and excellency : assigning some portion of our time, of our estate, the labours of our persons, the increase of our store, first fruits, sacrifices, oblations, and tithes, which therefore G O D regards, because he hath allowed to our natures no other instruments of doing him honour , but by giving to him in some manner

# THE PREFACE.

manner, which we believe honourable and apt, the best thing we have.

The next appetite a man hath, is to beget one like himselfe, G O D having implanted that appetite into man for the propagation of mankind, and given it as his first blessing and permission. *It is not good for man to be alone, and, Increase and multiply.* And Artemidorus had something of this doctrine, when he reckons these two lawes of nature, *Deum colere, mulieribus vinci.* Toworship G O D, and to be overcome by women, in proportion to his two first appetites of nature, *to be like G O D, and to have another like himselfe.* This appetite G O D onely made regular by his first provisions of satisfaction. He gave to man a woman for a wife, for the companion of his sorowes, for the instrument of multiplication, and yet provided him but of one, and intimated he should have no more, which we doe not onely know by an after revelation, the holy J E S U S having declared it to have been G O D S purpose, but Adam himselfe understood it, as appears by his first discourses at the entertainment of his new bride. And although there were permissions afterward of Polygamy, Gen. 2. 4. yet there was a greater pretence of necessity at first, because of enlarging and multiplying fountaines rather then channels, and three or four at first would have enlarged mankind by greater proportion then many more afterwards; little distances neare the centre make greater and larger figures, then when they part neare the fringes of the circle, and therefore those after permissions were to avoid a greater evill, not a hallowing of the license, but a reproach of their infirmity. And certainly the multiplicatiōn of wives is contrariant to that designe of love and endeerement, which G O D intended at first between man and wife.

— Connubia mille :

*Non illis generis nexus, non pignora cura,  
Sed numero languet pietas —*

And amongst them, that have many wives, the relation and necessitude is trifling and loose, and they are all equally contemptible, because the minde entertains no loves or union, where the object is multiplied, and the act unfixed and distractēd. So that this having a great commodity in order to mans great end, that is, of living well and happily seemes to be intended by G O D in the nature of things and instruments naturall and reasonable towards mans end; and therefore to be a law, if not naturall, yet at least positive and superinduced at first, in order to mans proper end. However, by the provision which G O D made for satisfaction of this appetite of nature, all those actions which deflect and erre from the order of this end are unnatural and inordinate, and not permitted by the concession of G O D, nor the order of the thing; but such actions onely, which naturally produce the end of this provision, and satisfaction, are naturall, regular and good.

But by this meanes man grew into a society and a family, and having productions of his own kinde, which he naturally desired and therefore loved, he was consequently obliged to assist them in order to their end, that they might become like him, that is, perfect men, and brought up to the same state; and they also by being at first, impotent, and for ever after beneficiaries and obliged persons, are for the present subject to their parents, and for ever after bound to duty, because there is nothing which they can doe, that can directly produce so great a benefit to the Parents,

*De somni sign.*

*Claudian. bell.*

*Gildon.*

*Salust. Jagurth.*

*— edid. 73*

*ρελάς*

*Δυνιν γεναινον*

*ανδριν οι νινας*

*εξειν*

*Ανη εις πινας*

*βλέποντος εινατ-*

*αν κομπρι*

*Στρεψον, δοτει*

*αν κομπε εινατ*

*διαν. Ευριπ.*

*I 2..*

*\*Nihile enim est*

*liberis propri-*

*um, quod non*

*parentum sit*

*prius, qui aut*

*de suo dede-*

*rant, aut acqui-*

*rendi probue-*

*rant causas.*

*Philes.*

Parents, as they have to the children. From hence naturally descend all those mutual obligations between parents and children, which are instruments of protection and benefit on the one side, and duty and obedience on the other, and all these to be expressed according as either of their necessities shall require, or any stipulation or contract shall appoint, or shall be superinduced by any positive lawes of GOD or man.

13.

In naturall descent of the generations of man this one first family was multiplyed so much that, for conveniency they were forced to divide their dwellings, and this they did by families especially, the great Father being the *Major domo* to all his *minors*. And this division of dwellings, although it kept the same forme and power in the severall families, which were in the originall, yet it introduced some new necessities, which although they varied in the instance, yet were to be determined by such instruments of reason, which were given to us at first upon foresight of the publike necessities of the world. And when the families came to be divided that their common Parent being extinct, no Master of a family had power over another Master; the rights of such men and their *naturall power became equal*, because there was nothing to distinguish them, and because they might do *equal* *injury*, and invade each others possessions, and disturbe their peace and surprize their liberty. And so also was their power of doing benefit equal, though not the same in kinde. But GOD who made man a sociable creature, because he knew it was *not good for him to be alone*, so dispensed the abilities and possibilities of doing good, that in something or other every man might need or be benefited by *\* every man*; therefore that they might pursue the end of nature, and their own appetites of living well and happily, they were forced to consent to such contracts which might secure and supply to every one those good things without which he could not live happily. Both the appetites, the irascible and the concupiscent, fear of evill, and desire of benefit were the sufficient endeavours of contracts, of societies, and republike. And upon this stocke were decreed and hallowed all those propositions, without which bodies politike and societies of men cannot be happy. And in the transaction of these, many accidents daily happening, it grew still reasonable, that is, necessary to the end of living happily, that all those after obligations should be observed with the proportion of the same faith and endeavour, which bound the first contracts. For though the naturall law be alwayes the same, yet some parts of it are primely necessary, others by supposition and accident, and both are of the same necessity, that is, equally necessary in the severall cases. Thus, to obey a King is as necessary and naturally reasonable as to obey a Father, that is, supposing there be a King, as it is certain naturally a man cannot be, but a Father must be supposed. If it be made necessary that I promise, it is also necessary, that I performe it: for else I shall retarne to that inconvenience, which I sought to avoid, when I made the promise; and though the instance be very farre removed from the first necessities and accidents of our prime being, and production; yet the reason still pursues us, and naturall reason reaches up to the very last minutes, and orders the most remote particulars of our well being.

Thus; not to steal, not to commit adultery, not to kill, are very reasonable prosecutions of the great end of nature, of *living well and happily*.

But

*\*Animus inventus liberalitatis materiam, etiam inter angustias pauperum. Senec. de benefic. c. I.*

14.

## THE PREFACE.

But when a man is said to steal, when to be a murderer, when to be incestuous, the naturall law doth not teach; but when the superinduced constitution hath determined the particular law, by naturall reason we are obliged to observe it. Because though the civil power makes the instance, and determines the particular, yet right reason makes the sanction and passes the obligation. The Law of nature makes the Major proposition, but the civill constitution, or any superinduced law makes the assumption in a practicall syllogisme. To kill is not murder, but to kill such persons, whom I ought not. It was not murder among the Jewes to kill a manslayer, before he entred a city of refuge: to kill the same man after his entry was. Among the Romanes to kill an adulteresse or a Ravisher in the act, was lawfull, with us it is murder. Murder, and incest, and theft, alwayes were unlawful, but the same actions were not alwayes the same crimes. And it is just with these as with disobedience, which was ever criminal; but the same thing was not estimated to be disobedience, nor indeed could any thing be so, till the sanction of a superior had given the instance of obedience. So for theft, to catch fish in rivers, or Deare or Pigeons, when they were esteemed *fera natura* of a wilde condition and so *primo occupantis*, was lawfull, just as to take or kill badgers or foxes, and beavers and lyons. But when the lawes had appropriated rivers, and divided shores, and imparked Deare, and housed Pigeons, it became theft to take them without leave. To despoile the Egyptians was not theft, when G O D, who is the L O R D of all possessions had bidden the Israelites. But to do so now were the breach of the naturall law, and of a Divine Commandment. For the naturall law ( I said ) is eternall in the sanction, but variable in the instance and the expression. And indeed the lawes of nature are very few: They were but two at first, and but two at last, when the great change was made from families to kingdomes. The first is to do duty to God. The second is to do to our selves and our neighbours, that is, to our neighbours as to our selves, all these actions, which naturally, reasonably, or by institution or emergent necessity are in order to a happy life. Our B. Saviour reduces all the law to these two. 1. Love the Lord with all thy heart. 2. Love thy neighbour as thy selfe. In which I observe in verification of my former discourse, that love is the first naturall bond of duty to God, and so also it is to our neighbour. And therefore all entercourse with our neighbour was founded in, and derived from the two greatest endearments of love in the world. A man came to have a neighbour by being a husband and a Father.

So that still there are but two great naturall lawes, we remaining essentially, and by the very designe of creation obliged to God in all, and to our neighbours in the proportions of equality [as thy selfe] that is, that he be permitted and promoted in the order to his living well and happily as thou art, for love being there, not an affection, but the duty that results from the first naturall bands of love, which began neigborhood, signifies justice, equality and such reasonable proceedings which are in order to our common end of a happy life, and is the same with that other, *Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do you to them*, and that is, certainly the greatest and most effectiue love, because it best promotes that excellent end, which God designed for our naturall perfection. All other particulars are but prosecutions of these two, that is, of the order of nature: save onely, that there is a third law, which is rather supposed, then at the first expressed, because a man

\* A. Gellius.  
l. 10. 23.

15.

## THE PREFACE.

is reasonably to be presumed to have in him a sufficient stocke of selfe love to serve the ends of his nature and creation, and that is, that man deuoure and use his own body in that decorum, which is most orderly and proportionate to his perfective end of a happy life ; which Christian religion calls [ sobriety ] and it is a prohibition of those uncharitable selfe destroying sins of drakkennes, gluttony, and inordinate and unreasonable manners of lust, destructive of natures intendments, or at least no wayes promoting them. For it is naturally lawfull to satisfy any of these desires, when the desire does not carry the satisfaction beyond the designe of nature, that is, to the violation of health or that happy living , which consists in observing those contracts which mankind thought necessary to be made in order to the same great end, or unless God hath superinduced a restraint , making an instance of sobriety to become an act of religion , or to passe into an expression of duty to him. And then it is not a naturall, but religious sobriety, and may be instanced in fasting or abstinence from some kinds of meat, or some times or manners of conjugation. These are the three naturall lawes described in the Christian doctrine, that we live; 1. godly, 2. soberly, 3. righteously. And the particulars of the first are ordinarily to be determined by God immediately, or his Vicegerents, and by reason observing and complying with the accidents of the world, and dispositions of things and persons. The second by the naturall order of nature, by sense, and by experience, And the third by humane contracts and civill lawes.

16. The result of the preceding discourse is this. Man who was designed by GOD to a happy life, was fitted with sufficient meanes to attaine that end, so that he might, if he would, be happy ; but he was a free agent and so might choose. And it is possible, that man may faile of his end, & be made miserable by God, by himselfe, or by his Neighbour. Or by the same persons he may be made happy in the same proportions, as they relate to him. If God be angry or disobeyed, he becomes our enemy, and so we faile : If our Neighbour be injured or impeded in the direct order to his happy living , he hath equally right against us, as we against him, and so we faile that way: And if I be intemperate, I grow sicke and worsted in some faculty, & so I am unhappy in my selfe. But if I obey God, and do right to my neighbour, and confine my selfe within the order and designe of nature, I am secured in all ends of blessing, in which I can be assisted by these three, that is, by all my relatives, there being no end of man designed by GOD in order to his happiness , to which these are not proper and sufficient instruments. Man can have no other relations, no other discourses, no other regular appetites, but what are served and satisfied by religion, by sobriety, & by justice. There is nothing, whereby we can relate to any person, who can hurt us, or do us benefit but is provided for in these three. These therefore are all, and these are sufficient.

17. But now it is to be enquired how these become lawes obliging us to sin, if we transgresse, even before any positive law of God be superinduced ; for else, how can it be a naturall law, that is, a law obliging all nations, and all persons, even such, who have had no entercourse with God by way of speciall revelation, and have lost all memory of tradition ? For either such persons, whatsoever they do shall obtaine that end, which God designed for them in their nature, that is , a happy life according to the duration of an immortall nature : or else they shall perish for prevaricating of these Lawes. And yet if they were no lawes to them, and decreed and made sacred by sanction, promulgation

mulgation and appendant penalties, they could not so oblige them as to become the rule of vertue or vice.

When God gave us naturall reason, that is, sufficient ability to doe all, that should be necessary to live well and happily, he also knew, that some appetites might be irregular, just as some stomackes would be fickle, and some eyes blind; and a man being a voluntary agent might choose an evill with as little reason as the Angels of darknes did, that is, they might do unreasonably because they would do so, and then a mans understanding should serve him but as an instrument of mischiefe, and his will carry him on to it with a blind & impotent desire, and then the beauteous order of creatures would be discomposed by unreasonable and unconsidering or evill persons. And therefore it was most necessary, that man should have his appetites confined within the designes of nature, and the order to his end; for a will without the restraint of a superior power or a perfect understanding, is like a knife in a childs hand, as apt for mischiefe as for use. Therefore it pleased God to bind man by the signature of lawes to observe those great naturall reasons, without which man could not arrive at the great end of Gods designing, that is, he could not live well and happily. God therefore made it the first law to love him, and which is all one, to worship him, to speake honour of him, and to expresse it in all our wayes, the chiefe whereof is obedience. And this we find in the instance of that positive precept, which God gave to *Adam*, which was nothing but a particular of the great generall; but in this there is little scruple, because it is not imaginable, that GOD would in any period of time not take care, that himselfe be honoured, his glory being the very end why he made man; and therefore it must be certaine, that this did at the very first passe into a law.

But concerning this and other things, which are usually called naturall lawes I consider, that the things themselves were such, that the *doing them* was therefore declared to be a law, because the *not doing them* did certainly bring a punishment proportionable to the crime, that is, a just deficiency from the end of creation, from a good and happy life, 2. and also a punishment of a guilty conscience; which I doe not understand to be a feare of hell, or of any supervening penalty, unless the conscience be accidentally instructed into such feares by experience, or revelation; but it is a *malum in genere rationis*, a disease or evill of the reasonable faculty, that, as there is a rare content in the discourses of reason, there is a satisfaction, an acquiescency like that of creatures in their proper place and definite actions, and competent perfections; so in prevaricating the naturall law there is a dissatisfaction, a disease, a removing out of the place, an unquiet-  
ness of spirit, even when there is no monitor, or observer. "Adeo facin-  
ra atque flagitia sua ipsi quoque in supplicium verterant. Neque frustra praefan-  
tissimus [Plato] Sapientia firmare solitus est, si recludantur Tyrannorum mentes tapet  
posse aspiciliari et ieiulus, quando ut corpora verberibus, ita saevitiam, libidine, malis damantur.  
consultis animus dilaceretur," said Tacitus out of Plato, whose words are: Ονοματει της  
Ανθραι μετα τη μεριδα βροτων επιλαβουσι, η απειπολούσι βασιλειας, η διαδεικηνει ιππηνη ιφ-  
ρειδεις ιδει ογκη της λυγης ειπει συνεπειανηι, η θλει μετωνυμη ιππειανηι γραπει τη  
αθηναι. It is naturally certaine, that the cruelty of Tyrants, torments  
themselves, and is a hooke in their nostrils, and a scourge to their spirit, and  
the pungency of forbidden lust is truely a thorne in the flesh, full of anguish  
and secret vexation.

18.

19.

Annal. 6.

in Gorgia.

Quid

και πιπεριον

## THE PREFACE.

Claudian. de  
Ruffin.

*Quid demens manifesta negas? en pectus inusta  
Deformant maculae, vitijsque inolevit imago.*

said Claudian of Ruffinus. And it is certain to us and verisified by the experience and observation of all wise nations, though not naturally demonstrable, that this secret punishment is sharpened and promoted in degrees by the hand of heaven, the finger of the same hand, that writ the law in our understandings.

20.

But the prevarications of the naturall law have also their portion of a speciall punishment besides the scourge of an unquiet spirit; the man that distubes his Neighbours rest, meets with disturbances himselfe, and since I have naturally no more power over my neighbour than he hath over me (quales he descended naturally from me) he hath an equall priviledge to defend himselfe, and to secure his quiet by disturbing the order of my happy living, as I doe his. And this equall permission is certainly so great a sanction and signature of the law of justice; that in the just proportion of my receding from the reasonable prosecution of my end, in the same proportion and degree my own infelicity is become certaine; and this in severall degrees up to the losse of all, that is, of life it selfe; for where no further duration or differing state is known, there death is ordinarily esteemed the greatest infelicity; where something beyond it is known, there also it is known, that such prevarication makes that further duration to be unhappy. So that an affront is naturally punished by an affront, the losse of a tooth with the losse of a tooth, of an eye with an eye, the violent taking away of anothers mans goods by the loosing my own. For I am lyable to as great an evill as I inferre, and naturally he is not unjust that inflicts it. And he that is drunke is a foole or a madman for the time, and thats his punishment, and declares the law and the sin: and so in proportions to the transgressions of sobriety. But when the first of the naturall lawes is violated, that is, God is disobeyed or dishonoured, or when the greatest of naturall evills is done to our Neighbour, then death became the penalty; to the first, in the first period of the world: to the second, at the restitution of the world, that is, at the beginning of the second period. He that did attempt to kill from the beginning of ages might have been resisted, and killed, if the assaulted could not else be safe, but he that killled actually as Cain did, could not be killed himself, till the law was made in Noebs time; because there was no person living, that had equall power on him, & had been naturally injured; while the thing was doing, the assailant and the assailed had equal power, but when it was done and one was killed, he that had the power or right of killing his murderer, is now dead, and his power is extinguished with the man. But after the flood, the power was put into the hand of some trusted person, who was to take the forfeiture. And thus I conceive these naturall reasons in order to their proper end became laws, & bound fast by the bands of annexed and consequent penalties; *metum prorsus et noxam conscientie pressadere haberi*, said Tacitus. And that fully explaines my sense.

21.

And thus death was brought into the world, not by every prevarication of any of the lawes, by any instance of unreasonableness: for in proportion to the evill of the action would be the evill of the suffering, which in all cases would not arrive at death; as every injury, every intemperance, shold not have been capitall. But some things were made evill by a superinduced prohibition, as eating one kinde of fruit: some

some things were evill by inordination; the first was morally evill, the second was evill naturally. Now the first sort brought in death by a prime function; the second by degrees and variety of accident. For every disobedience and transgression of that law, which GOD made as the instance of our doing him honour and obedience, is an integral violation of all the band between him and us; it does not grow in degrees according to the instance and subject matter; for it is as great a disobedience to eat when he hath forbidden us, as to offer to climb to heaven with an ambitious tower. And therefore it is but reasonable for us to fear, and just in him to make us at once suffer death, which is the greatest of naturall evils, for disobeying him. To which death we may arrive by degrees in doing actions against the reasonableness of sobriety and justice, but cannot arrive by degrees of disobedience to God or irreligion, because every such act deserves the worst of things; but the other naturally deserves no greater evil than the proportion of their own inordination, till God by a superinduced law hath made them also to become acts of disobedience as well as inordination, that is, morally evill, as well as naturally; For by the law (saith S. Paul) sin became exceeding sinfull, that is, had a new degree of obliquity added to it. Rom. 7. 13.

But this was not at first. For therefore (saith S. Paul), Before or [untill the Law sin was in the world, but sin is not imputed when there is no Law] Rom. 5.13.

Meaning, that those sins which were forbidden by Moses Law were actually in the manners of men & the customes of the world, but they were not imputed, that is, to such personall punishments and consequent evils, which afterwards those sins did introduce, because those sins which were onely evil by inordination, and discomposure of the order of mans end of living happily, were made unlawful upon no other stock, but that God would have man to live happily, and therfore gave him reason to effect that end; and if a man became unreasonable, and did things contrary to his end, it was impossible for him to be happy, that is, he should be miserable in proportion. But in that degree and manner of evill they were imputed, and that was sanction enough to raise naturall reason up to the constitution of a Law.

3. The Law of nature being thus decreed and made obligatory, was a sufficient instrument of making man happy, that is, in producing the end of his Creation. But as Adam had evill discourses and irregular appetites before he fell, for they made him fall, and as the Angels, who had no originall sin, yet they chose evill at the first, when it was wholly arbitrary in them to do so or otherwise; so did man. GOD made man upright, and he sought out many inventions. Some men were ambitious, and by incompetend meanes would make their brethren to be their servants. Some were covetous and would usurp that, which by an earlier distinction had passed into private possession, and then they made new principles, and new discourses, such which were reasonable in order to their private ends, but not to the publike benefit.

And when once they broke the order of creation, it is easie to understand by what necessities of consequence they ran into many sins and irrational proceedings. *Aelian* tells of a Nation, who had a law binding them to beat their parents to death with clubs, when they lived to a decrepit and unprofitable age. The *Persian Magi* mingled with their Mothers and all their neerest relatives: And by a law of the *Venetians* (sayes Bodin) a son in banishment was redeemed from the sentence, if he killed his banished Father.

22.

23.

*Tina m<sup>is</sup>, 13<sup>th</sup>,  
Enyēsō, Dixit  
Porphyrius.*

De rep. l. 1. c. 4.

Father. And in Homers time there were a sort of Pirats, who professed  
 οὐκ ἀπόγονοι τῷ  
 νομῷ τοῦ νόμου  
 λαυρίς τοι λαυρεῖ,  
 ὁπλέστης, Σχολι-  
 αστ. in Hom.  
*Odyss. τ. Vide*  
*etiam A. Gell.*  
*L. II. c. 18.*  
 "Οὐκ οὐκ α-  
 κερδαπλε σπί-  
 ριτούσι, οὐ πά-  
 φαντες ακ-  
 τρόποις οὐ ιθα-  
 θαύμην οὐ οἴνον  
 ποτηρίδια φα-  
 γούσις ταῖς φ-  
 σησίσις οἰνο-  
 τατολοσσοι.  
*Just. Mart.*  
*Dial. Tryph.*  
*Rom. I. 25,*  
*26. &c.*

either maliciously or carelesly became unreasonable in the things that concerned GOD, GOD was pleased to give him over to a reprobate mind, that is, an unreasonable understanding, and false principles concerning himself and his Neighbour, that his sinne against the naturall law, might become its owne punishment, by discomposing his naturall happinesse. Atheisme and Idolatry brought in all unnaturall lusts, and many unreasonable injurys. And this we learne from S. Paul, They did not like to retaine GOD in their knowledge, GOD gave them over to a reprobate minde, to doe those things ποτηρίδια φαγούσις ταῖς φσησίσις οἰνοτατολοσσοι which are not convenient, that is, incongruities towards the end of their creation; and so they became full of unrighteousnesse, lust, covetousnesse, malice, envy, strife, and murder, disobedient to parents, breakers of Covenants, unnatural in their affections and in their passions; and all this was the consequent of breaking the first naturall Law. They changed the truth of God into a lye. For this cause God gave them up into vile affections.

Now GOD who takes more care for the good of man, than man does for his owne, did not onely imprint these lawes in the hearts and understandings of man, but did also take care to make this light shine cleare enough to walk by, by adopting some instances of the naturall Lawes into Religion. Thus the law against murder became a part of Religion in the time of Noah; and some other things were then added concerning worshipping GOD, against Idolatry, and against unnaturall and impure mixtures. Sometimes GOD superadded judgements as to the 23000. *Affyrians* for fornication. For although these punishments were not threatened to the crime in the sanction and expression of any definite law, and it could not naturally arrive to it by its inordination, yet it was as agreeable to the divine justice to inflict it, as to inflict the paines of hell upon evill livers, who yet had not any revelation of such intolerable danger, for it was sufficient that God had made such crimes to be againt their very nature, and they, who will doe violence to their nature, to doe themselves hurt, and to displease GOD, deserve to lose the title to all those good things, which GOD was pleased to designe for mans finall condition. And because it grew habituall, customeary, and of innocent reputation, it pleased GOD to call this precept out of the darknesse, whether their evill customes and false discourses had put it, and by such an extraregular but very signall punishment to remind them, that the naturall permissions of concubinate were onely confined to the ends of mankinde, and were hallowed onely by the Faith and the designe of Marriage. And this was signified by Saint Paul, in these words. *They that sinne without the Law shall also perish without the Law;* That is, by such judgements, which GOD hath inflicted on evill livers in severall periods of the World, irregularly indeed, not signified in kinde, but yet sent into the world with designes

of a great mercy , that the ignorances and prevarications and partiall abolitions of the naturall Law might bee cured and restored , and by the dispersion of prejudices , the state of naturall reason bee redintegrate .

25.

Whatsoever was besides this , was accidentall and emergent , such as were the discourses of wise men , which GOD raised up in severall countrys and and ages , as *Job* , and *Eliphaz* , and *Bildad* , and those of the families of the Patriarkes dispersed into severall countries ; and constant tradition in some noble and more eminent descents ; and yet all this was so little and imperfect , not in it selfe , but in respect of the thicke cloud man had drawn before his understanding , that darknesse covered the face of the earth in a great proportion . Almost all the world were Idolaters , and when they had broken the first of the naturall lawes , the breach of the other was not onely naturally consequent , but also by divine judgement it descended infallibly . And yet G O D pitying mankinde did not onely still continue the former remedies , and added blessings , giving them fruitfull seasons , and filling their hearts with food and gladnesse , so leaving the nations without excuse , but also made a very noble change in the world ; for having chosen an excellent family , the Fathers of which lived exactly according to the naturall law , and with observation of those few superadded precepts , in which GOD did spesificare their prime duty , having swelled that family to a great nation , and given them possession of an excellent land , which GOD took from seven nations , because they were egregious violators of the naturall law , was pleased to make a very great restitution and declaration of the naturall law in many instances of religion and justice , which he framed into positive precepts , and adopted them into the family of the first originall instances , making them as necessary in the particulars , as they were in the primary obligation ; but the instances were such , whereof some did relate onely to the present constitution of the common-wealth ; others to such universall contracts , which obliged all the world by reason of the equal necessity of all mankinde to admit them . And these himselfe writ on tables of stone , and dressed up their nation into a body politike by an excellent systeme of politike laws , and adorned it with a rare religion , and left this nation as a piece of leaven in a masse of dow , not onely to doe honour to God , and happinesse to themselves , by those instruments , which he had now very much explicated , but also to transmit the same reasonable propositions into other nations ; and he therefore multiplied them to a great necessity of a dispersion , and they served the ends of God and of the naturall law by their ambulatory life , and their numerous disseminations . And this was it , which S. Paul affirmes ; the *Gal. 3. 19.*  
*law was added because of transgression* , meaning , that because men did transgress the naturall , God brought *Moses* law into the world to be as a strand to the inundation of impiety . And thus the world stood , till the fulnesse of time was come ; for so we are taught by the Apostle . [ *The law was added because of transgression* , ] but the date of this was to expire at a certaine period ; it was added to serve but [ till the seed should come to whom the promise was made . ]

For because *Moses* Law was but an imperfect explication of the naturall , there being divers parts of the three lawes of nature not at all explicated by that Covenant , not the religion of prayers , not the reasonableness of temperance and sobriety in opinion and diet , and in the  
more

26.

## THE PREFACE.

more noble instances of humanity and doing benefit, it was so short, that as S. Paul sayes, *The Law could not make the commers thereunto perfect*; and which was most of all considerable, it was confined to a Nation, and the other parts of mankinde had made so little use of the records of that Nation, that all the world was placed in darknesse, and sate in the shadow of death; Therefore it was, that in great mercy G O D sent his Son, a light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of the people Israel to instruct thole, and consummate these, that the imperfection of the one, and the meer darknesse of the other might be illustrated by the Son of righteousness. And this was by restoring the light of nature (which they by evill customes and false principles and evill lawes had obscured) by restoring man to the liberty of his spirit, by freeing him from the slavery of sin, under which they were so lost and oppressed, that all their discourses and conclusions, some of their morall Philosophy, and all their habituall practices were but servants of sin, and made to cooperate to that end, not which GOD intended as perfective of humane nature, but which the Devil and vicious persons superinduced to serve little ends and irregular, and to destroy the greater.

27.

Clem. Alex.  
Stromat. I.c.3.

For certain it is, Christianity is nothing else, but the most perfect design that ever was to make a man be happy in his whole capacity; and as the law was to the Jewes, so was Philotropy to the Gentiles, a Schoolemaster to bring them to CHRIST, to teach them the rudiments of happinesse, and the first and lowest things of reason, that when CHRIST was come, all mankind was might become perfect, that is, be made regular in their appetites, wife in their understandings, afflicted in their duties, directed to & instructed in their great ends; and this is that which the Apostle calls [being perfect men in CHRIST JESUS] perfect in all the intendments of nature, and in all the designes of G O D. And this was brought to passe by discovering, and restoring, and improoving the Law of nature, and by turning it all into Religion.

28.

For the natural law being a sufficient and a proportionate instrument and meanes to bring a man to the end designed in his creation, and this law being eternall and unalterable (for it ought to be as lasting and as unchangeable as the nature it selfe, so long as it was capable of a law) it was not imaginable, that the body of any law should make a new morality, new rules, and generall proportions, either of justice or religion or temperance, or felicity; the essentiall parts of all these consisting in naturall proportions, and meanes towards the consummation of mans last end, which was first intended, and is alwayes the same. It is as if there were a new truth in an es- sentiall and a necessary proposition. For although the instances may vary, there can be no new justice, no new temperance, no new relations, proper

<sup>'Οὐκ ἀποβλητικός τοι εἶ -</sup> and naturall relations and intercourfes between G O D and us, but what al-  
<sup>τείχος τοι εἶ -</sup> ways were in praises and prayers, in adoration and honour, and in the sym-  
<sup>μισθίος τοι εἶ -</sup> bolical expressions of GODS glory and our needs.

<sup>ξύνεια, τάξις</sup> Hence it comes that, that which is the most obvious and notorious appelle-  
<sup>τρόπους τοι εἶ -</sup> lative of the law of nature (that it is a law written in our hearts) was also  
<sup>αὐτὸς λόγος τοι εἶ -</sup> recounted as one of the glories and excellencies of Christianity. Plutarch  
<sup>συνειδέτης τοι εἶ -</sup> saying, that Kings ought to be governed by lawes, explaines himselfe that this  
<sup>μαντίστων τοι εἶ -</sup> law must be a word, not written in books and tables, but dwelling in the minde, a  
<sup>χίλιοι τοι εἴρησαν</sup> living rule, the interiour guide of their manners and Monitors of their life. And  
this was the same which Saint Paul expresses to be the guide of the Gen-  
tiles,

ties, that is, of all men naturally. *The Gentiles, which have not the law Rom. 2.14.*  
*doe by nature the things contained in the law, which shewes the worke of*  
*the law written in their hearts.* And that we may see, it was the law of  
nature, that returned in the sanctions of Christianity; G O D declares  
that in the constitution of this law he would take no other course than at  
first, that is, he would write them in the hearts of men: indeed with a  
new style, with a quill taken from the wings of the holy Dove; the spirit  
of G O D was to be the greater engraver, and the scribe of the new Co-  
venant, but the hearts of men should be the tables. *For this is the Coven-  
ant that I will make with them after those dayes saith the L O R D, I will put  
my lawes into their hearts, and into their minds will I write them, and their sins Heb.10.16.17  
and their iniquities will I remember no more.* That is I will provide a meanes  
to expiate all the iniquities of man and restore him to the condition of his  
first creation, putting him into the same order towards felicity, which  
I first designed to him, and that also by the same instruments. Now  
I consider, that the spirit of G O D tooke very great care, that all the re-  
cords of the law of JESUS should be carefully kept and transmited to po-  
sterity in bookees and Sermons, which being an act of providence and mer-  
cy, was a provision, least they should be lost or mistaken as they were  
formerly, when GOD wrot some of them in tables of stone for the use of  
the sons of Israel, and all of them in the first tables of nature with the fin-  
ger of creation, as now he did in the new creature by the finger of the spirit.  
But then writing them in the tables of our minds besides the other, can  
meane nothing, but placing them there, where they were before, and  
from whence we blotted them by the mixtures of impure principles  
and discourses. But I descend to particular and more minute considera-  
tions.

The lawes of Nature either are bands of religion, Justice, or sobriet-  
ty. Now I consider concerning religion, that when ever GOD hath made  
any particular precepts to a family, as to *Abrahams*, or to a single person  
as to the Man of Judah prophesying against the altar of Bethel, or to a Na-  
tion as to the Jewes at Sinai, or to all mankind, as to the world descending  
from *Noah*, it was nothing else but a triall or an instance of our obedience, a  
particular prosecution of the Law of nature whereby we are obliged to doe  
honour to G O D, which was to be done by such expressions, which are  
naturall entercourses between G O D and us, or such as he hath *made* to be  
so. Now in Christianity we are wholly left to that manner of prosecut-  
ing this first naturall law, which is naturall and proportionable to the na-  
ture of the thing, which the holy JESUS calls *worshipping GOD in spirit and  
truth; In spirit] that is with our selves, heartily and devoutly, so as to ex-  
clude hypocrisy and indiflerency. And *in truth]* that is, without a lye,  
without vaine imaginacions and phantaſtieke reſemblances of him, which  
were introduced by the evill customes of the Gentiles; and without ſuch  
false guifes and abſurd undecencies, which as they are contrary to mans rea-  
on, ſo are they contray to the glory and reputation of G O D, ſuch as was  
that uniuersall custome of all nations of ſacrificing in mans blood, and of-  
fering festivall lufts and impurities in the ſolemnities of their religion; for  
these being againſt the purpose and deſigne of G O D, and againſt right  
reaſon*

## THE PREFACE.

reason are a lye, and enemies to the truth of a naturall and proper religion. The holy JESUS onely commanded us to pray often, and to praise GOD, to speake honour of his name, not to use it lightly and vainly, to believe him, to revere the instruments and ministers of religion, to aske for what wee need, to put our trust in GOD, to worship him, to obey him, and to love him; for all these are but the expressions of love. And this is all C H R I S T spake concerning the first naturall law, the law of religion. For concerning the ceremonyes or Sacraments, which he instituted, they are but few, and they become matter of duty but by accident as being instruments and rites of configning those effects and mercies, which G O D sent to the world by the meanes of this law, and relate rather to the contract and stipulation, which C H R I S T made for us, then to the naturall order between duty and felicity.

Now all these are nothing but what we are taught by naturall reason, that is, what G O D enabled us to understand to be fit instruments of entercourse between G O D and us, and what was practised and taught by sōbre men in all ages and all nations, whose records we have received (as I shall remarde at the Margent of the severall precepts) For to make these appeare certainly and naturally necessary there was no more requisite, but that man should know there was a G O D , that is, an eternall being, which gave him all that he had or was, and to know what himselfe was, that is, indigent and necessitous of himselfe, needing helpe of all the Creatures, exposed to accidents and calamity, and defensible no wayes but by the same hand that made him , Creation and conservation in the philosophy of all the world being but the same act continuing and flowing on from an instant to duration, as a line from its Mathematicall point. And for this, G O D tooke sufficient care, for he conuersed with man in the very first , in such cleare and certaine and perceptible transaction, that a man could as certainly know , that G O D was, as that Man was. And in all ages of the world he hath not left himselfe without witnessse , but gave such testimonies of himselfe , that were suf-

*Maxim. Tyr.* sufficient, for they did actually perswade all nations barbarous and civill into the belief of a GOD. And it is but a nicety to consider, whether or no that proposition can be naturally demonstrated. For it was sufficient to all GODS purposes and to all Mans, that the proposition was actually beleived; the instances were therefore sufficient to make faith because they did it. And a man may remove himselfe so farre from all the degrees of aptnesse to believe a proposition, that nothing shall make them joyne. For if there were a sect of witty men, that durst not believe their senses, because they thought them fallible; it is no wonder if some men should thinke every reason reproveable. But in such cases, Demonstration is a relative terme and signifieth every probation greater or lesser which does actually make faith in any proposition; and in this, GOD hath never been deficient, but hath to all men, that believe him, given sufficient to confirme them, to those few that believed not, sufficient to reprove them.

32. Now in all these actions of religion, which are naturally consequent to this belief, there is no scruple, but in the instance, of faith which is presented to be an infused grace, an immission from GOD and that for its

## THE PREFACE.

Its object it hath supernaturall, that is, principles naturally incredible; and therefore Faith is supposed a grace above the greatest strength of reason. But in this I consider, that if we looke into all the Sermons *apud Laßant.* of CHRIST, we shall not easily find any doctrine, that in any sense *l. 7. c. 23.* troubles naturall philosophy, but onely that of the resurrection ( for I doe not think those mysticall expressions of plaine truths, such as are [being borne againe, eating the flesh of the Son of man, being in the Father, and the Father in him] to be exceptions in this assertion) and although some Gentiles did believe and deliver that article, and particularly Chrysippus, and the Thracians ( as Mela and Solinus report of them) yet they could not naturally discourse themselves into *l. 2. de Thra-* it, but had it from the imperfect report, and opinion of some Jewes *cib. c. 10.* that dwelt among them; And it was certaintly a revelation or a proposition sent into the world by GOD. But then the believing it, is so farre from being above or against nature, that there is nothing in the world more reasonable than to believe any thing which GOD tells us, or which is told us by a man sent from GOD with mighty demonstration of his power and veracity. Naturally our bodies cannot rise, that is, there is no naturall agent or naturall cause sufficient to produce that effect. But this is an effect of a divine power, and he hath but a little stocke of naturall reason, who cannot conclude that the same power, which made us out of nothing, can also restore us to the same condition, as well and easily from dust and ashes certainly, as from meere nothing. And in this and in all the like cases, Faith is a submission of the understanding to the word of GOD, and is nothing else but a confessing that GOD is truth, and that he is omnipotent, that is, he can doe what he will, and he will when he hath once said it. And we are now as ignorant of the essence and nature of formes, and of that which substantially distinguishes Man from Man, or an Angel from an Angel as we were of the greatest article of our religion before it was revealed, and we shall remaine ignorant for ever of many naturall things, unlesse they be revealed; and unlesse we knew all the secrets of Philosophy, the mysteries of nature, and the rules and propositions of all things and creatures, we are fooles, if we say, that what we call an article of faith, I meane truely such, is against naturall reason. It may be indeed as much against our naturall reasonings, as those reasonings are against truth. But if we remember how great an ignorance dwells upon us all, it will be found the most reasonable thing in the world onely to enquire, whither GOD hath revealed any such proposition, and then not to say it is against naturall reason, and therefore an article of faith, but I am told a truth, which I knew not till now, and so my reason is become instructed into a new proposition. And although CHRIST hath given us no new morall precepts, but such which were essentially and naturally reasonable in order to the end of mans creation, yet we may easily suppose him to teach us many a new truth, which we knew not, and to explicate to us many particulars of that estate, which GOD designed for man in his first production, but yet did not then declare to him; and to furnish him with new revelations, and to signifie the greatnessse of the designed end, to become so

## THE PREFACE.

many arguments of indeerements to secure his duty, that is, indeed to secure his happinesse by the infallible using the instruments of attaining it.

33. This is all I am to say concerning the precept of religion J E S U S taught us; he tooke off those many superinduced rites, which G O D injoyed to the Jewes, and reduced us to the naturall religion, that is, to such expressions of duty, which allwise men and nations used, save onely that he tooke away the rite of sacrificing; because that was either

*Just. Mart.*  
*resp. ad Ortho-*  
*dex. ad qu. 83.* brought into religion by convenience, or by tradition, and it was now determined in the great sacrifice, which sufficiently and eternally reconciled all the world to G O D. All the other things, as prayers and adoration, and Eucharist, and Faith in G O D, are of a naturall order and an unalterable expression; And in the nature of the thing there is no other way of addresse to G O D then these; no other expression of *his glories and our needs*; both which must for ever be signified.

*I. 3. c. 32.* 2. Concerning the second naturall precept, Christian religion hath also added nothing beyond the first obligation, but explained it all. \* *Whosoever ye would men should doe to you, doe ye so to them*, that is the eternall rule of justice; and that bindes contracts, keepes promises, affirms

\**Hec sententia* truth, makes subjects obedient, and Princes just; It gives security to *s&pissime a Se-* Marts and banks, and introduces an equality of condition upon all the *vero Imperato-* world, save only, when an inequality is necessary, that is, in the relations *re prolat.* of government, for the preservation of the common rights of equall ti-

*'O paxis paxis* tles and possessions, that there be some common terme indued with power, *ni manus.* *Tob.* who is to be the Father of all men by an equall provision, that every mans

4. 16. rights be secured by that feare, which naturally we shall beare to him,

*Dixit Minus.* who can and will punish all unreasonable and unjust violations of property.

*Ab alio expe-* And concerning this also the holy J E S U S hath added an expresse pre-

*Elles alteri quod* cept, of paying tribute, and all *Casars* dues to *Cesar*: in all other parti-

*ficeris.* culars it is necessary, that the instances and minutes of justice be ap-

*Singulorum in-* pointed by the Lawes and customes of the severall Kingdomes and re-

*terest, si uni-* publiques. And therefore it was that Christianity so well combinde with

*versi regantur.* the Government of Heathen Princes, because whatsoeuer was naturally

just, or declared so by the Political power, their religion bound them to observe, making obedience to be a double duty, a duty both of justice and religion: And the societies of Christians growing up from Conventicles to Assemblies, from Assemblies to Societies introduced no change in the Government, but by little and little turned the Common-wealth into a Church, till the world being Christian, and justice also being religion, obedience to Princes, observation of Lawes, honesty in contracts, and faithfulness in promises, and gratitude to benefactors, and simplicit in discourse, and ingenuity in all pretences and transacions became the Characterismes of Christian Men, and the Word of a Christian, the greatest solemnity of stipulation in the world.

35. But concerning the generall, I consider, that in two very great instances it was remonstrated, that Christianity was the greatest prosecution of naturall justice and equality in the whole world. The one was in an election of an Apostle into the place of Judas, when there

## THE PREFACE.

there were two equall candidates of the same pretension and capacity; the Question was determined by lots, which naturally was the arbitration in Questions, whose parts were wholly indifferent; and as it was used in all times, so it is to this day used with us in many places where least there be a disagreement concerning the manner of tithing some creatures, and to prevent unequall arts and unjust practises, they are tithed by lot, and their fortuitous passing through the doore of their fold. The other is in the Cœnobiticke life of the first Christians and Apostles, they had all things in common, which was that state of nature, in which men lived charitably and without injustice, before the distinction of dominions and private rights. But from this manner of life they were soone driven by the publike necessity and constitution of affaires.

3. Whatsoever else is in the Christian Law, concernes the naturall precept of sobriety, in which there is some variety and some difficulty. In the matter of carnality the holy JESUS did cleerely reduce us to the first institution of marriage in Paradise, allowing no other mixture but what was first intended in the creation, and first sacramental union; and in the instance he so permitted us to the naturall law; that he was pleased to mention no instance of forbidden lust, but in generall and comprehensive termes of adultery and fornication; in the other, which are still more unnaturall, as their names are concealed and hidden in shame and secrecy, we are to have no instructor but the modesty and order of nature.

36.

As an instance of this Law of sobriety, CHRIST superadded the whole doctrine of *humility*, which Moses did not, and which seemed almost to be extinguished in the world; and it is called by Saint Paul, *sapere ad sobrietatem*, the reasonableness or *wisdom* of sobriety. And it is all the reasoun of the world, that a man should thinke of himselfe but just as he is. He is deceived that thinkes otherwise, and is a foole; And when we consider that pride makes warres, and causes affronts, and no man loves a proud man, and he loves no man but himselfe, we shall understand that the precept of humility is an excellent art, and a happy instrument towards humane felicity. And it is no way contradicted by a naturall desire of honour; it onely appoints just and reasonable wayes of obtaining it. Wee are not forbidden to receive honour; but to seeke it for designes of pride and complacency, or to make it rest in our hearts. But when the hand of vertue receives the honour, and transmitts it to GOD from our own head, the desires of nature are sufficiently satisfied, and nothing of religion contradicted. And it is certain by all the experience of the world, that in every state and order of men, he that is most humble in proportion to that state, is (if all things else be symbolical) the most honoured person. For it is very observeable, that when GOD designed man to a good and happy life, as the naturall end of his creation, to verifie this, GOD was pleased to give him objects sufficient and apt to satisfie every appetite; I say to satisfie it naturally, not to satisfie those extravagancies, which might be accidentall.

37.

Vina sum sed-  
 dant, natis ve-  
 nus Alma cre-  
 andis serviat,  
 hos fines tran-  
 filii se nocet  
 Virg.  
 O misericordia  
 Domine deus nos  
 tuus id est, et  
 regnus vestrum  
 et dix megal-  
 pion, quod si  
 auctor, natus un-  
 di ite eorum vici-  
 batur, exhorta-  
 tio Arist. E-  
 thic. l. 7. c. 7.  
 all and procured by the irregularity either of will or understanding; not to answer him in all that his desires could extend to, but to satisfie the necessity of every appetite; all the desires that GOD made, not all that man should make. For we see even in those appetites, which are common to men and beasts, all the needs of nature, and all the ends of creation are served by the taking such proportions of their objects, which are ordinate to their end, and which in man we call temperance, (not as much as they naturally can,) such as are mixtures of sexes meerly for production of their kinde; eating and drinking for needs and hunger; and yet GOD permitted our appetites to bee able to extend beyond the limits of the meere naturall designe, that GOD by restraining them, and putting the fetters of Lawes upon them might turne naturall desires into sobriety, and sobriety into Religion, they becomming servants of the Commandment. And now wee must not call all those swellings of appetites, *naturall inclination*, nor the satisfaction of such tumours and excrescencies any part of naturall felicities: but that which does just cooperate to those ends, which perfect humane nature in order to its proper end. For the appetites of meat and drink, and pleasures, are but intermediall and instrumentall to the end, and are not made for themselves, but first for the end, and then to serve GOD in the instances of obedience. And just so is the naturall desire of honour; intended to bee a spurre to vertue (for to vertue onely it is naturally consequent or to naturall and politicall superiority) but to desire it beyond, or besides the limit, is the swelling and the disease of the desire. And we can take no rule for its perfect value, but by the strict limits of the naturall end, or the superinduced end of Religion in positive restraints.

38.

According to this discourse we may best understand, that even the severest precepts of the Christian Law are very consonant to nature, and the first lawes of mankind. Such is the precept of *self-denayall*, which is nothing else but a confining the appetites within the limits of nature: for there they are permitted, (except when some greater purpose is to bee served than the present answering the particular desire) and whatsoever is beyond it, is not in the naturall order to felicity; it is no better than an itch, which must be scratched and satisfied, but it is unnatural. But for Martyrdome it selfe, quitting our goods, loosing lands, or any temporall interest, they are now become as reasonable in the present constitution of the world, as taking unpleasant potions, and suffering a member to be cauterized, in sicknesse or disease. And we see that death is naturally a lesse evill then a continuall torment, and by some not so resented as a great disgrace; and some persons have chosen it for sanctuary and remedy; And therefore much rather shall it be accounted prudent and reasonable and agreeable to the most perfect desires of nature, to exchange a house for a hundred, a Friend for a Patron, a short affliction for a lasting joy, and a temporall death for an eternall life. For so the question is statted to us by him that understands it best. True it is, that the suffering of losses, afflictions, and death, is naturally an evill, and therefore no part of a naturall precept, or prime injunction. But when GOD having comanded

## THE PREFACE.

ded instances of Religion, man will not suffer us to obey GOD, or will not suffer us to live, then the question is, which is most agreeable to the most perfect and reasonable desires of nature, to obey GOD, or to obey man, to feare GOD, or to feare man, to preserve our bodies, or to preserve our soules, to secure a few yeares of uncertaine and troublesome duration, or an eternity of a very glorious condition? Some men reasonably enough choose to die for considerations lower then that of a happy eternity; therefore death is not such an evill but that it may in some cases be desired and reasonably chosen, and in some be recompensed at the highest rate of a naturall value; And if by accident we happen into an estate, in which of necessity one evill or another must be suffered, certainly nothing is more naturally reasonable and eligible, then to choose *the least evill*: and when there are two good things propounded to our choyce, both which cannot be possessed, nothing is more certainly the object of a prudent choyce, then *the greater good*. And therefore, when once we understand the question of suffering, and self-denayall, and Martyrdome to this sence, as all Christians doe, and all wise men doe, and all sects of men doe in their severall perswasions, it is but remembiring, that to live happily after this life is more intended to us by GOD, and is more perfective of humane nature, then to live herewith all the prosperity which this state affords; and it will evidently follow, that when violent men will not let us enter into that condition by the wayes of Nature and prime intendment, that is, of naturall Religion, justice, and sobriety, it is made in that case, and upon that supposition, certainly, naturally, and infallibly reasonable to secure the perfective and principle designe of our felicity, though it be by such instruments, which are as unpleasant to our senses as are the instruments of our restitution to health; since both one and the other in the present conjunction and state of affaires are most proportionable to reason, because they are so to the present necessity, not primarily intended to us by GOD, but superinduced by evill accident, and the violence of men. And we not onely finde that Socrates suffered death in attestation of a GOD, though he flattered and discoursed himselfe into the belief of an immortall reward, *De industria consulta & quantitatis, non de fiducia comperta veritatis* (as Tertullian sayes of him) but we also finde, that all men, that believed the immortality of the soule firmly and unmoveably, made noscruple of exchanging their life for the preservation of vertue with the interest of their great hope, for honour sometimes, and ostentiosities for their Countrey.

This the holy JESUS perfected and restored the naturall Law, and drew it into a systeme of propositions, and made them to become of the family of Religion. For GOD is so zealous to have man attaine to the end, to which he first designed him, that those things which he hath put in the naturall order to attaine that end he hath bound fast upon us, not only by the order of things by which it was that he that prevaricated did naturally fall short of felicity; but also by bands of Religion: he hath now made himself a party and an enemy to those that will be not happy. Of old, Religion was but one of the naturall Lawes, and the instances of Religion were distinct from the discourses of philosophy. Now all the law of nature is adopted into religion, and by our love and duty to GOD we are tyed.

## THE PREFACE.

tyed to doe all that is reason ; and the parts of our religion are but pur-  
fiances of the naturall relation between GOD and us ; and beyond all  
this, our naturall condition is in all senses improved by the consequents  
and adherencies of this religion : For although nature and grace are op-  
posite, that is, *nature* depraved by evill habits, by ignorance and un-  
godly customes is contrary to *grace*, that is, to nature restored by the  
Gospel, engaged to regular living by new revelations, and assisted by the  
Spirit, yet it is observable, that the *Law of Nature*, and the *Law of grace*  
are never opposed. There is a *Law of our members* (saith Saint Paul)  
that is, an evill necessity introduced into our appetites by perpetuall  
evill custumes, examples, and traditions of vanity, and there is a law  
of sinne that answers to this, and they differ onely, as inclination and  
habit, vicious desires, and vicious practices. But then contrary to these  
are, first a *law of my minde*, which is, the *law of Nature* and right reason,  
and then the *law of Grace*, that is, of JESUS CHRIST, who perfected and re-  
stored the first Law, and by assistances reduced it into a Law of holy  
living ; and these two differ as the other, the one is in order to the  
other, as imperfection and growing degrees and capacities are to perfection  
and consummation. The Law of the mind had been so rased and obliterate,  
and we by some meanes or other so disabled from observing it exactly, that  
untill it was turned into the *law of grace* (which is a law of pardoning infir-  
mities, and assisting us in our choices and elections) we were in a state of de-  
ficiency from the perfective state of man, to which GOD intended us.

40

Now although GOD always designed man to the same state, which he  
hath now revealed by JESUS CHRIST, yet he told him not of it, and  
his permissions and licences were then greater, and the Law it selfe lay clo-  
ser folded up in the compact body of necessary propositions in order to so  
much of his end as was known, or could be supposed. But now according  
to the extension of the revelation, the Law it selfe is made wider, that is,  
more explicit ; and naturall reason is thrust forward into discourses of  
charity and benefit, and we tyed to do very much good to others, and tyed  
to cooperate to each others felicity.

41

O <sup>adsperso</sup>  
<sup>expansione</sup>  
<sup>mi-</sup>  
<sup>cum.</sup> M. Anton.  
l. 9.  
Psal. 112. 9.

That the Law of charity is a law of nature, needs no other argument but  
the consideration of the first constitution of man. The first instances of ju-  
stice or entercourse of man with a second or third person, was to such per-  
sons, towards whom he had the greatest endeerements of affection in the  
world, a wife, and children ; and justice and charity at first was the same  
thing. And it hath obtained in ages farre removed from the first, that char-  
ity is called *righteousnesse*, He hath dispersed and given to the poore, his righte-  
ousnesse remaikest for ever. And it is certaine, Adam could not in any in-  
stance be unjust, but he must in the same also be uncharitable ; the band  
of his first justice being the tyes of love, and all having commenced in love.  
And our blessed Lord restoring all to the intention of the first perfection  
expresses it to the same sense as I formerly observed ; Justice to our Neigh-  
bour is, loving him as our selves : For since justice obliges us to do as wee  
would be done to, as the irascible faculty restraines us from doing evill for  
feare of receiving evill : So the concupiscent oblige us to charity, that our  
selves may receive good.

42

I shall say nothing concerning the reasonableness of this precept  
but that it concurses rarely with the first reasonable appetite of man, of  
being

## THE PREFACE.

being like GOD. *Deus est mortali juvare mortalem, atque hac est ad eternitatem via*, said Pliny: And it is more blessed to give then to receive, (said our blessed SAVIOUR) and therefore the Commandment of charity in all its parts is a designe not onely to reconcile the most miserable person to some participations and sense of felicity, but to make the charitable man happy; and whether this be not very agreeable to the desires of an intelligent nature need no further enquiry. And Aristotle asking the Question, whether a man had more need of friends in prosperity or adversity makes the case equall; "Ὅτε γαρ ἀνυπότελες δέσμοις θηρεύεται· τότε δὲ περιθετές οὐπλεύειν, τοτε διπλωμένοι." When they are in want they neede assistance, when they are prosperous, they need partners of their felicity, that by communicating their joy to them it may reflect and double upon their spirits. And certaine it is, there is no greater felicity in the world, then in the content that results from the emanations of charity. And this is that which Saint John calls, the old *Ἄρτερ δ' αρχὴν* Commandment, and the new Commandment. It was of old, for it was *τοῖς ἄνθροποις* &c. from the beginning, even in nature, and to the offices of which our *Χριστὸς* is *τοὺς δικαιουόμενούς* &c. every bodies had an organ and a seate. For therefore nature gave to *αὐτῷ καὶ Σοφοῖς* a man bowells and the passion of yearning; but it grew up into religion by parts, and was made perfect, and in that degree appropriate to the Law of JESUS CHRIST. For so the holy JESUS became our Law-giver, and added many new precepts over and above *τοῖς θεοῖς* 7, 8. what were in the Law of Moses, but not more then was in the Law — *Hoc Reges habent nature. The reason of both is what I have all this while discourses* Magnificum & *CHRIST made a more perfect restitution of the Law of* *ad Adam to consummating, nulla quod rapiat dies Prodeesse misericordias supplices facere lare Protegere — Sec nec. Med.*

43.

A particular of the precept of charity is forgiving injuries, and besides that it hath many superinduced benefits by way of blessing and reward, it relies also upon this naturall reason; that a pure and a simple revenge does no way restore man towards the felicity, which the injury did interrupt. For revenge is a doing a simple evill, and does not in its formality imply reparation; for the meere repeating of my own right is permitted to them that will doe it by charitable instruments; and to secure my selfe, or the publike, against the future, by positive inflictions upon the injurious (if I be not Judge my selfe) is also within the moderation of an unblameable defence (unlesse some accident or circumstances vary the case) but forgiving injuries is a separating the malice from the wrong, the transient act from the permanent effect; and it is certaine, the act which is passed cannot be rescinded, the effect may; and if it cannot, it does no way alleviate the evill of the accident, that I draw him that caused it into as great a misery, since every evill happening in the world is the proper object of pity, which is in some sense afflictive; and therefore unlesse we become unnatural and without bowels, it is most unreasonable that we should encrease our own afflictions by introducing a new misery, and making a new object of pity. All the ends of humane felicity are secured without revenge

## THE PREFACE.

Atours nō gō revenge, for without it we are permitted to restore our selves; and  
 & iū ueragine therefore it is against naturall reason to doe an evill, that no way  
 can be by exhorta cooperates towards the proper and perfective end of humane nature.  
 πάντος αἰθρίας. And he is a miserable person, whose good is the evill of his neigh-  
 bor πόλεων τούτων. And he that revenges, in many cases does worse then he that  
 οὐδὲν δέσμον did the injury; in all cases as bad. For if the first injury was  
 πάντος τυρων an injustice to serve an end of advantage and reall benefit, then  
 πάντος κακού δι' my revenge, which is abstracted, and of a consideration separate  
 πάντος τυρων γιγ- and distinct from the reparation, is worse; for I doe him evill with-  
 ην. out doing my selfe any reall good; which he did not; for he re-  
 ceived advantage by it. But if the first injury was matter of meere  
 malice without advantage, yet it is no worse then revenge; for that  
 is just so; and there is as much phantaſtike pleasure in doing a spite,  
 as in doing revenge. They are both, but like the pleasures of  
 eating coales, and toades and vipers. And certain it is; if a man  
 upon his private flocke could be permitted to revenge, the evill would  
 be immortall. And it is rarely well discoursed by Tyndareus in Eur-  
 " pides; If the angry wife shall kill her husband, the sonne shall re-  
 " venge his Fathers death, and kill his Mother, and then the Bro-  
 " ther shall kill his Mothers murderer, and he also will meeke with  
 " an avenger for killing his Brother.

Πίεται τοῦ κακοῦ περιθώριον;

What end shall there be to such inhumane and sad accidents? If in  
 this there be injustice, it is against naturall reason; and If it be evill,  
 and disorders the felicity and security of society it is also against natu-  
 ral reason. But if it be just, it is a strange justice, that is made up  
 of so many inhumanities.

And now if any man pretends specially to reason, to the ordinate de-  
 sires and perfections of nature, and the sober discourses of philoso-  
 phy, here is in Christianity, and no where else, enough to satisfie  
 and informe his reason, to perfect his nature, and to reduce to act all  
 the propositions of an intelligent and wise spirit. And the holy Ghost  
 is promised and given in our religion to be an eternall band to keep  
 our reason from returning to the darknesses of the old creation, and  
 to promote the ends of our naturall and proper felicity. For it is not  
 a vaine thing that Saint Paul reckons *helps and governments, and healings*  
 to bee fruits of the spirit. For since the two greatest blessings of the  
 world, personall and politicall consist, that in health, this in govern-  
 ment, and the ends of humane felicity are served in nothing greater  
 for the present intervall then in these two, CHRIST did not  
 onely enioye rare prescriptions of health, such as are fasting, tem-  
 perance, chastity, and sobriety, and all the great endearements of go-  
 vernment, (and unlesse they be sacredly observed, man is infinitely  
 miserable) but also hath given his Spirit, that is, extraordinary aides  
 to the promoting these two, and facilitating the worke of nature;  
 that (as Saint Paul sayes at the end of a discourse to this very pur-  
 pose) *the excellency of the power may be of GOD and not of us.*

I shall

44.  
*Nihil est illi principi Deo qui ornem hunc mundum regit (quod quidem in terris fiat) acceptius, quam concilia, cœtus que hominum iure sociali, qua civitates appellantur. Cicer. somn. Scipion. 2. Cor. 4. 7. I. Pet. 2. 9.*

I shall adde nothing but this single consideration. GOD said to the children of Israel, *ye are a Royall Priesthood*, a Kingdome of Priests. Which was therefore true, because GOD reigned by the Priests, and the Priests lips did then preserve knowledge, and the people were so to receive the Law from their mouths, that GOD having by Lawes of his own established religion and the republike, did govern by the rule of the Law, and the minisitry of the Priests. The Priests said, *thus saith the L O R D*, and the people obeyed. And these very words are spoken to the Christian Church; *Yee are a Royall Priesthood, an holy Nation*, a peculiare people, that *yee should shew forth the praises of him that hath called you out of darknesse into his merveilous light*. That is, GOD reignes over all Christendome just as he did over the Jewes. He hath now so given to them and restored respectively all those reasonable Lawes, which are in order to all good ends person all, Oeconomicall and politcall, that if men will suffer Christian religion to doe its last intention, if man will live according to it, there needs no other coercion of Lawes, or power of the Sword. The Lawes of God revealed by Christ are sufficient to make al societies of men happy; and over all good men God reignes by his Ministers, by the preaching of the word.: And this was most evident in the three first ages of the Church, in which all Christian Societies were for all their proper entercourses perfectly guided, not by the authority and compulsion, but by the Sermons of their Spirituall Guides; infomuch, that Saint Paul sharply reprehends the Corinthians, that *Brother goeth to Law with Brother*, and that before the unbelievers; as if hee sayd, yee will not suffer CHRIST to bee your Judge, and his Law to bee your rule; which indeed was a great fault among them, not onely because they had so excellent a Law, so clearely described, (or where they might doubt, they had infallible interpreters) so reasonable and profitable, so evidently concurring to their mruuall felicity, but also because GOD did designe J E S S U S to bee their King, to reigne over them by Spirituall regiment, as himselfe did over the Jewes, till they chose a King. And when the Emperours became Christian, the case was no otherwise altered, but that the Princes themselves submitting to CHRISTS yoake, were (as all other Christians are) for their proportion to bee governed by the Royall Priesthood, that is, by the Word preached by Apostolicall persons, the politcall interest remaining as before, save that by being submitted to the Lawes of CHRIST it received this advantage, that all justice was turned to bee Religion, and became necessary, and bound upon the conscience by Divinity. And when it happens that a Kingdome is converted to Christianity, the Common-wealth is made a Church, and Gentile Priests are Christian Bishops, and the Subjects of the Kingdome are Servants of CHRIST, the Religion of the Nation is turned Christian, and the Law of the Nation made a part of the Religion; there is no change of Government, but that CHRIST is made King, and the Temporall Power is his Substitute, and is to promote the interest of obedience to him, as before hee did to CHRISTS enemie; CHRIST having left his Ministers

fers as Lieger Embassadours, to signifie and publish the Lawes of J E S U S , to pray all in C H R I S T S stead to be reconciled to G O D : so that, over the obedient C H R I S T wholly reignes by his Ministers, publishing his Lawes, over the disobedient, by the Prince also, putting thofe Lawes in execution. And in this sense it is that Saint Paul sayes, *Bonis lex non est posita*, To such ( who live after the Spirit ) there is no Law , that is, there needs no coercion. But now if wee reject G O D from reigning over us , and say like the people in the Gospel, *Nolumus hunc regnare*, we will not have him to reigne over us , by the Ministry of his Word , by the Empire of the Royall Priesthood , then we returne to the condition of Heathens, and persons sitting in darknesse, then G O D hath armed the Temporall Power with a sword to cut us off. If wee obey not G O D , speaking by his Ministers, that is, if we live not according to the excellent Lawes of Christianity , that is, *holily, soberly, and justly* in all our relations, he hath placed three swords against us , the Sword of the S P I R I T against the unholie and irreligious ; the sword of naturall and supervening infelicities upon the intemperate and unsobier ; and the Sword of Kings against the unjust ; to remonstrate the excellencie of Christianity , and how certainly it leades to all the felicite of man , because every transgression of this Law , according to its proportion makes men unhappy and unfortunate.

46.

Phil. 4. 8.

What effect this Discourse may have , I know not , I intended it to doe honour to Christianity , and to represent it to bee the best Religion in the World , and the conjugation of all excellent things that were in any Religion, or in any Philosophy , or in any Discourses. For *whatsoever was honest, whatsoever was noble, whatsoever was wise, whatsoever was of good report, if there bee any praise, if there bee any virtue* , it is in Christianity. For even to follow all these instances of excellency, is a Precept of Christianity. And me thinkes they that pretend to reason , cannot moare reasonably endeare themselves to the reputation of reason , then by endearing their reason to Christianity ; the conclusions and belief of which is the most reasonable and perfect , the most excellent designe and complying with the noblest and most proper ends of man. And if this gate may suffice to invite such persons into the recesses of the Religion, then I shall tell them , that I have dressed it in the ensuing Bookes with some variety ; and as the nature of the Religion is, some parts whereof are apt to satisfie our discourse, some to move our affections , and yet all of this to relate to practise : So is the designe of the following pages. For some men are wholly made up of passion, and their very Religion is but Passion put into the Family and Society of holy purposes : And for those I have prepared considerations upon the speciaill parts of the life of the Holy J E S U S , and yet there also are some things mingled in the least severe and most affectionate parts which may helpe to answer a Question and appease a scruple , and may give Rule for D E T E R M I N A T I O N of many cases of C O N S C I E N C E . For I have so ordered the considerations, that

## THE PREFACE.

that they spend not themselves in meere affections, and ineffective passions, but they are made doctrinall and little repositories of duty: But because of the variety of mens spirits, and of mens necessities, it was necessary I should interpose some practicall discourses more severe; For it is but a sad thought to consider that piety and bookees of devotion are counted but entertainment for little understandings, and softer spirits; and although there is much fault in such Imperious minds, that they will not distinguish the weakenesse of the writers from the reasonableness and wisedome of the religion: yet I cannot but thinke, the bookees themselves are in a large degree the occasion of so great indevotion: because they are (some few excepted) represented naked in the conclusions of spirituall life without or art or learning, and made apt for persons, who can doe nothing but *believe and love*, not for them, that can *consider and love*. And it is not well, that since nothing is more reasonable and excellent in all perfections spirituall than the doctrines of the spirit or holy life, yet nothing is offered to us, unlearnedly as this is, so miserable and empty of all its own intellectuall perfections. If I could I would have had it otherwise in the present bookees: For since the understanding is not an idle faculty in a spirituall life, but hugely operative to all excellent and reasonable choices, it were very fit that this faculty were also entertained by such discourses which GOD intended, as instruments of hallowing it, as he intended it towards the sanctification of the whole man. For want of it, busie and active men entertaine themselves with notions infinitely unsatisfying and unprofitable: But in the meane time they are not so wise. For concerning those, that study unprofitable notions, and neglect not onely that, which is wisest, but that also, which is of most reall advantage, I cannot but thinke as Aristotle did of Thales and

Anaxagoras, that they may be learned, but they are  
“not wise, or wise but not prudent, when they are  
“ignorant of such things, as are profitable to them.  
“For suppose they know the wonders of nature, and  
“the sublimities of Metaphyfickes, and operations  
“Mathematicall, yet they cannot be prudent, who  
“spend themselves wholly upon unprofitable and in-  
“effective contemplations. He is truely wise, that  
knowes best to promote the best end, that which he  
is bound to desire, and is happy, if he obtaines, and  
miserable if he misses, and that is the end of a happy eternity:  
which is obtained by the onely meanes of living according to the  
purposes of GOD and the prime intentions of nature; naturall and  
prime reason being now all one with the Christian religion. But  
then I shall onely observe that this part of wisedome, and the excellency  
of its secret and deep reason is not to be discerned, but by ex-  
perience: the propositions of this philosophy being, (as in many other)  
Empiricall and best found out by observation of reall and materiall e-  
vents. So that I may say of spirituall learning, as Quintilian said of some

διὸν Αράχωβος ἡ Θάλης καὶ τίς  
τούτους οὐδεὶς μή, οργινοὶ δὲ εἰ  
σάντινοι, θεωρῶν αἰνῆ-  
ται τὰ ουρανοῦτα διόλοι, καὶ πε-  
μπτέλια μή, καὶ θαυματά, καὶ χα-  
λεπά καὶ δακτυλία εἰδώντες φί-  
ον, ἀρπάζονται τὰ αὐθικά  
καὶ μάδα ζελον. Aristotle. l. 6.  
Eth. cap. 7.

## THE PREFACE.

of Platoes booke. *Nam Plato cum in alijs quibusdam, tum præcipue in Timo[n]e intelligi quidem nisi ab iis qui hanc quoque partem disciplina [Musica] diligenter perceperint, potest.* The secrets of the kingdome of heaven are not understood truely and throughly but by the sons of the kingdome, and by them too in severall degrees, and to various purposes; but to evill persons the whole systeme of this wisdomie is insipid and flatt, dull as the foot of a rocke, and unlearned as the elements of our mother tongue. But so are Mathematickes to a Scythian boore, and Musick to a Caniel.

47.

But I consider that the wifest persons, and those who know how to value and entertaine the more noble faculties of their soule, and their precious houres, take more pleasure in reading the productions of those old wise spirits, who preserved naturall reason and religion in the midst of heathen darkenesse (such as are *Homer*, *Euripides*, *Orpheus*, *Pindar*, and *Anacreon*, *Aeschylus* and *Menander*, and all the Greeke Poets: *Plutarch* and *Polybius*, *Xenophon* and all those other excellent persons of both faculties (whose choicest dictates are collected by *Stobaeus*) *Plato* and his Schollers, *Aristotle* and after him *Porphyry*, and all his other Disciples, *Pythagoras* and his, especially *Hierocles*: all the old Academickes and Stoicks within the Roman Schooles) more pleasure I say in reading these then the triflings of many of the later Schoolemen, who promoted a petty interest of a family, or an unlearned opinion with great earnestnesse, but added nothing to Christianity, but trouble, scruple and vexation. And from hence I hope, that they may the rather be invited to love and consider the rare documents of Christianity, which certainly is the great treasure house of those excellent, morall and perfective discourses, which with much paines and greater pleasure we find reserued and thinly scattered in all the Greeke and Roman Poets, Historians, and Philosophers.

But because I have observed, that there are some principles entertained into the persuasions of men, which are the seeds of evill life, such as are, *the doctrine of late repentance*; *the mistakes of the definition of the sins of infirmity*; *the evill understanding the consequents and nature of originall sinne*; *the sufficiency of contrition in order to pardon*, *the efficacy of the rites of Christianity without the necessity of morall adherencies*; *the nature of faith*; and many other, I was diligent to remarke such doctrines, and to pare off the mistakes so farre, that they hinder not piety, and yet as neere as I could without engaging in any Question, in which the very life of Christianity is not concerned.

“ *Hac sum profatus--haud ambagibus*  
“ *Implicita, sed qua regulis aqui et boni*  
“ *Suffulta, rudibus pariter et doctis parent.*

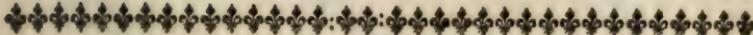
*Polynic. apud  
Eurip.*

48.

My great purpose is to advance the necessity, and to declare the manner and parts of a good life, and to invite some persons to the consideration of all the parts of it by intermixing something of pleasure with the use: others by such parts, which will better entertaine their spirits than a Romance. I have followed the designe of Scripture, and

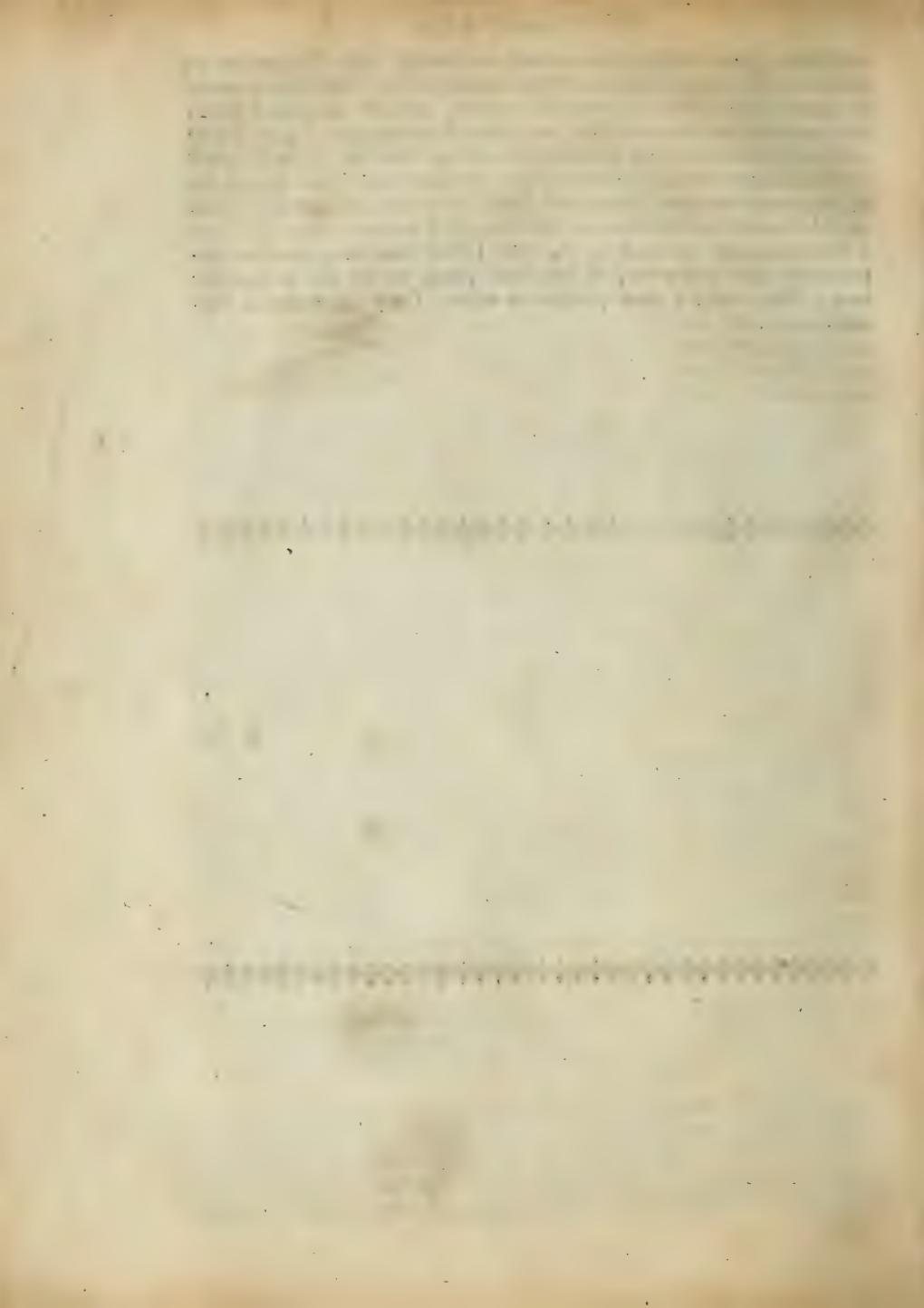
## THE PREFACE.

and have given milke for babes, and for stronger men stronger meat; and in all I have despised my owne reputation by so striving to make it wifull, that I was lesse carefull to make it strict in retired sensess, and embossed with unnecessary, but gracefull ornaments. I pray G O D this may goe forth into a blessing to all that shall use it, and reflect blessings upon mee all the way, that my spark may grow greater by kindling my brothers Taper, and G O D may bee glorified in us both. If the Reader shall receive no benefit, yet I intended him one, and I have laboured in order to it, and I shall receive a great recompence for that intention, if hee shall please to say this prayer for mee, *That while I have preached to others, I may not become a Cast-away.*



A N





THE  
FIRST PART  
OF  
THE HISTORY OF  
THE  
LIFE and DEATH  
OF THE  
HOLY IESVS.

BEGINNING

At the Annuntiation to the Blessed Virgin  
MARY, until his Baptism and Temptation,  
*INCLUSIVELY.*

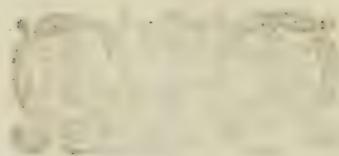
WITH  
CONSIDERATIONS and DISCOURSES  
upon the several parts of the Story, and Prayers  
fitted to the several Mysteries.



LONDON,  
Printed by R. N. 1649.

THE HISTORY OF  
THE ENGLISH  
PEOPLES  
BY  
JOHN LEECH  
1821

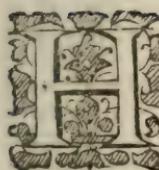
WITH A HISTORY  
OF THE  
ENGLISH  
PEOPLES  
BY  
JOHN LEECH  
1821



BY JOHN LEECH  
1821



# AN EXHORTATION TO THE imitation of the Life of CHRIST.

 Owever the person of JESUS CHRIST was depressed with Number 1. a load of humble accidents, and shadowed with the darknesses of poverty, and sad contingencies, so that the Jews, and the contemporary ages of the Gentiles, and the Apostles themselves could not at first discern the bright essence of divinity : yet as a Beauty artificially covered with a thin cloud of Cypresse, transmits its excellency to the eye made more greedy and apprehensive, by that imperfect and weak restraint; So was the sanctity and holinesse of the life of JESUS, glorious in its darknesses, and found Confessors and Admirers even in the midst of those despites which were done him upon the contrariant designes of malice, and contradictory ambition. Thus the Wife of Pilate called him *that just person*; Pilate pronounced him guiltlesse, Judas said, he was innocent, the Devil himself called him, *the Holy one of God*. For however it might concern any mans mistaken ends to mislike the purpose of his preachings, and spiritual Kingdom, and those doctrines which were destructive of their complacencies, and carnal securities ; yet they could not deny but that he was a man of God, of exemplar sanctity, of an angelicall chastity, of a life sweet, affable, and complying with humane conversation, and as obedient to government as the most humble children of the kingdom. And yet he was Lerd of all the World.

And certainly very much of this was with a designe, that he might shine to all the generations and ages of the World, and become a guiding star, and *a pillar of fire* to us in our journey. For we who believe that JESUS was perfect God, and perfect Man, do also believe that one minute of his intolerable Passion, and every action of his was satisfactory and meritorious respectively, enough for the expiation and reconcilement of ten thousand worlds : and God might upon a lesse effusion of blood, and a shorter life of merit (if he had pleased) have accepted humane nature to pardon and favour; but, that the holy JESUS hath added so many excellent instances

## AN EXHORTATION TO THE IMITATION

ces of holiness, and so many degrees of Passion, and so many kinds of virtues, is, that he might become an example to us, and reconcile our wills to him, as well as our persons to his Heavenly Father.

3. And indeed it will prove but a sad consideration, that one drop of blood shall be enough to obtain our pardon ; and the treasures of his blood running out till the fountain it self was dry, shall not be enough to procure our conformity to him : that the smallest minute of his expence shall be enough to justify us, and the whole Magazine shall not procure our Sanctification : that at a smaller expence God might pardon us, and at a greater we will not imitate him : For therefore Christ hath suffered for us (faith the Apostle) leaving an example to us, that we might follow his steps. The least of our wills cost Christ as much, as the greatest of our sins. And therefore he calls himself *the Way, the Truth, and the Life*. That as he redeems our souls from death to life, by becoming life to our Persons, so he is *the truth* to our understandings, and *the way* to our will and affections, enlightning that, and leading these in the paths of a happy Eternity.

4. When the king of Moab was pressed hard by the sons of Isaac, [the Israelites and Edomites,] he took the king of Edoms eldest son ; or as some think, his own son, the heir of his kingdom, and offered him as a Holocaust upon the wall, and the Edomites presently raised the siege at Kirharaseth, and went to their own country. The same, and much more was Gods designe, who took not his enemies, but his own Son, his only begotten Son, and God himself, and offered him up in sacrifice, to make us leave our perpetuall fightings against Heaven ; and if we still persist, we are hardened beyond the wildnesses of the Arabs and Edomites, and neither are receptive of the impresses of Pity or Humanity : who neither have compassion to the suffering of JESUS, nor complyance with the designes of God, nor conformity to the holiness and obedience of our Guide. In a dark night, if an *Ignis Fatuus* do but precede us, the glaring of its lesser flame does so anuse our eyes, that we follow it into Rivers and Precipices, as if the ray of that false light were designed on purpose to be our path to tread in : And therefore not to follow the glories of the Son of Righteousnesse, who indeed leads us over rocks and difficult places, but secures us against the danger, and guides us into safety, is the greatest both undecency, and unthankfulness in the world.

5. In the great Council of Eternity, when God set down the lawes, and knit fast the Eternal bands of Predestination, he made it one of his great purposes to make his Son like us, that we also might be like his holy Son ; he, by taking our Nature, we, by imitating his Holiness ; *God hath predestinated us to be conformable to the image of his Son* (faith the Apostle). For the first in every kinde is in Nature propounded as the pattern of the rest ; and as the Sun, the Prince of all the Bodies of Light, and the Fire of all warm substances is the principal, the rule and the copy, which they in their proportions imitate, and transcribe : So is the *Word incarnate*, the great example of all the Predestinate ; for *he is the first-born among many Brethren*. And therefore it was a precept of the Apostle, and by his Doctrine we understand its meaning ; *Put you on the Lord Jesus Christ*. The similitude declares the Duty ; as a garment is composed and made of the same

2 Kings 3:27.<sup>1</sup>

5. 2 Cor. 4:4-5.  
1 Cor. 11:14.  
1 Cor. 11:14.  
Rom. 8:29.

Ibid.

Rom. 13:14.

same fashion with the body, and is applyed to each part in its true figure and commensuration. So shoulde we put on Christ, and imitate the whole body of his Sanctity, conforming to every integral part, and expresse him in our lives, that God seeing our impresses, may know whose image and superscription we bear, and we may be acknowledged for sons when we have the tire and features, and resemblances of our elder Brother.

*Τινὲς οὐτε διδασκοῦσιν εἰρηναῖς. ὁ γὰρ αὐτὸς τις, καὶ μητέ τις οὐτοίς οὐτοῖς ὁ γὰρ φάσιν οὐ παθαγότερος, παθαγότερος τοῖς θεοῖς αἴρεσθαι τοῖς θεοῖς τοῖς διάδοχοις οὐδεποτε. Hinc.*

In the practice of this duty we may be helped by certain considerations which are like the proportion of so many rewards. For this, according to the nature of all holy Exercises, stayes not for pay till its work be quite finisched, but like musick in Churches is pleasure, and piety, and salary besides. So is every work of Grace, full of pleasure in the execution, and is abundantly rewarded, besides the stipend of a glorious Eternity.

1. And I consider that nothing is more honourable, then to be like God; and the Heathens, worshippers of false Deities grew vicious upon \* that stock; and we who have fondnesse of imitation, counting a deformity full of honour, if by it we may be like our \* Prince, (for pleasures were in their height in Capreae, because Tiberius there wallowed in them, and a wry-neck in Nero's Court was the Mode and Gallantry) might do well to make our imitations prudent and glorious; and by propounding excellent examples, heighten our faculties to the capacities of an evennesse with the best of presidents. He that strives to imitate another, admires him, and confesses his own imperfections: and therefore that our admirations be not flattering, nor our confessions phantaſtick, and impertinent, it were but reasonable to admire Him from whom really all perfections do derive, and before whose glories, all our imperfections must confess their shame, and needs of reformation. God by a voice from Heaven, and by fifteen generations of miracles and grace, hath attested the holy JESUS to be the fountain of sanctity, and the wonderful Counsellour, and the Captain of our sufferings, and the guide of our manners, by being his beloved Son in whom he took pleasure and complacency to the height of satisfaction: And if any thing in the world be motive of our affections, or satisfactory to our understandings, what is there in Heaven or Earth we can desire or imagine beyond a like-nesse to God, and participation of the Divine Nature and perfections? And therefore as when the Sun arises, every man goes to his work, and warms himself with his heat, and is refreshed with his influences, and measures his labour by its course: So shoulde we frame all the actions of our life by His light who hath shined by an excellent righteousness, that we no more walk in Darknesse, or sleep in Lethargies, or run on gazing after the lesser and imperfect beauties of the night. It is weaknesse of the organ that makes us hold our hand between the Sun and us, and yet stand staring upon a Meteor or an inflamed gelly; and our judgements are as mistaken, and our appetites are as softish, if we propound to our selves in the courses and designs of perfections any copy but of him, or something like to him, who is the most perfect; and least we think his glories to great to behold.

2. I consider that the imitation of the life of Jesus is a duty of that excellency and perfection that we are helped in it, not onely by the

6.

7.

*Ecclesiasticus 23. 20.  
\* Adulterio delectatur quis? Jovem respicit, & inde cupiditatis fux tormenta conquirit: probat, immititur, & laudata quo Deus suus in cyno fallit, in rastro rapit, iudicat in Saincto, Cœsum de cœlo facit, & errantes ammos per abrupta precipitia crudeltate calamine ducit, cum hominibus peccare voluntibus facinorum viam Dolorum monstrans exemplum. Julius Firmat. de actior. prolat. relig.*

*\* Facece recte cives suos principes ostendimus faciendo doctri, cumque sic imperio magnus, exemplo magis. V. illi. Pater.*

*—νεκρωτισμός  
δε μοι Φίλος, πατερί,  
και παπύριστις  
γαμώ περδίδει,  
περδίδεις ε τεκ-  
τενοντα λαζαρε,  
θάνατος αἱρετος  
λαζαρε, μηδονή γ'  
αλλα ιστερετος  
ερπετος σκουρο.  
Ευριπ. Γονε.*

8.

# AN EXHORTATION TO THE IMITATION

assistance of example which possibly might be too great and scare our endeavours and attempts, but also by way of compliance and proportion. For Jesus in his whole life conversed with men with a modest virtue, which like a well kindled fire fitted with just materials casts a constant heat; not like an inflamed heap of stubble, glaring with great emissions, and suddenly stooping into the thicknesse of smoak. His piety was even, constant, unblameable, complying with civill society, without affrightment of precedent, or prodigious instances of actions, greater then the imitation of men. For if we obserue our blessed Saviour in the whole story of his Life, although he was without sin, yet the instances of his piety were the actions of a very holy, but of an ordinary life; and we may obserue this difference in the story of JESUS from Ecclesiastical writings of certain beatified persons, whose life is told rather to amaze us, and to create scruples then to lead us in the evennesse, and serenity of a holy Conscience. Such are the prodigious penances of *Simeon Stylites*, the abstinenesse of the religious retired into the mountain Nitria, but especially the stories of later Saints in the midst of a declining piety, and aged Christendom where persons are represented Holy by way of Idea and fancy, if not to promote the interests of a family and institution. But our blessed Saviour though his eternall union and adherences of love and obedience to his heavenly Father were next to infinite, yet in his externall actions in which onely, with the correspondence of the Spirit in those actions, he propounds himself imitable, he did so converse with men, that men after that example might for ever converse with him. We finde that some Saints have had excrescencies and eruptions of holiness in the instances of uncommanded duties, which in the same particulars we finde not in the story of the life of JESUS. *John Baptist* was a greater mortyfier then his Lord was; and some Princes have given more money then all Christs family did, whilst he was alive; but the difference which is observeable is, that although some men did some acts of Counsel in order to attain that perfection which in JESUS was essential and unalterable, and was not acquird by degrees and means, of danger and difficulty; yet no man ever did his whole duty save onely the holy JESUS; the best of men did sometimes actions not precisely and strictly requisite, and such as were besides the duty; but yet in the greatest flames of their shining piety, they revaricated something of their duty. But JESUS who intended himselfe the example of piety, did in manners as in the rule of Faith, which because it was propounded to all men was fitted to every understanding; it was true, necessary, short, easy, and intelligible; so was his rule and his copy fitted, not onely with excellencies worthy, but with complyances possible to be imitated; of glories so great that the most early and constant industry must confesse its own imperfections, and yet so sweet and humane, that the greatest infirmitie, if pious shall finde comfort and encouragement. Thus God gave his children Manna from heaven, and though it was excellent like the food of Angels, yet it conformed to every palate according to that appetite which their severall fancies and constitutions did produce.

9.  
\* Ως ευχέσθε θεού  
τοῦ σωτήρος, μελε-  
πίζετε τὸν την  
πατέρα καὶ δίκαιο-  
ντα. Dixit Eu-  
stathius de Jamblicho

But now when the example of JESUS is so excellent, that it allures and tempts with its facility and sweetnesse, and that we are not commanded to imitate a life, whose stories tells of extasies in prayer, and \* abstractions of senses, and immateriall transportations, and fastings to the exinanition of spirits.

spirits and disabling all animall operations: but a life of Justice and Temperance, of Chastity and Piety, of Charity and devotion, such a life without which humane society cannot be conserved and by which as our irregularities are made regular, so our weaknesses are not upbraided, nor our miseries made a mockery; we finde so much reason to addresse our selves to a heavenly imitation of so blessed a pattern, that the reasonableness of the thing will be a great argument to chide every degree and minute of neglect. It was a strange and a confident encouragement which *Phocion* used to a timerous Greek who was condemned to die with him; *Is it not enough to thee that thou mayst die with Phocion?* I am sure he that is most incurious of the issues of his life is yet willing enough to reign with J E S U S when he looks upon the glories represented without the duty; but it is a very great stupidity and unreasonableness not to live with him in the imitation of so holy and so prompt a piety. It is glorious to do what he did, and a shame to decline his sufferings when there was a God to hallow and sanctifie the actions, and a man clothed with infirmity to undergo the sharpnesse of the passion, so that the glory of the person added excellency to the first, and the tenderness of the person excused not from suffering the latter.

3. Every action of the life of JESUS, as it is imitable by us, is of so excellent merit, that by making up the treasure of grace, it becomes full of assistances to us and obtains of God grace to enable us to its imitation by way of influence and impetration. For as in the acquisition of habits the very exercise of the action does produce a facility to the action, and in some proportion becomes the cause of its self: So does every exercise of the life of CHRIST, kindle its own fires, inspires breath into it self, and makes an univocall production of its self in a differing subject; and JESUS becomes the fountain of spiritual Life to us, as the Prophet *Elisha* to the dead childe: when he stretched his hands upon the childes hands, laid his mouth to his mouth, and formed his posture to the boy, and breathed into him; the spirit returned again into the childe at the prayer of *Elisha*: so when our lives are formed into the imitation of the life of the holiest JESUS, the spirit of God returns into us not onely by the efficacie of the imitation, but by the merit and impetration of the actions of JESUS. It is reported in the Bohemian story that *S. Wenceslaus* their King one winter night going to his devotions in a remote Church, barefooted in the snow, and sharpnesse of unequal and pointed ice, his servant *Podavirius* who waited upon his Masters piety, and endeavoured to imitate his affections began to faint through the violence of the snow and cold, till the King commanded him to follow him, and set his feet in the same footsteps which his feet should mark for him; the servant did so, and either fancied a cure or found one: for he followed his Prince helpt forward with shame and zeal to his imitation, and by the fearing footsteps for him in the snow: In the same manner does the blessed JESUS; for since our way is troublesom, obscure, full of objection and danger, apt to be mistaken and affright our industry; he commands us to mark his footsteps, to tread where his feet have stood, and not onely invites us forward by the argument of his example, but he hath troden down much of the difficulty and made the way easier and fit for our feet. For he knows our infirmities and himself hath felt their experience in all things but in the neighbourhoods of sin; and therefore he hath proportioned a

10.

Histor. Bohem. l. 4.

## AN EXHORTATION TO THE IMITATION

way and a path to our strengths and capacities; and like Jacob hath marched softly and in evennesse with the children and the cattle, to entertain us by the comforts of his company, and the influences of a perpetuall guide.

11.

4 But we must know that not every thing which CHRIST did, is imitable by us, neither did he in the work of our redemption in all things imitate his heavenly Father. For there are some things which are issues of an absolute power, some are expresses of supreme dominion, some are actions of a Judge, and therefore JESUS prayed for his enemies, and wept over Hierusalem, when at the same instant his Eternall Father laughd them to scorn, for he knew that *their day was coming*, and himself had decreed their ruine. But it became the holy JESUS to imitate his Fathers mercies; for himself was the great instrument of the eternall Compassion; and was the instance of mercy; and therefore in the operation of his Fathers designe, every action of his was univocall and he shewed the power of his Divinity in nothing but in miracles of mercy and illnistrations of faith by creating arguments of credibility: In the same proportion we follow JESUS as himself followed his Father; For what he abated by the order to his intendement and designe, we abate by the proportions of our nature; for some excellent acts of his were demonstrations of Divinity, and an excellent grace poured forth upon him *without measure* was their instrument; to which proportions if we should extend our infirmities, we should crack our finews and dissolve the silver cords before we could entertain the instances and support the burthen. JESUS fasted fourty dayes and fourty nights; but the manner of our fastings have been in all ages limited to the term of an artificial day; and in the primitive observations, and the Jewesh rites, men did eat their meal assoon as the stars shone in the firmament. We never read that JESUS laughed, and but once that he rejoiced in spirit; but the Declensions of our Natures cannot bear the weight of a perpetuall grave deportment without the intervals of refreshment and free alacrity. Our ever blessed Saviour suffered the Devotion of *Mary Magdalene* to transport her to an expensive expression of her Religion, and twice to anoint his feet with costly Nard; and yet if persons whose conditions were of no greater lustre or resplendency of Fortune, then was conspicuous in his family and retinue, should suffer the same profusion upon the dressing and perfuming their bodies, possibly it might be truly said, *It might better be sold and distributed to the poor*. This JESUS received as he was the CHRIST and anointed of the Lord, and by this, he suffered himself to be designed to burial, and he received the oblation as Eucharisticall for the ejection of seven Devils, *for therefore she loved much*.

12.

The instances are not many, for however JESUS had some extraordinary transvolations and acts of emigration beyond the lines of his even and ordinary conversation, yet it was but seldom, for his being exemplary was of so great consideration that he chose to have fewer instances of wonder, that he might transmit the more of an imitable vertue. And therefore we may establish this for a rule, and limit of our imitations. Because CHRIST our Law-giver hath describd all his Fathers will in sanctions and signature of Laws; whatsoever he commanded, and whatsoever he did of precise morality or in pursuance of the laws of Nature, in that we are to trace his footsteps; and in these his laws and his practise differ but as a map and a guide.

guide, a law and a Judge, a rule and a president. But in the special instances of action we are to abate the circumstances, and to separate the obedience from the effect, and whatsoever was morall in a ceremoniall performance that is highly imitable, and the obedience of sacrificing and the subordination to laws actually in being, even now they are abrogated, teach us our duty, in a differing subject upon the like reason. JESUS going up to Hierusalem to the feasts, and his observation of the Sabbaths teach us our duty in celebration of Festivals constitute by a competent and just authority. For that which gave excellency to the observation of Mosaicall rites, was an Evangelicall duty, and the piety of obedience did not onely consecrate the observations of *Levi*, but taught us our duty in the constitutions of Christianity.

13.

5. As the holy JESUS did some things which we are not to imitate, so we also are to do some things which we cannot learn from his example. For there are some of our duties which presuppose a state of sin; and some suppose a violent temptation and promptnesse to it, and the duties of prevention and the instruments of restitution are proper to us, but conveyed onely by precept and not by president; Such are all the parts and actions of repentance, the duties of mortification and self deniall for whatsoever the H. JESUS did in the matter of austerity, looked directly upon the work of our Redemption, and looked back onely on us by a reflex act as CHRIST did on *Peter* when he lookd him into repentence. Some states of life also there are which JESUS never lead, such are those of temporall Governours Kings and Judges, Merchants, Lawyers, and the state of marriage, in the course of which lives many cases do occurrre, which need a president, and the vivacity of an excellent example, especially since all the rules which they have, have not prevented the subtilty of the many inventions which men have found out, nor made provision for all contingencies. Such persons in all their speciall needs are to govern their actions by the rules of proportion, by analogy to the holinesse of the person of JESUS, and the sanctity of his institution: considering what might become a person professing the Discipline of so holy a Master, and what he would have done in the like case, taking our heights by the excellency of his innocency and charity. Onely remember this, that in such cases we must always judge on the strictest side of piety and charity, if it be a matter concerning the interest of a second person, and that in all things we do those actions which are furthest removed from scandall, and such as towards our selves are severe, towards others, full of gentlenesse and sweetnesse. For so would the righteous and mercifull JESUS have done; these are the best analogies and proportions. And in such cases when the wells are dry, let us take water from a cistern, and proppound to our selves some exemplar Saint, the necessities of whose life, hath determinid his piety to the like occurrences.

14.

But now from these particulars we shall best account, to what the duty of the imitation of J E S U S does amount: for it signifies, that we *should walk as he walked*, tread in his steps, with our hand upon the guide, and our eye upon his rule, that we should do glory to him as he did to his Father, and that whatsoever we do, we should be careful that it do him honour, and no reproach to his institution; and then account these to be the integrall parts of our duty, which are imitation of his actions or his spirit,

rit, of his rule or of his life, there being no better imitation of him then in such actions as do him pleasure, however he hath expressed or intimated the precedent.

15.

He that gives almes to the poor, takes J E S U S by the hand ; he that patiently endures injuries and affronts, helps him to bear his Croffe : He that comforts his brother in affliction, gives an amiable kisse of peace to J E S U S : He that bathes his own and his Neighbours sins in tears of penance and compassion, washes his Masters feet : we lead J E S U S into the recesses of our heart by holy meditations : And we enter into his heart , when we expresse him in our actions , for so the Apostle sayes, *He that is in Christ, walks as he also walked.* But thus the actions of our life relate to him by way of worship and religion, but the use is admirable and effectual when our actions refer to him as to our copy, and we transcribe the Original to the Life. He that consideris with what affections and lancinations of spirit, with what effusions of love J E S U S prayed, what fervours and affiduity , what innocency of wish, what modesty of posture, what subordination to his Father, and conformity to the Divine Pleasure were in all his Devotions, is taught and excited to holy and religious pray-  
ers : The rare sweetnesse of his deportment in all temptations and violences of his Passion, his charity to his enemies, his sharp reprehensions to the Scribes and Pharisees, his ingenuity toward all men, are living and effectual Sermons to teach us patience and humility, and zeal and candid simplicity, and justice, in all our actions. I adde no more instances , be-cause all the following Discourses will be prosecutions of this intendement. And the life of J E S U S is not described to be like a picture in a Chamber of Pleasure, onely for beauty and entertainment of the eye , but like the Egyptian Hyeroglyphicks , whose every feature is a precept , and the Images converse with men by sense, and signification of excellent discourses.

16.

Seneca. Ep. 11.

It was not without great reason advised, that every man should propound the example of a wife and virtuous personage , as *Cato*, or *Socrates*, or *Brutus*, and by a fiction of imagination to suppose him present as a witnessse, and really to take his life as the direction of all our actions. The best and most excellent of the old Law-givers and Philosophers among the Greeks, had an alloy of vitiouſneſſe, and could not be exemplary all over : Some were noted for flatterers, as *Plato* and *Aristippus* ; some for incontinency, as *Aristotle*, *Epicurus*, *Zeno*, *Theognis*, *Plato*, and *Aristippus* again ; and *Socrates*, whom their Oracle affirmed to be the wisest and most perfect man, yet was by *Porphyry* noted for extream intemperance of anger both in words and actions : And those Romans who were offered to them for examples, although they were great in reputation, yet they had also great vices ; *Brutus* dipt his hand in the blood of *Caſar* his Prince, and his Father by love, endearments and adoption. And *Cato* was but a wise man all day, at night he was used to drink too liberally ; and these were the best among the Gentiles. But how happy and richly furnished are Christians with presidents of Saints , whole faith and revelations have been productive of more spiritual graces, and greater degrees of moral perfections ? And this I call the privilege of a very great affiance, that I might advance the reputation and account of the life of the glorious J E S U S, which is not abated by

*Athenagoras. lib. 3.*  
& 13. & *Theognis de  
ſe ſicut reſtantur Ro-  
manni & Letantini.*  
Hoc notis. Cuvilli  
L.S. contra Julianum.

*Narratur & priſci  
Catonis ſequi meo  
cauſicis virtutis,  
Horat.*

by the imperfections of humane nature as they were, but receives great heightnings and perfection from the Divinity of his Person, of which they were never capable.

Let us therefore presse after JESUS as *Elijah* did after his Master, with an inseparable prosecution even whither soever he goes; that according to the reasonableness and proportion expressed in S. Pauls advice, *As we have born the image of the earthly, we may also bear the image of the heavenly*. For in vain are we called Christians, if we live not according to the example and discipline of Christ the Father of the institution. When S. Laurence was in the midst of the torments of the Gridiron, he made this to be the matter of his joy and Eucharist, that he was admitted to the gates through which J E S U S had entred: and therefore thrice happy are they who walk in his courts all their dayes. And it is yet a neerer union and vicinity to imprint his life in our souls, and expresse it in our exterior converse; and this is done by him only who (as S. Prosper describes the duty) despises all those guilded vanities which he despised, that fears none of thole sadnesses which he suffered, that practises or also teaches those doctrines which he taught, and hopes for the accomplishment of all his promises. \* And this is tuest Religion, and the most solemn Adoration.

17.

<sup>1</sup> Cor. 15.49.<sup>2</sup> Item Malachie Alber, apud S. Berardum in vita S. Mal.Lib. 2. de vita con-  
templat. cap. 21.<sup>3</sup> Religio sumus cul-  
tus imitati. L. Anna.

## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Eternal, Holy, and most glorious J E S U S, who hast united two natures of distance infinite, descending to the lownesses of humane nature, that thou mightest exalt humane nature to a participation of the Divinity, we thy people that sate in darknesse, and in the shadows of death, have seen great light, to entertain our understandings and enlighten our souls, with its excellent influences, but not to amuse the faculty, or confound the Organ. For the excellency of thy sanctity shining gloriously in every part of thy life, is like thy Angel, the pillar of fire which called thy children from the darknesses of Egypt. Lord open my eyes, and give me power to behold thy righteous glories, and let my soul be so entertained with affections and holy ardors, that I may never look back upon the flames of Sodome, but may follow thy light, which recreates and enlightens and guides us to the mountains of safety, and sanctuaries of Holiness. Holy J E S U S, since thy image is imprinted on our nature by creation, let me also expresse thy image by all the parts of a holy life, conforming my will and affections to thy holy precepts, submitting my understanding to thy dictates and lessons of perfection; imitating thy sweeteness and excellencies of society, thy devotion in prayer, thy conformity to G O D, thy zeal tempered with meeknesse, thy patience heightned

## THE PRAYER.

heightened with charity, that heart, and hands, and eyes, and all my faculties, may grow up with the increase of God, till I come to the full measure of the stature of C H R I S T; even to be a perfect man in C H R I S T J E S U S, that at last in thy light I may see light, and reap the fruits of glory from the seeds of sanctity in the imitation of thy holy life, O blessed and holy Saviour J E S U S. Amen.



The

---

# THE LIFE OF OVR Blessed L ORD and S A V I O U R J E S V S C H R I S T.

## Sect. 1.

### *The History of the Conception of J E S V S.*

When the fulnesse of time was come, after the frequent repetition of promises, the expectation of the Jewish Nation, the longings and tedious waitings of all holy persons, the departure of the Scepter from Judah and the Lawgiver from between his feet, God having great compassion toward mankinde, remembiring his promises and our great necessities sent his Son into the world to take upon him our nature, and all that guilt of sin which stuck close to our nature, and all that punishment which was consequent to our sin ; which came to passe after this manner.

In the dayes of Herod the king, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God to a city of Galilee named Nazareth, to a holy Maid called Mary, espoused to Joseph, and found her in a capacity and excellent disposition to receive the greatest honour that ever was done to the daughters of men. Her imployment was holy and pious, her person young, her yeers florid and springing, her body chast, her minde humble, and a rare repository of divine graces. She was full of grace and excellencies. And God poured upon her a full measure of honour in making her the mother of the *Messias*. For the Angel came to her and said, *Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee, Blessed art thou among women.*

We cannot but imagine the great mixture of innocent disturbances and holy passions that in the first addresse of the Angel did rather discompose her setlednesse, and interrupt the silence of her spirits, then dispossesse her dominion which she ever kept over those subjects, which never had been taught to rebel beyond the meer possibilities of natural imperfection. But if the Angel appeared in the shape of a man, it was an unusual arrest to the blessed Virgin, who was accustomed to retirements, and solitariness, and had not known an experience of admitting a comely person, but a stranger to her closet and privacies. But if the Heavenly Messenger did retain a dianer form, more symbolical to Angelical nature, and more proportionable to his glorious Message, although her daily imployment was a conversation

1.

2.

3.

sation with Angels, who in their daily ministering to the Saints *did behold her chaste conversation coupled with fear*, yet they used not any affrighting glories in the offices of their daily attendances, but were seen only by spiritual discernings. However, so it hapned, that when she saw him *she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.*

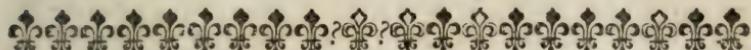
4. But the Angel who came with designes of honour and comfort to her, was not willing that the inequality and glory of the Messenger shoule, like too glorious a light to a weaker eye, rather confound the faculty, then enlighten the Organ, did, before her thoughts could finde a tongue, invite her to a more familiar confidence then possibly a tender Virgin (thoogh of the greatest serenity and composure) could have put on in the presence of such a beauty and such a holiness. And the Angel said unto her, *Fear not Mary, for thou hast found favour with G O D. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a Son, and shalt call his name J E S U S.*

5. The Holy Virgin knew her self a person very unlikely to be a mother, for although the desires of becoming a Mother to the M E S S I A S were great in every of the daughters of Jacob, and about that time the expectation of his revelation was high and pregnant, and therefore she was espoused to an honest and a just person of her kinred and family, and so might not despair to become a Mother, yet she was a person of a rare sanctity, and so mortified a spirit, that for all this desponsation of her according to the desires of her parents, and the custom of the nation, she had not set one step toward the consummation of her marriage, so much as in thought; and possibly had set her self back from it by a vow of chastity and holy coelitiate. For Mary said unto the Angel, *How shall this be, seeing I know not a man.*

6. But the Angel, who was a person of that nature, which knowes no conjunctions but those of love and duty; knew that the piety of her soul, and the religion of her chaste purposes was a great imitator of Angelical purity, and therefore perceived where the Philosophy of her question did consist; and being taught of God, declared, that the manner should be as miraculous, as the message it self was glorious. For the Angel told her that this should not be done by any way which our sin and the shame of Adam had unhallowed, by turning Nature into a blush, and forcing her to a retirement from a publick attesting the means of her own preservation; but the whole matter was from God, and so should the manner be; For the Angel said unto her, *The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the highest shall overshadow thee, therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.*

7. When the Blessed Virgin was so ascertained, that she should be a Mother and a Maid; and that two glories, like the two luminaries of Heaven should meet in her, that she might in such a way become the Mother of her Lord, that she might with better advantages be his servant; then all her hopes and all her desires received such satisfaction, as filled all the corners of her heart so much, as indeed was fain to make room for its reception. But she to whom the greatest things of Religion, and the transportations of Devotion were made familiar by the assiduity and piety of her daily practises, however she was full of joy, yet she was carried like a full vessel without the violent tossings of a tempestuous passion, or the wracks of a stormy imagination;

nation; and as the power of the holy Ghost did descend upon her like rain into a fleece of wooll, without any obstreperous noises or violences to nature, but onely the extraordinarieſſe of an exaltation: ſo her ſpirit received it with the gentlenesse and tranquillity fitted for the entertainment of the ſpirit of love, and a quietneſſe ſymbolicall to the holy gueſt of her ſpotleſſe womb, the Lamb of God; for ſhe meekly replied, *Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according unto thy word. And the angel departed from her,* Having done his meſſage. And at the ſame time the holy Spirit of God did make her to conceive in her womb the immaculate Son of God, the Saviour of the World.



### Ad. Sect. I.

## Considerations upon the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin MARY, and the Conception of the Holy JESUS.

Hath which shines brighteſt preſents it ſelf firſt to the eye, and the devout ſoul in the chain of excellent and pretioſe things, which are repreſented in the Counſel, deſigne, and firſt beginnings of the work of our redempſion, hath not leifer to attend the twinkling of the leſſer stars, till it hath ſtood and admired the glory and eminencies of the Divine love, manifeſted in the incarnation of the Word eternall. God had no neceſſity in order to the conſervation of his heightning his own felicity, but out of meer and perfect charity and the bowels of compassion ſent into the world his onely Son for remedy to humane miſeries, to innoble our nature by an union with Divinity, to ſanctifie it with his justice, to inrich it with his grace, to instruct it with his doctrine, to fortifie it with his example, to rescue it from ſervitude, to aſsert it into the liberty of the ſons of God, and at laſt to make it partaker of a beatificall Rureſtreſion.

God, who in the infinite treasures of his wiſdom and proviſence, could have found out many other wayes for our redempſion then the incarnation of his eternall Son, was pleaſed to choose this, not onely that the remedy by man might have proportion to the cauſes of our ruine, whose introduction and intromiſſion was by the prevarication of man; but also that we might with freer diſpenſation receive the influences of a Saviour with whom we communicate in nature; although *Abana* and *Pharpar*, rivers of *Damascus*, were of greater Name and current; yet they were not ſo ſalutary as the waters of *Jordan* to cure *Naamans* leproſie; and if God had made the remedy of humane nature to have come all the way clothd in prodigy, and every instant

Cum inter nos & Deum, discordiam peccando fecimus, ramen ad nos Deus legatum suum prior misit, ut nos ipſi qui peccavimus ad pacem Dei, rogati veniamus.  
S. Gregorius

I.

C.

## Ad. Sect. I. CONSIDERATIONS UPON THE ANNUNCIATION

instant of it's execution had been as terrible, affrighting, and as full of Majestie as the apparitions upon Mount Sinai, yet it had not been so usefull and complying to humane necessities, as was the descent of God to the susception of humane Nature, whereby (as in all medicaments) the cure is best wrought by those instruments which have the fewest dissonancies to our temper, and are the neareste to our constitution. For thus the Saviour of the world, became humane, alluring, full of invitation, and the sweetnesse of love, exemplary, humble and medicinal.

3. And if we consider the reasonableness of the thing, what can be given more excellent for the redenption of Man, then the blood of the Son of God? And what can more ennable our nature, then that by the means of his holy humanity it was taken up into the \* Cabinet of the mysterious Trinity? What better advocate could we have for us, then he that is appointed to be our Judge? And what greater hopes of reconciliation can be imagined, then that God, in whose power it is to give an absolute pardon, hath

\* Quod sperare nullus auerbar: quod si forte in mentali actione inciderit, potest a futura se in blessemant incertis. So. Præfatis.

taken a new nature, entertaind an office, and undergone a life of poverty with a purpose to procure our pardon? For now, though as the righteous Judge he will judge the nations righteously; yet by the susception of our nature, and it's appendant crimes he is become a party; and having obliged himself as man, as he is God he will satisfie, by putting the value of an infinite merit to the actions and sufferings of his humanity. And if he had not been God, he could not have given us remedy; if he had not been man, we should have wanted the excellency of example.

4. And till now, humane nature was leſſe then that of Angels; but by the Incarnation of the Word, was to be exalted above the Cherubims; yet the \* Archangel Gabriel being dispacht in Embassie to represent the joy and exaltation of his inferiour, instantly trimis his wings with love and obedience, and hastens with this narrative to the holy Virgin; And if we should reduce our prayers to action, and do Gods will on earth, as the Angels in heaven do it, we should promptly execute every part of the Divine will, though it were to be instrumentall to the exaltation of a Brother above our selves; knowing no end but conformity to the Divine will, and making simplicite of intention to be the fringes and exterior borders of our garments.

5. When the eternall God meant to stoop so low as to be fixt to our center, he chose for his mother a holy person and a maid, but yet affianced to a just man, that he might not onely be secure in the innocency, but also provided for in the reputation of his holy Mother. Teaching us, that we must not onely satisfie our selves in the purity of our purposes and hearty innocence, but that we must provide also things honest in the sight of all men; being free from the suspicion and semblances of evil; so making provision for private innocence and publike honesty; it being necessary in order to charity and edification of our Brethren, that we hold forth no impure flames or smoaking firebrands, but pure and trimm'd lamps in the eyes of all the world.

6. And yet her marriage was more mysterious; for as besides the miracle it was an eternall honour and advancement to the glory of Virginity, that he chose a Virgin for his Mother; so it was in that manner attempered, that the Virgin was betrothed least honorable marriage, might be disreputed, and

\* apabyl d' ides  
et idv. et idv. et idv.  
nois iyzzytay  
e3briG.  
B. in Pystag.

and seem inglorious by a positive rejection from any participation of the honour.

The Angel in his addresse needed not to go in inquisition after a wandering fire, but knew she was a star fixt in her own Orb: he found her at home, and least that also might be too large a Circuit, she was yet confined to a more intimate retirement; she was in her Oratory private and devout; there are some \* curiosities so bold and determinate as to tell the very matter of her prayer, and that she was praying for the salvation of all the world, and the revelation of the *Messias*, desiring she might be so happy, as to kiss the feet of her who shoud have the glory to be his Mother. We have no security of the particular; but there is no piety so diffident as to require a signe to create a belief that her imployment at the instant was holy and religious; but in that disposition she received a grace, which the greatest Queens would have purchased with the quitting of their Diadems; and hath consigned an excellent Document to all women, that they accustom themselves often to those retirements, where none but God and his Angels can have admittance. For the holy JESUS can come to them too, and dwel with them, hallowing their souls, and configning their bodies to a participation of all his glories. But recollecting of all our scattered thoughts and exteriour extravagancies, and a receding from the inconveniences of a too free Conversation is the best Circumstance to dispose us to a heavenly visitation.

8.  
The holy Virgin when she saw an Angel, and heard a testimony from heaven of her grace and piety, was troubled within herself at the salutation, and the manner of it. For she had learnd, that the affluence of divine comforts and prosperous successes should not exempt us from fear, but make it the more prudent and wary, least it intangle us in a vanity of Spirit: God having ordered that our Spirits should be affected with dispositions in some degrees contrariant to exteriour events, that we be fearfull in the affluence of prosperous things, and joyfull in adversity, as knowing that this may produce benefit and advantage; and the changes that are consequent to the other are sometimes full of mischiefs, but alwayes of danger. But her silence and fear were her guardians; that, to prevent excrescencies of joy, this, of vainer complacency.

9.  
And it is not altogether inconsiderable to observe that the holy Virgin came to this great perfection and state of piety by a few, and those, modest and even exercises, and externall actions. S. Paul travelled over the world, preached to the Gentiles, disputed against the Jews, confounded Hareicks, wrot excellently learned letters, suffered dangers, injuries, affronts and persecutions to the height of wonder, and by these violences of life, action and patience obtained the crown of an excellent religion and devotion: But the holy Virgin, although she was ingaged sometimes in an active life, and in the exercise of an ordinary and small oeconomy and government of a family yet she arrived to her perfections by the means of a quiet and silent piety; the internall actions of love, devotion and contemplation: and instructs us, that not onely those who have opportunity and powers of a magnificent religion or a pompous charity, or miraculous conversion of souls, or assiduous and effectuall preachings, or exteriour demonstrations of corporall mercy, shall have the greatest crowns and the addition of degrees and accidentall rewards: but the silent affections, the splendours of an internall

devotion, the unions of love, humility and obedience, the daily offices of prayer and praises sung to God, the acts of faith and fear, of patience and meeknesse, of hope and reverence, repentance and charity, and those graces which walk in a vail and silence make great ascents to God, and as sure progress to favour and a crown, as the more ostentous and laborious exercises of a more solemn religion. No man needs to complain of want of power, or opportunities for religious perfections; a devout woman in her closet, praying with much zeal and affections for the conversion of souls, is in the same order to a shining, like the stars in glory, as he, who by excellent discourses puts it into a more forward disposition to be actually performed. And possibly her prayers obtained energy and force to my Sermon, and made the ground fruitfull, and the seed spring up to life eternall. Many times God is present in the still voice, and private retirements of a quiet religion, and the constant spiritualities of an ordinary life; when the loud and impetuous windes, and the shining fires of more laborious, and expensive actions are profitable to others onely, like a tree of Balsome distilling pretious liquour for others, not for its own use.



## The P R A Y E R.

O Eternal and Almighty God, who didst send thy holy Angel in embassy to the blessed Virgin-Mother of our Lord, to manifest the aeuuating thine eternall purpose of the redemption of mankind by the incarnation of thine eternall son; put me by the assistances of thy Divine grace into such holy dispositions, that I may never impede the event and effect of those mercies, which in the Councells of thy predestination thou didst designe for me. Give me a promptnesse to obey thee to the degree and semblance of Angelicall alacrity; give me holy purity and piety, prudence and modesty, like those excellencies which thou didst create in the ever blessed Virgin the Mother of God; grant that my imployment be alwayes holy, unmixt with worldly affections, and as much as my condition of life will bear, retired from secular interests and disturbances, that I maay converse with Angels, entertain the holy JESUS, conceive him in my Soul, nourish him with the expresses of most innocent and holy affections, and bring him forth and publisch him in a life of piety and obedience, that he may dwell in me for ever, and I may for ever dwell with him in the house of eternall pleasures and glories world without end. Amen.

The



## Sect. 2.

### *The bearing of JESUS in the womb of the blessed Virgin.*

ALthough the blessed Virgin had a faith as prompt and ready as her body was chaste, and her soul pure, yet God, who uses to give full measure, shaken together, and running over, did by way of confirmation and fixing the confidence of her assent give an instance of his omnipotency in the very particular of an extraordinary conception: For the Angel said, *Bethold thy cousin Elizabeth hath also conceived a son in her old age, and this is the sixth moneth with her that was called barren: for with God nothing shall be impossible.* A lese argument would have satisfied the necessity of a faith, which had no scruple; and a greater would not have done it in the incredulity of an ungentle and pertinacious spirit. But the holy Maid had complacency enough in the message, and holy desires about her to carry her understanding as far as her affections, even to the fruition of the Angels message, which is such a sublimity of faith, that it is its utmost consummation, and shall be its crown when our faith is turned into vision, our hopes into actuall possessions, and our grace into glory.

And she, who was now full of God, bearing God in her virgin womb, and the holy Spirit in her heart, who had also overshadowed her, enabling her to a supernaturall and miraculous conception, arose with haste and gladnesse to communicate that joy which was delignd for all the world; and she found no breast to pour forth the first emanations of her overjoyed heart, so fit as her cousin Elizabeth, who had received testimony from God to have been righteous, walking in all the commandments of the Lord blamelesse, who also had a speciall portion in this great honour; for she was designd to be the mother of the Baptist who was sent as a forerunner to prepare the wayes of the Lord, and to make his paths straight, and Mary arose in those dayes and went into the hill country with haste into a city of Judah.

Her haste was in proportion to her joy and desires, but yet went no greater pace then her religion; for as in her journey she came neer to Jerusalem, she turned in that she might visit his temple, Whose Temple she her self was now; and there, not only to remember the pleasures of religion, which she had felt in continual descents and showres falling on her pious heart for the space of eleven yeers attendance there in her childhood, but also

2.

3.

also to pay the first fruits of her thanks, and joy, and to lay all her glory at his feet, whose humble handmaid she was in the greatest honour of being his blessed mother. Having worshipped, she went on her journey, and entered into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elizabeth.

4.

It is not easy to imagin what a collision of joyes was at this blessed meeting; two mothers of two great Princes, the one *the greatest that was born of woman*, and the other was his Lord, and these made mothers by two miracles, met together with joy and mysteriousnesse, where the Mother of our Lord, went to visit the mother of his servant, and the holy Ghost made the meeting festivall, and descended upon Elizabeth and she prophesied. Never but in heaven was there more joy and extasie. The persons were women whose fancies and affections were not onely hallowed, but made pregnant and big with religion, meeting together to compare and unite their joyes, and their Eucharist, and then made propheticall and inspired, must needs have discoursed like Seraphims and the most extasied order of intelligenties; for all the faculties of nature were turned into grace, and expressed in their way, the excellent solemnitie. *For it came to passe when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the Babe leaped in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.*

5.

After they had both prophesied and sang their hymns, and resaluted each other with the religion of saints, and the joyes of Angels, *Mary abode with her cousin Elizabeth, about three moneths, and then returned to her own house.* Where when she appeared with her holy burden to her husband Joseph, and that he perceived her to be with childe, and knew that he had never unsealed that holy fountain of virginall purity, he was troubled; for although her deportment had been pious and chaste to a miracle, her carriage reserved, and so grave that she drove away temptations and impure visits, and all unclean purposes from the neighbourhood of her holy person; yet when he saw she was with childe, and had not yet been taught a lesson higher then the principles of nature, he was minded to put her away, for he knew she was with childe; but yet privily, because he was a good man, and knew her piety to have been such, that it had almost done violence to his fence, and made him disbelieve what was visible and notorious, and therefore he would do it privately. But while he thought on these things, the Angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, *Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife, for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.* Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife.

Con-

Ad. Sect. 2.

*Considerations concerning the circumstances  
of the Intervall between the conception  
and Nativitie.*

**V**hen the blessed Virgin was ascertained of the manner of her becoming a Mother, and that her tremblings were over upon the security she should preserve her virgin purity as a clean oblation to the honour of God, then she exprest her content to the Angelicall message, and instantly she conceived the holy JESUS in her womb by the supernaturall and divine influence of the holy Ghost. For she was highly zealous to reconcile her being Mother to the *Messias*, with those purities and holy celibate, which she had desynd to keep as advantages to the interests of religion, and his honour who chose her from all the daughters of Adam to be instrumentall of the resti-  
stution of grace and innocence to all her Fathers family. And we shall re-  
ceive benefit from so excellent example, if we be not so desirous of a  
priviledge, as of a vertue; of honour as of piety; and as we submit to the  
weight and pressure of sadness, and infelicities that Gods will may be ac-  
complished, so we must be also ready to renounce an extrejour grace or  
favour, rather then it should not be consistent with exemplar and rare piety.

When the Son of God was incarnate in the womb of his Virgin-Mother, the holy Maid arose; and though she was superexalted by an honour greater then the world yet ever saw, she stiill dwelt upon the foundation of humility, and to make that vertue more signall and eminent, she arose and went haffily to visit her Cousin *Elizabeth*, who also had conceived a son in her old age; for so we all should be curious and watchfull against vanities and transpor-  
tations, when we are advanced to the gayeties of prosperous accidents, and in the greatest priviledges descend to the lowest, to exercise a greater measure of vertue against the danger of those tentations which are planted against our heart to ruine our hopes and glories.

But the joyes that the Virgin Mother had, were such as concerned all the world, and that part of them, which was her peculiar, she would not conteale from persons apt to their entertainment, but go to publish Gods mercy toward her to another holy person, that they might joyn in the praises of God; as knowing, that though it may be convenient to represent our personall necessities in private, yet Gods gracious returns, and the bles-  
sings he makes to descend on us are more fit, when there is no personall danger collaterally appendant, to be published in the Communion of Saints; that the hopes of others may receive increase, that their faith may have confirmation, that their charity and Eucharist may grow up to become excellent and great, and the praises of God may be sung aloud, till the sound strikes at heaven, and joyn with the Hallelujahs which the morning stars in their Orbs pay to their great Creatour.

4.

When the holy virgin had begun her journey, she made hast over the mountains, that she might not only satisfie the desires of her joy by a speedy gratulation, but least she should be too long abroad, under the dispersion and discomposing of her retirements: And therefore she hastens to an inclosure, to her Cousins house, as knowing that all vertuous women, like *Tortoises*, carry their house on their heads, and their chappel in their heart, and their danger in their eye, and their soules in their hands, and God in all their actions. And indeed, her burden, which she bare, hindred her not, but she might make hast enough; for as her spirit was full of cheerfulness and alacrity, so even her body was made airy and vegete. For there was no sin in her burden to fill it with naturall inconveniences; and there is this excellency in all spirituall things, that they do no disadvantage to our persons, nor retard our just temporall interests. And the religion by which we carry C H R I S T within us, is neither so peevish as to disturbe our health; nor so sad as to discompose our just and modest cheerfulness; nor so prodigal as to force us to needs, and ignoble trades; but recreates our body by the medicine of holy fastings and temperance; fills us full of serenities and complacencies by the sweetneses of a holy conscience, and joyes spirituall; promotes our temporall interests by the gains and increases of the rewards of charity, and by securing Gods providence over us, while we are in the pursuit of the heavenly kingdom. And as in these dispositions she climbd the mountains with much facility: so there is nothing in our whole life of difficulty greater then those assistances we receive from the holiest JESUS, when we carry him about us; as the valleys are exalted, so the mountains are made plain before us.

5.

When her Cousin *Elizabeth* saw the Mother of her Lord come to visit her, as the Lord himself descended to visit all the world in great humility, she was blest and transported to the height of wonder, and prophecy, and the babe sprang in her womb and was sanctified, first doing his homage and adoration to his Lord, that was in presence. And we also, although we can do nothing, unlesse the Lord first prevent us with his gracious visitation; yet if he first come unto us, and we accept and entertain him with the expresses and correspondencies of our duty, we shall receive the grace and honour of sanctification. But if S. *Elizabeth*, who received testimony from God that she walked in all the Commandments of the Lord blameleſſe, was carried into extasie wondring at the dignitay and favour done to her, by the Mother of her Lord; with what preparations and holy solemnities ought we to entertain his addresseſſ to us by his holy Sacrament, by the inuiſions of his Spirit, by the assistances of his graces, and all other his vouchſafings and deſcents into our hearts?

6.

The blessed Virgin hearing her Cousin full of spirit and prophecy, calling her *blessed*, and prayſing her faith and confirming her joy, instantly ſang her hymn to God, returning thofe praifes which ſhe received to him to whom they did appertain. For ſo we ſhould worship God with all our prayſes, being willing upon no other condition to extend one hand to receive our own honour, but that with the other we might transmit it to God. That as God is honoured in all his Creatures, ſo he may be honoured in us too: looking upon the graces which God hath given us, but as greater instruments and abilities to ſerve him, being none of ours, but talents which are entrusted into our banks to be improved. But as a precious pearl is orient

orient and medicinall, because God hath placed those excellencies in it for ends of his own, but it self is dead to all apprehensions of it, and knows no reflexions of it upon it's own value, onely God is magnified in his work: so is every pious person, precious, and holy, but mortified to all vainer complacencies in those singularities and eminencies which God plac'd there, because he was so pleased; saying, there he would have a Temple built; because from thence he would take delight to receive glory and adoration.

After all these holy and festivall joyes, which the two glad Mothers feasted themselves withall, a sad cloud did intervene and pass'd before the face of the blessed Virgin. The just and righteous Joseph her espoused Husband, perceiving her to be with childe, was minded to put her away, as not knowing the divinity of the fountain which watered the Virgins sealed and hallowed womb and made it fruitfull. But he purposed to do it privily, that he might preserve the reputation of his spouse, whose piety he knew was great, and was sorrowfull it should now set in a sad night, and be extinct. But it was an exemplar charity, and reads to us a rule for our deportment towards erring and lapsed persons, that we intreat them with meeknesse and pity, and fear: not hastening their shame, nor provoking their spirit, nor making their remedy desperate, by using of them rudely, till there be no worse thing for them to fear if they should be dissolved into all licentiousnesse. For an open shame is commonly protested unto, when it is remediless, and the person either despairs and sinks under the burden, or else grows impudent and tramples upon it. But the gentlenesse of a modest, and charitable remedy, preserves that which is vertues girdle, fear and blushing; and the beginning of a punishment chides them into the horrour of remembrance and guilt, but preserves their meeknesse and modesty, because they not feeling the worst of evils, dare not venture upon the worst of sins.

. frontage; a certaine  
lament,

But it seems the blessed Virgin having received this greatest honour had not made it known to her husband Joseph, and when she went to her Cousin Elizabeth, the Virgin was told of it by her Cousin, before she spake of it her self, for her Cousin had it by revelation and the spirit of prophecy. And it is in some circumstances, and from some persons more secure to conceal visions, and those heavenly gifts which create estimations among men, then to publish them, which may possibly minister to vanity; And those exterior graces may do Gods work, though no observer note them, but the person for whose sake they are sent. Like rain falling in uninhabited valleys, where no eye observes the shower; yet the valleyes laugh and sing to God in their refreshment without a witness. However, it is better to hear the report our good things from the mouths of others, then from our selves: and better yet if the beauty of the tabernacle be covered with skins, that none of our beauties be seen but by worshippers, that is, when the glory of God and the interests of religion or charity are concern'd in their publication. For so it happened to be in the case of the blessed Virgin, as she related to her Cousin Elizabeth, and so it happened not to be, as she referred to her husband Joseph.

The holy Virgin could not but know, that Joseph would be troubled with sorrow, and insecure apprehensions concerning her being with childe, but such was her innocence and her confidence in God, that she held her peace,

expecting which way God would provide a remedy to the inconvenience ; for if we commit our selves to God in well doing as unto a faithful Creatour preserving the tranquillity of our spirits , and the evennesse of our temper in the assault of infamy and dis-reputation , G O D , who loves our innocence , will be its patron , and will affere it from the scandal , if it be expedient for us ; if it be not , it is not fit we should desire it . But if the Holy JESUS did suffer his Mother to fall into mis-interpretation and suspect , which could not but be a great affliction to her excellent spirit , rarely temper'd , as an eye , highly sensible of every ruder touch ; we must not think it strange , if we be tryed and pressed with a calamity and unhandsome accidents ; only remember , that G O D will finde a remedy to the trouble , and will sanctifie the affliction , and secure the person , if we be innocent as was the holy virgin .

But Joseph was not hasty in the execution of his purposes , nor of making his thoughts determinate , but stood long in deliberation , and longer before he acted it , because it was an invidious matter , and a rigour : and before the thing was irremediable , G O D ended his Question by a heavenly demonstration , and sent an Angel to reveal to him the innocence of his Spouse , and the Divinity of her Son ; and that he was an immediate derivative from Heaven , and the Heir of all the World . And in all our doubts we shall have a resolution from Heaven or some of its Ministers , if we have recourse thither for a guide , and be not hasty in our discourses , or inconsiderate in our purposes , or rash in judgement . For G O D loves to give assistances to us , when we most fairly and prudently endeavour , that Grace be not put to do all our work , but to facilitate our labour : not creating new faculties , but improving those of Nature . If we consider warily , G O D will guide us in the determination : But a hasty person out-runs his guide , prevaricates his rule , and very often engages upon error .



## THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy J E S U , Son of the Eternal God , thy glory is far above all Heavens , and yet thou didst descend to Earth , that thy descent might be the more gracious , by how much thy glories were admirable , and natural and inseparable : I adore thy holy humanity with humble veneration , and the thankful addresses of religious joy , because thou hast personally united humane nature to the Eternal Word , carrying it above the seats of the highest Cherubim . This great and glorious Mystery is the honour and glory of man : it was the expectation of our Fathers , who saw the mysteriousnesse of thy incarnation at great and obscure distances : And blessed be thy Name , that thou hast caused me to be born after the fulfilling of thy prophecies , and the consummation and exhibition of so great a love , so great mysteriounesse . Holy J E S U , though I admire and adore the immensity of thy love and condescension , who wert pleased to undergo our burdens and infirmities for us , yet

I abhor my self and detest my own impurities, which were so great and contradictory to the excellency of G O D, that to destroy Sin and save us, thou wert sent into the World, to dye our death for us, and to give us of thy life.

2.

Dearst J E S U, thou didst not breathe one sigh, nor shed one drop of blood, nor weep one tear, nor suffer one stripe, nor preach one Sermon for the salvation of the Devils; and what sadness and shame is it then, that I should cause so many insufferable loads of sorrows to fall upon thy sacred head? Thou art wholly given for me, wholly spent upon my uses, and wholly for every one of the Elect. Thou in the beginning of the work of our redemption didst suffer nine moneths imprisonment in the pure womb of thy Holy Mother, to redeemme from the eternal servitude of Sin and its miserable consequents. Holy J E S U, let me be born anew, receive a new birth and a new life, imitating thy graces and excellencies by which thou art beloved of thy Father, and hast obtained for us a favour and atonement. Let thy holy will be done by me, let all thy will be wrought in me, let thy will be wrought concerning me, that I may do thy pleasure, and submit to the dispensation of thy providence, and conform to thy holy will, and may for ever serve thee in the communion of Saints, in the society of thy redeemed ones, now and in the glories of eternity. Amen.

  
The



## Sect. 3.

# The Nativity of our blessed Saviour J E S U S.

1.



He holy Maid long'd to be a glad Mother, and she who carried a burden, whose proper commemmoration is the dayes of Eternity counted the tedious minutes, expecting when the Sun of Righteousnesse should break forth from his bed where nine moneths he hid himselfe as behinde a fruitful cloud. About the same time G O D, who in his infinite wisdom does concentre, and tye together in one end, things of disparate and disproportionate natures, making things improbable to cooperate to what wonder or to what truth he pleases, brought the holy Virgin to Bethlehem the city of David to be taxed with her husband Joseph, according to a Decree upon all the World issuing from *Augustus Cesar*. But this hapned in this conjunction of time, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet *Micah*: *And thou Bethlehem in the land of Judah, art not the least among the Princes of Judah, for out of thee shall come a Goverour, that shall rule my people Israel.*

2.

\* Juxta prophetam  
Iud. Isha 3:16.  
et sic est in  
vulgo etiam  
scriptis ioy. ac  
ap. Dr. doctri  
cens. apud Ixx.  
Sed hanc periodum  
Iudaei erat: ut ex  
Hebreo ix. v. Sic  
& summachus,  
ap. Dr. doctri  
censice Bethlehem,  
vix dominus panis in  
digatur.

3.

She that had conceived by the operation of that spirit, who dwels within the element of love, was no wayes impeded in her journey, by the greatness of her burden, but arrived at Bethlehem in the throng of strangers, who had so filled up the places of hospitality and publick entertainment, that there was no room for Joseph and Mary in the Inne. But yet she felt that it was necessary to retire where she might ffirstly lay her burden, who began now to call at the gates of his prison, and Nature was ready to let him forth. But he that was Mother to the King of all the creatures, could finde no other but a stable, \* a cave of a rock; whither she retired, where when it began to be with her after the manner of women, she humbly bowed her knees, in the posture and guise of worshippers; and in the midst of glorious thoughts and highest speculation, brought forth her first-born into the world.

As there was no sin in the conception, so neither had she pain in the production. For to her alone did not the punishment of Eve extend, *that in sorrow she should bring forth*. For where nothing of sin was an ingredient, there misery cannot cohabite. And as to conceive by the holy Ghost was gloriouſ, ſo to bring forth any of the fruits of the Spirit, is joyful, and full of felicities. And he that came from his grave fast tyed with a ſtone and ſignature, and into the Colledge of Apostles, the doors being shut, and into the glories of his Father through the ſolid orbs of all the Firmament, came also (as the Church piouslye beleeveth) into the World ſo, without doing violence to the virginal and pure body of his Mother, that he did alſo leave her virginity entire, to be as a ſeal, that none might open the gate of that Sanctuary, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the L O R D by the Prophet.

*Micah 5:2.*

phet, *This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it, because the Lord God of Israel hath entered by it, therefore it shall be shut.*

Although all the World were concerned in the birth of this great Prince, yet I finde no story of any one that ministred at it, save onely Angels who knew their duty to their L O R D, and the great interests of that person; whom, as soon as he was born they presented to his Mother, who could not but receive him with a joy, next to the rejoycings of glory and beatifick vision, seeing him to be born her son, who was the Son of G O D; of greater beauty then the Sun, purer then Angels, more loving then the Seraphims, as deer as the eye and heart of G O D, where he was from eternity ingraven, his beloved and his onely begotten.

When the Virgin Mother now felt the first tendernesse and yernings of a Mothers bowels; saw the Saviour of the World born, poor as her fortunes could represent him, naked as the innocence of *Adam*, she took him, and *wrapt him in swadling clothes*; and after she had a while cradled him in her arms, she laid him in a manger; for so was the designe of his humility; that as the last Scene of his life was represented amongst Theeves, so the first was amongst beasts, the sheep and the oxen; according to that mysterious hymn of the Prophet *Abakuk*, *His brightnesse was as the light, he had horns coming out of his hand, and there was the hiding of his power.*

But this place, which was one of the great instances of his humility, grew to be as venerable as became an instrument, and it was consecrated into a Church, the Cib into an Altar, where first lay that Lamb of G O D, which afterwards was sacrificed for the sins of all the World. And when *Adrian the Emperour*, who intended a great despight to it, built a temple to *Venus and Adonis*, in that place, where the holy Virgin Mother, and her more holy Son, were humbly laid, even so he could not obtain, but that even amongst the Gentile inhabitants of the neighbouring countries, it was held in an account far above scandal and contemipt. For G O D can ennable even the meanest of creatures, especially if it be but a relative, and instrumental to Religion, higher then the injuries of scoffers and malitious persons. But it was then a Temple full of Religion, full of glory, when Angels were the Ministers, the holy Virgin was the worshipper, and CHRIST the *Numen.*

*Habac. v. 4. In media animatum cognoscere. sic Lxx.*

*Ver. Beda de locis sanctis. cap. 8.*

*S. Hieron. Epist. 48.*



### Ad. Sect. 3.

*Considerations upon the birth of our blessed Saviour*

J E S V S.

 Though the blessed J E S U S desired with the ardency of an inflamed love to be born, and to finish the work of our Redemption, yet he did not prevent the period of Nature, nor break the laws of the womb, and antedate his own sanctons which he had established for ever. He staid nine moneths, and then brake forth as a *Giant joyful*

*joyfull to run his course.* For præmature and hasty actions, and such counsels as know not how to expect the times appointed in Gods decree, are like hasty fruit, or a young person snatched away in his florid age, sad and untimely. He that hastens to enjoy his wish before the time, raises his own expectation, and yet makes it unpleasant by impatience, and looses the pleasure of the fruition, when it comes, because he hath made his desires bigger than the thing can satisfie. He that must eat an horr before his time, gives probation of his intemperance & his weakness ; and if we dare not trust God with the Circumstance of the event, and stay his leisure, either we disrepute the infinity of his wisdom, or give clear demonstration of our own vanity.

2. When God descended to earth, he chose to be born in the suburbs and retirement of a small Town, but he was pleaseſd to die at *Jerusalem*, the Metropolis of *Judea*, which chides our shame and pride who are willing to publish our gayeties in Piazza's and the corners of the streets of most populous places, but our defects and the instruments of our humiliation we carry into deserts, and cover with the night, and hide them under ground, thinking no secrecy dark enough to hide our shame, nor any theatre large enough to behold our pompous vanities ; for so we make provisions for pride, and take great care to exclude humility.

3. When the holy Virgin now perceived that the expectation of the nations was arrived, at the very doors of revelation and entrance into the world, she brought forth the holy JESUS, who like light through transparant glasse, past through, or a ripe pomgranate from a fruitfull tree, fell to the earth without doing violence to its Nurse and Parent : She had no ministers to attend, but angels, and neither her poverty nor her piety would permit her to provide other Nurses ; but her ſelf did the offices of a tender and pious parent. She kifed him and worshipped him, and thank'd him that he would be born of her, and the ſuckles him, and bound him in her arms and swadling bands, and when ſhe had repreſented to God her firſt ſcene of joy and Eucharift, ſhe softly laid him in the manger, till her deſires and his own neceſſities called her to take him, and to rock him softly in her arms : and from this deportment ſhe read a lecture of piety and maternall care, which mothers ſhould perform toward their children when they are born, not to neglect any of that duty which nature and maternall piety requires.

4. JESUS was pleaseſd to be born of a poor mother in a poor place, in a cold winters night, far from home, amongst ſtrangers, with all the circumstances of humility and poverty ; and no man will have cause to complain of his couſe robe, if he rememb'rs the ſwadling clothes of this holy childe : nor to be diſquieted at his hard bed when he conſiders JESUS laid in a manger, nor to be discontented at his thin table, when he calls to minde the King of heaven and earth was fed with a little breast milk. But ſince the eternall wiſdom of the Father, who knew to choose the good and refufe the evil, did choose a life of poverty, it gives us demonstration, that riches and honours, those idols of the worlds esteem, are ſo far from creating true felicities, that they are not of themſelves eligible in the number of good things ; however no man is to be diſhamed of innocent poverty, of which many wise men make vows, and of which the holy JESUS made election, and his Apoftles after him made publike profeſſion. And if any man will choſe and delight in the affluence of temporall good things, ſuffering himſelf to be transported with captiue affections in the pleaſures of every day, he may well make a question

question whether he shall speed as well hereafter, since G O D S usual method is, that they onely who follow C H R I S T here, shall be with him for ever.

The condition of the person who was born, is here of greatest consideration. For he that cried in the manger, that suckt the paps of a Woman, that hath exposed himself to poverty, and a world of inconveniences, is the Son of the living G O D ; of the same substance with his Father, begotten before all Ages, before the morning stars; he is G O D eternall. He is also by reason of the personal union of the Divinity with his humane nature, the Son of G O D , not by adoption, as good Men, and beatified Angels are ; but by an extraordinary and miraculous generation. He is the Heir of his Fathers glories and possessions, not by succession, (for his Father cannot die,) but by an equality of communication: He is the expresse image of his Fathers person according to both natures ; the miracle and excesse of his God-head being, as upon wax, imprinted upon all the capacities of his humanity : And after all this he is our *Saviour* ; that to our duties of wonder and adoration, we may adde the affections of love and union, as himself, besides his being admirable in himself, is become profitable to us. *Verè verbum hoc est abbreviatum*, saith the Prophet: the eternal Word of the Father is shornted to the dimensions of an infant.

Here then are concentrated the prodigies of Greatnesse and Goodnesse, of Wisdom and Charity, of Meeknesse and Humility ; and march all the way in mystery and incomprehensible mixtures, if we consider him in the bosom of his Father, where he is seated by the postures of love and essential felicity, and in the manger where love also placed him, and an infinite desre to communicate his felicities to us. As he is G O D , his throne is in Heaven, and he fils all things by his immensity : as he is *Man* he is circumscribed by an uneasie cradle, and cries in a stable. As he is G O D , he is seated upon a superexalted throne ; as *Man*, exposed to the lowest estate of uneasiness and need. As G O D , clothed in a robe of glory at the same instant when you may behold and wonder at his *humanity*, wrapped in cheap and unworthy cradle-bands. As G O D , he is encircled with millions of Angels ; as *Man*, in the company of beasts : As G O D , he is the eternall Word of the Father, Eternal, sustainted by himself, all-sufficient and without need ; and yet he submitted himself to a condition imperfect, inglorious, indigent, and necessitous : and this consideration is apt and natural to produce great affections of love, duty, and obedience, desires of union and conformity to his sacred Person, life, actions, and laws ; that we resolve all our thoughts, and finally determine all our reason, and our passions, and capacities upon that saying of S Paul , *He that loves not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be accursed.*

Upon the consideration of these glories, if a pious soul shall upon the supports of Faith and Love enter into the stable where this great King was born, and with affections behold every member of the Holy Body , and thence passe into the Soul of J E S U S , we may see a scheme of holy Meditations , enough to entertain all the degrees of our love , and of our understanding, and make the mystery of the Nativity as fruitful of holy thoughts, as it was of blessings to us. And it may serve instead of a description of the person of J E S U S conveyed to us in imperfect and Apocryphal schemes. If we could behold his sacred feet , with those affections which

5.

6.

<sup>1</sup> Corinth.16.22.

7.

which the holy Virgin did, we have transmitted to us those mysteries in story, which she had first in part, by spiritual and divine infused light, and afterwards by observation. Those holy feet tender and unable to support his sacred body, should bear him over all the Province of his cure with great zeal for the gaining of souls, to the belief and obedience of his holy laws ; those are the feet that should walk upon seas and hills of water as upon firm pavement ; at which the Lepers and diseased persons should stoop and gather health up, which *Mary Magdalen* should walk with tears, and wipe with her hair, and anoint with costly Nard, as expressions of love and adoration, and there finde absolution and remedy for her sins ; and which finally should be rent by the nails of the Croſſe, and afterwards ascend above the Heavens, making the earth to be his footſtool. From hence take patterns of imitation that our piety be ſymbolical, that our affections be paſſionate and Euchariftical, full of love, and wonder, and adoration, that our feet tread in the ſame ſteps, and that we transfer the ſymbol into mystery, and the mystery to devotion, praying the holy J E S U S to aſciuate the ſame mercies in us, which were finished at his holy feet, forgiuing our ſins, healing our fickneſſes ; and then place our ſelves irremovably, becoming his Diſciples, and ſtrictly obſerving the rules of his holy iſtitution, ſitting at the feet of this our greateſt Maſter.

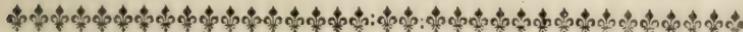
8. In the ſame manner a pious perſou may with the bleſſed Virgin paſſe to the conſideration of his holy hands, which were ſo often lift up to G O D in prayer, whose touch was miraculouſ and medicinal, cleaſing Leperſ, reſtoſing periſhing limbs, opening blinde eyes, raiſing dead perſons to life ; thofe hands which fed many thouſands by two miraclcs of multiplication, that purg'd the Temple from prophanefſe, that in a ſacramental manner bare his own body, and gaue it to be the food and refrehment of elect ſouls ; and after, were cloven and rent upon the Croſſe, till the wounds became (after the riſurection) ſo many traſparencies and glorious iſtrumentſ of ſolemn, ſpiritual, and efficacious benediction. Transmit this meditation into affections and praſiſes, lifting up pure hands in prayer, that our Devotions be united to the merits of his glorious iinterceſſion ; and putting our ſelves into his hands and holy proviſion, let us beg thofe effects upon our ſouls and ſpiritual cures, which his preſcious hands did operate upon their bodies, tranſferring thofe ſimilitudes to our ghoſtly and perſonal advantages.

9. We may alſo behold his holy breaſt, and conſider, that there lay that ſacred heart, like the Dove within the Ark, ſpeaking peace to us, being the regiment of love and ſcrows, the fountain of both the Sacraſments, running out in the two holy ſtreams of Blood and Water, when the rock was ſmitten, when his holy ſide was piercēd : and there with S. John let us lay ou'r head, and place our heart, and thence draw a treaſure of holy revelations and affections, that we may reſt in him only, and upon him lay our burdens, filling every corner of our heart with thoughts of the moſt amiable and beloved J E S U S.

10. In like manner we may uniue the day of his Nativity with the day of his Paſſion, and conſider all the parts of his body as it was iſtrumental in all the work of our redempſion, and ſo imitate, and in ſome proportion partake of that great variety of ſweetneſſes and amorous reflexes, and graciouſ intercourses which paſſed between the bleſſed Virgin and the holy childe, according

according to his present capacities, and the clarity of that light which was communicated to her by Divine Infusion ; and all the members of this blessed childe, his eyes, his face, his head, all the organs of his senses afford variety of entertainment and motion to our affections, according as they served in their several employments and cooperations in the mysteries of our restitution.

But his body was but his *Soul's* upper-garment, and the considerations of this are as immaterial and spiritual as the soul it self, and more immediate to the mystery of the Nativity. This foul is of the same nature and substance with ours ; in this, inferior to the Angels, that of it self it is incomplet and discursive in a lower order or ratiocination ; but in this, superior. First, that it is personally united to the Divinity ; full of the holy Ghost, overruning with grace, which was dispensed to it without measure. (And by the mediation of this union, as it self is exalted far above all orders of intelligences, so we also have contracted alliance with G O D, teaching us not to unravel our excellencies by infamous deportments.) Secondly, Here also we may meditate, that his *memory* is indeterminable and unalterable, ever remembiring to do us good, and to present our needs to G O D by the means of his holy intercession. Thirdly, that his *understanding* is without ignorance, knowing the secrets of our hearts, full of mysterions secrets of his Fathers kingdom, in which *all the treasures of the wisdom and knowledge of God are hidden*. Fourthly, that his *will* is impeccable, entertained <sup>Col. 3: 23</sup> with an uninterrupted act of love to G O D, greater then all Angels and beatified spirits present to G O D in the midst of the transports and ravishments of Paradise : that *this will* is full of love to us, of humility in it self, of conformity to G O D, wholly resign'd by acts of adoration and obedience ; it was moved by six wings, zeal of the honour of G O D, and compunction for our sins, pity to our miseries, and hatred of our impieties, desires of satisfying the wrath of G O D, and great joy at the consideration of all the fruits of his Nativity, the appeasing of his Father, the redemption of his brethren. And upon these wings he mounted up into the throne of glory, carrying our nature with him above the seats of Angels. These considerations present themselves to all, that with piety and devotion behold the holy Babe lying in the obscure and humble place of his Nativity.



## The P R A Y E R.

**H**oly and immortal J E S U S, I adore and worship thee with the lowest prostrations and humility of soul and body, and give thee all thanks for that great love to us, whereof thy nativity hath made demonstration ; for that humility of thine expressed in the poor and ignoble circumstances, which thou didst voluntarily choose in the manner of thy birth ; and I present to thy holy Humanity incashed in the adorable Divinity, my body and soul ; humbly desiring, that as thou didst clothe thy self with a humane body, thou mayest invest me with the robes of righteousness, covering my sins, enabling my weaknesses, and sustaining my mortality, till I shall finally in conformity to thy beauties and perfections be cloathed with the stole of glory. Amen.

2.

**V**ouchsafe to come to me by a more intimate and spiritual approximation, that so thou mayest lead me to thy Father; for of my self I cannot move one step towards thee. Take me by the hand, place me in thy heart; that there I may live, and there I may dye: that as thou hast united our nature to thy eternal being, thou mightest also unite my person to thine by the interieur adunations of love and obedience, and conformity. Let thy ears be open to my prayers, thy merciful eyes look upon my miseries, thy holy hands be stretcht out to my relief and succour; let some of those precious distilling tears, which nature and thy compassion, and thy sufferings did cause to distill and drop from those sacred fontinels: Water my stony heart, and make it soft, apt for the impressions of a melting, obedient and corresponding love; and moisten mine eyes, that I may upon thy stock of pity and weeping, mourn for my sins, that so my tears and sorrow, being drops of water coming from that holy rock, may indeed be united unto thine, and made precious by such holy mixtures. Amen.

3.

**B**lessed JESU, now that thou hast sanctified and exalted humane nature, and made, even my body precious by a personal uniting it to the Divinity; teach me so reverently to account of it, that I may not dare to profane it with impure lusts, or caytive affections, and unhallow that ground where thy holy feet have troden. Give to me ardent desires, and efficacious prosecutions of these holy effects, which thou didst designe for us in thy Nativity, and other parts of our redemption: give me great confidence in thee, which thou hast encouraged, by the exhibition of so glorious favours; great sorrow and confusion of face at the sight of mine own imperfections, and estrangements and great distancies from thee and the perfections of thy soul; and bring me to thee by the strictnesses of a zealous and affectionate imitation of those sanctities, which next to the hypostatical union, added lustre and excellency to thy humanity, that I may live here with thee in the expresses of a holy life, and dye with thee by mortification, and an unwearied patience, and reign with thee in immortal glories, world without end. Amen.

Discourse



## Discourse. I.

### *Of nursing children in imitation of the Blessed Virgin-Mother.*

**N**These latter ages of the world have declined into a softnesse above the effeminacy of Asian Princes, and have contracted customes which those innocent and healthfull dayes of our Ancestors knew not, whose piety was naturall, whose charity was operative,whose policy was just and valiant; and whose oconomie was sincere and proportionable to the dispositions and requisites of nature. And in this particular the good women of \* old, gave one of their instances; the greatest personages nurst their own children, did the work of Mothers, and thought it was unlikely, women should become vertuous by ornaments and superadditions of morality, who did decline the laws and prescriptions of nature, whose principles supply us with the first, and most common rules of manners and more perfect actions. In imitation of whom, and especially of the Virgin Mary who was mother and nurse to the holy JESUS, I shall endeavour to correct those softnesses and unnaturall rejections of children, which are popular up to a custome and fashion, even where no necessities of nature or just reason can make excuse.

And I cannot think the Question despicable, and the duty of meanest consideration, although it be specified in an office of small esteem, and suggested to us by the principles of reason, and not by expresse sanctions of divinity. For although other actions are more perfect and spirituall, yet this is more naturall and humane; other things being superadded to a full duty rise higher, but this builds stronger, and is like a part of the foundation having no lustre but much strength, and however the others are full of ornament, yet this hath in it some degrees of necessity, and possibly is with more danger and irregularity omitted, then actions which spread their leaves fairer, and look more gloriously.

I Here I first consider, that there are many sins in the scene of the body, and the matter of sobriety, which are highly criminall, and yet the laws of GOD expressed in scripture name them not; but men are taught to distinguish them by that reason which is given us by nature and is imprinted in our understanding in order to the conservation of humane kinde. For since every creature hath something in it sufficient to propagate the kinde, and

\* Quod si pudica mulier in partem juvet domum, acq; dulces liberos:  
Sabina qualis, aut verita subibus permici, uxori Appali  
Non me lucrina juverint conchylia ravigis, &c. Hor. epist. 2.

1.

2.

3.

to conserve the individuals from perishing in confusions and generall disorders, which in beasts we call *instinct*, that is, an habituall or prime disposition to do certain things which are proportionable to the end whither it is designed; man also, if he be not more imperfect, must have the like, and because he knows and makes reflections upon his own acts, and understands the reason of it, that which in them is *instinct*, in him, is

*partim, Tō d' -  
καὶ τὸν πᾶν τὸν ἀτ-  
θητοῦ διελεῖσθαι,  
partim, ή πρό-  
πελοντα προστάτων  
καὶ τὸν ἄπειπον, τὴ  
μένον διελεῖσθαι  
εἰς τὸν ποιῶντα  
δρότον θεόν.  
Joseph Origin. 16.  
c. 10.*

naturall reason, which is, a desire to preserve himself and his own kinde, and differs from *instinct*, because he understands his *instinct* and the reasonableness of it, and they do not. But because man being a higher thing even in the order of creation and designd to a more noble end, in his animall capacite, his *argumentative instinct* is larger then the *naturall instinct* of beasts; for he hath instincts in him in order to the conservation of society; and therefore hath principles, that is, he hath naturall desires to it for his own good; and because he understands them, they are called *principles*, and *Laws of nature*, but are no other then what I have now declared. For beasts do the same things we do, and have many the same inclinations, which in us are the laws of nature, even all, which we have in order to our common end. But that which in beasts is *nature*, and an impulsive force, in us must be duty and an inviting power; we must do the same things with an actuall or habituall designation of that end, to which GOD designes beasts (supplying by his wisdom their want of understanding) and then what is *meer nature* in them, in us is *naturall reason*. And therefore marriage in men is made sacred, when the mixtures of other creatures are so meerly naturall, that they are not capable of being virtuous, because men are bound to intend that end which GOD made, and this with the superaddition of other ends, of which marriage is representative in part, and in part effectiue, does consecrate marriage, and makes it holy and mysterious. But then there are in marriage many duties, which we are taught by instinct; that is, by that reason, whereby we understand, what are the best means to promote the end, which we have assigned us. And by these laws all unnatural mixtures are made unlawfull, and the decencies, which are to be observed in marriage are prescribed us by this.

4. Upon the supposition of this discourse I consider again, that although to observe this instinct, or these laws of nature (in which I now have instanced) be no great vertue in any eminency of degree (as no man is much commended for not killing himself, or for not degenerating into beastly lusts) yet to prevaricate some of these laws may become almost the greatest sin of the world. And therefore although to live according to nature be a testimony fit to be given to a sober and a temperate man, and rises no higher; yet to do an action against nature is the greatest dishonour and impiety in the world (I mean of actions whose scene lies in the body) and disentitles us to all relations to GOD, and vicinity to vertue.

5. Now amongst actions which we are taught by nature; some concern the being and the necessities of nature: some appertain to her convenience and advantage, and the transgressions of these respectively

specially have their heightnings or depressions ; and therefore to kill a man is worse then some praternaturall pollutions, because more destructive of the end and designation of nature, and the purpose of instinct.

4. Every part of this instinct is then *in some sense* a law, when it is in a direct order to a necessary end, and by that is made, is reasonable. I say [ in some sense ] it is a law, that is, it is in a neer disposition to become a law. It is a rule without obligation to a particular punishment, beyond the effect of the naturall inordination and obliquity of the act ; it is not the measure of a morall good or evil ; but of the naturall ; that is, of comely and uncomely. For if in the individualls it shoud fail, or that there passe some greater obligation upon the person in order to a higher end, not consistent with those means designd in order to the lesser end, in that particular it is no fault, but sometimes a vertue. And therefore although it be an instinct, or reasonable towards many purposes, that every one should beget a man in his own image, in order to the preservation of nature, yet if there be a superaddition of another and higher end, and contrary means perswaded in order to it ( such as is holy ecclibate or virginity in order to a spirituall life in some persons ) there the instinct of nature is very far from passing obligation upon the conscience ; and in that instance ceales to be reasonable. And therefore the Romans, who invited men to marriage with priviledges, and punished morose and ungente natures, that refused it, yet they had their chaste and unmarried Vestalls, the first in order to the Common wealth, these in a nearer order to religion.

5. These instincts or reasonable inducements become laws obliging us in conscience and in the way of religion, and the breach of them is directly criminall when the instance violates any end of justice or charity, or sobriety either designed in natures first intention, or superinduced by GOD or man. For every thing that is unreasonable to some certain purpose is not presently criminall, much lesse is it against the law of nature ( unless every man that goes out of his way sins against the law of nature,) and every contradicting of a naturall desire or inclination is not a sin against a law of nature. For the restraining some times of a lawfull and a permitted desire is an act of a great vertue, and pursues a greater reason ; as in the former instance ; but those things onely, against which such a reason as mixes with charity or justice, or something that is now in order to a further end of a commanded instance of piety, may be without error brought, those things are onely criminall. And GOD having first made our instincts reaonable, hath now made our reason and instincts to be spirituall, and having some times restrained our instincts and alwayes made them regular, he hath by the intermixture of other principles made a separation of instinct from instinct, leaving one in the forme of naturall inclination, and they rise no higher then a permission or a decency, it is lawfull, or it is comely so to do : ( for no man can affirm it to be a duty to kill him, that assaults my life, or to maintain my children for ever without their own industry, when they are able, what degrees of naturall fondnesse soever I have towards them ; nor that I sin, if I do not marry, when I can contain : ) and yet every one of these may proceed from the affections and first inclinations of nature ; but untill they mingle with justice, or charity, or some instance of religion and obedience, they are no laws ;

laws, the other that are so mingled being raised to duty, and religion. Nature inclines us, and reason judges it apt and requisite in order to certain ends, but then every particular of it is made to be an act of religion from some other principle: as yet, it is but fit and reasonable, not religion and particular duty, till GOD or man hath interposed. But whatsoever particular in nature was fit to be made a Law of religion is made such by the superaddition of another principle; and this is derived to us by tradition from *Adam* or *Noah*, or else transmitted to us by the consent of all the world upon a naturall and prompt reason, or else by some other instrument derived to us from GOD but especially by the Christian religion, which hath adopted all those things, which we call *things honest, things comely and things of good report*, into a law and a duty as appears *Philippians 4. verfe 8.*

Upon these propositions I shall infer by way of instance, that it is a duty that women should nurse their own children. For first it is taught to Women by that instinct which nature hath implanted in them. For as *Phavorinus* the Philosopher discoursed, it is but to be half a Mother to bring forth Children and not to nourish them; and it is some kinde of abortion or an exposing of the infant, which in the reputation of all wife nations is infamous and uncharitable. And if the name of Mother be an appellative of affection, and indeernments, why should the Mother be willing to divide it with a stranger? The Earth is the Mother of us all, not onely because we were made of her red clay, but chiefly that she daily gives us food from her bowels and breasts: and plants and beasts give nourishment to their offsprings after their production with greater tendernes, then they bare them in their wombs: and yet Women give nourishment to the Embryo, which whether it be deformed or perfect they know not, and cannot love what they never saw, and yet when they do see it, when they have rejoiced that a Childe is born, and forgotten the sorrows of production, they who then can first begin to love it, if they begin to divorce the infant from the Mother, the Object from the affection, cut of the opportunities and occasions of their charity or piety.

For why hath nature given to Women two exuberant fontinells which like two Roes that are twinnes feed among the Lilies, and drop milk like dew from *Hermon*, and hath invited that nourishment from the secret recesses where the infant dwelt at first, up to the breast where naturally now the childe is cradled in the entertainments of love and maternall embraces; but that nature having removed the Babe and carried its meat after it, intends that it should be preserved by the matter and ingredients of its constitution, and have the same diet prepared with a more mature and proportionable digestion? If nature intended them not for nourishment, I am sure it lesse intended them for pride and wantonnesse; they are needless excrescencies and vices of nature, unless employed in natures work and proper intendment. And if it be a matter of consideration of what blood children are derived; we may also consider that the derivation continues after

after the birth, and therefore bating the sensuality, the Nurse is as much the Mother, as she that brought it forth, and so much the more, as there is a longer communication of constituent nourishment (for so are the first emanations) in this then in the other. So that here is first the instinct or prime intendment of Nature.

2, And that this instinct may also become humane and reasonable, we see it by experience in many places, that *Foster-children* are dearer to the *Nurse* than to the *Mother*, as receiving and ministering respectively, perpetual prettinesses of love, and fondnesse, and trouble, and need, and invitations, and all the instruments of indeerment, besides a vicinity of dispositions, and relative tempers by the communication of blood and spirits from the Nurse to the suckling, which makes use the more natural and nature more accustomed: And therefore the affections, which these exposed and derelict children bear to their Mothers, have no grounds of nature or assiduity, but \* civility and opinion; and that little of love which is abated from the Foster-parents upon publick report that they are not natural, that little is transferred to Mothers upon the same opinion, and no more. Hence comes those unnatural aversions, those unrelenting dispositions, those carelessnesses and incurious deportments towards their children, which are such ill-sown seeds from whence may arise up a bitterness of disposition and mutual provocation. Sometimes children are exchanged and artificial bastardies introduced into a family, and the right heir supplanted; at the best, though there happen no such extravagant and rare accidents, yet it is not likely a stranger should love the childe better then the *Mother*; and if the Mothers care could suffer it to be exposed, a strangers care may suffer it to be neglected. For how shall a hireling indure the inconveniences, the tediousness and unhandsomnesses of a nursery; when she, whose natural affection might have made it pleasant, out of wantonnesse or softnesse harsh declined the burden. But the sad accidents, which by too frequent observation are daily seen hapning to Nurse-children, give great probation that this intendment of Nature designing Mothers to be the Nurses, that their affection might secure and increase their care, and the care best provide for the babes, is most reasonable and proportionable to the discourses of humanity.

But as this instinct was made reasonable, so in this also the reason is in order to grace and spiritual effect; and therefore is among those things which GOD hath separated from the common instincts of nature, and made properly to be lawes by the mixtures of Justice and Charity. For it is part of that education which Mothers as a duty owe to their children, that they do in all circumstances, and with all their powers which GOD to that purpose gave them, promote their capacities and improve their faculties:

\* Now in this also, as the temper of the body is considerable in order to the inclinations of the soul, so is the Nurse in order to the temper of the body; and a Lamb sucking a Goat, or a Kid sucking of an Ewe, change their fleece and hair respectively, say Naturalists. For if the soul of a Man were put into the body of a Mole, it could not see nor speak, because it is not fitted with an instrument apt and organical to the faculty; and when the soul hath its proper instruments, its musick is pleasant or harsh according to the sweetnesse or the unevennesse of the string it touches; For David himself could not have charm'd Sauls melancholy spirit with the strings

\* Obliteratis & abolitae nativa pieatis elementis quicquid inter educari liberi amare parentem arque Matrem videtur. magnum parentem non naturalis esse amor est, sed civilis, & opinabilis. Phavor. 4. pud A. Cetium.

II.

\* Nam Graecorum eloquentie mulum contulisse accepimus Corneliam Martem. Quidam. l. 1. c. 1. Prorinus & eis: parentes fatus, acrem quam maxime curam impendar. Ante omnino ne sit vi: i: sus fermo. Narratibus, quas si fieri possent. sapientes. On vnguis ostavit. Quidam. l. 1.

of his Eowe, or the wood of his Spear. And just so, are the actions or dispositions of the soul, angry or pleasant, lustful or cold, querulous or passionate, according as is the body disposed by the various intermixtures of natural qualities; and as the carelessness of Nurses have sometimes returned children to their Parents, crooked, consumptive, half starved, and unclean from the impurities of Nature: So their society and their nourishment together have disposed them to peevishnesse, to lust, to drunkennesse, to pride, to low and base demeanours, to stubbornnesse: and as a Man would have been unwilling to have had a childe by Haraste, Senecas wives fool: so he would in all reason be as unwilling to have had her to be the Nurse; For very often, Mothers by the birth do not transmit their imperfections, yet seldom it happens but the Nurse does. Which is the more considerable, because Nurses are commonly persons of no great rank, certainly lower then the Mother, and by consequence liker to return their children with the lower and more servile conditions; & commonly those vainer people teach them to be peevish, and proud, to lye, or at least seldom give them any first principles contrariant to the Nurses vice. And therefore it concerns the Parents care, in order to a vertuous and vicious life of the childe, to secure its first seasonings; because, what ever it sucks in first, it swallows and believes infinitely, and practises easily, and continues longest. And this is most proper for a Mothers care, while the Nurse thinks that giving the childe suck, and keeping its body clean is all her duty. But the Mother cannot think her self so easily discharged. And this consideration is materiall in all cases, be the choice of the Nurse never so prudent and curious; it is not easily apprehended to be the portion of her care to give it spiritual milk, and therefore it intrenches very much upon impiety and positive relinquishing the education of their children, when Mothers expose the spirit of the childe, either to its own weaker inclinations, or the wicked principles of an ungodly Nurse, or the carelessness of any lese obliged person.

12.  
\* hincamq; adimt.  
vita ubera tigres.  
V. 2.

And then let me adde, that a childe sucks the Nurses milk and digests her conditions if they be never so \* bad, seldom gets any good: For Vertue being superaddition to Nature and perfections not radical in the body, but contradictions to, and meliorations of natural indispositions, does not easily convey it self by ministrations of food, as vice does, which in most instances is nothing but meer nature grown to custom, and not mended by Grace; so that it is probable enough such natural distempers may passe in the rivulets of milk, like evil spirits in a white garment, when vertues are of harder purchase, and dwell so low in the heart, that they but rarely passe through the fountains of generation. And therefore let no Mother venture her childe upon a stranger whose heart she lese knows then her own: and because few of those nicer women think better of others then themselves, (since out of self-love they neglect their own bowels) it is but an act of improvidence to let my childe derive imperfections from one of whom I have not so good an opinion as of my self.

13.  
And if these many blessings and holy prayers which the childe needs, or his askings or sickneses, or the Mothers fears or joyes respectively do occasion, shoud not be cast into this account; yet those principles, which in all cases wherein the neglect is vicious, are the causes of the exposing the childe, are extreamly against the piety and charity of Christian Religion; which

which prescribes severity and austere deportment, and the labours of love and exemplar tendernesse of affections, and piety to children, which are the most natural and neerest relations the Parents have. That religion which commands us to visit and to tend sick strangers, and wash the feet of the poor, and dresse their ulcers, and sends us upon charitable embassies into unclean prisons, and bids us lay down our lives for one another, is not pleased with a niceenesse and sensual curiositie (that I may not name the wantonnesses of lusts) which denies succ to our own children. What is more humane and affectionate then Christianity? and what is lesse natural and charitable then to deny the expresses of a Mothers affection; which certainly to good women is the greatest trouble in the world, and the greatest violence to their desires, if they should not expresse and minister?

And it would be considered; whether those Mothers, who have neglected their first duties of piety and charity, can expect so prompt and easie returns of duty and piety from their children, whose best foundation is love, and that love strongest, which is most natural, and that most natural which is conveyed by the first ministeries and imprestes of nourishment and education? And if love descends more strongly then it ascends, and commonly falls from the parents upon the children in Cataracts, and returns back again up to the Parents but in gentle dewes; if the childe's affections keeps the samme proportions toward such unkinde Mothers; it will be as little as atoms in the Sun, and never expresse it self but when the Mother needs it not, that is, in the Sun-shine of a clear fortune.

14.

This then is amongst those instincts which are natural, heightned first by reason, and then exalted by grace into the Obligation of a law; and being amongst the sanctions of nature, its prevarication is a crime very neer those sins, which Divines, in detestation of their malignity, call *sins against nature*; and is never to be excused, but in cases of necessity or \* greater charity, as when the Mother cannot be a Nurse, by reason of natural disabilty, or be afflicted with a disease, which might be transmitted in the milk, or in case of the publick necessities of a Kingdom, for the securing of succession in the Royal Family. In other cases, the crime lies at their door who inforce neglect upon the other, and is heightned in proportion to the motive of the omission; as if wantonnesse or pride be the parent of the crime, the issue, besides its natural deformity, hath the exprestencies of pride or lust to make it more ugly.

15.

To such Mothers I propound the example of the holy Virgin, who had the honour to be visited by an Angel, yet after the example of the Saints in the Old Testament, she gave to the holy J E S U S drink from those bottles which himself had filled for his own drinking; and her paps were as surely blessed for giving him succ, as her womb for bearing him; and reads a Lecture of piety and charity, which if we deny to our own children, there is then in the world left no argument or relation great enough to kindle it from a cindre to a flame. G O D gives dry breasts for a curse to some, for an affliction to others; but those that invite it to them by voluntary arts, *Love not blessing, therefore shall it be far from them.* Let none therefore divide the interests of their own children; for she that appeared before Solomon and would have the childe divided, was not the true Mother, and was the more culpable of the two.

\* necessitas magnitudine  
imperitatis humanae  
patrociniū,  
quicquid cogit ex-  
culat. Sec. 5.

16.



## THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy and Eternal G O D, Father of the Creatures, and King of all the World, who hast imprinted in all the sonnes of thy Creation, principles and abilities to serve the end of their own preservation, and to Men hast superadded Reason; making those first propensities of nature to be reasonable in order to society, and a conversation in communities and bodies politick; and hast by several laws and revelations directed our reasons to neerer applications to thee, and performance of thy great end, the glory of our Lord and Father. Teach me strictly to observe the order of Creation, and the designes of the Creatures; that in my order I may do that service, which every creature does in its proper capacity, L O R D let me be as constant in the wayes of Religion, as the Sun in his course; as ready to follow the intimations of thy Spirit, as little birds are to obey the directions of thy Providence and the conduct of thy hand; and let me never by evil customs or vain company, or false persuasions, extinguish those principles of morality, and right reason which thou hast imprinted in my understanding, in my creation and education, and which thou hast ennobled by the superadditions of Christian institution; that I may live according to the rules of Nature in such things which she teaches, modestly, temperately, and affectionately, in all the parts of my naturall and Politicall relations; and that I proceeding from nature to grace, may henceforth go on from grace to glory, the crown of all obedience, prudent and holy walking, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

---

The



## Sect. 4.

### *Of the great and glorious accidents hapning about the birth of JESUS.*

**A**Lthough the birth of CHRIST was destitute of the usuall ex-crescencies and lesse necessary Pomps which used to signifie and illustrate the birth of Princes ; yet his first humility was made glorious with presages, miracles, and significations from heaven, which did not onely, like the furniture of a Princely Bedchamber, speak the riches of the Parent or greatnesse of the Son within its own wals, but did declare to all the world that their Prince was born, publishing it with figures and representements almost as great as its Empire.

For when all the world did expect that in Judea should be born their prince, and that the incredulous world had in their observation slept by their true Prince, because he came not in pompous and secular illustrations ; upon that very stock *Vespasian* was nurst up in hope of the Roman Empire, and that hope made him great in designes, and they being prosperous made his fortunes correspond to his hopes, and he was indeede and engaged upon that fortune by the Prophecy , which was never intended him by the Prophet. But the fortune of the Roman Monarchy was not great enough for this Prince designd by the Old Prophets. And therefore it was not without the influence of a Divinity that his Decessor *Augustus* about the time of CHRISTS nativity refused to be called *Lord* ; possibly it was to entertain the people with some hopes of restitution of their liberties, till he had grip'd the Monarchy with a stricter and faster hold ; but the Christians were apt to beleieve that it was upon the prophecy of a *Sybill* foretelling the birth of a greater Prince, to whom all the world should pay adoration ; and that the Prince was about that time born in Judea, the oracle which was dumb to *Augustus* Question, told him unaskd, the Devil having no tongue permitted him, but one to proclaim that *an Hebrew childe was his Lord and enemy.*

At the birth of which childe there was an universall peace through all the world. For he that was born was the *Prince of peace*, and came to reconcile God with man, and man with his brother ; and to make by the sweetnesse of his example, and the influence of a holy doctrine such happy atonements between disagreeing natures, such confederations and

Sneton. in vita Vesp.  
Vide etiam Cicero-  
de Divin.

Augustus lib. 6. c. 22.

Augustus in histor.  
Verbo. Augustus.

## Sect. 4. HISTORY OF THE ACCIDENTS

and societies between Enemies, that the Wo'f and the Lamb should lie down together and a little childe shoulde boldly and without danger put his finger in the nest and cavern of an Aspick; and it could be no lesse then miraculous, that so great a body as the Roman Empire, consisting of so many parts, whose constitutions were differing, their humours contrary, their interestis contradicting each others greatnesse, and all these violently oppresed by an usurping power, shoulde have no limb out of joyn't not so much as an aking tooth, or a rebelling humour in that huge collection of parts: but so it seemed good in the eye of heaven by so great and good a symbole to declare not onely the greatnesse but the goodnessse of the Prince, that was then born in Judea the Lord of all the World.

4.

But because the heavens as well as the earth are his Creatures and do serve him, at his Birth he received a signe in heaven above, aswell as in the earth beneath as an homage paid to their common Lord. For as certain Shepherds were keeping watch over their flocks by night, neer that part where Jacob did use to feed his cartell when he was in the land of Canaan, the Angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them. Needs must the shepherds be afraid, when an Angel came arrayed in glory and clothed their persons in a robe of light, great enough to confound their senses and scatter their understandings. But the Angel said unto them, Fear not, for I bring unto you tidings of great joy which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour which is Christ the Lord. The shepherds needed not be invited to go see this glorious sight; but leſt their fancy shoulde rise up to an expectation of a Prince as externally glorious as might be hoped for upon the consequence of so glorious an apparition, the Angel to prevent the mistake told them of a signe, which indeed was no other then the thing signified; but yet was therefore a signe, because it was so remote from the common probability and expectation of such a birth, that by being a miracle, so great a Prince should be born so poorly, it became an instrument to signifie it self and all the other parts of mysterious consequence. For the Angel said, this shall be a signe unto you, Ye shall finde the Babe wrapt in swadling clothes lying in a manger.

5.

But as light, when it first begins to guild the east, scatters indeed the darknesses from the earth, but ceases not to increase its flame, till it hath made perfect day; so it hapned now in this apparition of the Angel of light, he appeared and told his Message and did shine, but the light arose higher and higher till midnight was as bright as midday; for suddenly there was with the Angel a multitude of the heavenly host, and after the Angel had told his Message in plain song, the whole chorus joyned in descant and sang a hymn to the tune and sence of heaven, where glory is paid to God in eternall and never ceasing offices, and whence good will descends upon men in perpetuall and never stopping torrents, their song was, Glory be to God on high, on earth peace, good will towards men.

6.

Aſſoon as theſe bleſſed Chorifters had ſung their Chriſtmas caroll, and taught the Church a hymn to put into her offiſces for ever, in the anniversary of this festivity, the Angels returned into heaven, and the ſhepherds went to Bethlehem to ſee this thing which the Lord had made known unto them. And they came with haſt and found Mary and Joseph; and the Babe lying in a manger: Just as the Angel had prepared their expeſtation they found the narrative verified

verified, and saw the glory and the mystery of it by that representment which was made by the heavenly Ministers, seeing GOD through the veil of a childe's flesh, the Heir of heaven wrapt in swadling clothes, and a person to whom the Angels did minister laid in a manger; and they beheld and wondred and worshipped.

But as precious liquor, warm'd and heightned by a flame, first crowns the vessell, and then dances over its brim into the fire, increasing the cause of its own motion and extravagancie: so it hapned to the shepherds, whose hearts being filled with the oil of gladnesse up unto the brim, the joy ran over, as being too big to be confin'd in their own breasts, and did communicate it self, growing greater by such dissemination. *For when they had seen it they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this childe.* And (as well they might) *all that heard it wondred.* But Mary, having first changed her joy into wonder, turned her wonder into entertainments of the mystery, and the mystery into a fruition and cohabitation with it. *For Mary kept all these sayings and pondered them in her heayt.* And the shepherds having seen what the Angels did upon the publication of the news, which lesse concerned them then us, had learnt their duty to sing an honour to GOD for the nativity of CHRIST, for the shepherds returned glorifying and praying God for all the things that they had heard and seen as it was told unto them.

But the Angels had told the shepherds that the nativity was glad tidings of great joy unto all people; and that the heavens might declare the glory of God and the firmament shew his handy work, this also was told abroad even to the Gentiles by a signe from heaven, by the message of a star. For there was a Prophecy of Balaam famous in all the Eastern countrey and recorded by Moses. *Toere shall come a star out of Jacob and a scepter shall rise out of Israel, out of Jacob shall come he that shall have dominion.* And in expectation of the event of this prophecy, the Persians and Caldees, who were great lovers of Astronomy, did with diligence expect the revelation of a mighty Prince in Judea at such time when a miraculous and extraordinary star should appear. *And therefore when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the dayes of Herod the King, there came wisemen inspired by God, taught by art, and perswaded by prophecy from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews; for we have seen his star in the East and are come to worship him.*

This star did not trouble Herod, till the Levantine princes expounded the mysteriousnesse of it, and said it declared a King to be born in Iury, and that the star was his, not applicable to any signification but of a Kings birth. And therefore although it was \* no prodigy nor Comet foretelling diseases, plagues, war and death but onely the happy birth of a most excellent Prince, yet it brought affrightment to Herod and all Jerusalem, *for when Herod the King bad heard these things he was troubled and all Jerusalem with him.* And thinking that the Question of the kingdom was now in dispute, and an Heir sent from heaven to lay challenge to it, who brought a star and the learning of the East with him for evidence and probation of his title, Herod thought there was no security to his usurped possession, unlesse he could rescind the decrees of heaven, and reverse the results and eternall counsels of predestination. And he was resolv'd to venture it, first by craft, and then by violence.

And first, he calls the chief Priests and Scribes of the people together, and demanded

7.

8.

9.

\* Chalcedius inf. Euseb. in Platonis.

10.

manded of them, where CHRIST should be born, and found by their joyn't determination that *Bethlehem of Judea* was the place design'd by ancient Prophecy and GODS decree. Next he enquired of the Wise men concerning the star, but *privily* what time it appeared. For the star had not motion certain and regular, by the laws of nature, but it so guided the Wise men in their journey, that it stood when they stood, moved not when they rested, and went forward when they were able, making no more hast then they did, who carried much of the busynesse and imployment of the star along with them. But when *Herod* was satisfied in his Questions, he sent them to *Bethlehem* with instructions to search diligently for the young childe, and to bring him word, pretending that he would come and worship him also.

11.

The Wise men prosecuted the busynesse of their journey and having heard the King they departed and the star (which as it seems attended their motion) went before them till it came and stood over where the young childe was; where when they saw the star they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. Such a joy as is usuall to wearied Travailers when they are entering into their Inne, such a joy as when our hopes and greatest longings are laying hold upon the proper objects of their desires, a joy of certainty immediately before the possession, for that is the greatest joy, which possessest before it is satisfied, and rejoices with a joy not abated by the surfeits of possession, but heightned with all the apprehensions and fancies of hope and the neighbourhood of fruition; a joy of nature, of wonder and of religion. And now their hearts laboured with a throng of spirits and passions, and ran into the house to the embracement of JESUS even before their feet; but when they were come into the house they saw the young childe with Mary his mother; and possibly their expectation was something lessened, and their wonder heightned, when they saw their hope empty of pomp, and gayety, the great Kings throne to be a manger, a stable to be his chamber of presence, a thinne Court, and no Ministers, and the King himself a pretty babe, and, but that he had a star over his head, nothing to distinguish him from the common condition of children, or to excuse him from the miseries of a poor and empty fortune.

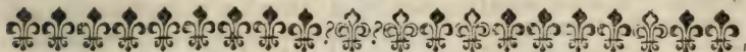
12.

This did not scandalize those Wise persons, but being convinced by that Testimony from Heaven, and the union of all Circumstances they fell down and worshipped him, after the manner of the Persians, when they do veneration to their Kings, not with an empty ave and gay blessing of fine words, but they bring presents, and come into his Courts; for when they had opened their treasures they presented unto him gifts, Gold, Frankincense, and Myrrhe. And if these gifts were mysterious beyond the acknowledgement of him to be the King of the Jews, and Christ that should come into the world, Frankincense might signifie him to be acknowledgd a God, Myrrhe to be a Man, and Gold to be a King. But however the fancies of religion may represent varieties of Ideas, the act of adoration was direct and religious, and the myrrhe was medicinall to his tender body; the incense posibly no more then was necessary in a stable, the first throne of his humility; and the gold was a good Antidote against the present indigencies of his poverty; presents such as were used in all the Levant, in their addresses to their God and to their King, and were instruments with which under the veil of flesh they worshipped the eternall word; the wisedom of God, under

*S. Ambros. in 2 Lu  
c. 2. Leo ser. de Epi.  
Theophil. in 2. Mat.  
St. Bernad. in seram.  
2. de Epi. b.*

under infant Innocency; the Almighty power in so great weaknesse, and under the lownesse of humane nature, the altitude of Majesty and the infinity of Divine Glory. And so was verified the prediction of the Prophet Esay under the type of the son of the Propheteſſe, *Before a childe ſhall have knowledge to cry, My Father and my Mother, he ſhall take the ſpoil of Damascus and Samaria, from before the King of Aſſyria.*

When they had paid the tribute of their offerlings and adoration, *Being warned in their ſleep by an Angel not to return to Herod, they returned into their own country another way,* where having been Satisfied with the Pleasures of Religion, and taught by that rare demonstration which was made by C H R I S T, how Mans happinesſe did nothing at all conſit in the affluence of worldly poſſeſſions, or the tumours of honour, having ſeen the Eternal Son of G O D poor and weak, and unclothed of all exterior Ornaments, they renounced the World, and retired empty into the recesses of Religion, and the delights of Philosophy.



13.

167 84.  
Justin M. Dial. cum  
Tryphon.  
Ierul. I. 3. contr.  
Marcion. c. 13.

### Ad. Sect. 4.

#### *Considerations upon the apparition of the Angels to the Shepherds.*

**W**hen the Angels ſaw that come to paſſe which Gabriel the great Embaſſadour of G O D had declared, that which had been prayed for and expected four thouſand yeers, and that by the merits of this new-born Prince, their younger brethren and inferiours in the order of intelligent creatures were now to be redeemed, that Men ſhould partake the glories of their ſecret habitations, and ſhould fill up thoſe void places which the fall of Lucifer and the third part of the Stars had made, their joy was great as their understanding, and theſe mountains did leap with joy; because the valleys were filled with benediction and a fruitful flower from Heaven. And if at the conversion of one ſinner there is jubilation and a feſtival kept among the Angels, how great shall we imagine this rejoicing to be, when *Salvation* and *Redemption* was ſent to all the World? But we also to whom the joy did more personally relate (for they rejoiced for our ſakes) ſhould learn to estimate the grace done us, and believe there is something very extraordinary in the piety and ſalvation of a Man, when the Angels who in reſpect of us are unconcern'd in the communications, rejoice with the joy of Conquerours, or perſons ſuddenly ransomed from tortures and death.

But the Angels alſo had other motions; for beſides the pleasures of that joy which they had in beholding humane nature ſo highly exalted, and that G O D was Man and Man was G O D; they were transported with admiration at the ineſſible Counſel of G O D S predeſtination, proſtrating themſelves with adoration and moidefty, ſeeing G O D ſo humbled, and Man ſo changed, and ſo full of charity, that G O D ſtooped to the condition of

1.

Man.

2.

Man, and Man was inflamed beyond the love of Seraphims, and was made more knowing then Cherubims, more established then thrones, more happy then all the orders of Angels. The issue of this consideration teaches us to learn *their charity*, and to exterminate all the intimations and beginnings of *envy*, that we may as much rejoice at the good of others as of our selves ; for then we love good for G O D S sake when we love good where ever G O D hath placed it ; and that joy is charitable which overflows our neighbours fields, when our selves are unconcerned in the personal accrue-ments ; for so we are *made partakers of all that fear God*, when charity unites their joy to ours, as it makes us partakers of their common sufferings.

3. And now the Angels, who had adored the holy J E S U S in Heaven, come also to pay their homage to him upon earth ; and laying aside their flaming swords, they take into their hands instruments of musick, and sing, *Glory be to God on high*. First, signifying to us that the Incarnation of the holy J E S U S, was a very great instrument of the glorification of G O D, and those divine perfections in which he is chiefly pleased to communicate himself to us, were in nothing manifested so much as in the mysteriousnesse of this work. Secondly, and in vain does Man satisfie himself with complacencies and ambitious designes upon earth, when he sees before him, GOD in the form of a servant, humble and poor, and crying, and an infant full of need and weaknesse.

4. But G O D hath pleased to reconcile his glory with our eternal benefit, and that also was part of the Angels song, *In earth peace to men of good will*. For now we need not with Adam to flye from the presence of the L O R D, saying, *I heard thy voice and I was afraid and hid my self* ; for he, from whom our sins made us once to flye, now weeps, and is an infant in his Mothers arms, seeking strange means to be reconciled to us, hath forgotten all his anger and is swallowed up with love, and incircled with irradiations of amorous affections and good will : and the effects of this good will are not referred onely to persons of heroical and eminent graces and operations of vast and expensive charities, of prodigious abstinencies, of heremitical retirements, of ascetical diet, of perfect religion and canoniz'd persons, but to all *men of good will*, whose souls are hallowed with holy purposes and pious desires, though the beaties of the religion, and holy thoughts, were not spent in exterior acts, nor called out by the opportunities of a rich and expressive fortune.

5. But here we know where *the seat and regiment of peace* is placed, and all of it must passe by us and descend upon us as duty and reward. It proceeds from the word *Incarnate*, from the Son of G O D undertaking to reconcile us to his Father ; and it is ministred and confign'd unto us by every event and act of providence, whether it be deciphered in characters of paternal indulgence, or of correction, or absolution : For that is not peace from above, to have all things according to our humane and natural wishes ; but to be in favour with G O D, *that is peace* ; always remembraing that, to be chastised by him, is not a certain testimony of his meer wrath, but to all his servants a character of love, and of paternal provision, since he *chastises every son whom he receives*. Whofoever seeks to avoid all this worlds adversity, can never finde peace : but he onely who hath resolved all his afflictions, and placed them in the heart of G O D, he who denies his own will, and hath kill'd self-love, and all those enemies within that make afflictions

to become miseries indeed and full of bitterness, he only enjoyes this peace; and in proportion to every mans mortification and self denial, so are the degrees of his peace; and this is *the peace* which the Angel proclaimed at the enunciation of that birth which taught humility and contempt of things below, and all its vainer glories by the greatest argument in the world, even the poverty of GOD Incarnate. And if GOD sent his own natural onely begotten and beloved Son, in all the dreses of poverty and contempt; that person is vain, who thinks GOD will love him better then he loved his own Son, or that he will expresse his love any other or gentler way then to make him partaker of the fortune of his eldeſt Son. There is one other poſtern to the dwellings of peace, and that is, *good will to Men*, for ſo much charity as we have to others, ſuch a measure of peace alſo we may enjoy at home: For peace was onely proclaim'd to Men of good will, to them that are at peace with GOD and all the World.

But the Angel brought the message to Shepherds, to persons ſimple and mean, and humble; perſons likely to be more apprehenſive of the mystery and leſle of the ſcandal, of the poverty of the *Meffias*: for they whose cuſtom or affections dwell in ſecular pomps, who are not uſed by charity or humiility to ſtoop to an evenneſſe and conſideration of their brethren, of equal natures though of unequal fortunes; are perſons of all the world moſt in-  
disposed & removed from the understanding of ſpiritual excellencies, eſpe-  
cially when they do not come clothed with advantages of the world, and of  
ſuch beauties which they admire. G O D himſelf in poverty comes in a pre-  
juſtice to them that love riches, and \* ſimplicity is folly to crafty perſons, a  
mean birth is an ignoble ſtain, beggery is a ſcandal, and the Croſie an unan-  
ſwerable objeſtion. But the Angels moral in the circumſtance of his addreſſe,  
and inviting the poor Shepherds to *Bethlehem*, is, That none are fit to come  
to CHRIST, but thoſe who are poor in ſpirit, despifers of the world, ſim-  
ple in their hearts, without craft and ſecular deſignes; and therefore nei-  
ther did the Angel tell the ſtory to *Herod*, nor to the Scribes and Pharifees  
whoo ambition had ends contradictory to the ſimplicity and poverty of the  
birth of JESUS.

These Shepherds when they conuerſed with Angels were watching over their flocks by night; no Revellers; but in a painful and dangerous imploy-  
ment, the work of an honest calling, ſecuring their folds against incursions  
of wilde beaſts, which in thoſe Countries are not ſeldom, or infrequent. And  
CHRIST being the great Shepherd (and poſſibly for the analogies fake the  
ſooner maniſtred to Shepherds,) hath made his Minifters overfeers of their  
flocks, diſtinguiſhed in their particular folds, and conveys the mysteriouſ-  
neſſe of his kingdom firſt to the Paſtors, and by their miniftry to the flocks;  
But although all of them be admitted to the Miniftry, yet thoſe onely to  
the interiour recesses and neerer imitations of JESUS, who are watchfull  
over their flocks, affiduous in their labours, painful in their ſufferings, pre-  
ſent in the dangers of the ſheep, ready to interpoſe their perſons, and fa-  
ſifice their lives; these are Shepherds who firſt conuerſe with Angels,  
and finally ſhall enter into the preſence of the LORD. But beſides this  
ſymbol, we are taught in the ſignifications of the letter; That he that is di-  
ligent in the buſineſſe of an honest calling, is then doing ſervice to G O D,  
and a work ſo pleaſing to him, who hath appointed the ſons of Men to la-  
bour, that to these Shepherds he made a return and recompence by the con-  
verſation

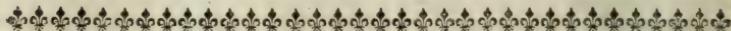
\* At nos vittutes ip-  
fas invertimus, aig;  
Sincerum cupimus  
vas incurratur. Pobus  
qvis  
Nobis cum vivit, mul-  
tum demissus homo,  
ili  
Tardo cognomem pin-  
gui damus  
simplicior si quis ut  
terre legiemem  
Aut tacitum impellat  
quovis fermeo mo-  
leſtus  
Communi ſenu pla-  
ne caret, i quimur-  
Horat. Serm. l. 1. Sat. 3.

6.

7.

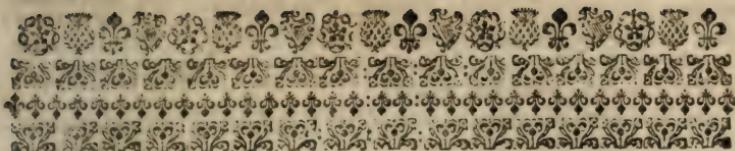
versation of an Angel ; and hath advanced the reputation of an honest and a mean imployment to such a testimony of acceptance, that no honest person, though busied in meaner offices , may ever hereafter in the estimation of CHRIST'S disciples become contemptible.

8. The signes which the Angel gave to discover the Babe were no marks of lustre and vanity, but they should finde, 1. A Babe. 2. Swadled. 3. Lying in a manger. The first a testimony of his humility, the second of his poverty , the third of his incommodity and uneasinesse ; For CHRIST came to combate the whole body of Sin, and to destroy every Province of Satans Kingdom. For these are direct antinomies to the *lusts of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life.* Against the first, CHRIST opposed his hard and unease lodging, against the second, the poornesse of his swadling-bands and mantle, and the third is combated by the great dignitation and descent of CHRIST from a throne of Majesty to the state of a fucking Babe. And these are the first Lessons he hath taught us for our imitation, which that we may the better do , as we must take him for our pattern , so also for our kelper, and pray to the Holy Childe, and he will not onely teach us, but also give us power and ability.



## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Blessed and eternal JESU, at whose birth the Quires of Angels sang praises to GOD, and proclaimed peace to Men, sanctifie my will and inferiour affections ; make me to be within the conditions of peace, that I be Holy and mortified, a Despiser of the world and exterior vanities, humble and charitable ; that by thy eminent example I may be so fixed in the designes and prosecution of the ends of GOD, and a Blissful Eternity, that I be unmoved with the terrors of the World, unaltered with its allurements and seductions, not ambitious of its honour, not desirous of its fulnesse and plenty ; but make me diligent in the imployment thou givest me , faithful in discharge of my trust, modest in my desires, content in the issues of thy Providence , that in such dispositions I may receive and entertain visitations from Heaven, and revelations of the mysteries and blisses Evangelical ; that by such directions I may be brought into thy presence , there to see thy beauties and admire thy graces, and imitate all thy imitable excellencies , and rest in thee for ever in this world by the perseverance of a holy and conforable life, and in the world to come in the participation of thy essential glories and felicities, O blessed and eternal JESUS. Amen.



*Ad. Sc&t. 4.*

*Considerations of the Epiphany of the B. JESUS  
by a Star, and the adoration of JESUS by  
the Eastern Magi.*

**G**O D, who is the universal Father of all Men, at the Nativity of the *Messias* gave notice of it to all the World, as they were represented by the grand Division of Jews and Gentiles. To the Jewish Shepherds by an *Angel*, to the Eastern *Magi* by a *Star*. For the Gospel is of universal dissemination, not confined, within the limits of a nationall prerogative, but Catholick and diffused. As GODS love was, so was the dispensation of it, without respect of persons; for all being included under the curse of sin were to him equal and indifferent, undistinguishable objects of mercy. And JESUS descended of the Jews was also the *expectation of the Gentiles*, and therefore communicated to all: The grace of GOD being like the air we breathe, and it hath appeared to all men, saith Saint Paul; but the conveyances and communications of it were different in the degrees of clarity and illustration. The Angel told the Shepherds the story of the Nativity plainly and literally; The starre invited the Wise men by its rarenesse and preternatural apparition; to which also as by a footpath they had been led by the Prophecy of *Balaam*.

But here first the grace of G O D prevents us; without him we can do nothing, he lays the first stone in every spiritual building; and then expects by that strength he first gave us, that we make the superstructures. But as a stone thrown into a River, first moves the water, and disturbs its surface into a Circle, and then its own force wafts the neighbouring drops into a larger figure by its proper weight: So is the grace of G O D, the first principle of our spiritual motion, and when it moves us into its own figure, and hath actuated and ennobled our natural powers by the influence of that first incentive, we continue the motion and enlarge the Progresse; but as the Circles on the face of the Wa-

*tit 2.11.*

2.

Waters, growes weaker till it hath smooth'd it self into a naturall and even current, unlesse the force be renewed or continued: So do all our naturall endeavours, when first set a work by GODS preventing grace, decline to the imperfection of its own kinde, unlesse the same force be made energical and operative by the continuation and renewing of the same supernatural influence.

3. And therefore the Eastern Magi, being first raised up into wonder and curiositie, by the apparition of the Star, were very far from finding JESUS by such general and indefinite significations: but then the goodness of GODS grace increased its own influence; for an inspiration from the Spirit of GOD admonished them to observe the Star, shewed the Star that they might finde it, taught them to acknowledge it, instructed them to understand its purpose, and invited them to follow it; and never left them till they had found the holy JESUS. Thus also GOD deals with us. He gives us the first grace, and addes the second, he enlightens our understandings, and actuates our faculties, and sweetly allures us by the propositon of rewards, and wounds us with the arrows of his love, and inflames us with fire from Heaven; ever giving us new assistances, or increasing the old, refreshing us with comforts, or arming us with patience; sometime stirring our affections by the lights held out to our understanding, sometimes bringing confirmation to our understanding by the motion of our affections, till by variety of means we at last arrive at Bethlehem, in the service and entertainments of the holy JESUS. Which we shall certainly do, if we follow the invitations of grace and exterior assistances which are given us to instruct us, to help us, and to invite us, but not to force our endeavours and cooperations.

4. As it was an unsearchable wisdom, so it was an unmeasurable grace of Providence and dispensation which GOD did exhibit to the Wise men, to them as to all Men disposing the ministeries of his grace, sweetly, and by proportion to the capacities of the person suspicent. For GOD called the Gentiles by such means which their customes and learning had made prompt and easie. For these Magi were great Philosophers and Astronomers, and therefore GOD sent a miraculous starre to invite and lead them to a new and more glorious light; the lights of Grace and Glory. And GOD so blessed them in following the starre to which their innocent curiositie and national customes were apt to lead them; that their custom was chang'd to Grace, and their learning heightned with inspiration, and GOD crown'd all with a spiritual and glorious event. It was not much unlike, which GOD did to the Princes and Diviners among the Philistines, who sent the Ark back with five golden Emerods and five golden Mice; an act proportionable to the custom and sense of their Nation and Religion; yet GOD accepted their opinion and divination to the utmost end they design'd it, and took the plagues of Emerods and Mice from them: For oftentimes the custome or the Philosophy of the opinions of a Nation are made instrumentall through GODS acceptance, to ends higher then they can produce by their own Energy and intendment: And thus the Astrologicall divinations of the Magi were turned into the order of a greater designe then the whole art could promise, their imployment

*redit intellectum  
qui periret signum.  
S. Leo sa. i. Epiph.*

*2 Sam.6.*

imployment being altered into Grace, and Nature into a Miracle. But then when the Wise men were brought by this meanes and had seen JESUS, then GOD takes wayes more immediate and proportionable to the Kingdom of Grace: the next time, GOD speaks to them by an Angel. For so is GODS usual manner to bring us to him; first, by wayes agreeable to us, and then to increase by wayes agreeable to himself. And when he hath furnished us with new capacities, he gives new lights in order to more perfect imployments: And, *To him that hath, shall be given full measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over;* the eternal kindnesse of GOD being like the Sea, which delights to runne in its old Channell, and to fill the hollownesses of the Earth which it self hath made and hath once watered.

This Starre, which conducted the Wisemen to Bethlehem, was set in its place to be seen by all; but was not observed or not understood, nor its message obeyed by any but the three Wise men: and indeed no man hath cause to complain of GOD, as if ever he would be deficient in assistances necessary to his service, but first the grace of GOD separates us from the common condition of incapacity and indisposition, and then we separate our selves one from another by the use or neglect of this Grace, and GOD doing his part to us, hath cause to complain of us, who neglect that which is our portion of the work. And however even the issies and the kindnesse of GODS Predestination and antecedent mercy does very much toward the making the Grace to be effecte of its purpose, yet the manner of all those influences, and operations being morall, perswasive, reasonable, and divisible; and by concourse of various circumstances, the cause and the effect are brought nearer and nearer in various Suscipients, but not brought so close together; but that GOD expects us to do \* some-  
thing towards it; so that we may say with Saint Paul, *It is not I, but ye are the instruments of God that is with me;* and at the same time, when by reason of our cooperation we attuate and improve GODS grace, and Persai.  
become distinguished from other persons, more negligent under the same opportunities, GOD is he, who also does distinguish us by the proportions and circumstantiate applications of his grace to every singular capacity; that we may be careful not to neglect the grace, and yet to return the entire glory to \* GOD.

Although GOD, to second the generous designe of these wise personages in the Enquiry of the New Prince, made the starre to guide them through the difficulties of their journey, yet when they came to Jerusalem, the starre disappeared; GOD so resolving to try their Faith, and the activity of their desires; to remonstrate to them that GOD is the LOR D of all his Creatures, and a voluntary Dispenser of his own favours, and can as well take them away as indulge them, and to engage them upon the use of ordinary means and ministeries when they are to be had; for now the extraordinary and miraculous Guide for a time did cease; that they being at Jerusalem might enquire of them, whose office and profession of sacred mysteries did oblige them to publish the MESSIAS. For GOD is so great a lover of order, so regular and certain an exactor of us to use those ordinary ministeries.

ries of his own appointing, that he having used the extraordinary, but as Architects do frames of wood, to support the arches till they be built, takes them away when the work is ready, and leaves us to those other of his designation, and hath given such efficacy to these, that they are as perwasive and operative as a miracle ; and S. Pauls Sermon would convert as many , as if Moses shoulde rise from the grave ; and now the doctrines of Christianity have not onely the same truth, but the same evidence and vertue also they had in the midst of those prime demonstrations extraordinary by miracle and prophecy, if Men were equally disposed.

7. When they were come to the Doctors of the Jews they asked confidently , and with great opennesse , under the ear and eye of a Tyrant Prince , bloody and timorous , jealous and ambitious , *Where is he that is born King of the Jews ?* And so gave evidence of their faith, of their magnanimity and fearlesse confidence and profession of it, and of their love of the mystery and object , in pursuance of which they had taken so troublesome and vexatious journeys : and besides that they upbraided the tepidity and infidel basenesse of the Jewish Nation , who stood unmoved and unconcerned by all the Circumstances of wonder , and stirred not one step to make enquiry after , or to visit the new-born King . They also teach us to be open and confident in our Religion and Faith , and not to consider our temporall , when they once come to contest against our Religious interests.

8. The Doctors of the Jews told the Wise men where CHRIST was to be born , the Magi they addresse themselves with haste to see him , and to worship , and the Doctors themselves stirre not ; GOD not onely serving himself with truth out of the mouths of impious persons , but magnifying the recesses of his Counsell and Wisdome and Predestination , who uses the same Doctrine to gloriifie himself and to confound his enemies , to save the Scholars , and to condemne the Tutors , to instruct one and upbraid the other ; making it an instrument of Faith and a conviction of infidelity ; the Sermons of the Doctors in such cases being like the spoiles of Bevers , Sheep , and Silkworms , designed to clothe others , and are made the occasions of their own nakednesse , and the causes of their Death . But as it is a Demonstration of the Divine Wisdome , so it is of humane folly ; there being no greater imprudence in the World then to doe others advantage , and to neglect your own . If thou doest well unto thy self men will speak good of thee : But if thou beeest like a Channell in a Garden , through which the water runnes , to coole and moisten the Herbs , but nothing for its own use ; thou buildest a fortune to them upon the ruines of thine own house , while after thy preaching to others , thou thy selfe doest become a castaway .

*Plaga mortale che si  
non puo guarire , &  
Vivere in altri , &  
in te stesso morire .*

9. When the Wisemen departed from Jerusalem the star again appeared , & they rejoiced with exceeding great joy ; and indeed to new Converts & persons in their first addresses to the worship of GOD , such spiritual & exterior comforts

comforts are often indulged; because then GOD judges them to be most necessary, as being invitations to duty by the entertainments of our affections with such sweetneses, which represent the glory of the reward by the antepasts and refreshments dispensed even in the ruggedness of the way and incommodities of the journey. All other delights are the pleasures of Beasts or the sports of children; these are the antepasts and preventions of the full feasts and overflowings of Eternity.

When they came to Bethlehem, and the Star pointed them to a Stable, they entred in, and being enlightened with a Divine ray proceeding from the face of the holy Childe, and seeing through the cloud, and passing through the scandal of his mean lodging, and poor condition, they bowed themselves to the earth; first giving themselves an oblation to this great King, then they made offering of their gifts; for a Mans person is first accepted, then his gift; GOD first regarded Abel, and then accepted his offering, which we are best taught to understand by the present instance; for it means no more, but that all outward services and oblations are made acceptable by the priour presentation of an inward sacrifice. If we have first presented our selves, then our gift is pleasant, as coming but to express the truth of the first sacrifice: but if our persons be not first made a Holocaust to GOD; the lesser oblations of outward presents are like Sacrifices without salt and fire, nothing to make them *pleasant* or *religious*. For all other series of this proposition charge upon GOD the distinguishing and acceptation of persons, against which he solemnly protests. GOD regards no Mans person, but according to the doing of his duty; but then GOD is said first to accept the person, and then the gift, when the person is first sanctified and given to GOD by the vows and habits of a holy life, and then all the actions of his religion are homogeneal to their principle, and accepted by the acceptation of the Man.

These Magi presented to the holy Babe Gold, Frankincense and Myrrhe, professing their faith of three Articles by the symbolical oblation: By Gold, that he was a King, by Incense, that he was a GOD, by Myrrhe, that he was a Man; and the presents also were representative of interior vertues: The Myrrhe signifying Faith, Mortification, Chastity, Compunction, and all the actions of the purgative way of Spiritual life: The Incense signifying Hope, Prayer, Obedience, good Intention, and all the actions and Devotions of the Illuminative: The giving the Gold, representing love to GOD, and our Neighbours, the contempt of riches, Poverty of Spirit, and all the eminencies and spiritual riches of the unitive life; and these oblations if we present to the holy JESUS, both our persons and our gifts shall be accepted, our sins shall be purged, our understandings enlightened, and our wills united to this holy childe, and entitled to a communion of all his glories.

And thus in one view and two instances, GOD hath drawn all the World to himself by his Son JESUS; in the instance of the Shepherds and the Persian Magi Jews and Gentiles, Learned and unlearned, Rich and Poor, Noble and Ignoble; that in him all Nations, and all Conditions, and all Families, and all persons might be blessed, having called all by one Star or other, by natural reason, or by the secrerts of Philosophy, by the Revelations of the Gospel, or by the ministry of Angels, by

10.

11.

12.

Nam simili certis, animisq; duci  
Ex tua Beata nube du-  
tiores

Nunc oves facti, duce  
te regantur.

Pacis in aulam.

Nos ubi quendam fu-  
erat: feratur

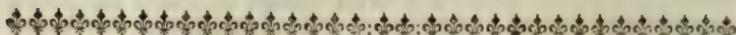
Nunc ibi rite viger  
Angelorum

Et lateri Justus, qui-  
bus ipse latro

Vixit in antris,

S. Paulinus in redditu  
Niceret.

the illuminations of the Spirit, or by Sermons, and Dictates of spiritual Fathers ; and hath configned this lesson to us , That we must never appear before the LORD empty ; offering gifts to him by the expences, or by the affections of charity, either the worlipping, or the oblations of Religion, either the riches of the World, or the love of the Soul ; for if we cannot bring gold with the rich Persians, we may with the poor Shepherds come and *kisse the Son lest he be angry*, and in all cases come and *serve him with fear and reverence*, and spiritual rejoycings.



## The P R A Y E R.

**M**ost holy JESU , thou art the glory of thy people Israel, and a light to the Gentiles, and wert pleased to call the Gentiles to the adoration and knowledge of thy sacred person and laws, communicating the inestimable riches of thy holy Discipline, to all, with an universal undistinguishing love ; give unto us spirits docile, pious, prudent, and ductile, that no motion or invitation of grace be ineffectual, but may produce excellent effects upon us, and the secret whispers of thy spirit may prevail upon our affections in order to piety and obedience, as certainly as the loudest and most clamorous Sermons of the Gospel. Create in us such excellencies as are fit to be presented to thy glorious Majesty ; accept of the oblation of my self, and my entire services ; but be thou pleased to verifie my offering, and secure the possession to thy self, that the enemy may not pollute the sacrifice, or divide the gift, or question the title ; but that I may be wholly thine, and for ever ; clarifie my understanding, sanctifie my will, replenish my memory with arguments of Piety, then shall I present to thee an oblation rich and precious as the treble gift of the Levantine Princes ; LORD I am thine, reject me not from thy favour, exclude me not from thy presence, then shall I serve thee all the dayes of my life, and partake of the glories of thy Kingdom in which thou reignest gloriously and eternally. Amen.

Sect.



## Sect. 5.

### *Of the Circumcision of J E S U S, and his presentation in the Temple.*

**A**ND now the blessed SAVIOUR of the World began to do the work of his mission, and our redemption, and because Man had prevaricated all the Divine Commandments, to which all humane nature respectively to the persons of several capacities was obliged, and therefore the whole nature was obnoxious to the just rewards of its demerits: First CHRIST was to put that nature he had assumed into a saveable condition by fulfilling his Fathers preceptive will, and then to reconcile it actually by suffering the just deservings of its prevarications. He therefore addresses himself to all the parts of an active obedience, and when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, he exposed his tender body to the sharpnesse of the circumcising stone, and shed his blood in drops, giving an earnest of those rivers which he did afterwards pour out for the cleansing all humane nature, and extinguishing the wrath of GOD.

He that had no sin, nor was conceived by natural generation, could have no adherencies to his soul or body which needed to be pared away by a rite, and cleansed by a mystery; neither indeed do we finde it expressed, that Circumcision was ordained for abolition or pardon of original sin, (it is indeed presumed so;) but it was instituted to be a seal of a Covenant between GOD and Abraham, and Abrahams posterity, A seal of the righteousness of faith, and therefore was not improper for him to suffer, who was the childe of Abraham, and who was the Prince of the covenant, and the author and finisher of that faith, which was configned to Abraham in Circumcision. But so mysterious were all the actions of JESUS, that this one serv'd many ends: for 1. It gave demonstration of the verity of humane nature, 2. So he began to fulfil the law, 3. And took from himself the scandal of uncircumcision, which would eternally have prejudiced the Jews against his entertainment and communion; 4. And then he took upon him that name which declar'd him to be the SAVIOUR of the World, which as it was consummated in the blood of the Croffe, so was it inaugurated in the blood of Circumcision, For when the eight dayes were accomplished for circumcising of the childe, his name was called JESUS.

Οὐτοῦ τὸν τε  
Ιπποτὴν τὸν  
Ἄρειον  
Ἄνθες επὶ τε  
ιδέαν καὶ τὸν  
πατέρα τούτου οἶκον  
Σαρκὸν πονητὴν  
πόνος δοῦλον, καὶ  
Πίθαιον.  
Εὐαγγ. q.c. 22. par-  
par. Evangel.

3.

But this holy Family who had laid up their joyes in the eyes and heart of GOD, long d till they might be permitted an addresse to the Temple, that there they might present the holy Babe unto his Father ; and indeed that he, who had no other, might be brought to his own house : For although, while he was a childe, he did differ nothing from a servant, yet he was the Lord of the place, *It was his Fathers house, and he was the Lord of all, and therefore when the dayes of the purification were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem to present him to the Lord;* To whom he was holy as being the first born ; the first born of his Mother, the onely begotten Son of his Father, and the first born of every creature. And they did with him according to the law of Moses, offering a pair of Turtle Doves for his redemption.

4.

But there was no publick act about this holy childe, but it was attended by something miraculous and extraordinary. And at this instant the Spirit of GOD directed a holy person into the Temple, that he might feel the fulfilling of a Prophecy made to himself, that he might before his death behold the LORD's CHRIST, and imbrace the glory and consolation of Israel, and the light of the Gentiles in his arms, for old Simeon came by the Spirit into the Temple, and when the Parents brought in the childe JESUS, then took he him up in his arms and blessed GOD, and prophesied, and spake glorious things of that childe, and things sad and glorious concerning his Mother ; that the childe was set for the rising and falling of many in Israel, for a signe that should be spoken against ; and the bitternesse of that contradiction should pierce the heart of the holy Virgin Mother like a sword, that her joy at the preuent accidents might be attempered with present revelation of her future trouble, and the excellent favour of being the Mother of GOD might be crowned with the reward of Martyrdom, and a Mothers love be raised up to an excellency great enough to make her suffer the bitternesse of being transfixed with his love and sorrow as with a sword.

5.

But old Anna the Prophetesse came also in, full of years, and joy, and found the reward of her long prayers and fasting in the Temple, the long looked for redemption of Israel was now in the Temple, and she saw with her eyes the Light of the World, the Heir of Heaven, the long looked for Messias whom the Nations had desired and expected till their hearts were faint, and their eyes dimme with looking further and apprehending greater distances : She also prophesied and gave thanks unto the Lord. But Joseph and his Mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.

Sect.



## Ad. Sect. 5.

### *Considerations upon the Circumcision of the holy childe J E S U S.*

**V**hen eight dayes were come, the holy J E S U S was circumcised, and shed the first fruits of his blood, offering them to God like the prælibation of a sacrifice, and earnest of the great seas of effusion designed for his Passion, not for the expiation of any staine himself had contracted; for he was spotlesse as the face of the Sunne, and had contracted no wrinkle from the aged and polluted brow of Adam; but it was an act of obedience, and yet of choice and voluntary susception, to which no obligation had passed upon him in the condition of his owne person: For as he was included in the vierge of Abrahams posterity, and had put on the common outside of his Nation, his Parents had intimation enough to passe upon him the Sacrament of the Nationall Covenant, and it became an act of excellent obedience; but because he was a person extraordinary, and exempt from the reasons of Circumcision, and himself in person was to give period to the rite, therefore it was an act of choice in him, and in both the capacities becomes a precedent of duty to us, in the first of obedience, in the seconde of humility.

But it is considerable, that the holy J E S U S, who might have pleaded his exemption, especially in a matter of pain and dishonour, yet chose that way which was more severe and regular, so teaching us to be strict in our duties, and sparing in the rights of priviledge and dispensation; every indisposition of body excuses us from penall duties, from fasting, from going to Church; and instantly we will satisfie our selves with saying, *God will have mercy and not sacrifice*; so making our selves Judges of our owne priviledges, in which commonly we are parties against God, and therefore likely to passe unequall sentence. It is not an easie argument that will bring us to the severities and rigours of our dutie, but we snatch at occasions of dispensation, and therefore possibly may mistake the justice of the opportunities by the importunitie of our desires. However, if this too much easinesse be in any case excusable from sinne; yet in all cases it is an argument of infirmity, and the regular observation of the Commandment is the surer way to perfection. For not every inconvenience of body is fit to be pleaded against the inconvenience of loosing spirituall advantages, but onely such which upon prudent account does intrench upon the Lawes of Charity; or

or such whose consequent is likely to be impediment of a duty in a greater degree of losse then the present omission. For the spirit being in many perfections more eminent then the body, all spirituall improvements have the same proportions; so that if we were just estimators of things, it ought not to be lesse then a great incommodity to the body, which we mean to prevent by the losse of a spirituall benefit, or the omission of a duty; he were very improvident, who would loose a finger for the good husbandry of saving a duckat; and it would be an unhandsome excuse from the duties of repentance to pretend care of the body. The proportions and degrees of this are so nice and of so difficult determination, that men are more apt to untie the girdle of discipline with the loose hands of dispensation and excuse, then to strain her too hard by the strictures and bindings of severity, but the error were the surer on this side.

3. The blessed J E S U S refused not the signature of this bloody Covenant, though it were the Character of a Sinner, and did Sacramentally rescind the impure reliques of Adam, and the contractions of evil customes, which was the greatest descent of humility that is imaginable, that he should put himself to pain to be reckoned amongst sinners and to have their Sacraments and their Protestations, though his innocence was purer then the flames of Cherubim. But we use arts to seem more righteous then we are, desiring rather to be accounted holy, then to be; as thinking the vanity of reputation more usefull to us, then the happinesse of a remote and far distant Eternity. But if ( as it is said ) Circumcision was ordained, besides the signing of the Covenant, to abolish the guilt of Originall sin, we are willing to confess that, it being no act of humiliation to confess a crime that all the world is equally guilty of, that could not be avoided by our time-left industry, and that serves us for so many ends in the excuse and mincratior of our actuall impieties; so that as *Diogenes* trampled upon *Plato's* pride with a greater fastuousnesse, and humorous ostentation; so we do with Originall sin; declame against it bitterly to save the others harmlesse, and are free in the publication of this, that we may be instructed how to conceal the actuall. The blessed J E S U S had in him no principle of sin, originall nor actuall, and therefore this designation of his in submitting himself to the bloody Covenant of Circumcision, which was a just expresse and Sacramentall abscission of it, was an act of glorious humility; yet our chargin of our selves so promptly with *Adams* fault, what ever truth it may have in the strictnesse of Theology, hath put an ill end in morality; and so I now consider it without any reflexion upon the precise Question.

4. For though the fall of *Adam* lost to him all those supernaturall assistances which God put into our nature by way of grace, yet it is by accident that we are more prone to *many sins* then we are to vertue, *Adam's* sin did discompose his understanding and affections; and every sin we do, does still make us more unreasonale, more violent, more sensuall, more apt still to the multiplication of the same or the like actions; the first rebellion of the inferiour faculties against the will and understanding and every victory the flesh gets over the spirit makes the inferiour insolent, strong, tumultuous, domineering and triumphant, upon the proportionable ruins of the spirit, blinding our reason and binding our will; and all these violations of our powers are increased by the perpetuall ill customes and false principles and ridiculous guises of the World; which makes the latter ages to be worse then the

the \* former, unlesse some other accident do intervene to stop the ruine and declension of vertue, such as are Gods judgements, the sending of Prophets, new imposition of laws, messages from heaven, diviner institutions, such as in particular was the great Discipline of Christianity. And even in this fence here is Origination enough for sin and impairing of the reasonable faculties of humane souls without charging our faults upon Adam.

But besides this; God who hath propounded to man glorious conditions, and design'd him to an excellent state of immortality, hath required of him such a duty as shall put man to labour, and present to G O D a service of a free and difficult obedience. For therefore G O D hath given us laws, which come croise and are restraints to our naturall inclinations that we may part with something in the service of G O D, which we value. For although this is nothing in respect of G O D yet to man it is the greatest he can do. What thanks were it to man to obey G O D in such things which he would do thongh he were not commanded. But to leave all our own desires, and to take up objects of G O D S propounding contrary to our own, and desires against our nature, this is that which G O D design'd as a sacrifice of our selves to him. And therefore G O D hath made many of his laws to be prohibitions in the matter of naturall pleasure, and restraints of our sensitive appetite. Now this being become the matter of Divine laws, that we should in many parts and degrees abstaine from what pleases our senses, by this supervening accident it happens that we are very hardly weaned from sinne, but most easily tempted to a vice. And then we think we have reason to lay the fault upon originall sinne and naturall aversation from goodness, when this inclination to vice is but accidentall, and occasionall upon the matter and sanction of the laws. *Our nature is not contrary to vertue, for the laws of nature, and right reason do not only oblige us, but incline us to it; but the instances of some vertues are made to come crosse our nature, that is to our naturall appetites by reason of which it comes to passe, that (as S. Paul fayes) we are by nature the children of wrath, meaning, that by our naturall inclinations we are disposed to contradict those laws which lay fettters upon them, we are apt to satisfie the lusts of the flesh, for in these he there instances.*

But in things intellectuall and spirituall, where neither the one nor the other satisfie the sensuall part, we are indifferent to vertue or to vice, and when we do amisse it is wholly and in all degrees inexcusably our own fault. In the old law when it was a duty to swear by the G O D of Israel in solemn causes, men were apt enough to swear by him onely, and that sometimes the Israelites did swear by the Queen of heaven, it was by the ill example and desires to comply with the neighbour nations, whose daughters they sometime married, or whose arms they feared, or whose friendship they desired, or with whom they did negotiate. It is indifferent to us to love our Fathers and to love strangers, according as we are determin'd by custome or education. Nay for so much of it as is naturall and originall, we are more inclin to love them, then to disrepute them, and if we disobey them it is when any injunction of theirs comes crosse to our naturall defres and purposes. But if from our infancie we be told concerning a stranger that he is our Father, we frame our affections to nature, and our nature to custome and education, and are as apt to love him who is not, and yet is said to be, as him, who is said not to be, and yet indeed is our naturall Father.

\* Ταῦτα διάδεικνει  
ηγέρει διότι τοιούτοις  
νοοῦσιν τοιαύταις  
φύσεις τοιαύταις  
απίστοις οξείτεραι  
φύσις, οις χρησθεῖσαι  
τοιαύταις φύσεις.  
Porphy. l. 4. de non  
eu animalium.

5.

\* Τοιαύταις φύσις  
εἰσὶ τοῖς λογισμοῖς  
γίνεσθαι ενοτασσεῖ-  
ται φύσις φύσις  
παρατασσεῖται  
αὐτῇ [διαφέρει] παρα-  
διδεῖται φύσης.

Hypoth. Ep. 8. Sim. 2.

6.

7. And in sensual things; if GOD had commanded Polygamy or promiscuous Concubinate, or unlimited eatings and drinkings, it is not to be supposed, but that we should have been ready enough to have obeyed GOD in all such impositions. And the sons of Israell never murmured, when GOD bade them borrow jewels and ear-rings, and spoil the Egyptians: But because GOD restrain'd these desires, our duties are the harder, because

\* Non enim nos tarditat natura danavimus, sed ultra nobis quod oportebat indulsumus: ita non tam ingenio nos illa superarunt quam proposito. Quintil. orat. 1. every one of us is the Adam, the man of sin, and the parent of our own impurities. For it is notorious that our own iniquities do so discompose our naturals, and evill customes and examples do so incourage impietie, and the law of GOD enjoys such vertues which do violence to nature, that our proclivity to sin is occasion'd by the accident, and is caused by our selves, \* whatever mischief Adam did to us, we do more to our selves. We are taught to be revengeful in our cradles, and are taught to strike our Neighbor as a means to still our frowardnesse, and to satisfie our wranglings. Our nurses teach us to know the greatness of our birth, or the riches of our inheritance, or they learn us to be proud, or to be impatient, before they learn us to know GOD, or to say our Prayers; And then because the use of reason comes at no definite time, but insensibly and divisibly, we are permitted such acts with impunity too long, deferring to repute them to be sins, till the habite is grown strong, naturall and masculine, and because from the infancie it began in inclinations, and tender overtures and slighter actions; Adam is laid in the fault, and originall sinne did all; and this clearly we therefore confess, \* that our faults may seem the leffe, and the misery be pretended natural, that it may be thought to be irremediable; and therefore we not engaged to endeavour a cure, so that the confession of our originall sin, is no imitation of CHRIST'S humility in suffering Circumcision; but too often an act of Pride, carelessness, ignorance and security.

Horat satyr. 3

Ante palatum eorum quam os in itumus. Gaudemus si quid licentius dixerint. Verba ne Alexandris quidem permittenda deliciis ristri & osculo excipimus. Fit ex his conuentudo, deinde natura. Discunt haec miseri, antequam leuant vitia esse quintul. I. 7. c. 2. Tanta sit corruptio male conuenitudo ut ab ea tanquam igniculis extinguantur a natura dati sexoriantria; & confirmantur contraria vitia Cicero.

\* Εἰδεσαν γὰρ οἱ πλεῖστοι τῶν ἀνθρώπων ὡς καὶ τοις ἐπαγγείλησιν οὐ τις γέγονες οὐ τοῖς εὐδαιμονίοντας, οὐ τοῖς δυστύχοις οὐ χαράστοις, ἀντεπεριέταξεν οὐ τοῖς γενεσίοντος. Isocrates ep. Timoth.

8.

At the Circumcision his Parents impos'd the holy name told to the Virgin by the Angel, his name was called JESUS; a name above every name. For in old times GOD was known by names of power, of nature, of Majesty: But his name of mercy was reserved till now, when GOD did purpose to powre out the whole treasure of his mercy by the mediation and ministry of his holy Son. And because GOD gave to the Holy Babe the name, in which the treasures of mercy were deposited, and exalted this name above all names, we are taught that the purpose of his Counsel was, to exalt and magnifie

nise his mercy above all his other works, he being delighted with this excellent demonstration of it, in the mission, and manifestation and Crucifixion of his Son; he hath changed the ineffable name, into a name utterable by man and desireable by all the world, the Majesty is all arrayed in robes of mercy, the Tetragrammaton or adorable mystery of the Patriarks is made fit for pronunciation and expression, when it becomes the name of the L O R D S C H R I S T. And if J E H O V A H be full of majesty and terror, the name J E S U S is full of sweetnesse and mercy. It is G O D clothed with circumstances of facility, and opportunities of approximation. The great and highest name of G O D could not be pronounced truly, till it came to be finished with a Gutturall that made up the name given by the Angel to this holy childe, nor G O D received or entertained by men till he was made humane and sensible by the adoption of a sensitive nature, like vowels pronunciable by the intertexture of a Consonant. Thus was his person made tangible and his name utterable, and his mercy brought home to our necessities, and the mystery made explicate, at the Circumcision of this holy Babe.

But now G O Ds mercy was at full sea, now was the time when G O D made no reserves to the effusion of his mercy. For to the Patriarks and persons of eminent Sanctity and imployment in the Elder ages of the World, G O D according to the degrees of his manifestation or present purpose would give them one letter of this ineffable name. For the reward that Abraham had in the change of his name, was that he had the honour done him to have one of the letters of J E H O V A H put into it, And so had J shuah when he was a type of CHRIST, and the Prince of the Israelitish armies; And when G O D took away one of these letters, it was a curse. But now he communicated all the whole name to this holy Childe, and put a letter more to it to signifie that he was the glory of G O D the expressse image of his Fathers person, G O D Eternall; and then manifested to the World in his humanity, that all the intelligent world who expected Beatitude and had treasured all their hopes in the ineffable name of G O D, might finde them all with ample returns in this name of J E S U S, which G O D hath exalted above every name, even above that by which G O D in the old Testament did represent the greatest awfulness of his Majesty. This miraculous name is above all the powers of Magicall enchantments, the nightly rites of sorcerers, the secrets of Memphis, the drugs of Toessaly, the silent and mysterious murniures of the wise Caldees, and the spels of Zoroastres, This is the name at which the Devils did tremble, and pay their inforced and involuntary adorations, by confessing the Divinity, and quitting their possessions and usurped habitations. If our prayers be made in this name G O D opens the windows of heaven and rains down benediction : at the mention of this name the blessed Apostles, and Hermione the daughter of S. Philip, and Philotheus the son of Theophila, and S. Hilarius and S. Paul the Hermite, and innumerable other lights who followed hard after the sun of righteousness, wrought great and prodigious miracles : *Signes and wonders and healings were done by the name of the holy Childe JESUS.* This is the name which we should engrave in our hearts, and write upon our foreheads, and pronounce with our most harmonious accents, and rest our faith upon, and place our hopes in, and love with the overflowings of charity, and joy, and adoration.

And

Nomen enim JE S U  
Hebreice prolatum  
nisi aliud est nisi  
Tetragrammaton  
vocabulum per Iacob  
videtur, cui animus  
est, multa de mysterio  
hujus nominis a-  
pud Galatinum  
Ad eundem sensum  
sunt vaticinium St.  
byllar.

Διπτερον μαζα  
λοσ Θεος της ετ-  
ερποτησ  
“Ηξεσ σαρκωσεθει  
επιτοιχις θυμωμε-  
νης ει γη  
Πλαστη φωνηστα  
φισσον, το δ αφα-  
νης ει πυτα.

9.

Isai. 27. 11. in causa  
Iudeorum ; Duma vo-  
satur, dempto 7.

And as the revelation of this name satisfied the hopes of all the world, so it must determine our worshippings, and the addresses of our exterior and interior religion: it being that name whereby GOD and GODS mercies are made presentiall to us and proportionate objects of our religion and affections.



## The PRAYER.

**M**ost holy and ever blessed J E S U , who art infinite in essence, glorious in mercy, mysterious in thy communications, affable and presentiall in the descents of thy humanity, I adore thy glorious name whereby thou hast shut up the abysses, and opened the gates of heaven, restraining the power of hell, and discovering and communicating the treasures of thy Fathers mercies. O J E S U , be thou a J E S U S unto me, and save me from the precipices and ruins of sin, from the expresses, of thy Fathers wrath, from the miseries and unsufferable torments of accursed spirits by the power of thy Majestie, by the sweetneses of thy mercy, and sacred influences and miraculous glories of thy Name. I adore and worship thee in thy excellent obedience and humility, who hast submitted thy Innocent and spotlesse flesh to the bloody Covenant of Circumcision; teach me to practise so blessed and holy a precedent, that I may be humble and obedient to thy sacred laws, severe and regular in my religion, mortified in my body and spirit, of circumcised heart and tongue, that what thou didst represent in symboll and mystery, I may really expresse in the exhibition of an exemplar, pious, and mortified life, cutting off all excrescencies of my spirit, and whatsoever may minister to the flesh, or any of it's ungodly desires, that now thy holy name is called upon me, I may do no dishonour to the name, nor scandall to the institution, but may do thee honour and worship and adorations of a pure religion, O most holy and ever blessed J E S U . Amen.

Disc-



## Discourse. 2.

### *Of the Virtue of Obedience.*

2. Here are certain excellencies either of habit or of consideration which spirituall persons use to to call *Generall wayer*, being a dispersed influence into all the parts of good life, either directing the single actions to the right end, or managing them with right instruments, and adding speciaall excellencies and formalities to them, or morally inviting to the repetition of them; but they are like the generall medicaments in Physick, or the prime instruments in Mathematicall Disciplines, such as are the confideration of the Divine presence, the example of J E S U S , right intention ; and such also is the virtue of *obedience*, which perfectly unites our actions to GOD , and conforms us to the Divine will , which is the Originall of goodness, and sanctifies and makes a man an holocaust to GOD , which contains in it eminently all other graces, but especially those graces whose essence consists in a conformity of a part or the whole : ( such are faith, humility, patience and charity ) which gives quietnesse and tranquillity to the spirit, and is an Antepast of Paradise ( where their Jubilee is the perpetuall joyes of Obedience, and their doing is the enjoying the Divine pleasure:)which adds an excellency and lustre to pious actions, and hallows them which are indifferent, and lifts up some actions from their unhallowed nature to circumstan- ces of good and of acceptation. If a man sayes his prayers or communicates out of custome, or without intuition of the precept and Divine Command- ment, the act is like a ship returning from her voyage without her venture and her burden;as unprofitable as without stowage. But if GOD commands us either to eat or to abstain : to sleep, or to be waking : to work, or to keep a sabbath : these actions which are naturally neither good nor evil , are sanctified by the obedience, and rank'd amongst actions of the greatest excellency. And this also was it which made Abraham's offer to kill his Son, and the Israelites spoiling the Egyptians to become acts laudable and not unjust : they were acts of obedience, and therefore had the same formality and essence with actions of the most spirituall devotions. GODS command is all our rule for practise, and our obedience united to the obedience of JESUS is all our title to acceptance.

2. But by obedience I do not here mean the exterior execution of the work, for so, obedience is no grace distinct from the acting any or all the Commandments: but besides the doing of the thing ( for that also must be presupposed ) it is a sacrifice of our proper will to GOD, a chooing the duty because GOD commands it. For beasts also carry burdens and do

do our commands by compulsion : and the fear of slaves, and the rigour of task-masters made the number of bricks to be compleated when *Israel* groan'd and cried to G O D for help. But sons that labour under the sweet paternall regiment of their Fathers, and the influence of love , they love the precept and do the imposition, with the same purpofes and complyant affections with which the Fathers made it. When C H R I S T commanded us to renounce the World, there were some that did think it was a hard saying, and do so still ; and the young rich man forsook him upon it : but *Ananias* and *Saphira* upon whom some violences were done by custome, or the excellent sermons of the Apostles, sold their possessions too , but it was so againſt their will that they retain'd part of it : but S. Paul did not onely forsake all his ſecular fortunes, but counted all to be droſſe that he might gain C H R I S T ; he gave his will, made an offertory of that , as well as of his goods, choosing the act which was enjoynd, this was the obedience the holy J E S U S paid to his heavenly Father, ſo voluntary that it was meat to him to do his Fathers will.

*John 4. 34.*

3.

*S. Hieron. epift ad  
Licit. Hispan.*

*Idem in 19.  
Mark. 28.*

4.

5.

Fidelis obediens re-  
ſcit moras, fugit cra-  
nium, ignorat tardi-  
tatem, præcepit pa-  
cipientem, patet ocu-  
los, aures audi-  
tui linguisque vocis, ma-  
nuſ ſperit, Itineri pe-  
des: totum ſe collig-  
it, & imperanit col-  
ligat voluntatem,  
S. Bernard ſent de  
obedientia,

And this was intended alwayes by G O D [ *My ſon give me thy heart* ] and particularly by the holy J E S U S, for in the fadest instance of all his precepts, even that of ſuffering persecution, we are commanded to *rejoyce, and to be exceeding glad*. And ſo did those holy Martyrs in the primitive ages, who upon juſt grounds when G O D S glory, or the edification of the Church had interest in it, they offered themſelves to Tyrants, and dared the violence of the moft cruell and howelolleſe hangmen. And this is the beſt oblation we can preſent to G O D. *To offer Gold is a preſent fit to be made by young beginners in religion, not by men in Chriſtianity, Tea, Crates Theban threw his gold away, and ſo did Antiphenes; but to offer our will to G O D, to give our ſelves, is the aet of an Aſtrophe, the proper aet of Chriſtians.* And therefore when the Aſtrophes made challenge of a reward, for leaving all their poſſeſſions, C H R I S T makes no reply to the instance, Nor ſayes, you who have left all, But you, who have followed me in the regeneration, ſhall ſit upon twelve thrones and judge the twelve tribes of *Israel*, Meaning that the quittin the goods, was nothing ; but the obedience to C H R I S T ; that they followed J E S U S in the regeneration, going themſelves in purſuit of him, and giving themſelves to him, that was it which intitled them to a throne.

: And this therefore G O D enjoys, that our offerings to him may be intire and complete , that we pay him a holocaust , that we do his work without murmuring, and that his burden may become eaſy, when it is borne up by the wings of love and alacrity of ſpirit. For in effect this obedience of the will is in true ſpeaking and ſtrict Theology nothing elſe, but that charity which gives excellency to alms, and energy to faith, and acceptance to all graces. But I ſhall reduce this to particular and more minute conſiderations.

1. We ſhall beſt know that our will is in the obedience by our prompt undertaking, by our cheerfull managing, by our firſt execution; for all degrees of delay are degrees of immorigerousneſſe, and unwillingneſſe. And ſince time is extrinfecall to the aet, and alike to every part of it, nothing determins an action but the opportunity without; and the defres and willingneſſe within. And therefore he who deliberates beyond his firſt opportunity, and exterior determination and appointment of the aet, brings

Brings fire and wood but wants a lamb for the sacrifice ; and unless he offer up his *Isaac*, his beloved will, he hath no ministry prepared for GODS acceptance. He that does not repent to day, puts it to the Question whether he wil repent at all or no. He that defers restitution, when al the Circumstances are fitted, is not yet resolved upon the duty. And when he does it, if he does it against his will, he does but do honorary penance with a paper upon his hat, and a taper in his hand ; it may satisfie the Law, but not satisfie his Conscience ; it neither pleases himself, and lesse pleases GOD. A sacrifice without a heart was a sad and ominous presage in the superstition of the Roman Augurs, and so it is in the service of G O D ; For what the exhibition of the work is to man , that the presentation of the will is to G O D . It is but a cold charity to a naked begger to say, *G O D help thee*, and do nothing ; give him clothes and he feels your charity, but G O D , who is the searcher of the heart, his apprehension of actions relative to him are of the inward motions, and addresses of the will, and without this our exterior services are like the paying a piece of money, in which we have defaced the image, it is not current.

2. But besides the *willingnesse* to do the acts of *expresse Command*, the *readiness* to do the *intimations* and *tacite significations* of GODS pleasure is the best testimony in the World that our will is in the obedience. Thus did the holy JESUS undertake a nature of infirmity, and suffer a death of shame and sorrow, and became obedient from the Circumcision even unto the death of the Crosse ; not staying for a Command, but because it was his Fathers pleasure Mankinde should be redeemed. For before the susception of it he was not a person subjicible to a command. It was enough that he understood the inclinations and designes of his Fathers mercies. And therefore G O D hath furnished us with instances of uncommanded piety to be a touchstone of our obedience. He that does but his endeavours about the expresse commands hath a bridle in his mouth, and is restrained by violence, but a willing spirit is like a greedy eye, devours all it sees, and hopes to make some proportionable returns and compensations of duty for his infirmity, by taking in the intimations of G O D S pleasure. When G O D commands chastity, he that undertakes a holy coeliate, hath great obedience to the command of chastity. G O D bids us give alms of our increase ; he obeys this with great facility, that *sells all his goods and gives them to the poor*. - And, provided our hastinesse to snatch at too much does not make us let go our duty, like the indiscreet loads of too forward persons, too big, or too inconvenient and uncombin'd, there is not in the world a greater probation of our prompt obedience then when we look further then the precise duty, swallowing that and more with our ready and hopefull purposes, nothing being so able to do miracles as *love*, and yet nothing being so certainly accepted as love, though it could do nothing in productions and exterior ministeries.

3. But G O D requires that our obedience should have another excellency to make it a becoming present to the Divine acceptance ; our *understanding* must be sacrificed too, and become an ingredient of our obedience. We must also believe that whatsoever G O D commands, is most fitting to be commanded, is most excellent in it self, and the best for us to do. The first gives our affections and desires to G O D , and this also gives our reason ; and is a perfection of obedience not communicable

*E. barbaris cunctis  
feveribus agitum vaqua  
Regnum. Tacit.  
L. Campania.*

nicable to the duties we owe to Man. For G O D onely is L O R D of this faculty, and being the fountain of all wisdom, therefore commands our understanding, because he alone can satisfie it. We are bound to obey humane laws, but not bound to think the laws we live under, are the most prudent constitutions in the world. But G O D S commandments are not onely a *lantern to our feet*, and a *light unto our paths*, but a rule to our reason, and satisfaction to our understandings, as being the instruments of our addresse to G O D, and conveyances of his grace and manudictions to Eternity. And therefore S. John Climacū defines obedience to be an “unexamined and unquestioned motion, a voluntary death and sepulture of the will, a life without curiosity, a laying aside our own discretion in the midst of the riches of the most excellent understandings.

8. And certainly there is not in the world a greater strength against temptations, then is deposited in an obedient understanding, because that onely can regularly produce the same affections, it admits of fewer degrees, and an infrequent alteration. But the actions proceeding from the appetite as it is determined by any other principle then a satisfied understanding, have their heightnings and their declensions, and their chances and mutations according to a thousand accidents. Reason is more lasting then desire, and with fewer means to be tempted; but affections and motions of appetite as they are procured by any thing, so may they expire by as great variety of causes. And therefore to serve G O D by way of *understanding* is furer, and it self, unlesse it be by the accidentall increase of degrees greater then to serve him upon the motion and principle of passions and desires; though this be fuller of comfort and pleasure then the other. When Lot lived amongst the impure *Sodomites*, where his righteous soul was in a continual agony, he had few exterior incentives to a pious life, nothing to enkindle the sensible flame of burning desires toward piety; but in the midst of all the discouragements of the world, nothing was left him but the way and preceedency of a truly informed reason and conscience. Just so is the way of those wise souls who live in the midst of a crooked and perverse generation, where piety is out of countenance, where austerity is ridiculous, religion under perfecution, no examples to lead us on, there the understanding is left to be the guide, and it does the work the surest, for this makes the duty of many to be certain, regular, and chosen, constant, integrall, and perpetuall; but this way is like the life of an unmarried or a retired person, *lesse of grief in it*, and *lesse of joy*. But the way of serving G O D with the affections, and with the pleasures and entertainments of desres is the way of the more passionate and imperfect, not in a mans power to choose or to procure; but comes by a thousand chances meeting with a soft nature, credulous or weak, easy, or ignorant, softned with fears or invited by forward desires.

9. Those that did live amidst the fervours of the primitive charity, and were so armed by their fres, grew inflamed by contact and vicinity to such burning and shining lights. And they therefore grew to high degrees of piety, because then every man made judgement of his own actions by the proportions which he saw before him, and believed all descents from those greater examples to be so many degrees

grees from the rule; And he that lives in a Colledge of Devout persons will compare his own actions with the devotion and customes of that society, and not with the remissenesse of persons he hears of in story, but what he sees and lives with. But if we live in an age of indevotion, we think our selves well alſoild if we be warmer then their Ice; every thing which is above our example being eminent and conspicuous, though it be but like the light of a gloworme, or the sparkling of a Diamond, yet if it be in the midſt of darkneſſe, it is a goodly beauty. This I call the way of ſerving G O D by deſires and affections; and this is altered by example, by publike manners, by exterrall works, by the affignment of offiſces, by deſignation of conveſtions for pray-er, by periods, and revolutions of times of duty, by hours and ſolen-nities, ſo that a man ſhall owe his piety to theſe chances, which al-though they are graces of G O D, and iſtrumentſ of devotion, yet they are not alwayes in our power; and therefore they are but ac-cidentall minifteries of a good life, and the leaſt conſtant or durable. But when the principle of our piety is a confor-mity of our understand-ing to G O D S laws, when we are iſtructed what to do, and there-fore do it, because we are ſatiſfied it is moſt ex-cellent to obey G O D, this will ſupport our piety againſt objections, lead it on in deſpite of diſadvantages; this chooſes G O D with reaſon, and is not determined from without; and as it is in ſome degree neceſſary for all times, ſo it is the greateſt ſecurity againſt the change of laws, and Princes and religions, and ages, when all the incentives of affection and exterrall determinations of our piety ſhall ceafe, and perhaps all exterrall offiſces, and the daily ſacrifice, and piety it ſelf ſhall fail from the face of the land; then the obedience founded in the understanding is the onely laſting strength left us to make retreat, and to ſecure our conditions. Thus from the composition of the will and affections with our exterrall acts of obedience to G O D, our obedience is made willing, ſwift and cheerfull: but from the composition of the understanding our obe-dience becomes strong, ſincere and perfevering, and this that which S. Paul calls our reasonable ſervice.

4 To which if we adde that our obedience be universall, we have all the qualifications which make the duty to be pions, and prudent. The meaning is, that we obey G O D in all his ſanctions though the matter be in common ac-count ſmal and incoſiderable, and give no indulgence to our felvs to recede from the rule in any matter whatſoever. For the veryeſt minute of obedience is worth our attention, as being by G O D eſteemed the tryall of our obe-dience in a greater affair. *He that is unjust in a little, will be unjust in a greater,* ſaid our bleſſed Saviour. And ſince to G O D all matter is alike, and no more accrues to him in a hecatomb, then in a piece of gumme, in an Aſcetick ſeverity, then in a ſecular life, G O D regards not the matter of a precept, but the obedience, which in all iſtances is the ſame; and he that will prevaricate when the matter is trifling, and by conſequence, the tem-ptations to it weak and impotent, and ſoon confuted, will think he may better be excused when the temptations are violent and importunate as it commonly happens in affairs of greater importance. He that will lie to ſave ſixpence, will not ſtick at it, when a thouſand pound is the purchase; and poſſibly there is more contempt and deſpite done to the Divine au-thority,

10.

Luke 16. 10.

uthority, when we disobey it in such particulars, wherein the obedience is most easie, and the temptations lesse troublesome; I do not say there is more injustice, or more malice in a small disobedience then in a greater, but there is either more contempt, or more negligence and dissolution of Discipline, then in the other.

11

And it is no small temptation of the Devill solliciting of us not to be curious of scruples and graines, nor to disturb our peace for lighter disobediences; persuading us that something must be indulged to publike manners, something to the civilities of society, something to nature, and to the approaches of our passions, and the motions of our first desires; *but that we be not over-righteous*. And true it is, that sometimes such surreptitions and smaller undecencies are therefore pardoned and leſſened almost to a nullity, because they dwell in the confines of things lawfull and honest, and are not so notorious as to be separated from permissions, by any publike, certain and universall cognisance, and therefore may passe upon a good man sometimes without observation. But it is a temptation when we think of neglecting them by a praderemained incuriousneſſe; upon pretence they are ſmall. But this muſt be reduced to more regular Concluſions.

12

1. Although ſmaller disobediences, expreſſed in ſlight miſbecoming actions when they come by ſurprise and ſudden invasion, are through the mercies of God dashed in the very approach, their bills of accuſation are thrown out, and they are not eſteemed as competent instruments of ſeparation from Gods love; yet when a ſmaller ſinne comes by deſign, and is acted with knowledge and deliberation (for then it is properly an act of disobedience) *Malitia ſupplet defeluum etatis*. The malice of the agent heightens the ſmallneſſe of the act, and makes up the iniquity. To drink liberally once, and ſomething more freely then the ſtrict rules of Christian ſobriety and temperance permit, is pardon'd the eaſier, when without deliberation and by ſurprise the perſon was abuſed, who intended not to transgrefſe a minute, but by little and little was miſtaken in his proportions: but if a man by deſigne shall estimate his draughts and his good fellowship, and shall reſolve upon a little intemperance, thinking because it is not very much, it is therefore none at all; that man hath miſtaken himſelf into a crime; and although a little wound upon the finger is very curable, yet the ſmalleſt prick upon the heart is mortall: So is a deſigne and purpoſe of the ſmalleſt disobedience in its formality, as miſcious and deſtructive, as in its matter it was pardonable and excuſable.

13

*Quod humanae fragilitati quamvis parvum  
temere creberit subter-  
punt, si collecta con-  
trahantur, ita no-  
gravabunt et oppri-  
ment, fecur unum  
aliquod grande peccatum.*

S. Aug. lib. 50.  
hom. 50. Idem lib. 50.  
penit. peccata veniali si multiplicentur  
decoem. nocturni ita  
extremantur, ut a  
caelitis spoufi am-  
plexibus nos ſepa-  
rent.

\* *Πλαισιον ματα-  
ρεια προσφί-  
λοι. Esch.  
Prometh.  
Αχαλινος σο-  
την ηλιον, θυ-  
σης. Eurip.*

2. Although every leſſer disobedience when it comes ſingly, deſtroyes not the love of God; (for although it may leſſen the habit, yet it takes not away its naturall being, nor interrupts its acceſſion, leſt all the world ſhould in all inſtants of time be in a damnable condition) yet when these ſmaller obliquities are repeated, and no re penitance intervenes, this re perition combines and unites the leſſer till they be concentrated and by their accumulation make a crime; and therefore a careleſſe reiterating, and an incurious walking in miſbecoming actions is deadly and damnable in the returne, though it was not ſo much at the ſetting forth. Every idle word is to be accounted for, but we hope in much mercy; and yet he, that gives himſelf over to immoderate \* talking, will ſwell his account

account to a vast and mountainous proportion, and call all the lesser escapes into a stricter judgement. He that extends his Recreation an hour beyond the limits of Christian prudence, and the analogy of its severity and imploy-  
ment, is accountable to GOD for that improvidence and wast of Time ; but he that shall mispend a day , and because that sin is not scandalous like a bility, or clamorous like oppression, or unusuall like bestiality, or crying for revenge like detaining the portion of Orphans, shall therefore mispend another day without revocation of the first by an act of repentance and redemption of it, and then shall throw away a week, still adding to the former account upon the first stock, will at last be answerable for a habit of idlenesse, and will have contracted a vain and impertinent spirit. For since things, which in their own kinde are lawfull, become sinfull by the degree , if the degree be heightned by intention ; or become great, like a heap of sand by a coacervation of the innumerable atomes of dust, the actions are as damnable, as any of the naturall daughters and productions of hell : when they are entertained without scruple, and renewed without reperiance, and continued without dereliction.

3. Although some inadvertencies of our life, and lesser disobediences, accidentally become lesse hurtfull, and because they are entailed upon the infirmities of a good man, and the lesse wary Customes and Circumstances of society, are also confisstent with the state of grace; yet all affection to the smalles sins becomes deadly and damnable ; *he that loves his danger shall perish in it*, saith the Wiseman ; and every friendly entertainment of an undecency invites in a greater Crime : for no man can love a small sin, but there is in the greater crimes of its kinde more desireable flatteries, and more satisfactions of sensualitie then in those suckers and sprigs of sin. At first, a little disobedience is proportionable to a Mans temper, and his Conscience is not fitted to the bulk of a rude Crime ; but when a Man hath accepted the first insinuations of delight, and swallowed it ; that little sin is past, and needs no more to dispute for entrance ; then the next delight puts in and stands in the same probability to succeed the first, and greater then the first had to make the entry. However to love any thing that GOD hates is direct enmity with him ; and whatsoeuer the Instance be it is absolutely inconsistant with charity, and thefore incom-  
petent with the state of grace. So that if the sin be small it is not a small thing that thou hast given thy love to it ; every such person perishes like a Fool, cheaply and ingloriously.

4. But it also concerns the nicenesse and prudence of Obedience to GOD to stand at further distance from a Vice that we usually attend to. For many times Virtue and Vice differ but one degree , and the neighbourhood is so dangerous that he who desires to secure his Obedience, and Duty to GOD, will remove farther from the danger. For there is a rule of Justice, to which if one degree more of se-  
verity be added it degenerates into cruelty, and a little more mercy is remissenesse and want of Discipline , introduces licentiousnesse and becomes unmercifulnesse as to the publike, and unjust as to the particu-  
lar. Now this Consideration is heightned if we observe that Virtue and Vice confisst not in an indivisible point, but there is a latitude for ei-  
ther which is not to be judged by any certain rules drawn from the na-  
ture of the thing , but to be estimated in proportion to the persons

14.

Nullum peccatum est  
ad eo venialis quod non  
sit criminale dum  
placeat. diff. 25. sc. 8.  
Nunc autem ex  
S. August.

15.

Cumfas ariq; nefas  
exiguo fine libidinu  
Discretum avidia.  
Horat.

2<sup>d</sup> other accidentall Circumstances. He that is burdened with a great charge, for whom he is bound under a Curse and the crime of Infidelity, to provide, may go further in the acquisition, and be more provident in the use of his money, then those persons for whom G O D hath made more ample provisions, and hath charged them with fewer burdens and engagements economicall. And yet no Man can say, that just beyond such a degree of Care stands Covetousnesse, and thus far on this side is Carelessness, and a man may be in the confines of Death before he be aware. Now the only way to secure our obedience and duty in such Cases is to remove further off, and not to dwell upon the confines of the enemies Country. My meaning is, that it is not prudent, nor safe for a man to do whatsoever he lawfully may do.

16. For besides that we are often mistaken in our judgements concerning the lawfulness or unlawfullness of actions, he that will do all that he thinks he may lawfully do, if ever he does change his station and increase in giving himself liberty, will quickly arrive at doing things unlawfull. It is good to keep a reserve of our liberty and to restrain our selves within bounds narrower then the largest sense of the Commandment, that when our affections wander and enlarge themselves (as sometime or other they will do) then they may enlarge beyond the ordinary and yet be within the bounds of lawfulness. That of which men make a scruple and a question at first, after an habituall resolution of it stirs no more; but then their question is of something beyond it. When a man hath accustomed himself to pray seven times a day, it will a little trouble his peace if he omits one or two of those times; but if he be resolved then, that he may please G O D with praying devoutly though but thrice every day; after he hath digested the scruples of this first question, possibly some accidents may happen that will put his Conscience and reason to dispute whether three times be indispensably necessary, and still if he be far within the bounds of lawfulness, 'tis well, but if he be at the margin of it, his next remove may be into dissolution and unlawfulness. He that resolves to gain all that he may lawfully this yeer, it is ods but the next yeer he will be tempted to gain something unlawfully. He that because a man may be innocently angry will never restrain his passion, in a little time will be intemperate in his anger, and mistake both his object and the degree. Thus facetiousnesse and urbanity entertained with an open hand will turn into jestings that are uncomely.

17. If you will be secure, remove your tent, dwell further off; G O D hath given us more liberty then we may safely use; and although G O D is so gracious as to comply much with our infirmities, yet if we do so too, as G O D S goodness in indulging liberty to us was to prevent our finning; our complying with our selves will engage us in it: But if we imprison and confine our affections into a narrower compass, then, our extravagancies may be imperfect, but will not easily be criminall. The dissolution of a scrupulous and strict person is not into a vice, but into a lesse degree of vertue; he that makes a conscience of loud laughter, will not easily be drawn into the wantonneses of Balls and revellings, and the longer and more impure Carnivals. This is the way to secure our obedience; and no men are so

curious

curious of their health, as they that are scrupulous of the ayre they breathe in.

But now for our obedience to man, that hath distinct considerations, and apart.

1. All obedience to man is for Gods sake ; for God imprinting his authority upon the sonnes of men, like the Sunne reflecting upon a cloud produces a Parelius, or a representation of his owne glory, though in great distances and imperfection ; it is the Divine authority, though character'd upon a piece of clay, and imprinted upon a weak and imperfect man : And therefore obedience to our superiours must be universall in respect of persons to all superiours. This precept is exprefly Apostolicall, Be subiect to every constitution and authority of man for the Lords sake : It is for Gods sake, and therefore to every one, Whether it be to the King, as supreme, or to his <sup>ministers</sup> <sup>to the</sup> Ecclesiasticall Ministers in subordination : That's for civill government ; for Ecclesiasticall <sup>to the</sup> <sup>expres-</sup> this ; Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit your selves ; for they <sup>are</sup> <sup>expres-</sup> watch for your soules, as they that must give account, All, upon whom any ray <sup>of</sup> <sup>expres-</sup> of the divine Authority is imprinted, whether it be in greater or smaller <sup>ray</sup> <sup>to the</sup> Characters, are in proportion to their authority to be obeyed, to all upon <sup>Eustath.</sup> ad the same ground ; for there is no power but of <sup>\* God.</sup> So that no infirmity of <sup>Iliad.</sup> I. person, no undervaluing circumstance, no exterior accident is an excuse for <sup>1 Pet. 2.13.</sup> Heb. 13.7. disobedience ; and to obey the divine authority passing through the dictates <sup>Rom. 13. 1.</sup> of a wise, excellent and prudent Goverour ; but to neglect the impositions <sup>\* Regum numero-rum in propriis greges Reges in ip-los imperium est Jovis iuncta super-tio moventis. Hor. l.3. Od. 10. ubi supra.</sup> of a loofer head, is to worship Christ onely upon the Mount Tabor, and in the glories of his Transfiguration, and to despise him upon Mount Calvary, and in the clouds of his inglorious and humble Passion : Not only to the good and gentle, so S. Peter, but to the harsh and rigid. And it was by divine providence that all those many and stricter precepts of obedience to Governours in the New Testament were verified by instances of Tyrants, Persecutors, Idolators, and Heathen Princes : and for others amongst whom there was variety of disposition, there is no variety of imposition, but all excuses are remov'd, and all kindes of Governours drawn into the sanction and sacrednesse of Authority.

2. Not only to all Governours, but in all things we must obey. Children obey your Parents in all things : And, servants obey your Masters in all things. And this also is upon the same ground, Do it as unto Christ ; as unto the Lord, and not unto men. But then this restraines the universalitie of obedience, that it may run within its owne channell ; as unto the Lord ; therefore nothing against the Divine Commandment. For if GOD speakes to us by man, transmitting Lawes for conservation of civill societie, for ecclesiasticall policie, for Justice and personall advantages, for the interests of Vertue and Religion, for discountenancing of vice, we are to receive it with the same veneration as if God spake bin self to us immediatly ; but because by his terour upon Mount Sinai he gave testimony how great favour it is to speak to us by the ministracion of our brethren, it were a strange impudencie when we desire a proportionable and gentle instrument cf divine commands, we should for this very proportion despise the Minister ; like the Frogs in the Apologue insulting upon their woodden king : but then if any thing come contrary to a divine Law, know it is the voyce of Jacob, of the supplanter,

not of the right heir ; and though we must obey Man for G O D S sake, yet we must never disobey G O D for Mans sake. In all things else we finde no exception ; but according as the superiors intend the obligation and expresse it by the signature of laws, customs, interpretations, permissions, and dispensations, that is, so far as the law is obligatory in general, and not dispensed with, in particular, so far obedience is a duty, in all instances of acts where no sin is ingredient.

20. 3. And here also the smalnesse and cheapnesse of the duty does not tolerate disobedience ; for the despising the smallest injunction is an act of as fermall and direct rebellion as when the prevarication is in a higher instance. It is here as in divine laws, but yet with some difference : For small things do so little cooperate to the end of humane laws, that a smaller reaon does by way of interpretation and tacite permission dispense ; then can in a Divine sanction though of the lowest offices. Because G O D commands duties not for the end to which they of themselves do cooperate : but to make sacred his authority, and that we by our obedience may confess him to be L O R D : But in humane laws the authority is made sacred, not primarily for its self, but principally that the laws made in order to the conservation of societies may be observed. So that in the neglect of the smallest of Divine ordinances we as Directly oppose G O D S great purpose and intendment, as in greater matters : G O D S dominion and authority ( the conservation of which was his principall intention ) is alike neglected : But in omitting an humane imposition of small concernment the case is different ; it is certain there is not any considerable violence done to the publike interest by a contemptible omission of a Law : the thing is not small, if the Commonwealth be not safe, and all her great ends secured ; but if they be, then the authority is inviolate, unleſſe a direct contempt were intended, for its being was in order to that end, not for it self, as it is in the case of divine laws, but that the publike interest be safe.

21. De minimis non car-  
miserat.  
And therefore as great matters of humane Laws may be omitted for great reaons, so may smaller matters for smaller reaons, but never without reason : for, *caueſeſly and contempiouſly are all one*. But in the application of the particulars, either the laws themselves, or custome or the prudence of a sincere, righteous man, or of a wife and disinterſt person is to be the Judge. But let no mans confidence increase from the smallnesse of the matter to a *contempt of the authority* ; for there are ſome fins whose malignity is accidentally increased by the ſlightneſſe of the ſubject matter, ſuch are blaſphemie, perjury, and the contempt of authority. To blaſphemie G O D for the losſe of an Asper or a peny, to be forsworne in judgement for the reſcuing of a few Maravidis, or a five groats fine, is a worse crime then to be perjur'd for the ſaving ten thousand pounds ; and to *despife authority*, when the obedience is ſo eaſy as the wearing of a garment, or doing of a poſture, is a greater and more impudent contempt, then to despife authority imposſing a great burthen of a more conſiderable pressure, where humane infirmity may tempt to a diſobedience, and leſſen the crime. And let this caution alſo be inserted, that we do not at all negleſt ſmall impoſitions, if there be direſt and ſignal injunction in the particular instance. For as a great Body of Light transmitting his rayes through a narrow hollowneſſe does

does by that small Pyramis represent all the parts of its magnitude and glory : So it may happen that a publick interest , and the concernsments of authority, and the peace of a Church, and the integrall obedience of the Subjects, and the conservation of a Community, may be transferred to us by an instance in its own nature inconsiderable ; such as are wearing of a Cognizance, rememb'ring of a Word, carrying a Branch in time of war, and things of the same nature ; and therefore when the hand of authority is stretched out, and held forth upon a precept, and designes the duty upon particular reason, or with actual intuition ; there is not the same facility of being dispensed with, as in the neglected and unconsidered instances of other duties. This onely I desire to be observed ; that if death or any violent accident , imprisonment, losse of livelyhood, or intolerable inconveniences be made accidentally consequent to the observing of a law merely humane, the law bindes not in the particular instance. No Man is bound to be a Martyr for a *ceremony*, or to dye rather then break a *Canon*, or to suffer confiscaction of goods for the pertinacious keeping of a civil constitution. And it is not to be supposed that a Lawgiver Civil or Ecclesiastical would have decreed a rite, and bound the lives of the subjects to it, which are of a far greater value then a rite. For the Subject could not have accepted that Law, nor the Superior decree it, not onely because it were tyrannical and unreasonable , but because the evil of the Law were greater then the good of it; it were against the reason of all Laws, and destroyes the priviledges of Nature , and it puts a Man into a condition as bad as the want of all Lawes, for nothing is civilly or naturally worse then Death, to which the other evils arrive in their proportion. This is to be understood in particular and positive precepts, introduced for reasons particular , that is , lesse then those are which combine all societies , and which are the cement of all bodies politcall : I mean Lawes ritual in the Church, and accidental and emergent in the State. And that, which is the best signe to distinguish these Laws from others, is also the reason of the assertion. Laws decreed with a penalty to the transgreffours cannot binde to an *evil greater* then that *penalty*. If it be appointed that we use a certain form of Liturgy under the forfeiture of five pound for every omission, I am bound in conscience to obey it , where I can ; but I am supposed legally to be disabled , if any Tyrant-power shall threaten to kill me if I do , or make me pay an hundred pound, or any thing greater then the forfeiture of the Law. For all the civil and naturall power of the Law is by its coercion, and the appendant punishment. The Law operates by rewards and punishments , by hope and fear , and it is unimaginable that the Law under a lesse penalty can oblige us in any case or accident to suffer a greater. For the compulsion of the Tyrant is greater then the coercion of the Lawgiver ; and the Prince thinking the penalty annexed to be band sufficient, intended no greater evil to the *transgreffour*, then the expressed penalty ; and therefore much lesse would he have them that *obey the law* by any necessity be forced to a greater evil : For then, Disobedience shoud escape better then Obedience. True it is, every disobeying person , that payes the penalty, is not quite discharged from all his Obligation ; but it is then, when his disobeying is criminall upon some other stock besides the meer breach of the Law ; as Contempt , Scandal,

scandal, or the like ; for the Law bindes the Conscience indirectly and by consequence ; that is, in plain language, GOD commands us to obey humane Laws, and the penalty will not pay for the *contempt*, because that's a sin against GOD ; it payes for the violation of the Law, \* because that was all the direct transgression against Man. And then who shall make him recompence for suffering more then the Law requires of him ? *Not the Prince* ; for it is certain the greatest value he set upon the Law, was no bigger then the penalty ; and the Common-wealth is supposed to be sufficiently secured in her interest by the penalty, or else the Law was weak, impotent, and unreasonable. *Not GOD*, for it is not an act of obedience to him ; for he bindes us no further to obey humane Laws, then the Lawgiver himself intends or declares ; who cannot reasonably be supposed so over careful, as to binde Hay with cords of silk and gold, or sumptuary Laws with the threeds of life ; nor a Father commanding his childe to wait on him every meal, be thought to intend his Obligation, even though the house be ready to fall on his head, or when he is to passe a sudden or unfoordable flood, before he can get to him ; and that it may appear, Man ought not, it is certain, GOD himself does not oblige us in all cases, and in all circumstances to observe every of his positive precepts. For, *assembling together* is a duty of GODS commanding ; which we are not to negle<sup>c</sup>t : but if Death waits at the door of these assemblies, we have the practice of the Primitive and best Christians to warrant us, to serve GOD in Retirements, and Cells, and Wildernesses, and leave the *assembling together* till better opportunities. If I receive more benefit, or the Common-wealth, or the Church or Religion any greater advantage by my particular obedience in these circumstances, (which cannot easily be supposed will be) it is a great act of charity to do it, and then to suffer for it. But if it be no more, that is, if it be not *expressly commanded* to be done (though with losse of life or confiscation) it is a good charity to save my own life, or my own estate : And though the other may be better, yet I am not in all cases obliged to do that which is simply the best. It is a tolerable infirmity, and allowed amongst the very first permissions of Nature, that I may preserve my life, unlesse it be in a very few cases, which are therefore clearly to be expressed, or else the contrary is to be presumed, as being a case most favourable. And it is considerable, that nothing is worse then Death, but Damnation, or something that partakes of that in some of its worst ingredients ; such as is, a lasting torment, or a daily great misery in some other kinde. And therefore since no humane Law can binde a Man to a worse thing then Death, if obedience brings me to death, I cannot be worse when I disobey it, and I am not so bad, if the penalty of death be not expressed. And so for other penalties in their own proportions. This Discourse is also to be understood concerning the *Laws of peace*, not of war ; not onely because every disobedience in war may be punished with death (according as the reason may chance) but also because little things may be of great and dangerous consequence. But in peace it is observable, that there is no humane positive superinduced Law, but by the practise of all the world (which, because the permission of the Prince is certainly included in it, is the surest interpretation) it is dispensed withall, by ordinary necessities, by reason of lesser inconveniences, and common accidents : such as the not saying of our office daily is excused by the study of Divinity ; the publishing the banes

\* *Lucius Verusius pro delectamento habuit os hominis liberi palma verberare. Eum servas sequebatur cromenam plebanum etiam getant, & quemcumq[ue] sic persecutar, judicat statim numerari 25 alios qui pro multis nunc offendis ex lege 12 tab. imponebantur. A. Gellius cap. 19.*

banes of Matrimony by an ordinary incommodity; the Fasting-dayes of the Church by a little sicknesse or a journey, and therefore much rather, if my estate, and most of all if my life be in danger with it: and to say that in these cases there is no interpretative permission to omit the particular action, is to accuse the Laws and the Lawgiver, the one of unreasonableness, the other of uncharitableness.

4. These Considerations are upon the execution of the duty: but even towards Man our obedience must have a mixture of the will and choice, like as our injunction of obedience to the Divine Command. *With good will doing service* (faith the Apostle) for it is impossible to secure the duty of inferiors but by conscience and good will; unless provision could be made against all their secret arts and concealments and escapings, which as no providence can foresee, so no diligence can cure. It is but *an eye service* whatsoever is compelled and involuntary; nothing rules a Man in private but GOD and his own desires, and that gives Laws in a Wildernesse, and accuses in a Cloistre, and does execution in a Closet, if there be any prevarication.

5. But obedience to humane Laws goes no further, we are not bound to obey with a direct and particular act of understanding, as in all divine sanctions: for so long as our Superiors are fallible, though it be highly necessary we conform our wills to their innocent laws, yet it is not a duty we should think the Laws most prudent or convenient; because all Laws are not so; but it may concern the interest of humility and self-denial to be subject to an inconvenient, so it be not a sinful Command: for so we must choose an affliction when GOD offers it, and give GOD thanks for it, and yet we may cry under the smart of it, and call to GOD for ease and remedy: A d yet it were well, if inferiors would not be too busie in disputing the prudence of their Governours, and the convenience of their Constitutions; whether they be sins or no in the execution and to our particulars we are concern'd to look to: I say, as to our particulars; for an action may be a sin in the Prince commanding it, and yet innocent in the person executing: as in the case of unjust wars, in which the subject who cannot, ought not to be a Judge, yet must be a Minister; and it is notorious in the case of executing an unjust sentence, in which \* not the Executioner, but the Judge is onely the unjust person; and he that serves his Prince in an unjust war, is but the executioner of an unjust sentence; but what ever goes further, does but undervalue the person, slight the government, and unloose the golden cords of Discipline. For we are not intrusted in providing for degrees, so we secure the kinde and condition of our actions. And since GOD having derived raves and beams of Majesty, and transmited it in parts upon several states of Men, hath fixed humane authority and dominion in the golden candlestick of Understanding, he that shall question the prudence of his governour, or the wisdome of his sanction, does unclasp the golden rings that tye the purple vpon the Princes shoulder; he tempts himself with a reason to disobey, and extinguishes the light of Majesty by overturning the candlestick, and hiding the opinion of his wisdome and understanding. And let me say this; he that is confident of his owne understanding and reasonable powers (and who is more then he that thinks himself wiser then the Lawes) needs no other Devill in the neighbourhood, no tempter but himself, to pride, and vanity, which are the natural parents of disobedience.

M. 12. 5. 10. 10.  
n. 2. 1. 1. 1.  
L. 1. 1. 1. 1.

\* Is datum dat qui  
iaber date: ejus ve  
rba nulla culpa est cu  
parere necesse sit.  
V. Plan. n. 130.

24.

*Modum a. tenere in  
eō sc̄ile & quod  
bor. Ieffe credite-  
ris. Sén. ep. 23.*

*Collat. 18. c. 17.*

*Apud Evagriam.  
De eodem Stylite  
confular lector,  
Epiph. l. 1, c. 13;  
Theod. & 7. Synod.  
Gener. & Baron. ad  
A. D. 432.*

But a mans disobedience never seemes so reasonable as when the subject is forbidden to do an act of piety, commanded indeed in the generall, but uncommanded in certain circumstances. A forward piety and affiduous devotion, a great and undiscreet mortifer, is often ten tyed to think no authority can restraine the fervours and distempers of zeale in such holy exercises, and yet it is very often as necessary to restraine the indiscretions of a forward person as to excite the remissesse of the cold and frozen. Such persons were the *Sarabaites* spoken of by *Cassian*, who were greater labourers and stricter mortifiers then the religious in families and Colleges; and yet they endured no Superior, nor Lawes. But such customes as these are humiliation without humility, humbling the body, and exalting the spirit, or indeed sacrifices and no obedience. It was an argument of the great wisdome of the Fathers of the Desert: when they heard of the prodigious severities exercised by *Simeon Stylites* upon himself, they sent one of the religious to him with power to enquire what was his manner of living, and what warrant he had for such a rigorous undertaking, giving in charge to command him to give it over, and to live in a community with them, and according to the common institution of those religious families. The Messenger did so, and immediately *Simeon* removed his foot from his pillar; with a purpose to descend: but the other according to his Commission call'd to him to stay, telling him his station and severity was from God. And he that in so great a piety was humble and obedient, did not undertake that strictnesse out of singularity, nor did it transport him to vanity; for that he had received from the Fathers to make judgement of the man, and of his institution; whereas if upon pretence of the great holinesse of that course he had refus'd the command, the spirit of the person was to be declared captive and imprudent, and the man driven from his troublesome and ostentous vanity.

25.

*Cassian. collat. 4.  
Abbat. Dan. c. 20.  
& S. Basil exhort. ad  
vitam Monast. S.  
Greg. l. 35. Moral.  
c. 13. S. Bern. de ord.  
vita & mortu. initii.  
c. 1.*

Our Fasts, our Prayers, our Watchings, our Intentions of duty, our frequent communions, and all exterior acts of religion are to be guided by our Superior, if he sees cause to restraine or asswage any excrefencie. For a wound may heale too fast, and then the tumour of the flesh is proud, not healthfull; and so may the indiscretions of Religion swell to vanity when we think they grow towards perfection; but when we can indre the causticks and correctives of our spirituall guides, in those things in which we are most apt to please our selves, then our obedience is regular and humble, and in other things there is lesse of danger. There is a story told of a very religious person, whose spirit in the extase of devotion was transported to the clarity of a vision, and he seemed to converse personally with the holy J E S U S, feeling from such entercurse great spirituall delights and huge satisfactions: in the midst of these joyes the bell call'd to prayers, and he, used to the strictnesse, and well instructed in the necessities of obedience, went to the Church, and having finished his devotions, returned and found the vision in the same posture of glories and entertainment; which also said to him, *Because thou hast left me, thou hast found me, for if thou hadst not left me, I had presently left thee.* Whatever the story be, I am sure it is a good Parable; for the way to increase spirituall comforts, is to be strict in the offices of humble obedience; and we never loose any thing of our joy by laying it aside to attend a duty; and *Plutarch* reports more honour of *Ageſilans* prudence and modesty, then of his gallantry and military

military fortune;\* for he was more honorable by obeying the decree of the Spartan Senate, recalling him from the midst of his triumphs, then he could have been by finishing the war with prosperous success and disobedience.

Our obedience, being guided by these rules, is urged to us by the con-signation of divine precepts and the loud voice of thunder, even seal'd by a signet of GODS right hand, the signature of greatest judgements. For GOD did with greater severity punish the Rebellion of *Korah* and his company, then the exp'rel murmures against himself, nay, then the high crime of Idolatry: for this crime GOD visited them with a sword; but for disobedience and mutiny against their Superiors, GOD made the earth to swallow some of them, and fire from Heaven to consume the rest; to shew that Rebellion is to be punished by the conspiracy of Heaven and Earth, as it is hateful and contradictory both to GOD and Man: And it is not amisse to observe, that obedience to Man being it is for Gods sake, and yet to a person clothed with the circumstances and the same infirmities with our selves is a greater instance of humility, then to obey GOD immediately whose authority is divine, whose presence is terrible, whose power is infinite, and not at all depressed by exterior disadvantages or lessening appearances; just as it is both greater faith and greater charity to relieve a poor Saint for JESUS sake, then to give any thing to CHRIST himself, if he should appear in all the robes of glory and immediate addresse. For it is to GOD, and to CHRIST, and wholly for their sakes, and to them that the obedience is done, or the charity expressed, but themselves are persons whose awfulness, Majesty, and veneration, would rather force then invite obedience or almes. But when GOD and his holy Son stands behinde the cloud and sends their servants to take the homage, or the charity, it is the same as if it were done to them, but it receives the advantage of acceptation by the accidental adherencies of Faith & Humility to the several actions respectively. When a King comes to Rebels in person, it strikes terrors and veneration into them, who are too apt to neglect and despise the person of his Ministers, whom they look upon as their fellow subjects, and consider not in the exaltation of a deputed Majesty. *Charles* the fifth found a happy experience of it at *Gaunt* in Flanders, whose Rebellion he appeased by his presence, which he could hardly have done by his army. But if the Kings authority be as much rever'd in his Deputy, as it is sacred in his own person, it is the greater Humility and more confident Obedience. And as it is certain that he is the most humble that submits to his inferiors, so in the same proportion, the lower and meaner the instrument upon which GODS authority is born, the higher is the grace that teaches us to stoop so low. I do not say that a sin against humane laws is greater then a prevarication against a Divine Commandment; as the instances may be, the distance is next to infinite and to touch the earth with our foot within the Octaves of Easter, or to taste flesh upon dayes of abstinence (even in those places and to those persons where they did or do oblige) have no consideration, if they be laid in balance against the crimes of Adultery, or Blasphemy, or Oppression. Because these crimes cannot stand with the reputation and sacredness of Divine Authority; but those others may in most instances very well consist with the ends of government, which are severally provided for in the diversity of sanctions respectively. But if we make our instances to other purposes, we finde, that to mutiny in an Army, or to keep private Assemblies

\* *Titus Manlius sed  
eum percutit filium,  
postquam bohem  
gloriose vicere in  
interdita pugna.* *A.  
Gellius.* *c. 13.*

Assemblies in a Monarchy, are worse then a single thought or morose delectation in a fancy of impurity; because those others destroy government more then these destroy charity of GOD or Obedience. But then though the instances may vary the Conclusion, yet the formal reason is alike, and disobedience to Man is a disobedience against GOD; for GODS authority, and not Mans, is imprinted upon the Superior; and it is like sacred fire in an earthen censer, as holy as if it were kindled with the fanning of a Cherubs wing, or placed just under the propitiatory upon a golden Altar; and it is but a grosse conceit which cannot distinguish Religion from its Porter, *Ihs* from the beast that carried it: so that in all disobedience to Men, in proportion to the greatnessse of the matter, or the malice of the person, or his contradiction to the ends of government and combinations of society, we may use the words by which the Prophet upbraided Israel,

*Isay 7.13.*

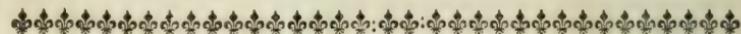
*1 Sam. 15.23.*

It is a contempt of the Divinity, and the affront is transmitted to GOD himself, when we despise the power which GOD hath ordained, and all power of every lawful Superior is such; the Spirit of GOD being witnesse in the highest measure, *Rebellion is as the sin of Witchcraft, and stubbornesse as Idolatry.* It is spoken of rebellion against GOD, and all Rebellion is so, for, *He that despiseth you, despiseth me*, saith the blessed JESUS, that's menace enough in the instance of spiritual regiment. And you are gathered together against the Lord, saith Moses to the rebellious Princes in the conspiracy of Dathan, that's for the temporal. \* And to encourage this duty, I shall use no other words then those of Homer to Achilles, *They that obey in this world, are better then they that command in Hell.*

\* Οὐ μέχτει

μαρτυρούν, ἐμε

βασιλεῖς μέχονται.

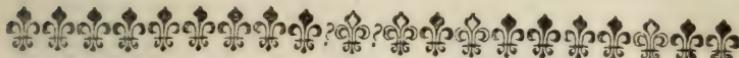


## A Prayer for the grace of Holy O B E D I E N C E.

O Lord and blessed Saviour JESUS, by whose obedience many became righteous, and reparations were made of the ruines brought to Humane Nature, by the disobedience of Adam; thou camest into the world with many great and holy purposes concerning our salvation, and hast given us a great precedent of obedience; which that thou mightest preserve to thy Heavenly Father, thou didst negleete thy life, and becamest obedient even to the death of the Croffe; Oh, let me imitate so blessed example, and by the merits of thy obedience, let me obtain the grace of humility and abnegation of all my own desires in the clearest renunciation of my will; that I may will and refuse in conformity to thy sacred laws and holy purposes, that I may do all thy will cheerfully, choosingly, humbly, confidently, and continually; and thy will may be done upon me with much mercy and fatherly dispensation of thy Providence. Amen.

L ORD let my understanding adhere to, and be satisfied in the excellent wisdom of thy Commandments; let my affections dwell in their desires, and all my other faculties beset on daily work for performance of them; and let my love

to obey thee make me dutiful to my Superiors, upon whom the impresses of thy authority are set by thine own hand; that I may never despise their persons nor refuse their injunctions, nor choose mine own work, nor murmur at their burdens, nor dispute the prudence of the Sanction, nor excuse myself, nor pretend difficulties or impossibilities; but that I may be indifferent in my desires, and resigned to the will of those whom thou hast set over me; that since all thy Creatures obey thy word, I alone may not disorder the creation, and cancel those bonds and inter-medial links of subordination whereby my duty should passe to thee and thy glory; but that my obedience being united to thy obedience, I may also have my portion in the glories of thy Kingdom, O Lord and blessed Saviour JESUS. Amen.



### Ad. Sect. 5.

### *Considerations upon the presentation of JESUS in the Temple.*

THE holy Virgin Mother according to the Law of Moses at the expiration of a certain time came to the Temple to be purified, although in her sacred parturition she had contracted no legal impurity; yet she exposed her self to the publick opinion and common reputation of an ordinary condition; and still amongst all generations she is in all circumstances accounted blessed, and her reputation no little altered, save only that it is made the more sacred by this testimony of her humility. But this we are taught from the consequence of this instance; that if an end principally design'd in any duty should be supplyed otherwise in any particular person, the duty is nevertheless to be observed; and then the obedience and publick order is reason enough for the observation, though the proper end of its designation be wanting in the single person. Thus is fasting design'd for mortification of the flesh, and killing all its unruly appetites, and yet married persons who have another remedy, and a Virgin whose Temple is hallowed by a gift, and the strict observances of chastity, are tyed to the duty; and if she were not, then fasting were nothing else but a publication of our impure desires, and an exposing the person to the confidence of a bold temptation, whilst the young men did observe the faster to be tempted from within. But the holy Virgin from these acts (of which in signification she had no need, because she sinned not in the Conception, nor was impure in the production) expressed other virtues besides obedience; such as were humble thoughts of her self, Devotion and Reverence to publick sanctions, Religion and Charity which were like the pure leaves of the whitest Lilly, fit to represent

I.

Vide Rodriguez in  
explicat. Bull. cruci-  
cister. & Sir Thomas  
More against Tindale.

the

the beauties of her innocence, but were vail'd and shadowed by that sacramental of the Mosaick Law.

2.

The holy Virgin received the greatest favour that any of the Daughters of Adam ever did, and knowing from whence, and for whose glory she had received it, returns the holy JESUS in a present to GOD again; for she had nothing so precious as himself to make oblation of; and besides that, every first-born among the Males was holy to the LORD; this childe had an eternal and essential sanctity and until he came into the World, and was made apt for her to make present of him, there was never in the World any act of adoration proportionable to the honour of the great GOD; but now there was; and the holy Virgin made it, when she presented the holy childe JESUS. And now besides that we are taught to return to GOD whatsoever we have received from him, if we unite our Offerings and Devotions to this holy Present, we shall by the merit and excellency of this Oblation exhibit to GOD an offertory, in which he cannot but delight for the combinations sake and society of his holy Son.

3.

The holy Mother brought five Sicles, and a pair of Turtle Doves to redeem the Lamb of GOD from the Anathema; because every first-born was to be sacrificed to GOD, or redeem'd if it was clean; it was the poor Mans price, and the holy JESUS was never set at the greater prices, when he was estimated upon earth. For he that was LORD of the Kingdom chose his portion among the poor of this World, that he might advance the poor to the riches of his inheritance, And so it was from his Nativity hither. For at his Birth he was poor, at his Circumcision poor, and in the likeness of a sinner; at his Presentation poor, and like a sinner and a servant, for he chose to be redeemed with an ignoble price. The five sicles were given to the Priest for the redemption of the Childe; and if the Parents were not able, he was to be a servant of the Temple, and to minister in the inferior offices to the Priest; and this was GODS seizure and possession of him; for although all the servants of GOD are his inheritance, yet the Ministers of Religion who derive their portion of temporals from his title, who live upon the Corban, and eat the meat of the Altar which is GODS peculiar, and come nearer to his holiness by the addresses of an immediate ministration, are GODS own upon another and a distinct challenge; but because CHRIST was to be the Prince of another Ministry, and the chief Priest of another Order; he was redeemed from attending the Mosaick rites, which he came to abolish, that he might do his Fathers businesse in establishing the Evangelical. Only remember, that the Ministers of Religion are but GODS usurpatories, as they are not Lords of GODS portion, and therefore must dispence it like Stewards, not like Masters; so the People are not their Patrons in paying, nor they their beneficiaries in receiving tithes or other provisions of maintenance; they owe for it to none but to GOD himself, and it would also be considered, that in all sacrilegious detentions of Ecclesiastical rites, GOD is the person principally injured.

\* Sed paucioria illis  
prima, & neuix non  
adulteria : conjugi  
h' em non violant.  
Plin. 10. 6. 33.

4.

The Turtle Doves \* were offered also with the signification of another mystery. In the Sacred Rites of marriage, although the permissions of natural desires are such as are most ordinate to their ends, the avoiding Fornication, the alleviation of Oeconomical cares and vexations, and the production of children, and mutual comfort and support; yet the apertures and permissions of marriage have such restraints of modesty and prudence,

as all transgression of the just order to such ends is a crime ; and besides these, there may be degrees of inordination or obliquity of intention, or too sensual complacency or unhandsom preparations of minde or unsacramental thoughts ; in which particulars, because we have no determin'd rule but prudence, and the analogy of the rite & the severity of our Religion, which allow in some cases more, in some lesse, and alwayes uncertain latitudes ; for ought we know there may be lighter transgressions that we know not of ; and for these at the purification of the woman it is supposed the offering was made, and the turtures, by being an oblation, did deprecate a supposed irregularity ; but by being a chaste and marital Embleme, they professed the obliquity (if any were) was within the protection of the sacred bands of marriage ; and therefore so excusable as to be expiated by a cheap offering ; and what they did in Hieroglyphick, Christians must do in the exposition ; be strict observers of the main rites and principal obligations ; and not negligent to deprecate the lesser unhandomenesses of the too sensual applications.

S:

GOD had at that instant so ordered, that for great ends of his own and theirs, two very holy persons of divers Sexes and like piety, *Simeon* and *Anna*, the one who lived an active and secular, the other a retired and contemplative life, should come into the Temple by revelation and direction of the holy Spirit ; and see him whom they and all the World did look for, the LORD'S C H R I S T, the *consolation of Israel*. They saw him, they rejoiced, they worshipped, they prophesied, they sang Hymnes ; and old *Simeon* did comprehend and circumscribe in his armes him that filled all the World, and was then so satisfied that he desired to live no longer ; GOD had verified his promise, had shewn him the *Messias*, had filled his heart with joy, and made his old age honourable ; and now after all this sight, no object could be pleasant but the joyes of Paradise : for as a Man who hath star'd too freely upon the face and beauties of the Sun, is blinde and dark to objects of a lesse splendour, and is forc'd to shut his eyes, that he may through the degrees of darknesse perceive the inferiour beauties of more proportioned objects : so was old *Simeon* ; his eyes were so filled with the glories of this revelation, that he was willing to close them in his last night ; that he might be brought into the communications of eternity ; and he could never more finde comfort in any other object this world could minister : for such is the excellency of spiritual things, when they have once filled the corners of our hearts, and made us highly sensible and apprehensive of interiour beauties of G O D and of Religion, all things of this World are flat and empty and unsatisfying vanities, as unpleasant as the lees of Vineger to a tongue filled with the spirit of high Italick wines. And until we are so dead to the World as to apprehend no gulf or freer complacency in exterious objects ; we never have entertained C H R I S T or have had our cups overflow with devotion or filled with the Spirit. When our Chalice is filled with holy oil, with the anointing from above, it will entertain none of the waters of bitterness, or if it does, they are thrust to the bottome, they are the lowest of our desires, and therefore onely admitted, because they are natural and constituent.

The good old Prophetesse *Anna*, had lived long in chaste Widewhood, in the service of the Temple, in the continuall offices of Devotion,

Devotion, in fasting and prayer ; and now came the happy instant in which GOD would give her a great benediction and an earnest of a greater : the returns of prayer and the blessings of piety are certain ; and though not dispensed according to the expectances of our narrow conceptions, yet at such times and in such measures as shall crown the piety and satisfie the desires and reward the expectation. It was in the Temple , the same place where she had for so many years poured out her heart to GOD , that GOD pour'd forth his heart to her , sent his Son from his bosom, and there she received his benediction ; indeed in such places GOD does most particularly exhibit himself, and blessing goes along with him where ever he goes ; in holy places GOD hath put his holy Name , and to holy persons GOD does oftentimes manifest the interiour and more secret glories of his holiness ; provided they come thither as old *Simeon* and *Anna* did by the motions of the holy Spirit, not with desigues of vanity or curioſity or sensuality, for such spirits as those come to prophane and defecrate the house, and unhallow the person, and provoke the Deity of the place, and blast us with unwholesome aires.

7. But *Joseph* and *Mary* wondred at these things which were spoken, and treasured them in their hearts, and they became matter of Devotion, and mental Prayer, or *Meditation*.



## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Eternal GOD, who by the inspirations of thy holy Spirit didſt direct thy servants Simeon and Anna to the Temple at the instant of the presentation of the holy childe JESUS, that ſo thou mighteft veriſte thy promife and manifest thy Son, and reward the piety of holy people, who longed for Redemption by the coming of the Messias ; give me the perpetual affiſtance of the ſame Spirit to be as a Monitor and a guide to me, leading me to all holy actions, and to the embracements and poſſeſſions of thy glorious Son ; and remember all thy faithful people who wait for the conſolation and redemption of the Church from all her miseries and perſecutions, and at laſt ſatisfie their deſires by the revalations of thy mercies and ſalvation. Thou haſt advanced thy holy Childe and ſet him up for a ſigne of thy mercies, & a representation of thy glories. LORD let no act, or thought, or word of mine ever be in contradiction to this bleſſed ſigne, but let it be for the ruine of all my vices and all the powers, the Devil imploies againſt the Church, and for the raiſing up all thoſe vertues and graces which thou diđſignē me in the purpoſes of Eternity ; but let my portion never be amongſt the incredulous, or the ſcornful, or the Heretical, or the prophane, or any of thoſe who ſtumble at this ſtone which thou haſt laid for the foundation of thy Church, and the ſtructures of a virtuous life ; remember me with much mercy and compassion when the ſword of ſorrows or afflictions ſhall pierce my heart : firſt tranſfix me with love, and then all the troubles of this world will be conſignations to the joyes of a better ; which grant for the mercies and the name ſake of thy holy childe JESUS. Amen.

## Discourse 3.

### Of MEDITATION.

**F**IN the definition of Meditation I should call it an unaccustomed and unpractised duty, I should speak a truth, though somewhat inartificially: for not only the interiour beauties and brighter excellencies are as unfelt as Idea's and abstractions are, but also the practice and common knowledge of the duty it self are strangers to us, like the retirements of the deep or the undiscovered treasures of the Indian hills. And this is a very great cause of the drynesse and expiration of Mens Devotion, because our souls are so little refreshed with the waters and holy dewes of Meditation. We go to our prayers by chance, or order, or by determination of accidental occurrences; and we recite them as we read a book; and sometimes we are sensible of the duty, and a flash of Lightning makes the room bright, and our prayers end and the lightning is gone, and we as dark as ever. We draw our water from standing pools, which never are fill'd but with sudden showres, and therefore we are dry so often: Whereas if we would draw water from the Fountains of our SAVIOUR, and derive them through the channel of diligent and prudent Meditations, our devotion would be a continual current, and safe against the barrenesse of frequent droughts.

For Meditation is an attention and application of spirit to divine things, a searching out all instruments to a holy life, a devout consideration of them, and a production of those affections which are in a direct order to the love of GOD, and a pious conversation. Indeed meditation is all that great instrument of piety whereby it is made prudent, and reasonable, and orderly, and perpetual. For supposing our memory instructed with the knowledge of such mysteries, and revelations that are apt to entertain the Spirit, the understanding is first and best imployed in the consideration of them, and then the will in their reception, when they are duly prepared and so transmitted: and both these in such manner and to such purposes that they become the Magazine and great repositories of grace, and instrumental to all desigues of vertue.

For the understanding is not to consider the matter of any meditation in it self, or as it determines in naturall excellencies or unworthiness respectively, or with a purpose to furnish it self with notion and riches of knowledge: for that is like the Winter-Sunne, it shines but warmes not; but in such order as themselves are put in the designations of Theology, in the order of Divine Laws, in their spiritual capacity and as they have influence upon holinesse: for the understanding

here is something else besides the intellectual power of the Soul, it is the Spirit, that is, it is celestial in its application, as it is spiritual in its nature: and we may understand it well by considering the beatiful portions of soul and body in their future glories. For therefore even our bodies in the Resurrection shall be spiritual, because the operation of them shall be in order to spiritual glories, and their natural actions such as are seeing and speaking shall have a spiritual object and supernatural end; and here as we partake of such excellencies and cooperate to such purposes men are more or lesse spiritual; and so is the understanding taken from its first and lowest ends of resting in notion and ineffective contemplation, and is made spirit (that is) wholly ruled and guided by GODS Spirit to supernatural ends and spiritual imployments; so that it understands and considers the motions of the Heavens to declare the glory of GOD, the prodiges and alterations in the firmament to demonstrate his handiwork; it considers the excellent order of creatures, that we may not disturb the order of creation, or dissolve the golden chain of subordination: Aristotle and Porphyry and the other Greek Philosophers, studied the Heavens to search out their natural causes and production of bodies; the wiser Chaldees and Assyrians studied the same things, that they might learn their influences upon us and make predictions of contingencies; the more moral Egyptian described his Theoremes in Hieroglyphicks and phantastick representements to teach principles of Policy, Oeconomy, and other prudences of morality and secular negotiation: But the same Philosophy when it is made Christian, considers as they did, but to greater purposes, even, that from the book of the Creatures we may glorifie the Creatour, and hence derive arguments of worship and Religion; this is Christian Philosophy.

4.

I instance onely in considerations natural to spiritual purposes; but the same is the manner in all meditation, whether the matter of it be nature or revelation; for if we think of Hell and consider the infinity of its duration, and that its flames last as long as GOD lasts, and thence conjecture upon the rules of proportion, why a finite creature may have an infinite unnaturall duration, or think by what wayes a material fire can torment an immaterial substance, or why the Devils, who are intelligent and wise Creatures, should be so foolish as to hate GOD from whom they know every rivulet of amability derives? This is to study, not to meditate; for meditation considers any thing that may best make us to avoid the place, and to quit a vicious habit, or master and rectifie an untoward inclination, or purchase a virtue, or exercise one, so that meditation is an act of the understanding put to the right use.

5.

For the holy JESUS, coming to redeem us from the bottomelesse pit, did it by lifting us up out of the puddles of impurity and the unwholesome waters of vanity; *He redeemed us from our vain conversation;* and our understandings had so many vanities that they were made instruments of great impiety. The unlearned and ruder Nations had fewer vertues, but they had, also fewer vices then the wise Empires, that ruled the World with violence and wit together. The softer \* Asians had lust and intemperance in a full Chalice; but their understandings were ruder then the finer Latines, for these mens.

\* τοις πατροῖς βε-  
στοῖς ψυχαγό-  
νομούσισι τοις  
τιθουσι καὶ τοις  
ταραχαῖς οἰδητοῖς.  
Athens. l.4.

mens understandings distill'd wickednesse, as through a Limbeck, and the Romans drank spirits and the sublim'd quintessences of villany, where-as the other made themselves drunk with the lees and cheaper instances of sinne: so that the understanding is not an idle and uselesse faculty but naturally derives to practice, and brings guests into the inward Cabinet of the will, and there they are entertained and feasted. And those understandings which did not serve the baser end of vices, yet were unprofitable for the most part, and furnished their inward rooms with glasses and beads and trifles fit for an American Mart; from all these impurities and vanities J E S U S hath redemeed all his Disciples, and not onely thrown out of his Temples all the impure rites of *Flora* and *Cybele*, but also the trifling and unprofitable ceremonies of the more sober Deities, not onely vices but uselesse and unprofitable speculations, and hath consecrated our Head into a Temple, our Understanding to Spirit, our Reason to Religion, our Study to Meditation; and this is the first part of the Sanctification of our Spirit.

And this was the cause holy Scripture commands the duty of meditation in proportion still to the excellencies of piety and a holy life, to which it is highly and aptly instrumentall. *Blessed is the man Psal. I.* that meditates in the Law of the L O R D day and night. And the reason of the proposition and the use of the duty is expressed to this purpose: *Thy words have I hid in my heart that I should not sinne against thee.* The placing and fixing those divine Considerations in our understandings and hiding them there, are designes of high Christian prudence, that they with advantage may come forth in the expresses of a holy life. For what in the World is more apt and natural to produce humility, then to meditate upon the low stoopings and descents of the holy J E S U S, to the nature of a Man, to the weaknesses of a Childe, to the poverties of a Stable, to the ignoblenesse of a Servant, to the shame of the Crosse, to the pains of Cruelty, to the dust of Death, to the title of a Sinner, and to the wrath of G O D? By this instance poverty is made honourable, and humility is sanctified and made noble, and the contradictions of nature are amiable and fitted for a wise Election. Thus hatred of sin, shame of our selves, confusion at the sense of humane misery, the love of G O D, confidence in his promises, desires of Heaven, holy resolutions, resignation of our own appetites, conformity to Divine will, oblations of our selves, repentance and mortification are the proper emanations from meditation of the sordidnesse of sinne, our proneness to it, our daily miseries as issues of Divine Vengeance, the glories of G O D, his infinite unalterable veracity, the satisfactions in the vision of G O D, the rewards of piety, the rectitude of the Laws of G O D, and perfection of his Sanctions, G O D S supreme and paternall dominion, and his certain malediction of sinners; and when any one of these considerations is taken to pieces, and so placed in the rooms of application, that a piece of duty is conjoyned to a piece of the mystery; and the whole office to the purchase of a grace, or the extirmination of a vice, it is like opening our windowes to let in the Sun and the Winde; and holinesse is as proportioned an effect to this practise, as glory is to a persevering holiness, by way of reward and moral causality.

7.

For all the affections that are in Man are either natural, or by chance, or by the incitation of reason and discourse; our natural affections are not worthy the entertainments of a Christian; they must be supernatural and divine that put us into the hopes of Perfection and Felicities; and these other that are good, unless they come by meditation, they are but accidental, and set with the evening Sun: but if they be produced upon the strengths of pious meditation, they are as perpetual as they are reasonable, and excellent in proportion to the piety of the principle. A Garden that is watered with short and sudden shoures is more uncertain in its fruits and beauties, than if a Rivulet waters it with a perpetual distilling and constant humectation: And just such are the short emisions and unpremeditated resolutions of piety begotten by a dash of holy rain from Heaven, whereby GOD sometimes uses to call the carelesse but to taste what excellencies of piety they neglect; but if they be not produc'd by the reason of Religion and the Philolophy of Meditation, they have but the life of a Fly or a tall Gourd; they come into the World onely to say they had a being, you could scarce know their length, but by measuring the ground they cover in their fall.

8.

For since we are more mov'd by material and sensible objects, then by things meerly speculative and intellectual, and generall even in spiritual things are lesse perceived, and lesse motive then particulars: Meditation frames the understanding part of Religion to the proportions of our nature, and our weaknesse; by making some things more circumstantiate, and material, and the more spiritual to be particular, and therefore the more applicable: and the mystery is made like the Gospel to the Apostles, *Our eyes do see, and our ears do hear, and our hands do handle thus much of the word of Life* as is prepared for us in the Meditation.

9.

1. And therefore every wise person, that intends to furnish himself with affections of Religion, or detestation against a Vice, or glorifications of a Mystery, still will proportion the Mystery, and sit it with such circumstances of fancy and application, as by observation of himselfe he knowes aptest to make impression. It was a wise designe of *Mark Antony* when he would stir up the people to revenge the death of *Cesar*, he brought his body to the pleading place, he shewed his wounds, held up the rent Mantle, and shewed them the garment that he put on that night in which he beat the *Neruij*, that is, in which he won a victory, for which his Memory was dear to them. He shewed them that wound which pierced his heart, in which they were placed by so deer a love, that he made them his heirs, and left to their publick use places of delighr and pleasure; and then it was natural when he had made those things present to them which had once moved their love and his honour, that grief at the losse of so honourable and so lov'd a person should succeed; and then they were Lords of all, their sorrow and revenge seldom slept in two beds. And thus holy Meditation produces the passions and desires it intends, it makes the object present and almost sensible, it renewes the first passions by a fiction of imagination, it passes from the Paschal Parlour to Cedron, it tels the drops of sweat, and measures them and findes them as big as drops of blood, and then conjectures at the greatnesse of our sins; it fears in the midst of CHRIST'S agonies; it hears his groans, it spies *Judas* his Lanthorn afar off, it follows JESUS to Gabbath<sup>4</sup>, and wonders at his innocence and their malice, and feels

feels the strokes of the Whip, and shrinks the head when the Crown of Thorns is thrust hard upon his holy brows, and at last goes step by step with JESUS, and carries part of the Crosse, and is nailed fast with sorrow and compassion, and dies with love. For if the soul be principle of its own actions, it can produce the same effects by reflex acts of the understanding, when it is afflicted by the imaginative part as when it sees the thing acted: only let the meditation be as minute, particular, and circumstantiate as it may; for a Widow by representing the careless of her dead Husband's love produces sorrow and the new affections of a sad indeerment. It is too sure, that the recalling the Circumstances of a past impurity does reinkindle the flame and entertain the fancy with the burnings of an impure fire: And this happens not by any advantages of vice, but by the nature of the thing, and the efficacy of Circumstances. So does holy Meditation produce those impresees and signatures, which are the proper effects of the mystery, if presented in a right line and direct representation.

2. He that means to meditate in the best order to the productions of piety, must not be inquisitive for the highest mysteries, but the plainest propositions are to him of the greatest use and evidence. For Meditation is the duty of all, and therefore GOD hath fitted such matter for it, which is proportioned to every understanding, and the greatest mysteries of Christianity are plainest, and yet most fruitfull of Meditation, and most usefull to the production of Piety. High speculations are as barren as the tops of Cedar; but the fundamentals of Christianity are fruitfull as the Valleys or the creeping Vine. For know, that it is no meditation, but it may be an illusion, when you consider mysteries to become more learned without thoughts of improving piety. Let your affections be as high as they can climbe towards GOD, so your considerations be humble, fruitful, and practicaly mysterious. *Oh, that I had the wings of a Dove, that I might flye away and be at rest*, said David. The wings of an Eagle would have carried him higher, but yet the innocent Dove did furnish him with the better Embleme to represent his humble designe; and lower meditations might sooner bring him to rest in GOD. It was a saying of Aegidius, *That an old and a simple woman, if she loves JESUS, may be greater than was Brother Bonaventure*. Want of learning and disability to consider great secrets of Theology does not at all retard our progresse to spirituall perfections; Love to JESUS may be better promoted by the plainer understandings of honest and unlettered people, then by the finer and more exalted speculations of great Clerks, that have lesse devotion. For although the way of serving GOD by the understanding be the best and most lasting, yet it is not necessary the understanding should be dress'd with troublesome and laborious notions; the reason that is in Religion is the first principle to engage our services, and more perpetual then the sweetneses and the motives of affection, but every honest Mans understanding is then best furnished with the discourses and the reasonable parts of Religion, when he knowes those mysteries of Religion upon which CHRIST and his Apostles did build a holy life and the superstructures of piety; those are the best materials of his meditation.

So that meditation is nothing else but the using of all those arguments,

ments, motives and irradiations which GOD intended to be instrumental to piety. It is a composition of both wayes; for it stirres up our affections by reason and the way of understanding, that the wise soul may be satisfied in the reasonableness of the thing, and the affectionate may be entertained with the sweetnesse of holy passion; that our judgement be determined by discourse, and our appetites made active by the carelesse of a religious fancy. And therefore the use of meditation is to consider any of the mysteries of Religion with purposes to draw from it, rules of life or affections to vertue, or detestation of vice; and from hence the Man rises to devotion and mental prayer and intercourse with GOD; and after that, he rests himself in the bosome of beatitude, and is swallowed up with the comprehensions of love and Contemplation. These are the several *degrees* of meditation; but let us first understand that part of it which is *duty*, and then if any thing succeed of a middle condition between duty and reward, we will consider also how that duty is to be performed, and how the reward is to be managed, that it may prove to be no illusion; therefore I adde also this Consideration.

12.

3. Whatsoever pious purposes and deliberations are entertained in the act of meditation, they are carefully to be maintained and thrust forward to actual performances, although they were indefinite and indeterminate, and no other wayes decreed but by resolutions and determinations of reason and judgement. For GOD assists every pious action according to its exigence and capacity, and therefore bleses holy meditations with results of reason, and prepossessions dogmatically decreeing the necessitie of vertue, and the convenience of certain exercises in order to the purchase of it: he then that neglects to actuate such discourses, loses the benefit of his meditation; he is gone no further then when he first set out and neglects the inspirations of the holy Spirit. For if at any time it be certain what spirit it is that speaks within the soul, it is most certain that it is the good Spirit that moves us to an act of vertue in order to acquisition of the habit; and when GODS grace hath assisted us so far in our meditation, that we understand our duty and are moved with present arguments, if we put not forth our hand and make use of them, we do nothing towards our duty; and it is not certain that G O D will create graces in us as he does the foul; let every pious person think every conclusion of reason in his meditation on to have pass'd an obligation upon him: and if he hath decreed that fasting so often, and doing so many religious acts is convenient and conducing to the production of a grace he is in pursuit of; let him know that every such decree, and reasonable proposition is the grace of G O D, instrumental to piety, part of his assistance, and therefore in no case to be extinguished.

13.

4. In meditation, let the understanding be restrained, and under such prudent coercion and confinement that it wander not from one discourse to another, till it hath perceived some fruit from the first: either that his soul be instructed in a duty, or mov'd by a new argument, or confirm'd in an old, or determin'd to some exercise and intermediall action of Religion, or hath broke out into some prayers and intercourse with G O D in order to the production of a vertue. And this is the mysticall designe of the Spouse in the Canticles of Solomon, *I adjure you O you daughters of Jerusalem, by the Roes and by the Hinds of the field,* that

Cont.3.5.

that you stirre not up nor awake my loue till he please. For it is lightnesse of spirit to passe over a field of flowers and to ix no where, but to leave it without carrying some honey with us; unlesse the subject be of it self barren and unfruitfull, and then why was it chosen? Or that it is made so by our indisposition, and then indeed it is to be quitted: but ( it is S. Chrysostoms simile ) as a Lamb sucking the breast of its dam and Mother moves the head from one part to another till it hath found a distilling fontinell; and then it fixes till it be satisfied or the fountain cease dropping: so shoulde we in meditation, reject such materialls as are barren like the tops of hills, and fix upon such thoughts which nourish and refresh, and there dwell till the nourisment be drawn forth, or so much of it as we can then temperately digest.

5. In meditation, strive rather for graces then for gifts, for affections in the way of vertue more then the overflowings of sensible devotion; and therefore if thou findeſt any thing by which thou mayest be better, though thy spirit do not actually rejoice or finde any gust or relish in the mandu-  
cation, yet choose it greedily: For although the chief end of meditation be affection; and not determinations intellectuall, yet there is choice to be had of the affections, and care must be taken that the affections be de-  
fires of vertue or repudiations and aversions from ſomething criminall; nor  
joyes and transports spirituall, comforts and complacencies; for they  
are no part of our duty; ſometimes they are encouragements, and ſome-  
times rewards, ſometimes they depend upon habitude and diſpoſition of  
body, and ſeem great matters when they have little in them, and are more  
hodily then spirituall, like the gift of tears, and yerning of the bowels;  
and ſometimes they are illuſions and temptations, at which if the foul stoops  
and be greedy after they may prove like Hippomanes golden apples to Ata-  
lanta; retard our courſe, and poſſibly do ſome hazard to the whole race.  
And this will be neerer reduced to practice, if we conſider the variety of  
matter, which is fitted to the meditation in ſeverall ſtates of men travailing  
towards heaven.

For the first beginnings in religion are inployed in the mastering of their first appetites, casting out their Devils, exterminating all evil cuſtones, leſſening the proclivity of habits and countermanding the too great forwardneſſe of vicious inclinations; and this, which Divines call the *Purgative way*, is wholly ſpent in actions of re penitence, Mortification and ſelf deniall; and therefore if a penitent person ſnatches at comforts, or the taſtes of ſensible devotion his re penitence is too delicate, it is but a rod of roses and Jeſſamine. If G O D ſees the ſpirit broken all in pieces, and that it needs a little of the oyle of gladneſſe for its ſupport and reſtitution to the capacities of its duty, he will give it, but this is not to be deſigned, nor ſnatched at in the meditation; teares of joy are not good ex preſſions nor instruments of re penitence, we muſt not gather grapes from thorns, nor figs from thiftles; no reſrehments to be looked for here, but ſuch onely as are neceſſary for ſupport; and when G O D ſees they are, let not us trouble ouer ſelves, he will provide them. But the meditations which are prompt to this Purga-  
tive way and practice of firſt beginners, is not apt to produce deli-  
cacies; but in the ſequel and confeſſional of it. *Afterwards it brings*  
*forth*

forth the pleasant fruit of righteousness, but for the present it hath no joy in it, no joy of sense though much satisfaction to reason. And such are meditations of the fall of Angels and Man, the Ejection of them from heaven, of our Parents from Paradise, the horrour and obliquity of sin, the wrath of GOD the severity of his anger, mortification of our body and spirit, self denial, the Crose of CHRIST, Death and hell, and Judgement; the terrors of an evil Conscience, the insecurities of a Sinner; the unreasonableness of sin, the troubles of repentance, the Worm and sting of a burdened spirit, the difficulties of rooting our evil habits, and the utter abolition of sin; if these nettles bear honey, we may fill our selves; but such sweetneses spoil the operations of these bitter potions. Here therefore let your addresses to GOD and your mentall prayers be affectionate desires of Pardon, humble considerations of our selves, thoughts of revenge against our Crimes, desigues of mortification, indefatigable sollicitations for mercy, expresses of shame and confusion of face; and he meditates best in the purgative way that makes these affections most operative and high.

16.

After our first step is taken, and the punitive part of repentance is resolved on, and begun, and put forward into good degrees of progresse, we then enter into the illuminative way of religion; and set upon the acquist of vertues and the purchase of spirituall graces, and therefore our meditations are to be proportioned to the designe of that imployment, such as are considerations of the life of JESUS, examples of Saints, reasons of vertue, means of acquiring them, designations of proper exercises to every pious habite, the eight beatitudes, the gifts and fruits of the holy Ghost, the promises of the Gospel, the attributes of GOD as they are revealed to represent GOD to be infinite and to make us religious, the rewards of heaven, excellent and select sentences of holy persons, to be as incentives of piety; These are the proper matter for proficients in religion; but then the affections producible from these are love of vertue, desires to imitate the holy JESUS, affections to Saints and holy persons, conformity of choice, subordination to GODS will, election of the wayes of vertue, satisfaction of the understanding in the wayes of religion, and resolutions to pursue them in the midst of all discomorts and persecutions; and our mentall prayers or entercourse with GOD which are the present emanations of our meditations, must be in order to these affections, and productions from those, and in all these yet, there is safety and piety and no seeking of our selves, but designes of vertue in just reason and duty to GOD and for his sake, that is, for his commandment. And in all these particulars, if there be such a sterility of spirit that there be no end served but of spirituall profit, we are never the worse; all that GOD requires of us is that we will live well and repent in just measure and right manner, and he that doth so, hath meditated well.

17.

From hence if a pious soul pasles to affections of greater sublimity, and intimate and more immediate, abstracted and immateriall love, it is well, onely remember that the love, GOD requires of us, is an operative materiall and communicative love. If ye love me keep my Commandments; so that still a good life is the effect of the sublimest meditation; and if we make our duty sure behinde us, ascend up as high into the mountain as you can, so your ascent may consist with the securities of your person, the condition

of

of infirmitie, and the interests of your duty. According to the saying of \* *Ildefonsus*; *Our empty saying of lauds and reciting verses in honour of his Name, please not GOD so well as the imitation of him does advantage to us*, and a devout imitator pleases the spouse better then an idle *Panegyrike*; Let your work be like his, your duty in imitation of his precept and example, and then sing praises as you list; no heart is large enough, no voice pleasant enough, no life long enough, nothing but an eternity of duration, and a beatificall state can do it well: and therefore holy David joyns them both; *Whoſo offereth me thanks and praise he honoureth me, and to him that ordereth his conversation aright I will shew the salvation of GOD*. All thanks and praise without a right ordered conversation are but the Echo of religion, a voice and no substance; but if those praises be sung by a heart righteous and obedient, that is singing with the spirit, and singing with understanding; that is the Musick GOD delights in.

6. But let me observe and preſſe this caution: it is a miſtake, and not a little dangerous, when people religious and forward ſhall too promptly, frequently and neerly ſpend their thoughts in conſideration of divine excellencies. GOD hath ſhewn thee merit enough to ſpend all thy ſtock of love upon him in the characters of his power, the book of the Creature, the great tables of his mercy, and the lines of his justice; we have cauſe enough to praife his excellencies in what we feel of him, and are reſreſhed with his influence, and ſee his beauties in reſlexion, though we do not put our eyes out, with staring upon his face; to behold the glories and perfections of GOD with a more direct intuition is the privilege of Angels, who yet cover their faces in the brightneſſe of his preſence: it is onely permitted to us to conſider the back parts of GOD: And therefore thoſe ſpeculations are too bold and imprudent addresses, and minister to danger more then to religion, when we paſſe away from the direct ſtudies of vertue, and thoſe thoughts of GOD, which are the freer and ſafer communications of the Deity, which are the means of entercourse and relation between him and us, to thoſe conſiderations concerning GOD which are Metaphysicall and remote, the formall objects of adoration and wonder, rather then of vertue and temperate diſcourses; for GOD in Scripture never revealed any of his abſtracted perfections and remoter and myſterious diſtances, but with a purpoſe to produce fear in us, and therefore to chide the temerity and boldneſſe of too familiar and neerer entercourse.

True it is that every thing we ſee or can conſider repreſents ſome perfection of GOD; but this I mean, that no man ſhould conſider too much, and meditate too frequently upon the immediate perfections of GOD, as it were by way of intuition, but as they are manifested in the Creatures and in the miniſteries of vertue; and alſo when ever GODS perfections be the matter of meditation, we ſhould not ascend upwards into him, but deſcend upon our ſelves like fruitfull vapours drawn up into a cloud, deſcending ſpeedily into a ſhower, that the effect of the conſideration be a deſigne of good life; and that our loves to GOD be not ſpent in abſtractions, but in good works and humble obedience. The other kinde of love may deceiver us; and therefore ſo may ſuch kinde of conſiderations which are its instrument. But this I am now more particularly to conſider.

19.

20.

For beyond this I have described, there is a degree of meditation so exalted, that it changes the very name, and is called *contemplation*, and it is in the unitive way of religion: that is, it consists in unions and adherencies to GOD; it is a prayer of quietness and silence, and a meditation extraordinary, a discourse without variety, a vision and intuition of divine excellencies, and immediate entry into an orb of light, and a resolution of all our faculties into sweetnesse: affections and starings upon the Divine beauty; and is carried on to extasies, raptures, suspensions, elevations, abstractions, and apprehensions beatificall. In all the course of *virtuous meditation*, the soul is like a Virgin invited to make a matrimoniall contract, it inquires the condition of the person, his estate and disposition, and other circumstances of amability and desire. But when she is satisfied with these enquiries and hath chosen her husband, she no more consideres particulars, but is moved by his voice, and his gesture, and runs to his entertainment and fruition, and spends her self wholly in affections, not to obtain but enjoy his love.

21

Thus it is said.

But this is a thing not to be *discoursed* of, but *felt*, and although in other sciences the terms must first be known and then the rules, and conclusions scientificall: Here it is otherwise, for first the whole experience of this must be obtained, before we can so much as know what it is, and the end must be acquired first, the conclusion before the premises. They that pretend to these heights call them the secrets of the Kingdom; but they are such secrets, which no man can describe, such which GOD hath not revealed in the publication of the Gospel, such for the acquiring of which there are no means prescribed, and to which no man is obliged, and which are not in any mans power to obtain, nor such which it is lawfull to pray for or desire, nor concerning which we shall ever be called to an account.

22.

Indeed when persons have been long softened with the continual dropings of religion, and their spirits made timorous and apt for impression by the assiduity of prayer and perpetuall alarms of death, and the continual dyings of mortification; the fancie which is a very great instrument of devotion, is kept continually warm and in a disposition and aptitude to take fire and to flame out in great ascents; and when they suffer transpor-tations beyond the burdens and support of reason, they suffer they know

\* *Acta 10. 10.*  
et nos in a-  
torum.  
et cap. 11. 5.  
et est in exo-  
dow. Raptus  
vidit visionem  
dum oraverat  
...mentis q. patrum  
exultans q; hominem  
toto fio cedere justis  
peccare quod de  
Apolline dixit Lutz  
nus.  
Qualis erat visus five  
excessis Balamini q; if  
visionem omnipotens  
vidit, excelsus fed re-  
secus oculis. Num.  
24. q. 16.

patients as *Dionysius Areopagite* said of his Master *Hierotheus*, Pathicks in Devotion, suffering ravishments of senses, transported beyond the uses of humanity into the suburbs of beatificall apprehensions: but whether or no

this

this be any thing else beside a too intense and indiscreet pressure of the faculties of the soul to inconveniences of understanding, or else a credulous, busy, and untamed fancy, they that think best of it cannot give a certainty. There are and have been some Religious who have acted madnesse and pretended inspirations; and when these are destitute of a propheticke spirit, if they resolve to serve themselves upon the pretences of it, they are disposed to the imitation, if not, to the sufferings of madnesse, and it would be a great folly to call such *Dei plenos*, full of G O D, who are no better then phantaſtick and mad people.

This we are ſure of, that many illuſions have come in the likeneſſe of viſions; and abſurd fancies under the pretence of raptures; and what ſome have called the ſpirit of prophecy, hath been the ſpirit of lying; and contemplation hath been nothing but melancholy and unnatural lengths; and ſtillneſſe of prayer hath been a meer dream and hypochondriacall deuotion, and hath ended in pride or despair, or ſome foſtiſh and dangerous temptation: It is reported of *Heron* the Monk that having lived a retired, mortified, and religious life for many yeare together, at laſt he came to that habit of austerity or ſingularity that he refuſed the feſtival refection and freer meales of Easter and other ſolemnities, that he might do more eminently then the reſt, and ſpend his time in greater abſtractions and contemplations: but the Deuill taking advantage of the weakeſſe of his melancholly and unſetled ſpirit, gave him a traſportation and an extaſy in which he fancied himſelf to have attained ſo great perfeclion that he was as dear to GOD as a crowned Martyr, and Angels would be his ſecurity for indemnity, though he threw himſelf to the bottom of a well; he obeyed his fancy and temptation, did ſo, bruised himſelf to death, and dyed poſſeſſed with a perfwal of the verity of that extaſy and traſportation.

I will not ſay that all violenceſ and extravagancies of a religious fancy are illuſions, but I ſay that they are all unnatural not hallowed by the warrant of a revelation, nothing reasonable, nothing ſecure; I am not ſure that they ever conſift with humility, but it is confeſſed that they are often prodiſed by ſelf love, arrogancy and the great opinion others have of us: I will not judge the condition of thoſe perſons who are ſaid to have ſuffered these extraordinaries, for I know not the circumſtances, or cauſes, or attendants, or the effects; or whether the ſtories be true that make report of them; but I ſhall onely advise that we follow the intimation of our B. Saviour, that we ſit down in the lowest place till the Maſter of the eaſt come and bids us ſit up higher, If we entertain the inward Man in the purgative and illuminative way, that is, in actions of repen‐tance, vertue and precise duty, that is the ſureſt way of uniting us to G O D: whiſt it is done by faith and obedience; and that also is love; and in these peace and safety dwell, and after we have done our work it is not diſcretion in a ſervant to haſten to his meal and ſnatch at the refreshment of viſions unions and abſtractions, but firſt he muſt gird himſelf and wait upon the Maſter, and not ſit down our ſelves till we all be caſted at the great ſupper of the Lamb.

It was therefore an excellent deſire of S. Bernar‐d who was as likely as any to have ſuch altitudes of ſpeculation if G O D had really diſpenſed them to perſons holy, phantaſtick and religious, I pray G O D grant to me peace of ſpirit, joy in the holy Ghost compassionate others in the midſt of my mirth, to be charitable in ſimplicity, to rejoice with them that

Marias ὁ μετὰ  
δούλων τῶν  
παραπληθείας  
πίνακας, ἡδὺ τέλος  
Θεοῦ εἰς αὐτούς.

Plato in Phæd.  
Ἵς ἢ θεος τι‐  
τάρας θεῖν μέρη  
διελόμενος μετ‐  
ποίησις πεπιπτο‐  
αν ἀπόλονος

Θεοὶ τε, θεούσαι  
ἢ πλευτοὶ, με‐  
σοῦ. Ταῦτα ποιη‐  
κίνητα τιθέμενοι εἰ‐  
σι &c. ibid.

ἴηται εἰς τὸν εἰ‐  
ποιοῦσαν αὐτὸν  
τοῖς ποιηταῖς  
εἰδεῖς  
αντανταὶ τοῖς χρη‐  
ματοῖς  
μαρτυροῦσι  
μαρτυροῦσι  
εἰς τὸν εἰδεῖ‐  
σαντα.

Plato in Apol.

23.

24

that rejoice and to mourn with them that mourn, and with these I shall be content : other exaltations of devotion I leave to Apostles and Apostolick men ; the high hills are for the harts and the climbing goates, the stony rocks and the recesses of the earth for the conies. It is more heathfull and nutritive to dig the earth and to eat of her fruits than to stare upon the greatest glories of the heavens and live upon the beams of the Sun ; so unsatisfying a thing is rapture and transportation to the soul ; it often distracteth the faculties, but seldom doth advantage piety, and is full of danger in the greatest of its lustre. If ever a man be more in love with GOD by such instruments, or more indeeder to vertue, or made more severe and watchfull in his repentance, it is an excellent grace and gift of GOD, but then this is nothing but the joyes and comfort of ordinary meditation ; those extraordinary, as they have no sense in them so are not pretended to be instruments of vertue ; but are like *Jonathans* arrows shot beyond it, to signifie the danger the man is in towards whom such arrows are shot ; but if the person be made unquiet, unconstant, proud, pusillanimous, of high opinion, pertinacious and confident in uncertain judgements, or desperate, it is certain they are temptations and illusions, so that as all our dutie consists in the wayes of repentance and acquist of vertue ; so there rests all our safety, and by consequence all our solid joyes ; and this is the effect of ordinary, pious, and regular meditations.

26.

If I mistake not, there is a temptation like this under another name amongst persons whose religion hath lesse discourse and more fancie, and that is, *a familiarity with GOD* ; which indeed if it were rightly understood is an affection consequent to the illuminative way, that is, an act, or an effect of the vertue of religion and Devotion, which consists in prayers and addresses to GOD, lauds and Eucharists, and hymns, and confidence of coming to the throne of grace, upon assurance of GODS veracity and goodness infinite : so that *familiarity with GOD*, which is an affection of friendship, is the entercourse of giving and receiving blessings and graces respectively : and it is produced by a holy life, or the being in the state of grace, and is part of every mans inheritance that is a friend of GOD. But when familiarity with GOD shall be esteemed a priviledge of singular and eminent persons not communicated to all the faithfull, and is thought to be an admission to a nearer entercourse of secrecy with GOD, it is an effect of pride and a mistake in judgement concerning the very same thing which the old Divines call the unitive way, if themselves that claim it understood the terms of art, and the consequents of their own intentions.

27.

Onely I shall observe one Circumstance, that *familiarity with GOD* is nothing else but an admission to be of GODS family, the admission of a servant or a son in minority, and implieth obedience, duty, and fear on our parts ; care and providence and love on GODS part : And it is not the familiarity of sons, but the impudence of proud equals to expresse this pretended priviledge in even unmannerly and unreverent addresses and discourses : and it is a sure rule, that whatsoever heights of piety, union or familiarity any man pretends to, it is of the Devil unless the greater the pretence be, the greater also be the humility of the man. The highest flames are the most tremulous ; and so are the most holy and eminent religious persons, more full of awfulness and fear and modesty and humility ;

so that in true Divinity and right speaking there is no such thing as the unitive way of religion, save onely in the effects of duty, obedience and the expresses of the precise vertue of religion. Meditations in order to a good life let them be as exalted, as the capacitie of the person and subject will endure; up to the height of contemplation; but if contemplation comes to be a distinct thing and something besides or beyond a distinct degree of virtuous meditation, it is lost to all sense and religion and prudence. Let no man be hasty to eat of the fruits of Paradise before his time.

And now I shall not need to enumerate the blessed fruits of holy Meditation, for it is a grace that is instrumentall to all effects, to the production of all virtues and the extinction of all vices, and by consequence the inhabitation of the holy Ghost within us, is the naturall or proper emanation from the frequent exercise of this duty, onely it hath somthing particularly excellent, besides its generall influence: for meditation is that part of prayer which knits the foul to its right object, and confirms and makes actuall our intention and devotion. Meditation is the tongue of the soul and the language of our spirit; and our wandering thoughts in prayer are but the neglects of meditation, and recessions from that duty; and according as we neglect meditation, so are our prayers imperfect; meditation being the foul of prayer, and the intention of our spirit. But in all other things meditation is the instrument and conveyance; it habituates our affections to heaven, it hath permanent content, it produces constancy of purpose, despising of things below, inflamed desires of vertue, love of G O D , self denyall, humility of understanding and univeralls correction of our life and manners.

28.



## The P R A Y E R .

Holy and Eternall J E S U S whose whole life and doctrine was a perpetual sermon of holy life, a treasure of wisdome and a repository of Divine materialls for meditation, give me grace to understand, diligence and attention to consider, care to lay up, and carefulnesse to reduce to practise all those actions, discourses and pious lessons and intimations by which thou didst expressly teach, or tacitely imply, or mysteriously signifie our duty: Let my understanding become as spirituall in its imployment and purposes as it is immateriall in its nature: fill my memory as a vessell of election with remembrances and notions highly compunctive, and greatly incentive of all the parts of sanctity. Let thy holy Spirit dwell in my soul instructing my knowledge,

## THE PRAYER.

ledge, sanctifying my thoughts, guiding my affections, directing my will in the choice of vertue, that it may be the great imployment of my life to meditate in thy law to study thy preceptive will, to understand even the niceties and circumstantialls of my duty, that ignorance may neither occasion a sinne nor become a punishment: take from me all vanity of spirit, lightnesse of fancy, curiositie and impertinency of enquiry, illusions of the Devill and phantastick deceptions: let my thoughts be as my religion, plain, honest, pious, simple, prudent and charitable, of great imployment and force to the production of vertues and extermimation of vice, but suffering no transportations of sense and vanity, nothing greater then the capacities of my soul, nothing that may minister to any intemperances of spirit, but let me be wholly inebriated with love, and that love wholly spent in doing such actions as best please thee in the conditions of my infirmity and the securities of humilitie, till thou shalt please to draw the curtain and reveal thy interiour beauties in the kingdom of thy eternall glories: which grant for thy mercies sake O Holy and Eternall JESU. Amen-



Sect.



Of the death of the Holy Innocents or  
 the babes of Bethlehem, and the  
 flight of J E S U S into  
 E G Y P T .

**A**ll this while Herod waited for the return of the Wisemen that they might give directions where the childe did lye, and his sword might finde him out with a certain and direct execution. But when he saw that he was mocked of the Wisemen he was exceeding wroth. For it, now began to deserve his trouble, when his purposes which were most secret began to be contradicted and diverted with a prevention, as if they were refisted by an allseeing and Almighty Providence. He began to suspect, the hand of heaven was in it, and saw there was nothing for his purposes to be acted, unlesse he could dissolve the golden chain of predestination.

And therefore since G O D already had hindred him from the executions of a distinguishing sword, he resolved to send a sword of indiscrimination and confusion, hoping that if he killed all the babes of Bethlehem, this young kings reign also shold soon determine. *He therefore sent forth and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem and all the coasts thereof from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the Wisemen.* For this execution was in the beginning of the second yeer after CHRISTs nativity as in all probability we guesse; not at the two years end, as some suppose, because as his malice was subtil, so he intended it should be secure, and though he had been diligent in his inquiry, and was neer the time in his computation, yet he that was never sparing of the lives of others, would now to secure his Kingdom rather overact his severity for some moneths, than by doing execution but just to the tittle of his account hazard the escaping of the *Messias*.

This execution was sad, cruel and universall: no abatements made for the dire shriekings of the Mothers no tender hearted souldier was imployed, no hard hearted person was softned by the weeping eyes, and pitthy begging looks of those mothers, that wondred how it was possible any person should hurt their pretty sucklings, no connivencies there, no protections or friendships, or consideration, or indulgencies, but Herod caused that his own childe which was at nurse in the coasts of Bethlehem shoud bleed to death; which made *Augustus Cesar* to say that in Herods house it were better to be a hog then a childe: because the custome of the nation did secure a hog from Herods knife, but no religion could secure his childe. The sword being thus made sharp by Herods commission killed 14000 pretty babes, as the Greeks in their Calendar, and the Abyssines of Ethiopia do conmemorate in their offices of Liturgy. For Herod crafty and malicious, that is perfectly \* tyrant had caused all the children to be gathered together; which the credulous mothers ( supposing it had been to take account of their age and number in order to some taxing) hindred not, but unwittingly suscited themselves and their babes to be betrayed to an irremediable butchery.

Sic ait glossa or-  
 dinaria sed Ono-  
 phrius in faltis  
 ait hanc causam  
 bienni post  
 Christum natum  
 contigisse.

3.  
 Macrobius Saturnal lib. 2. cap. 4  
*\*Qualis apud Lu-*

*cianum describi-*  
*tur tyranicus.*  
 οὐδεὶς διαβάλλει, οὐδὲ τυπωμένος  
 εἰσιτων, οὐ τε  
 παρθενεῖσθαι  
 εἰσιτων, οὐ τε  
 εργάζεσθαι, οὐ  
 βεβηπεῖσθαι, οὐ  
 μετειστρέψεισθαι  
 παρθενεῖσθαι, οὐ  
 εἰσιτεῖσθαι, οὐ  
 ειπεῖσθαι, οὐ  
 χρηματίσεισθαι  
 παρθενεῖσθαι, οὐ

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying, *Lamentation and weeping and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children and would not be comforted.* All the synonyms of sadness were little enough to expresse this great weeping when 14000 mothers in one day saw their pretty babes pouring forth their blood into that bosom whence not long before they had sucked milk, and instead of those pretty smiles which use to entertain the fancy and dear affections of their mothers, nothing but affrighting shrieks and then ghastly looks; the mourning was great, like the mourning in the valley of Hinnom, and there was no Comforter; their sorrow was too big to be cured till it should lie down alone and rest with its own weariness.

5. But the malice of Herod went also into the hill country, and hearing that of John the son of Zechariy, great things were spoken, by which he was designed to a great ministry about this young Prince, he attempted in him also to rescind the Prophecies, and sent a messenger of death towards him; but the Mothers care had been early with him, and sent him into desert places, where he continued till the time appointed of his manifestation unto Israel. But as the children of Bethlehem died in the place of CHRIST, so did the Father of the Baptist dye for his childe. For Herod

\* Sic Chrysost. & Petrus Mart. tyris episc. Alex- andr. Niceph. & Cedrenus.  
\* Sic aiunt ori- gen tract 23 in evang. Matth.  
S. Basil. homil.  
de humana Christi generatione. Nyssen in natali Christi. Cyrill. adv. Anthropophoritas.

6.  
a. In scorpiaco.  
cap. 8.

Terullian <sup>a</sup> reports that the blood of Zechariy had so besmeared the stones of the pavement which was the altar on which the good old Priest was sacrificed, that no act or industry could wash the tincture out; the dye and guilt being both indeleble; as if, because G O D did intend to exact of that nation all the blood of righteous persons from Abel to Zechariy who was the last of the Martyrs of the synagogue, he would leave a character of their guilt in their eyes to upbraid their irreligion, cruelty and infidelity. But the first great instance of the Divine vengeance for these executions was upon Herod; who in very few years after, was smitten of G O D with so many plagues and tortures, that himself alone seemed like an hospitall of the Incurabili: For he was tormented with a soft slow fire, like that of burning iron: or the cinders of Yew, in his body: in his bowels with intolerable Colicks and ulcers, in his naturall parts with worms, in his feet with gout, in his nerves with convulsions, difficulty of breathing; and out of divers parts of his body issued out so impure and ulcerous a stream, that the loathsomest pain and indignation made him once to snatch a knife with purpose to have killed himself, but that he was prevented by a Nephew of his, that stood there in his attendance.

7. But as the flesh of beasts grows callous by stripes, and the pressures of the yoke: so did the heart of Herod, by the loads of Divine vengeance. G O D began his hell here, and the pains of hell never made any man leffe

lesse impious; for Herod perceiving that he must now die <sup>\*</sup> first put to <sup>\* δειναι γε η</sup> death his son Antipater under pretence that he would have poisoned him; <sup>νοισις αποτροπεια</sup> and that the last scene of his life might for pure malice and exalted spight <sup>νοισιν ηγελθε</sup> out-do all the rest, because he believed the Jewish nation would rejoice at his death, he assembled all the nobles of the people and put them in prison, giving in charge to his sister Salome, that when he was expiring his last, all the nobility should be slain, that his death might be lamented with a perfect and univerfall sorrow.

But GOD that brings to nought the counsels of wicked Princes turned the designe against the intendment of Herod; for when he was dead and could not call his sister to account for disobeying his most bloody and unrighteous commands, she released all the imprisoned and despairing Gentlemen, and made the day of her Brothers death a perfect Jubilee, a day of joy, such as was that when the nation was delivered from the violence of Haman in the dayes of Purim.

And all this while GOD had provided a sanctuary for the holy Childe JESUS. For GOD seeing the secret purposes of blood which Herod had, sent his Angel who appeared to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young childe and his Mother and fly into Egypt, and be thou there untill I bring thee word, for Herod will seek the young childe to destroy him; then he arose and took the young childe and his Mother by night and departed into Egypt; And they made their first abode in Hermpolis in the countrey of Thebais whither when they first arrived, the childe JESUS being by designe or providence carried into a Temple, all the statues of the Idol gods fell down, like Dagon at the presence of the Ark, and suffered their timely and just dissolution and dishonour. According to the prophecy of Isaiah: Behold the Lord shall come into Egypt and the Idols of Egypt shall be moved at his presence. And in the life of the Prophet Jeremy, written by Epiphanius it is reported, "that he told the Egyptian Priests that then their Idols should be broken in pieces, when a holy Virgin with her childe should enter into their countrey, which prophecy possibly might be the cause that the Egyptians did, beside their vanities, worship also an infant in a manger, and a Virgin in her bed.

From Hermpolis to Matura went these holy Pilgrims in pursuance of their safety and provisions, where it was reported they dwelt in a garden of balsame, till Joseph being at the end of seven yeers (as it is commonly believed) ascertained by an Angel of the death of Herod and commanded to return to the land of Israel he was obedient to the heavenly vision, and returned. But hearing that Archelaus did reign in the place of his Father, and knowing that cruelty and the ambition of Herod was hereditary or intayld upon Archelaus, being also warned to turn aside into the parts of Galilee, which was of a distinct jurisdiction governed indeed by one of Herods sons, but not by Archelaus, thither he diverted, and there that holy family remained in the city of Nazareth, whence the holy childe had the appellative of a Nazarene.

8.

9.

Math. 2. 13.

Euseb. de demonstr. c. 20.  
S. Athanas. lib. de incarnat verbi. Palladius in vita S. Apollon. Isai. 19. 1.

Dorotheus in synopfi. Pallad. in vita Apollon.

10.



## Ad. Sect. 6.

### Considerations upon the death of the Innocents, and the flight of holy JESUS into EGYPT.

**H**erod having called the wise men, and received information of their designe, and the Circumstances of the childe pretended religion too, and desired them to bring him word, when they had found the babe, that he might come and worship him; meaning to make a sacrifice of him, to whom he should pay his adoration: and instead of investing the young Prince with a Royall purple he would have stained his swadling bands with his blood. It is ever dangerous when a wicked Prince pretends religion, his designe is then fowlest by how much it needs to put on a fairer outside: but it was an early policy in the world, and it concerned mens interests to seem religious, when they thought that to be so, was an abatement of great designes. When Jezebel desighned the robbing and destroying Naboth, she sent to the Elders to proclaim a fast; for the exterrnall and visible remonstrances of religion leave in the spirits of men a great reputation of the seeming person, and therefore they will not rush into a furious sentence against his actions, at least not judge them with prejudice against the man towards whom they are so fairly prepared, but do some violence to their own understanding, and either disbelieve their own reason, or excuse the fact, or think it but an error, or a lesse crime, or the incidencies of humanity, or however, are so long in decreeing against him, whom they think to be religious, that the rumour is abated, or the stream of indignation is diverted by other laborious arts intervening before our zeale is kindled, and so the person is unjudged or at least the designe secured.

But in this humane policy was exceedingly infatuated, and though Herod had trusted his designe to no keeper but himself, and had pretended fair, having religion for the word, and called the wise men privately, and intrusted them with no imployment but a civill request, an account of their successe of the journey, which they had no reason or desire to conceal; yet his heart was opened to the eye of heaven, and the sun was not more visible then his dark purpose was to GOD and it succeeded accordingly; the childe was sent away, the wisemen warned not to return, Herod was mocked and enraged; and so his craft became foolish and vain; and so are all counsells intended against GOD, or any thing of which he himself hath undertaken the protection. For although we understand not the reasons of security, because we see not that

that admirable concentring of infinite things in the Divine Providence, whereby God brings his purposes to act by wayes unlookt for, and sometimes contradictory; yet the publike and perpetuall experience of the wold hath given continuall demonstrations, that all evill counsells have come to nought, that the succeeding of an impious design is no argument that the man is prosperous; that the curse is then surest, when his fortune spreads the largest; that the contradiction and impossibilities of deliverance to pious persons are but an opportunity and engagement for GOD to do wonders, and to gloriſe his power and to exalt his mercy by the instances of miraculous or extraordinary events; and as the afflictions happening to good men are alleviated by the support of Gods good Spirit; and enduring them here are but conſignations to an honourable amends hereafter; so the ſucceeding proſperities of fortunate impiety, when they meet with punishment in the next, or in the third age, or in the deletion of a people five ages after, are the greatest arguments of Gods proviſe, who keeps wrath in store, and forgets not to do judgement for all them that are oppreſſed with wrong; It was laid up with God, and was perpetually in his eye, being the matter of a lasting durable and unremitting anger.

But God had care of the holy childe; he ſent his Angel to warn *Joseph* with the babe and his Mother to flye into *Egypt*. *Joseph* and *Mary* iſtantly arises, and without enquiry how they ſhall live there, or when they ſhall return, or how be ſecur d, or what accommodations they ſhall have in their Journey, at the ſame houe of the night begin the pilgrimage with the cheerfulness of obedience, and the ſecurities of faith, and the confidence of hope, and the joyes of love, knowing themſelves to be recompenc'd for all the trouble they could endure, that they were instruments of the ſafety of the holy JESUS, that they then were ſerving God, that they were encircled with the ſecurities of the divine proviſe, and in these diſpoſitions all places were alike; for every region was a Paradise where they were in company with J E S U S. And indeed that man wants many degrees of faith and prudence who is follicitous for the ſupport of his neceſſities, when he is doing the commandment of God. If he commands thee to offer a ſacrifice, himſelf will provide a Lambe, or enable thee to finde one; and he would remove thee into a ſtate of separation, where thy body needs no ſupplies of provision, if he meant thou ſhouldſt ſerve him without proviſions; he will certainly \* take away thy need, or ſatiſie it, he will feed thee himſelf as he did the Israelites, or take away thy hunger as he did to *Moses*, or ſend ravens to feed thee as he did to *Elias*, or make charitable people minister to thee as the widow to *Elijah*, or give thee his own portion as he maintained the Levites, or make thine enemys to pity thee as the Aſyrians did the captiue Jewes; For whatſoever the world hath, and whatſoever can be conveyed by wonder, or by providence, all that is thy ſecurity for proviſions, ſo long as thou doeft the work of God; and remember that the assurance of blessing, and health, and ſalvation is not made by doing what we liſt, or being where we deſire, but by doing Gods will, and being in the place of his appointment; we may be ſafe in Egypt, if we be there in obedieſce to God, and wee may perish among the babes of Bethlehem, if we be there by our owne election.

*Joseph* and *Mary* did not argue againſt the Angels message; because they had

— τες δε ΙΧνι  
τσαρ πιλε, &  
πιλε παντει  
ΙΧνι δ' θεας.  
Ευριπ.

Heb. 13. 5, 6.

a confidence of their charge, who with the breath of his mouth could have destroyed Herod, though he had been abettet with all the legions marching under the Roman Eagles ; but they, like the two Cherubims about the propitiatory, took the childe between them, and fled, giving way to the fury of perfecution, which possibly when the materialls are withdrawn might expire, and dye like fire, which else would rage for ever. J E S U S fled, undertook a sad journey, in which the roughnesse of the wayes, his own tenderesse, the youth of his Mother, the old age of his supposed Father, the smallnesse of their viaticum and accommodation for their voyage, the no kindred they were to go to, hopelesse of comforts and exterior supplies were so many circumfiances of poverty, and lesser strokes of the perfecution ; things that himself did choose to remonstrate the verity of his nature, the infirmity of his person, the humility of his spirit, the austerity of his undertaking, the burden of his charge, and by which he did teach us the same vertues he then expressed, and also confign'd this permission to all his Disciples in future ages, that they also may flye from their persecutors, when the case is so, that their work is not done ; that is, they may glorifie God with their lives more then with their death ; and of this they are ascertained by the arguments of prudent account ; for sometimes we are called to glorifie God by dying, and the interest of the Church, and the faith of many may be concerned in it ; then we must abide by it. In other cases it is true that Demosthenes said in Apology for his own escaping from a lost field, *A man that runs away may fight again.* And S. Paul made use of a guard of Souldiers to rescue him from the treachery of the Jewish Rulers, and of a basket to escape from the Inquisition of the Governor of Damascus ; and the Primitive Christians, of Grotts and subterraneous retirements, and S. Athanasius of a faire Ladies house, and others of deserts and graves, as knowing it was no shame to flye, when their Master himself had fled, that his time and his work might be fulfilled, and when it was, he then laid his life down.

5.

It is hard to set down particular rules that may indefinitely guide all persons in the stating of their own case ; because all things that depend upon circumfiances are alterable unto infinite. But as GODS glory and the good of the Church are the great considerations to be carried before us all the way, and in proportions to them we are to determine and judge our Questions : so also our infirmities are allowable in the scrutiny ; for I doubt not but GOD intended it a mercy and a compliancy with humane weaknesse, when he gave us this permission, as well as it was a designe to secure the opportunities of his service, and the consummation of his owne work by us. And since our feares and the incommodities of flight, and the sadnesse of exile, and the insecurities and inconveniences of a strange and new abode are part of the perfecution ; provided that Gods glory be not certainly and apparently neglected, nor the Church evidently scandalized by our flight, all interpretations of the question in favour of our selves, and the declension of that part which may tempt us to apostacie, or hazard our confidence, and the choosing the lesser part of the perfecution is not against the rule of faith, and always hath in it lesse glory, but oftentimes more security.

6.

But thus far Herods ambition transported him even to resolutions of murder of the highest person, the most glorious and the most innocent upon earth ;

Earth ; and it represents that passion to be the most troublesome and vexatious thing that can afflict the sons of men. *Virtue* hath not half so much trouble in it, it sleeps quietly without startings and affrighting fancies it looks cheerfully, smiles with much serenity, and though it laughs not often, yet it is ever delightfull in the apprehensions of some faculty : it fears no man, nor nothing, nor is it discomposed ; and hath no concernsments in the great alterations of the World ; and entertains death like a Friend , and reckons the issues of it, as the greatest of its hopes , but *ambition* is full of distractions, it teems with stratagems, as *Rebecca* with strugling twinnes, and is swelled with expectation as with a tympany, and sleepes sometimes as the wind in a storne, still and quiet for a minute, that it may burst out into an impetuous blast till the chordage of his heartstrings crack ; feares when none is nigh, and prevents things which never had intention, and falls under the inevitability of such accidents, which either could not be foreseen or not prevented : it is an infinite labour to make a Mans self miserable, and the utmost acquist is so goodly a purchase, that he makes *his* dayes full of sorrow to enjoy the troubles of a three yeers reign ; for *Herod* lived but three yeeres or five at the most after the flight of J E S U S into Egypt. And therefore there is no greater unreasonableesse in the world then in the designes of ambition ; for it makes the present certainly miserable, unsatisfied, troublesome and discontent ; for the uncertain acquist of an honour, which nothing can secure ; and besides a thousand possibilities of miscarrying, it relies upon no greater certainty then our life, and when we are dead all the world sees who was the fool. But it is a strange caitiveness and basenesse of disposition of men so furiously and unsatiably to run after perishing and uncertain interests in defiance of all the reason and religion of the world, and yet to have no appetite to such excellencies which satisfie reason and content the spirit, and create great hopes and ennable our expectation , and are advantages to communities of men and publike societies, and which all wise men teach and all religion commands.

And it is not amisse to observe how *Herod* vexed himselfe extremely upon a mistake ; the childe JESUS was born a King, but it was a King of all the world not confined within the limits of a province, like the weaker beauties of a torch to shine in one room, but like the sun, his Empire was over all the world ; and if *Herod* would have become but his tributary and paid him the acknowledgments of his Lord he should have had better conditions then under *Cesar*, and yet have been as absolute in his own Jewry as he was before ; his kingdom was not of this World, and he that gives heavenly kingdoms to all his servants would not have stooped to have taken up *Herods* petry Coronet ; but as it is a very vanity which ambition seeks, so it is a shadow that disturbs and discomposes al its motions and apprehensions.

And the same mistake caused calamities to descend upon the Church : for some of the persecutions commenced upon pretence Christianity was an Enemy to goverment : But the pretence was infinitely unreasonable, and therefore had the fate of senselesse allegations, it disbanded presently ; for no external accident did so incorporate the excellency of CHRISTS religion into the hearts of men, as the innocence of the men, their inoffensive deportment, the modesty of their designes, their great humility and obedience , a life expressly in enmity and contestation against secular ambition ; and it is to be feared that the mingling humane interests with religion

7.  
Dubia pro certis fo-  
lent timere Reges,  
Seneca Oedip.

Hoc si Herodes impie  
Cnifum venire quid  
times ?  
Non auferet terrestria  
Qui regna daz coelestia  
Qui secpia duro fa-  
vus imperio regit  
Time: ridentes, marus  
so authorem credit,  
Sense: ubi super  
8.

religion will deface the image C H R I S T hath stamped upon it; certain it is, the mettall is much abated by so impure alloy, while the Christian Prince serves his end of ambition and bears arms upon his neighbours countrey for the service of religion, making C H R I S T S kingdom to invade Herods rights: and in the state Ecclesiasticall secular interests have so deep a portion, that there are snares laid to tempt a persecution, and men are invited to Sacrilege while the revenues of a Church are a fair fortune for a Prince; I make no scruple to finde fault with Painters that picture the poor saints with rich garments; for though they deserved better, yet they had but poor ones: and some have been tempted to cheat the Saint, not out of ill will to his Sanctity, but love to his shrine, and to the Beauty of the clothes, with which some imprudent persons have of old time dressed their images: so it is in the fate of the Church, persecution, and the robes of C H R I S T were her portion, and her clothing, and when she is dressed up in gawdy fortunes it is no more then she deserves, but yet sometimes it is occasion that the Devil cheats her of her holiness, and the men of the world sacrilegiously cheat her of her riches: and then when G O D hath reduced her to that poverty he first promised and intended to her, the persecution ceases, and sanctity returns, and G O D curses the sacrifice, and stirs up mens mindes to religious Donatives: and all is well till she growes rich again. And if it be dangerous in any man to be rich, and discomposes his steps in his journey to Eternity, it is not then so proportionable to the analogy of C H R I S T S Poverty, and the inheritance of the Church to be sedulous in acquiring great temporalties, and putting Princes in jealousie and States into care for securities, lest all the Temporall shoule run into Ecclesiasticall possession.

Hierocl.

9.

Vide quæ dixit Amianus Marcellus, lib. 17. & epitolas S. Gregorii in l. 4. ep. 32. 34. 36. & l. 6 ep. 30. 1. 7. indict. 3. ep. 30. & concil. Afric. anum quod monitus est Cælestinus Papa, ne famositas typhum seculi in ecclesia, quæ in eam tempicitat, & hunc inicitat, eam, Deum videre cupientibus preferat, videamus inducere.

If the Church have by the active piety of a credulous, a pious and lese observant age been endowed with great possessions, she hath rules enough, and poor enough, and necessities enough to dispense what she hath, with advantages to religion: but then all she gets by it is the trouble of an unthankfull, a suspected and unsatisfying dispensation; and the Church is made by evil persons a Scene of ambition and stratagem, and to get a Germane Bishoprick is to be a Prince, and to defend with niceenesse and suites of Law every custom or lesser rite even to the breach of charity, and the scandall of religion is called a duty; and every tingle person is bound to forgive injuries, and to quit his right rather then his Charity, but if it is not a duty in the Church also, in them whose life shoule be excellent to the degree of example. I would fain know, if there be not greater care taken to secure the Ecclesiasticall revenue, then the publike charity and the honour of religion in the strict piety of the Clergy: for as the not ingaging in suits may occasion bold people to wrong the Church, so the necessity of engaging is occasion of loosing charity and of great scandall. I finde not fault with a free revenue of the Church; it is in some fence necessary to Government, and to preserve the Consequents of their authority: but I represent that such things are occasion of much mischief to the Church; and lese holiness, and in all cases, respect should be had to the design of Christianity, to the Prophecies of JESUS, to the promised lot of the Church, to the dangers of riches, to the excellencies and advantages, and rewards of poverty; and if the Church have enough to perform all her duties and obligations cheerfully, let her of all societies be soonest content. If she have plenty

plenty let her use it temperately and charitably, if she have not, let her not be querulous and troublesome; but however, it would be thought upon, that though in judging the quantum of the Churches portion the World thinks every thing too much; yet we must be careful we do not judge every thing too little; and if our fortune be safe between envy and contempt, it is much mercy. If it be despicable, it is safe for Ecclesiasticks, though it may be accidentally inconvenient, or lesse profitable to others; but if it be great, publick experience hath made remonstrance, that it mingles with the World, and durties those fingers which are instrumental in consecration, and the more solemn rites of Christianity.

JESUS fled from the persecution; as he did not stand it out, so he did not stand out against it; he was careful to transmit no precedent, or encouragement of resisting tyrannous Princes, when they offer violence to Religion, and our lives: he would not stand disputing for priviledges, nor calling in Auxiliaries from the LORD of Hosts, who could have spared him many Legions of Angels, every single spirit being able to have defeated all Herods power; but he knew it was a hard lesson to learn patience, and all the excuses in the World would be sought out to discourage such a Doctrine by which we are taught to dye, or lose all we have, or suffer inconveniences at the will of a Tyrant; we need no authentick examples, much lesse Doctrines to invite Men to war, from which we see Christian Princes cannot be restrained with the engagements and peaceful Theoremes of an excellent and a holy Religion, nor Subjects kept from rebelling by the interests of all Religions in the World, nor by the necessities and reasonableness of obedience, nor the indeerments of all publick Societies of Men; one word, or an intimation from CHRIST would have founded an alarm, and put us into postures of defence, when all CHRISTS excellent Sermons, and rare exemplar actions cannot tye our hands. But it is strange now, that of all Men in the World Christians should be such fighting people, or that Christian Subjects should lift up a thought against a Christian Prince; when they had no intimation of encouragement from their Master, but many from him to endear obedience and humility, and patience, and charity, and these four make up the whole analogy, and represent the chief designe and meaning of Christianity in its moral constitution.

But J E S U S , when himself was safe could also have secured the poor Babes of Bethlehem, with thousands of diversions and avocations of Herod's purposes, or by discovering his own escape in some safe manner not unknown to the Divine Wisdom; but yet it did not so please GOD. He is Lord of his Creatures, and hath absolute dominion over our lives, and he had an end of glory to serve upon these Babes, and an end of justice upon Herod; and to the children he made such compensation, that they had no reason to complain that they were so soon made stars, when they shined in their little Orbs and participations of Eternity; for so the sense of the Church hath been, that they having died the death of Martyrs, though incapable of making the choice, GOD supplied the effects of their will, by his own entertainment of the thing; that as the misery and their death, so also their glorification might have the same Authour in the same manner of causality; even by a peremptory and unconditioned determination in these particulars. This sense is pious and nothing unreasonable, considering that all circumstances of the thing make the case particular; but the immature

104.

11.

*Etas nec...  
habilis a  
pugnam idonea  
exitit ad c. ro-  
manum; & ut ap-  
pareret inno-  
centes esse qui  
propter Chri-  
stum necantur,  
infantia inno-  
cens occia est.  
S. Cyprian.*

immature death of other infants is a sadder story ; for though I have no warrant or thought that it is ill with them after death ; and in what manner or degree of well-being it is, there is no revelation ; yet I am not of opinion, that the securing of so low a condition as theirs in all reason is like to be, will make recompence, or is an equal blessing with the possibilities of such an eternity, as is proposed to them who in the use of reason and a holy life glorifie GOD with a free obedience ; and if it were otherwise , it were no blessing to live till the use of reason ; and Fools and Babes were in the best, becaufe in the securest condition, and certain expectation of equal glories.

12.

As soon as Herod was dead (for the Divine Vengeance waited his own time for his arrest) the Angel presently brought Joseph word ; the holy Family was full of content and indifference, not solicitous for return, not distrustful of the Divine Providence, full of poverty and sanctity, and content, waiting GODS time, at the return of which G O D delai'd not to recall them from exile ; *out of Egypt he called his Son* and directed Josephs fear and discourse that he should divert to a place in the jurisdiction of Philip, where, the Heir of Herods cruelty, Archelaus, had nothing to do ; and this very Series of providence and care GOD expresses to all his sons by adoption ; and will determine the time and set bounds to every Persecution, and punish the instruments, and ease our pains, and refresh our sorrows, and give quietnesse to our fears, and deliverance from our troubles, and sanctifie it all, and give a Crown at last, and all in his good time, if we wait the coming of the Angel, and in the mean time do our duty with care, and sustain our temporals with indifference ; and in all our troubles and displeasing accidents we may call to minde , that GOD by his holy and most reasonable Providence hath so ordered it ; that the spiritual advantages we may receive from the holy use of such incommodities, are of great recompence and interest, and that in such accidents the holy JESUS having gone before us in precedent, does go along with us by love and imitation, and that makes the present condition infinitely more eligible , then the greatest splendour of secular fortune.

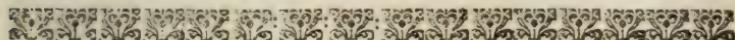


## The P R A Y E R .

**O** Blessed and eternal GOD, who didst suffer thy holy Son to flye from the violence of an enraged Prince, and didst choose to defend him in the wayes of his infirmity by biding himself, and a voluntary exile ; be thou a defence to all thy faithful people, when ever persecution arises against them, send them the ministry of Angels to direct them into wayes of security, and let thy holy Spirit guide them in the paths of sanctity ; and let thy providence continue in custody over their persons till the times of refreshment, and the day of redemption shall return : Give O LORD to thy whole Church sanctity and zeal, and the confidences of a holy faith, boldnesse of confession, humility, content, and resignation of spirit, generous contempt of the World, and unmingleed desires of thy glory , and the edification of thy Elect, that no secular interests distract her duty, or discompose her chari-

ty,

ty, or depress her hopes, or in any unequal degree posseſſe her affections and pollute her ſpirit, but preserve her from the ſnares of the World, and the Devil, from the rapine and greedy deſires of sacrilegious perſons, and in all conditions whether of affluence or want ſhe may ſtill promote the intereſts of Religion: that when plen- teouſneſſe is within her paſcages, and peace in her walls, that condition may then be beſt for her; and when ſhe is made as naked as JESUS to his paſſion, then poverty may be beſt for her, that in all eſtates ſhe may glorifie thee, and in all ac- cidents and changes thou mayeft ſanctifie and bleſſe her, and at laſt bring her to the eternal riches and abundances of glory, where no perſecution ſhall diſturb her reſt. Grant this for sweet JESUS ſake, who ſuffered exile and hard journeys and all the inconveniences of a friendleſſe perſon, in a ſtrange Province; to whom with thee and the eternal Spiriſt be glory for ever, and bleſſing in all generations of the World and for ever and ever. Amen.



## Sect. 7.

### *Of the younger yeers of JESUS, and his disputation with the Doctors in the Temple.*

Rom the return of this holy Family to Judea, and their habitati-  
on in Nazareth, till the blesſed childe JESUS was twelve yeers  
of age, we have nothing transmitted to us out of any authen-  
tick Record; but that they went to Jerusalem every yeer at the  
Feaſt of the Paſſover. And when JESUS was twelve yeers  
old, and was in the Holy City attending upon the Paſchal Rites, and ſolemn Sacrifices of the Law, his Parents having fulfill'd their dayes of feaſtivity, went homeward, ſuppoſing the Childe had been in the Caravan a-  
mong his friends, and ſo they erred for the ſpace of a whole dayes journey; and when they fought him and found him not, they returned to Jerusalem full of fears and ſorrow.

No fancy can imagine the doubts, the apprehenſions, the poſſibilities of miſchief, and the tremblings of heart which the holy Virgin Mother ſelt thronging about her fancy and understanding; but ſuch a perſon who hath been tempted to the danger of a violent fear and tranſportation, by apprehenſion of the loſſe of a hope greater then a Miracle; her diſcourses with her ſelf could have nothing of diſtrift, but much of ſadneſſe and wonder, and the indetermination of her thoughts was a trouble, great as the paſſion of her love; poſſibly an Angel might have carried him ſhe knew not whither; or it may be the ſon of Herod had gotten the prey, which his cruel Father miſſ'd; or he was ſick, or detained out of curioſity and wonder, or any thing but what was right, and by this time ſhe was come to Jerusalem, and

I.

2.

and having spent three dayes in her sad and holy pursuit of her lost jewel despairing of the prosperous event of any humane diligence, as in all other cases she had accustomed, she made her addresse to GOD, and entring into the Temple to pray ; GOD, that knew her desires, prevented her with the blessings of goodnesse, and there her sorrow was changed into joy and wonder ; for there she found her holy Son sitting in the midst of the Doctors both hearing them and asking them questions.

3. And when they saw him they were amazed, and so were all that heard him, at his understanding and answers ; beyond his education, beyond his experience, beyond his yeers, and even beyond the comon spirits of the best Men, discoursing up to the height of a Prophet, with the cleernesse of an Angel, and the infallibility of inspiration ; for here it was verified in the highest and most literal signification, that out of the mouthes of babes GOD had ordain'd strength ; but this was the strength of argument, and science of the highest mysteries of Religion and secret Philosophy.

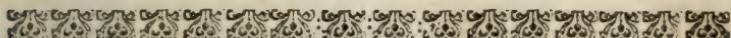
4. Glad were the Parents of the Childe to finde him illustrated with a miracle, concerning which when he had given them such an account, which they understood not, but yet Mary laid up in her heart, as that this was part of his imployment and his Fathers busynesse, he returned with them to Nazareth, and was subject to his Parents ; where he lived in all holinesse and humility, shewing great signes of wisdom, indeering himself to all that beheld his conversation, did nothing lesse then might become the great expectation which his miraculous birth had created of him ; for he increased in wisdom and stature, and favour with GOD and Man, still growing in proportion to his great beginnings to a miraculous excellency of grace, sweetnesse of demeanour, and excellency of understanding.

5. They that love to serve GOD in hard questions, use to dispute whether CHRIST did truly, or in appearance onely increase in wisdom. For being personally united to the Word, and being the eternal wisdom of the Father, it seem'd to them, that a plenitude of wisdom was as natural to the whole Person, as to the Divine Nature. But others, fixing their belief upon the words of the story which equally affirms CHRIST, as properly to have increased in favour with GOD, as with Man, in wisdom, as in stature, they apprehend no inconvenience in affirming it to belong to the verity of Humane Nature to have degrees of understanding as well as of other perfections : and although the humanity of CHRIST made up the same person with the Divinity, yet they think the Divinity still to be free, even in those communications which were imparted to his inferiour Nature, and the Godhead might as well suspend the emanation of all the treasures of Wisdom upon the Humanity for a time, as he did the Beatifical Vision, which most certainly was not imparted in the interval of his sad and dolorous Passion ; but whether it were truly or in appearance, in habit or in exercise of act, by increase of notion or experience, it is certain the promotions of the holy Childe were great, admirable, and as full of wonder as of sanctity, and sufficient to entertain the hopes and expectations of Israel with preparations and dispositions, as to satisfie their wonder for the present, so to accept him at the time of his publication, they having no reason to be scandalized at the smallnesse, improbability, and indifferency of his first beginnings.

6. But the holy Childe had also an imployment, which he undertook in obedience

obedience to his supposed Father, for exercise and example of humility, and for the support of that holy Family which was dear in the eyes of GOD, but not very splendid by the opulence of a free and indulgent fortune. He wrought in the trade of a Carpenter, and when Joseph died, which hapned before the manifestation of JESUS unto Israel, he wrought alone, and was no more called the Carpenters son, but the Carpenter himself. *Is not this Carpenter, the son of Mary?* said his offended Countrey men. And in this condition the blessed JESUS did abide till he was thirty yeers old, for he that came to fulfil the Law, would not suffer one tittle of it to passe unaccomplished; for by the Law of the Nation, and custome of the Religion, no Priest was to officiate, or Prophet was to preach before he was thirty years of age.

Mark 6.3.



### Ad. Sect. 7.

### *Considerations of the Disputation of JESUS with the Doctors in the Temple.*

**I**oseph and Mary being returned unto Nazareth were sedulous to enjoy the priviledges of their Countrey, the opportunities of Religion, the publick addresse to GOD, in the rites of festivals, and solemnities of the Temple; they had been long grieved with the impurities and Idol rites, which they with sorrow had observed to be done in Egypt; and being deprived of the blessings of those holy societies and imployments, they used to enjoy in Palestine, at their return came to the offices of their Religion with appetites of fire, and keen as the evening Wolf; and all the joyes, which they should have received in respersian and distinct emanations, if they had kept their Anniversaries at Jerusalem, all that united they received in the duplication of their joyes at their return, and in the fulfilling themselves with the refaction and holy viands of Religion. For so GOD uses to satisfie the longings of holy people, when a Persecution ha's shut up the beautiful gates of the Temple, or denied to them opportunities of accessse, although G O D hears the prayers they make with their windows toward Jerusalem, with their hearts opened with desires of the publick communions, and sends them a Prophet with a private meal, as Abakkuk came to Daniel, yet he fits their hearts when the yeer of Jubilee returns, and the people sing, *In convertendo*, the song of joy for their redemption; for as of all sorrows the deprivations and eclipses of Religion are the saddest, and of the worst and most inconvenient consequence; so in proportion are the joyes of spiritual plenty and religious returns; the communion of Saints being like the Primitive Corban, a repositry to feed all the needs of the Church, or like a Taper joyn'd to a Terch, it self is kindled and increases the others flame.

11.

They faild not to go to Jerusalem; for all those holy prayers and ravishments

21.

ravishments of love , those excellent meditations and entercourses with GOD, their private readings and discourses were but entertainments and satisfaction of their necessities ; they lived with them during their retirements ; but it was a feast when they went to *Jerusalem*, and the freer and more indulgent reflection of the Spirir ; for in publick solemnities GOD opens his treasures , and pours out of his grace more abundantly ; private Devotions, and secret offices of Religion , are like refreshing of a Garden with the distilling and petty drops of a Waterpot ; but addresses to the Temple, and serving GOD in the publick communion of Saints is like rain from Heaven ; where the offices are described by a publick spirit, heightened by the greater portions of assistance, and receive advantages by the adunations and symbols of Charity, and increment by their distinct title to promises appropriate even to their assembling, and mutual support, by the piety of example, by the communication of counsels, by the awfulness of publick observation , and the engagements of holy customes. For Religion is a publick virtue , it is the ligature of souls and the great instrument of the conservation of bodies Politick, and is united in a common object, the GOD of all the World, and is manag'd by publick ministeries, by Sacrifice, Adoration, and Prayer, in which with variety of circumstances indeed, but with infinite consent and union of designe, all the sons of *Adam* are taught to worship GOD ; and it is a publication of GODS honour , its very purpose being to declare to all the World , how great things GOD hath done for us, whether in publick Donatives, or private Missives ; so that the very designe, temper and constitution of Religion is to be a publick addresse to GOD ; and although GOD is present in Closets, and there also distils his blessings in small rain, yet to the societies of Religion and publication of worship , as we are invited by the great blessings and advantages of Communion , so also we are in some proportions more straitly limited by the analogy and exigence of the duty. It is a Persecution when we are forced from publick worshippings ; no Man can hinder our private addresses to GOD , every Man can build a Chappel in his brest, and himself be the Priest, and his heart the Sacrifice , and every foot of glebe he treads on be the Altar, and this no Tyrant can prevent. If then there can be Persecution in the offices of Religion , it is the prohibition of publick profession and Communions, and therefore he that denies to himself the opportunities of publick rites and conventions is his own Persecutour.

**3.** But when J E S U S was twelve years old, and his Parents had finished their offices, and return'd filled with the pleasures of Religion , they mis'd the Childe, and sought him amongst their kinred, but there they found him not ; for whoever seeks JESUS must seek him in the offices of Religion, in the Temple , not amongst the engagements and pursuit of worldly interests ; *I forgat also mine own Fathers house*, said David, the Father of this holy Childe, and so must we, when we run in an enquiry after the son of *David* ; but our relinquishing must not be a dereliction of duty , but of engagement ; our affections toward kinred must alwayes be with charity, and according to the endearments of our relation, but without immersion , and such adherencies , that either contradict or lessen our duty towards GOD.

**4.** It was a sad effect of their pious journey to lose the joy of their Family and the hopes of all the World; but it often happens that after spiritual employments G O D seems to absent himself, and withdraw the sensible

sible effects of his presence, that we may seek him with the same diligence and care and holy fears, the hoiy Virgin Mother sought the blessed JESUS. And it is a designe of great mercy in GOD to take off the light from the eyes of a holy person, that he may not be abused with complacencies and too confident opinions and reflections upon his fair performances. For we usually judge of the well or ill of our devotions, and services, by what we feel; and we think GOD rewards every thing in the present, and by proportion to our own expectations; and if we feel a present rejoicing of Spirit, all is well with us, the smoak of the Sacrifice ascended right in a holy Cloud; but if we feel nothing of comfort, then we count it a prodigy and ominous, and we suspect our selves (and most commonly we have reason:) such irradiations of cheerfulness are always welcome, but it is not always anger that takes them away; the Cloud removed from before the camp of Israel, and stood before the host of *Pharaoh*, but this was a designe of ruine to the Egyptians, and of security to Israel; and if those bright Angels that go with us to direct our journeys remove out of our sight and stand behinde us, it is not always an argument that the anger of the L O R D is gone out against us; but such decaies of sense and clouds of spirit are excellent conservatours of humility, and restrain those intemperances and vainer thoughts which we are prompted to in the gayety of our spirits.

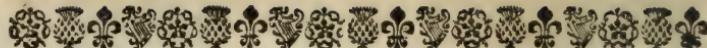
But we often give GOD cause to remove and for a while to absent himself, and his doing of it sometimes upon the just provocations of our demerits, makes us at other times with good reason to suspect our selves even in our best actions. But sometimes we are vain, or remisse, or pride invades us in the darknesse and incuriositesse of our spirits, and we have a secret sin which GOD would have us to enquire after; and when we suspect every thing, and condemn our selves with strictest and most angry sentence, then it may be, GOD will with a ray of light break through the cloud, if not, it is nothing the worse for us; for although the visible remonstrance and face of things in all the absences and withdrawings of J E S U S be the same, yet if a sin be the cause of it, the withdrawing is a taking away his favour and his love; but if GOD does it to secure thy piety, and to enflame thy desires, or to prevent a crime, then he withdraws a gift onely, nothing of his love, and yet the darknesse of the spirit and sadnesse seem equal. It is hard in these cases to discover the cause, as it is nice to judge the condition of the effect, and therefore it is prudent to ascertain our condition by improving our care and our Religion; and in all accidents to make no judgement concerning GODS favour by what we *feel*, but by what we *do*.

When the holy Virgin with much Religion and sadnesse had sought her joy, at last she found him disputing among the Doctors, hearing them and asking them questions; and besides that he now first opened a fontinel, and there sprang out an excellent rivulet from his abyssle of wisdom, he sign'd this truth to his Disciples, that they who mean to be Doctors and teach others, must in their first accesses and degrees of discipline learn of those, whom GOD and publick order hath set over us, in the mysteries of Religion.

5.

6.

The

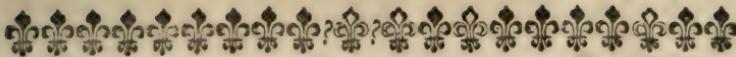


## The P R A Y E R.

Blessed and most holy JESUS, Fountain of grace and comfort, Treasure of wisdom and spiritual emanations, be pleased to abide with me for ever, by the inhabitation of thy interior assistances and refreshments; and give me a corresponding love, acceptable and unstained purity, care and watchfulness over my wayes, that I may never, by provoking thee to anger, cause thee to remove thy dwelling, or draw a cloud before thy holy face; but if thou art pleased upon a designe of charity, or trial, to cover my eyes, that I may not behold the bright rayes of thy favour, nor be refreshed with spirituall comforts; let thy love support my spirit, by wayes insensible, and in all my needs give me such a portion, as may be instrumentall and incentive to performance of my duty; and in all accidents let me continue to seek thee by prayers and humiliation, and frequent desires, and the strictnesses of a holy life; that I may follow thy example, pursue thy footsteps, be supported by thy strength, guided by thy hand, enlightened by thy favour, and may at last after a persevering holinesse and an unwearyed industry dwell with thee in the Regions of light, and eternal glory, where there shall be no feares of parting from the habitations of felicity and the union and fruition of thy presence, O blessed and most holy JESUS. Amen.

---

Sect.



## Sect. 8.

### *Of the preaching of JOHN the Baptist, preparative to the manifestation of JESUS.*

**W**hen Herod had drunk so great a draught of blood at Bethlehem, and sought for more from the hill country, Elizabeth carried her son into the Wildernes, there in the desert places and recesses to hide him from the fury of that beast, where she attended him with as much care and tenderness, as the affections and fears of a Mother could expresse in the permission of those fruitlesse solitudes; the childe was about eighteen moneths old, when he first fled to sanctuary, but after fourty dayes his Mother died, and his Father Zechary at the time of his ministrition, which happened about this time, was killed in the court of the Temple; so that the childe was exposed to all the dangers and infelicities of an Orphan, in a place of solitariness and discomfort, in a time when a bloody King endeavoured for his destruction: But when his Father and Mother were taken from him, the Lord took him up. For according to the tradition of the Greeks, GOD deputed an Angel to be his nourisher and Guardian, as he had formerly done to Ishmael who dwelt in the wildernes, and to Elias when he fled from the rage of Ahab: So to this childe, who came in the spirit of Elias, to make demonstration, that there can be no want where GOD undertakes the care and provision.

The entertainment, that S. Johns Proveditör the Angel gave him, was such as the Wildernes did afford, and such as might dispose him to a life of austerity; for there he continued spending his time in meditations, contemplation, prayer, affections and colloquies with GOD, eating Flyes and wilde honey, not clothed in soft, but a hairy garment, and a leathern girdle, till he was thirty years of age. And then, being the fifteenth yeer of Tiberius, Pontius Pilate being Governoour of Judea, the Word of God came unto John in the wildernes. And he came into all the countrey about Jordan, preaching and baptizing.

This John according to the prophesies of him, and designation of his person by the holy Ghost, was the forerunner of CHRIST, sent to dispose the people for his entertainment, and *prepare his wayes*, and therefore it was necessary his person should be so extraordinary, and full of sanctity, and so clarified by great concurrencies and wonder in the circumstances of his life, as might gain credit and reputation to the testimony he was to give concerning his LORD the Saviour of the World. And so it happened.

Niceph.lib. I.  
c. 14.

S. Chrys. homil.  
de nativ. S. Jo.  
Baptista.  
Gen. 21. 17.

I Kings 19. 5.

2.

Vellis erat curvi  
setis con certa  
cameli  
Contraluxuri-  
em molles durar-  
er ut artus  
Arcereta; gra-  
ves co m punc to  
corpe somuos;  
Paulinus.

3.

4.

For as the *Baptist*, while he was in the wilderness, became the patern of solitary and contemplative life, a School of Vertue, and Example of Sanctity, and singular austerity : so at his emigration from the places of his retirement, he seemed, what indeed he was, a rare and excellent Personage ; and the wonders which were great at his birth, the prediction of his Conception by an Angel, which never had before happened, but in the persons of *Isaac* and *Samson* ; the contempt of the World, which he bore about him, his mortified countenance and deportment, his austere and heremitical life, his vehement spirit and excellent zeal in preaching, created so great opinions of him among the people, that all held him for a Prophet in his office, for a heavenly person in his own particular, and a rare example of sanctity, and holy life to all others ; and all this being made solemn and ceremonious by his baptism he prevail'd so, that he made excellent and apt preparations for the LORDS appearing ; *For there went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the regions round about Jordan, and were baptized of him confessing their sins.*

The *Baptist* having by so heavenly means won upon the affections of all Men, his Sermons and his testimony concerning CHRIST were the more likely to be prevalent, and accepted ; and the sum of them, was *repentance* and *dereliction of sins*, and bringing forth the *fruits of good life*, in the promoting of which Doctrine he was a severe reprehender of the Pharisees, and Sadduces, he exhorted the people to works of mercy, the Publicans to do justice, and to decline oppression, the Souldiers to abstain from plundering, and doing violence or rapine ; and publishing, that *he was not the Christ*, that *he onely baptized with water*, but the *Messias* should *baptize with the holy Ghost, and with fire* ; he finally denounced judgement, and great severities to all the World of impenitents, even abscission and *fire unquenchable*. And from this time forward, viz. From the dayes of John the Baptist, the kingdom of heaven suffered violence, and the violent take it by force. For now the Gospel began to dawn, and John was like the morning star, or the blushings springing from the windows of the East, foretelling the approach of the Sun of Righteousnesse : and as S. John Baptist laid the first rough, hard and unhewen stone of this building in mortification, self-denial, and doing violence to our natural affections : So it was continued by the Master builder himself, who propounded the glories of the Crown of the heavenly Kingdom to them only who should climbe the Crosse to reach it.

Ad.

## Ad. Sect. 8.

### *Considerations of the preaching of J O H N the Baptist.*

1. Rom the disputation of JESUS with the Doctors to the time of his manifestation to Israel, which was eighteen yeers, the holy Childe dwelt in *Nazareth* in great obedience to his Parents, in exemplar modesty, singular humility, working with his hands in his supposed Fathers trade, for the support of his own and his Mothers necessities, and that he might bear the curse of *Adam*, that in the sweat of his brows he should eat his bread, all the while he increased in favour with GOD and Man, fending forth excellent testimonies of a rare Spirit, and a wise understanding in the temperate instances of such a conversation to which his humility and great obedience had engaged him: But all this while the stream ran under ground, and though little bublings were discern'd in all the course, and all the way Men looked upon him as upon an excellent person, diligent in his calling, wise and humble, temperate and just, pious and rarely temper'd, yet at the manifestation of *John the Baptist*, he brake forth like the stream from the bowels of the earth, or the Sun from a cloud; and gave us precedent that we should not shew our lights to minister to vanity, but then onely when GOD and publick order, and just dispositions of Men call for a manifestation; and yet the ages of Men have been so forward in prophetical ministeries, and to undertake Ecclesiastical imployment, that the vitiousnesse, and indiscretions, and scandals the Church of GOD feels as great burdens upon the tendernesse of her spirit, are in great part owing to the neglect of this instance of the prudence and modesty of the holy JESUS.

2. But now the time appointed was come, the *Baptist* comes forth upon the Theatre of *Palestine*, a fore-runner of the office and publication of JESUS, and by the great reputation of his sanctity, prevailed upon the affections and judgement of the People, who with much ease believed his Doctrine, when they had reason to approve his life; for the good example of the Preacher is alwayes the most prevailing Homily; his *life* is his best *Sermon*. He that will raise affections in his Auditory must affect their eyes; for we seldom see the people weep if the Oratour laughs loud and loosely; and there is no reason to think that his discourse should work more with me, then himself. If his arguments be fair and specious, I shall think them fallacies, while they have not faith with him; and what necessity for me to be temperate, when he, that tels me so, sees no such need but hopes to go to Heaven without it; or if the duty be necessary, I shall learn the definition of temperance and the latitudes of my permission, and the bounds of lawful and unlawful by the exposition of his practise; if he bindes a burden upon my shoulders, it is but reason I should look him to bear his portion too.

S. Chrys. orat  
de S. Babylâ.

*Good works convince more then miracles, and the power of ejecting Devils is not so great probation, that Christian religion came from God, as is the holiness of the doctrine, and its efficacie and productions upon the hearty Professours of the institution.* S. *Pachomius*, when he wore the military girdle under Constantine the Emperour, came to a city of Christians, who having heard that the army in which he then marched was almost starved for want of necessary provisions, of their own charity relieved them speedily and freely; he wondering at their so free and cheerfull dispensation, inquired what kind of people these were, whom he saw so bountifull? It was answered they were Christians, whose Profession it is to hurt no man, and to do good to every man; the pleased Souldier was convinced of the excellency of that religion, which brought forth men so good and so pious, and loved the Mother for the childrens sake, threw away his girdle and became Christian, and religious, and a Saint: And it was *Tertullianus* great argument in behalf of Christians, see how they love one another, how every Man is ready to die for his brother, it was a living argument and a sensible demonstration of the purity of the fountain, from whence such lypid waters did derive. But so John the Baptist made himself a fit instrument of preparation, and so must all the Christian Clergy be fitted for the dissemination of the Gospel of Jesus.

The Baptist had till this time, that is, about thirty yeers, lived in the Wildernes under the Discipline of the holy Ghost, under the tuition of Angels, in conversation with G O D, in great mortification and disaflections to the World, his garments rugged and uneasie, his meat plain, necessary, and without variety, his imployment prayers and devotion, his company wilde beasts in ordinary, in extraordinary, messengers from Heaven; and all this not undertaken of necessity to subdue a bold lust, or to punish a loud crime, but to become more holy and pure from the lesser stains and insinuations of too free infirmities, and to prepare himself for the great ministery of serving the holy JESUS in his publication. Thirty yeers he lived in great austerity; and it was a rare patience and exemplar mortification; we use not to be so pertinacious in any pious resolutions, but our purposes disband upon the sense of the first violence; we are free and confident of resolving to fast when our bellies are full, \* but when we are called upon by the first necessities of nature, our zeal is cool, and dissoluble into air upon the first temptation; and we are not upheld in the violences of a short austerity without faintings and repentances to be repented of, and enquirings after the vow is past, and searching for excuses and desires to reconcile our nature and our conscience; unless our necessity be great, and our sin clamorous and our Conscience loaden, and no peace to be had without it; and it is well if upon any reasonable grounds we can be brought to suffer contradictions of nature, for the advantages of grace; but it would be remembred that the Baptist did more upon a lesse necessity, and possibly the greatness of the example may entice us on a little further, then the customes of the World or our own indevotions would engage us.

But after the expiration of a definite time John came forth from his solitude, and served GOD in societies; he served GOD, and the content of his own spirit by his conversing with Angels and Dialogues with GOD, so long as he was in the wildernes, and it might be some trouble,

\* Satiatis & ex-  
pletis iucundias  
et carere qua-  
ntrui Cicer de-  
scit.

to him to mingle with the impurities of Men, amongst whom he was sure to observe such recesses from perfection, such violation of all things sacred, so great despitil done to all ministeries of Religion, that to him who had no experience or neighbourhood of actions criminal, it must needs be to his sublim'd and clarified spirit more punitive and afflictive, then his hairen shirt and his ascetick diet was to his body; but now himself, that tried both, was best able to judge which state of life was of greatest advantage and perfection.

*In his solitude he did breathe more pure inspiration, Heaven was more open, GOD was more familiar, and frequent in his visitations; In the Wilderness his company was Angels, his imployment meditations and prayer; his temptations simple and from within, from the impotent and lesser rebellions of a mortified body; his occasions of sin as few as his examples; his condition such, that if his soul were at all busie, his life could not easily be other then the life of Angels; for his work and recreation, and his visits, and his retirements could be nothing but the variety and differing circumstances of his piety; his inclinations to society made it necessary for him to repeat his addresses to GOD; for his being a sociable Creature, and yet in solitude, made that his conversing with GOD, and being partaker of Divine communications should be the satisfaction of his natural desires, and the supply of his singularity and retirement; the discomforts of which made it natural for him to seek out for some refreshment, and therefore to go to Heaven for it, he having rejected the solaces of the World already; and all this besides the innocencies of his silence, which is very great, and to be judged of in proportion to the infinite extravagancies of our language, there being no greater perfection here to be expected, then not to offend in our tongue. ‘It was so-*

5.  
In solitudine ac  
purius, calorem  
apertius, famili-  
arior Deus.  
Origen.

James 3.

Petrus Cellestis.  
I. 4. ep. 12.

*‘liude and retirement in which J E S U S kept his Vigils, the Desert places heard him pray, in a privacy he was born, in the Wilderness he fed his thousands, upon a Mountain apart he was transfigured, upon a Mountain he died, and from a Mountain he ascended to his Father; in which retirements his Devotion certainly did receive the advantage of convenient circumstances, and himself in such dispositions twice had the opportunities of glory.*

And yet after all these excellencies, the Spirit of GOD called the Baptist forth to a more excellent ministry; for in solitude pious persons might go to Heaven by the way of prayers and devotion; but in society they might go to Heaven by the way of mercy and charity, and dispensations to others. In solitude there are fewer occasions of vices, but there is also the exercise of fewer virtues; and the temptations, though they be not from many Objects, yet are in some Circumstances more dangerous, not onely because the worst of evils, spiritual pride does seldome miss to creep upon those goodly Oakes, like ivy, and suck their heart out, and a great mortifier without some complacencies in himself, or affectations or opinions, or something of singularity, is almost as unusual, as Virgin purity and unstained thoughts in the Bordelli: (Saint Hierome had tried it and found it so by experience, and he it was that said so) but also because whatsoever temptation does invade such retired persons, they have privacies enough to act it in, and no eyes upon them but the eye of Heaven; no shame to encounter withal, no fears of being discovered, and

6.

In solitudine ei-  
to obrepit su-  
perbia ep. 4.

Maxima pars peccatorum solitarius pecatoris testis & solitar. Simca.

S. Bernard. Malum quod non vide, nemmo arguit; ubi non timetur temptatione securius accedit rector, & liberius perpetuatur iniquitas.

Euseb. hist. lib. 6.c. 3.  
Theod. l. 4.c. 23. 24.

\* Nihil est illi primiti Deo qui omnem hunc mundum regit; quod quidem in terris fiat, acceptius quam consilia caecorum. hominum iure facili, que civitates appellantur. Cicer. som. Scipion.

We know by experience, that a witness of our conversation is a great restraint to the inordination of our actions; Men seek out darkneses and secreties to commit a sin; and the evil that no Man sees, no Man reproves, and that makes the temptation bold and confident, and the iniquity easie and ready: So that as they have not so many tempters as they have abroad, so neither have they so many restraints; their vices are not so many, but they are more dangerous in themselves, and to the World safe and opportune; and as they communicate lese with the World, so they do lese charity and fewer offices of mercy; no Sermons there but when solitude is made popular, and the City removes into the Wildernes; no comforts of a publick Religion, or visible remonstrances of the Communion of Saints; and of the seven kindes of spiritual mercy, only one can there properly be exercised, and of the corporal none at all: And this is true in lives and institutions of lese retirement, in proportion to the degree of the solitude; and therefore Church story reports of diverse very holy persons, who left their wildernes, and sweetenes of Devotion in their retirement to serve GOD in publike by the wayes of charity and exterior offices. Thus S. Anthony and Acepamas came forth to encourage the fainting people to contend to death for the crown of Martyrdom, and Aphraates in the time of Valens the Arrian Emperour came abroad to assist the Church in the suppreſſing the flames kindled by the Arrian Faction. And upon this ground they that are the greatest admirers of Heretical life, call the Episcopal Function the state of perfection, and a degree of ministerial and honorary excellency beyond the pieties and contemplations of solitude, because of the advantages of gaining souls, and religious conversation, and going to GOD by doing good to others.

John the Baptist united both these lives, and our blessed SAVIOUR who is the great precedent of sanctity and prudence, hath determined this question in his own instance; for he lived a life common, sociable, humane, charitable, and publick, and yet for the opportunities of especial devotion retir'd to prayer and contemplation, but came forth speedily; for the Devil never set upon him, but in the Wildernes, and by the advantage of retirement. For as GOD hath many, so the Devil hath some opportunities of doing his work in our solitariness; but JESUS reconcil'd both, and so did John the Baptist in several degrees and manners, and from both we are taught, that solitude is a good Schoole, and the World is the best Theatre, the institution is best there, but the practice here, the Wildernes hath the advantage of Discipline and the society \* opportunities of perfection. Privacy is the best for devotion, and the publick for charity. In both GOD hath many Saints and Servants, and from both the Devil hath had some.

His Sermon was an exhortation to repentance, and an holy life, he gave particular schedules of duty to several states of persons, sharply reproved the Pharisees, for their hypocrisy and impiety, it being worse in them because contrary to their rule, their profession and institution: gently guided others into the wayes of righteousness, calling them the straight wayes of the Lord, that is, the direct and shortest way to the Kingdom, for of all lines the straight is the shortest, and as every angle is a turning out of the way, so every sin is an obliquity, and interrupts the journey. By such discourses and a Baptism, he disposed the spirits of Men for the entertaining the Messias, and the Homilies of the Gospel. For Johns Doctrine was to the Sermons

mons of JESUS, as a Preface to a Discourse; and his Baptisme was to the new Institution and Discipline of the Kingdom as the Vigils to a Holyday, of the same kinde in a lesse degree. But the whole Oeconomy of it represents to us, that *repentance* is the first *intrumission* into the sanctities of Christian Religion. The LORD treads upon no paths that are not hallowed, and made smooth by the sorrows and cares of contrition, and the impediments of sin cleared by dereliction, and the succeeding fruits of emendation.

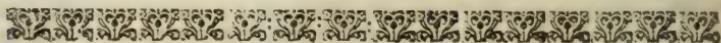
It was an excellent sweetnesse of Religion that had entirely possesst the soul of the Baptist, that in so great reputation of sanctity, so mighty concourse of people, such great multitudes of Disciples and confidants, and such throngs of admirers, he was humble without mixtures of vanity, and confirm'd in his temper and piety against the strength of the most impetuous temptation. And he was tryed to some purpose, for when he was tempted to confess himself to be the CHRIST, he refused it, or to be *Elias*, or to be accounted that Prophet, he refused all such great appellatives, and confessed himself onely to be a *voice*, the lowest of entities, whose being depends upon the Speaker, just as himself did upon the pleasure of GOD, receiving form and publication, and imployment wholly by the will of his LORD, in order to the manifestation of the *word Eternal*. It were well that the spirits of Men would not arrogate more then their own, though they did not lessen their own just dues. It may concern some end of piety, or prudence, that our reputation be preserved by all just means, but never that we assume the dues of others, or grow vain by the spoils of an undeserved dignity. Honours are the rewards of vertue, or engagement upon offices of trouble and publick use; but then they must suppose a preceding worth, or a fair imployment. But he that is a Plagiary of others titles or offices, and dresses himself with their beauties, hath no more solid worth or reputation then he shold have nutriment, if he eat only with their mouth, and slept their slumbers, himself being open and unbound in all the Regions of his sensess.

9.

### THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy and most glorious GOD, who before the publication of thy eternal Son, the Prince of Peace, didst send thy servant John Baptist, by the examples of mortification, and the rude austeries of a penitential life, and by the Sermons of Penance to remove all the impediments of sin, that the wayes of his LORD and ours might be made cleer, ready, and expedite; be pleased to let thy holy Spirit lead me in the strait paths of sanctity, without deflections to either hand, and without the interruption of deadly sin, that I may with facility, zeal, assiduity, and a persevering diligence walk in the wayes of the LORD; Be pleased that the ax may be laid to the root of Sin, that the whole body of it may be cut down in me, that no fruit of Sodom may grow up to thy displeasure. Throughly purge the floor and granary of my heart with thy fan, with the breath of thy Diviner Spirit, that it may be a holy repository of graces, and full of benediction and sanctity, that when our LORD shall come, I may at all times be prepared for the entertainment of so Divine a Guest, apt to lodge him, and to feast him, that he may for ever delight to dwell with me. And make me also to dwell with him, sometimes retiring into his recesses and private rooms by contemplation, and admiring of his beauties, and beholding

holding the secrets of his kingdom, and at all other times walking in the courts of the LORDS house, by the diligences and labours of repentance, and a holy life, till thou shalt please to call me to a neerer communication of thy excellencies, which then grant, when by thy gracious assistances, I shall have done thy work, & glorified thy holy Name, by the strict and never failing purposes and proportionable endeavours of Religion and holinesse, through the merits and mercies of Jesus Christ. Amen.



## Discourse 4. Of Mortification and corporal austerities.

Erom the dayes of John the Baptist, the kingdom of Heaven suffers violence, and the violent take it by force, said our blessed SAVIOUR. For now that the new Covenant was to be made with Man, repentance which is so great a part of it, being in very many actions a punitive duty, afflictive and vindictive, from the dayes of the Baptist, (who first, by office and solemnity of designe, published this Doctrine) violence was done to the inclinations and dispositions of Man, and by such violences we were to be possessed of the Kingdom. And his example was the best Commentary upon his Text, he did violence to himself, he lived a life in which the rudenesse of Camels hair, and the lowest nutriment of Flyes, and Honey of the Desert, his life of singularity, his retirement from the sweetnesse of society, his resisting the greatest of tentations, and despising to assume false honours, were instances of that violence, and explications of the Doctrine of Self-denial and Mortification, which are the Pedestal of the Croffe, and the Supporters of Christianity, as it distinguishes from all Lawes, Religions, and Institutions of the World.

2. Mortification is the one half of Christianity: it is a dying to the World, it is a denying of the will and all its natural desires: *an abstinence from pleasure & r̄eceptiōne-  
sure and sensual complacencies, that the flesh being subdued to the spirit, both may  
to-  
gether joyn in the service of GOD, and in the offices of holy Religion.* It consists in actions of severity and renunciation, it refuseth to give entertainment to any vanity, nor useth a freer licence in things lawful, lest it be tempted to things unius & mortali-  
*ty*, and by using to contradict its appetite, does inure it with more facility to obey the superiour faculties; and in effect it is nothing but a great care we fin not, and a prudent and severe using such remedies and instruments which in Nature and Grace are made apt for the production of our purposes. And it consists in interiour and exterior offices; these being but instruments of the interiour, as the body is organical or instrumental to the soul, and no part of the duty it self, but as they are advantages to the ends, the mortification of the Spirit; which by whatsoever means we have once acquired, and do continue, we are disoblig'd from all other exterior severities, unless by accident they come to be obligatory, and from some other cause.

3. Mortification of the will or the spirit of Man, that's the duty; that the will of Man may humbly obey G O D, and absolutely rule its inferior faculties; that the inordinations of our natural desires, begun by Adams sinne, and continued and increased by our continuing evil customes may

may be again placed in the right order, that since many of the Divine precepts are restraints upon our naturall desires we shoulde so deny those appetites, that cover after naturall satisfactions, that they may not serve themselves by dis-serving God. For therefore our own wills are our greatest dangers, and our greatest enemies, because they tend to courses contradictory to God. God commandes us to be humble; our own desires are to be great, considerable, and high; and we are never secure enough from contempt, unlesse we can place our neighbours at our feet; here therefore we must deny our will, and appetites of greatness for the purchase of humility. G O D commands Temperance and Chastity; our desires and naturall promptnesse breaks the bonds asunder, and entertaines dissolutions to the licentiousnesse of *Apicius*, or the wantonnesse of a Mahometan Paradise; sacrificing meat and drink offerings to our appetites as if our stomacks were the Temples of *Bel*; and making women and the opportunities of lust to be our dwelling, and our imployment, even beyond the common loosenesses of entertainment. Here therefore we must deny our own wills, our appetites of gluttony and Drunkennesse, and our prurient beastly inclinations, for the purchase of temperance and chastity. And every other vertue is, either directly or by accident, a certain instance of this great duty, which is, like a Catholicon, purgative of all distempers, and is the best preparative and disposition to prayer in the world.

For it is a sad confideration, and of secret reason, that since *prayer* of all duties is certainly the sweetest and the easiest, it having in it no difficultie or vexatious labour; no wearinesse of bones, no dimnesse of eyes, or hollow cheeks is directly consequent to it, no naturall desires of contradictory quality, nothing of disease, but much of comfort & more of hope in it; yet we are infinitely averse from it, weary of its length, glad of an occasion to pretermitt our offices, and yet there is no visible cause of such indisposition; nothing in the nature of the thing, nor in the circumstances necessarily appendant to the dutv. Something is amisse in us and it wanted a name till the spirit of GOD by enjoyning us the dutv of mortification, hath taught us to know that immortification of spirit is the caufe of all our secrete and spiritual indispositions: we are so incorporated to the desires of *sensuall* objects, that we feel no relish or gust of the *spirituall*. It is as if a Lyon shoulde eat hay, or an Ox venison, there is no proportion between the object and the appetite, till by mortification of our first desires, our wills are made spirituall, and our apprehensions supernatural and clarified. For as a Cook told *Dionysius* the Tyrant, the black broth of *Lacedemon* would not do well at *Syracusa*, unlesse it be tasted by a Spartans palate; so neither can the excellencies of heaven be discerned, but by a spirit disfelingish the fottish appetites of the world, and accustomed to diviner banquets: and this was mystically signified by the two altars in *Solomons* temple, in the outer court whereof beasts were sacrificed, in the inner court an altar of incense: the first representing Mortification or slaying of our beastly appetites; the second the offering up our prayers, which are not likely to become a pleasant offertory, unlesse our impurities be removed by the atonement made by the first Sacrifices; without our spirit be mortised, we neither can love to pray, nor G O D love to hear us.

But there are three steps to ascend to this altar. 1. The first is to abstain from satisfying our carnall desires in the instances of sinne; and although the furnace flanies with vehement emissions at some times, yet to

to walk in the midst of the burning without being consumed, like the children of the Captivity; that is the duty even of the most imperfect, and is commonly the condition of those good persons, whose interest in secular imployments speaks fair, and solicits often, and tempts highly ; yet they manage their affairs with habituall justice, and a constant charity ; and are temperate in their dayly meals, chast in the solaces of marriage, and pure in their spirits, unmingleed with sordid affections in the midst of their possessions and enjoyments. These men are in the world, but they are strangers here ; *They have a city, but not an abiding one ; they are Proselytes of the house,* but have made no covenant with the world. For though they desire with secular desires, yet it is but for necessaries, and then they are content ; they use the creatures with freedom, and modesty ; but never to intemperance and transgression : so that their hands are *below tyed* there by the necessities of their life; but their hearts are *above*, lifted up by the abstractions of this first degree of mortification. And this is the first and nicest distinction between a man of the world, and a man of GOD ; for this state is a denying our affections nothing but the sin, it enjoyes as much of the world, as may be consistant with the possibilities of heaven : a little lesse then this is the state of immortification, and *a being in the flesh*, which (saith the Apostle) cannot inherit the kingdom of GOD. The flesh must first be separated, and the adherencies pared off from the skin, before the parchment be fit to make a schedule for use, or to transmit a record ; whatsoever in the sense of the Scripture is *flesh*, or an enemy to the spirit, if it be not rescinded and mortified, makes that the laws of GOD cannot be written in our hearts. This is the doctrine

*Rom. 8. 13.*

*S. Paul taught the Church. For if ye live after the flesh ye shall die, but if ye through the spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.* This first mortification is the way of life, if it continues : but its continuance is not secured, till we are advanced towards life by one degree more of this death. For this condition is a state of a dayly, and dangerous warfare, and many inroads are made by sin, and many times hurt is done and booty carried off for he that is but thus far mortified, although his dwelling be within the kingdom of grace, yet it is in the borders of it, and hath a dangerous neighbourhood. If we mean to be safe, we must remove into the heart of the Land, or carry the war further off.

6.

*O quam contem-  
pta res est homo,  
nisi superhumana  
Passions ; not only contradict the direct immediate persuasion to a sin, but  
se exerexit Senec. also croesse the inclination to it.* So long as our appetites are high and full, we shall never have peace or safety, but the dangers and insecurities of a full war, and a potent Enemy, we are alwayes disputing the Question, ever struggling for life. but when our Passions are killed, when our desires are little and low, then grace reigns, then *our life is hid with Christ in God.* then we have fewer interruptions in the way of righteousness, then we are not so apt to be surprized by sudden eruptions and transportation of Passions, and our piety it self is more prudent and reasonable, chosen with a freer election, discerned with clearer understanding, hath more in it of judgement then of Fancie, and is more spirituall and Angelicall. He that is apt to be angry, though he be habitually carefull, and full of observation, that he sin not, may at some time or other be surprized, when his guards are undiligent, and without actuall expectation of an enemy : but if his anger be

be dead in him, and the inclination lessened to the indifferency and gentleness of a Childe, the man dwels safe, because of the impotency of his Enemy or that he is reduced to obedience, or hath taken conditions of peace. He that hath refused to consent to actions of uncleanness to which he was strongly tempted, hath won a victory by fine force, G O D hath blessed him well; but an opportunity may betray him instantly, and the sin may be in upon him unawares; unless also his desires be killed; he is betrayed by a party within. *David* was a holy person, but he was surprised by the sight of *Bathsheba*, for his freer use of permitted beds had kept the fire alive, which was apt to be put into a flame when so fair a beauty reflected through his eyes. But *Joseph* was a Virgin, and had kept under all his inclinations to looser thoughts; opportunity, and command and violence, and beauty did make no breach upon his spirit.

He, that is in the first state of Pilgrimage, does not mutiny against his Superiors, nor publish their faults, nor envie their dignities; but he that is dead to the world, sees no fault that they have, and when he heares an objection, he buries it in an excuse, and rejoices in the dignity of their persons. Every degree of mortification endures reproof without murmur; but he that is quite dead to the world and to his own will, feels no regret against it, and hath no secret thoughts of trouble and unwillingness to the suffering, save onely that he is sorry he deserv'd it. For so a dead body resists not your violence, changes not its posture you plac'd it in, strikes not his striker, is not moved by your words, nor provoked by your scorn, nor is troubled when you shrink with horrour at the sight of it; "only it will hold the head downward in all its situations, unless it be hindred by violence: and a mortified spirit is such, without indignation against scorn, without revenge against injuries, without murmuring at low offices, not impatient in troubles, indifferent in all accidents, neither transported with joy, nor deprest with sorrow, and is humble in all his thoughts. And thus *he that is dead* (saith the Apostle) is justified from finnes. And this is properly a state of life, in which by the grace of JESUS we are restored to a condition of order and interiour beauty in our faculties, our actions are made moderate and humane, our spirits are even, and our understandings undisturbed.

For passions of the sensitive soule are like an exhalation, hot and dry, borne up from the earth upon the wings of a cloud, and detain'd by violence out of its place, causing thunders, and making eruptions into lightning and sudden fires. There is a tempest in the soule of a passionate man, and though every wind does not shake the earth, nor rend trees up by the roots, yet we call it violent, and ill weather, if it onely makes a noise and is harmlesse. And it is an inordination in the spirit of a man when his passions are tumultuous and mighty, though they do not determine directly upon a sin, they discompose his peace, and disturb his spirit, and make it like troubled waters, in which no man can see his own figure, and just proportions; and therefore by being lesse a man, cannot be so much a Christian, in the midst of so great indispositions. For although the cause may hallow the passion (and if a man be very angry for Gods cause it is zeale, not fury) yet the cause cannot secure the person from violence, transportation and inconvenience. When *Elijah* was consulted by three kings concerning the successe of their present expedition, he grew so angry against idioia-

7.

Rom. 6. 7.

8.

2 King. 3. 13.

idolatrous *foram*, and was carried on to so great degrees of disturbance, that when for *Jebo/baphats* sake he was content to enquire of the L O R D, he called for a minstrelly, who by his harmony might recompose his disunited and troubled spirit, that so he might be apter for divination. And sometimes this zeal goes besides the intention of the man, and beyond the degrees of prudent or lawfull, and ingages in a sin, though at first it was zeal for religion. For so it hapned in *Moses*, at the waters of *Massah* and *Meribah*, *he spake foolishly*, and yet it was when he was zealous for GOD and extreamly carefull for the peoples interest. For his passion he was hindred from entring into the land of promise. And we also if we be not moderate and well tempered, even in our passions for G O D, may, like *Moses*, break the tables of the Law, and throw them out of our hands with zeal to have them preserved; for passion violently snatches at the conclusion, but is inconsiderate and incurious concerning the premises. The sum and purpose of this Discourse is that saying of our blessed Saviour, *He that will be my Disciple, must deny himself*, that is, not onely desires that are sinfull, but desires, that are his own, purfuances of his own affections, and violent motions, though to things not evil, or in themselves contagious.

*Math. 16.24.*

9.

3. And yet there is a degree of mortification of spirit beyond this, for the condition of our security may require, that we not onely deny to act our tentations, or to please our naturall desires, but also to *seek opportunities of doing displeasure to our affections*, and violence to our inclinations; and not onely to be indifferent, but to choose a contradiction and a denyall to our strongest appetites, to rejoice in a trouble: and this was the spirit of *S. Paul*, *I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulations, and we glory in it*: which joy consists not in any sensitive pleasure any man can take in afflictions and adverse accidents, but in a *despising* the present inconveniences, and looking through the cloud unto those great felicities, and graces, and consignations to glory, which are the effects of the Crosse. *Knowing that tribulation worketh patience, and patience experience, and experience hope, and hope maketh not ashamed*; That was the incertaintie of *S. Pauls* joy; and therefore as it may consist with any degree of mortification to pray for the taking away of the Crosse, upon condition it may consist with Gods glory, and our ghostly profit; so it is properly an act of this vertue to pray for the Crosse, or to meet it, if we understand it may be for the interest of the spirit. And thus *S. Basil* prayed to God to renove his violent pains of *headach*; but when God heard him, and took away his paine, and *lust* came in the place of it, he prayed to God to restore him his *headach* againe; that crose was gaine and joy, when the removall of it was so full of danger and temptation: and this the Masters of spirituall life call *being crucified with Christ*; because as *CHRIST* chose the death, and desired it by the appetites of the spirit, though his flesh smarted under it, and groaned and dyed with the burden; so doe all that are thus mortified, they place misfortunes and sadnesses amongst things eligible, and set them before the eyes of their desire: although the flesh, and the desres of sense are factious and bold against such sufferings.

10.

Of these three degrees of interiour or spirituall mortification; the first, is *duty*; the second is *counsell*, and the third is *perfection*; We finde, if we have not the first; we are in danger without the second, but without the third we cannot be perfect, as our heavenly Father is; but shall have more of human infirmities to be ashamed of, then can be excused by the acrefencies and

con-

condition of our nature ; the first is onely of absolute necessity ; the second is prudent, and of greatest convenience : but the third is excellent and perfect. And it was the consideration of a wise Man, that the saints in heaven, who understand the excellent glories and vast differences of state, and capacities amongst beatified persons, although they have no envy nor sorrows, yet if they were upon earth with the same notion and apprehensions they have in heaven, would not for all the world loose any degree of glory ; but mortifie to the greatest eminency ; that their glory may be a derivation of the greatest ray of light ; every degree being of compensation glorious, and disproportionately beyond the inconsiderable troubles of the greatest self denyall. GODS purpose is, that we abstain from sin ; there is no more in the commandment ; and therefore we must deny our selves, so as not to admit a sin, under pain of a certain and eternall curse ; but the other degrees of mortification are by accident so many degrees of vertue ; not being enjoyed or counselled for themselves, but for the preventing of crimes, and for securities of good life ; and therefore are parts and offices of Christian prudence, which, whosoever shall positively reject, is neither much in love with vertue, nor carefull of his own safety.

Tanta n gloriam omni hora negligimus, quanta bona interim facere possemus, si otiis ea transfigimus.

2. But Mortification hath also some designes upon the body. For the body is the shop, and forge of the soul, in which all her designes which are transient upon externall objects, are framed ; and it is a good servant, as long as it is kept in obedience, and under discipline, but he that breeds his servant delicate, will finde him contumacious and troublesome, bold and confident, as his son ; and therefore S. Pauls practise, (as himself gives account of it) was to keep his body under, and bring it into subjection, least he should become a Castaway ; for the desires of the body are in the same things, in which themselves are satisfied, so many injuries to the soul ; because upon every one of the appetites a restraint is made, and a law placed for sentinel, that if we transgresse the bounds fixt by the divine Commandment, it becomes a sinne : now it is hard for us to keep them within compasse, because they are little more then agents meerly naturall, and therefore cannot interrupt their act, but covet and desire as much as they can without suspension or coercion, but what comes from without, which is therefore the more troublesome ; because all such restraints are against nature, and without sensuall pleasure. And therefore this is that, that S. Paul said, when we were in the flesh, the passions of sinnes which were by the Law, did worke in our members to bring forth fruit unto Death. For these pleasures of the body draw us as loadstones draw iron, not for love, but for prey and nutriment ; it feeds upon the iron, as the bodily pleasures upon the life of the spirit, which is lessened, and impaired according as the gifts of the flesh grow high and sapid.

He that feeds a lyon must obey him, unlesse he make his den to be his prison : our lusts are as wilde, and as cruel beasts, and unlesse they feel the load of fettters and of lawes, will grow unruly and troublesome, and increase upon us, as we give them food and satisfaction ; he, that is used to drink high wines, is sick if he hath not his proportion to drinke. Isocrat. what ad Demonic.

II.

1. Cor. 9. 27.  
Rom. 6. 4.  
Hebr. 12. 2.  
1 Pet. 2. 1.  
Col. 4. 1.

Rom. 7. 5.

12.

what degree soever his custome hath brought his appetite ; and to some men, Temperance becomes certain death, because the inordination of their desires hath introduced a custome, and custome hath increased those appetites, and made them almost naturall in their degree ; but he that hath been used to hard diet, and the pure stream ; his refreshments are much within the limits of temperance, and his desires as moderate as his diet. “ *S. Jerome* affirms that, to be continent in the state of widowhood is harder, “ then to keep our virgin pure : and there is reason, that then the appetite should be harder to be restrained, when it hath not been accustomed to be denied, but satisfied in its freer sollicitations. When a fontinell is once opened, all the symbolical humours run thither, and issue out, and it is not to be stopped without danger, unless the humour be purged or diverted : So is the satisfaction of an impure desire, it opens the issue and makes way for the emanation of all impuritie, and unless the desire be mortified, will not be stopt by purposes and easy desires.

13.

Since therefore the body is the instrument of sins, the fewel and the incentive, our mortification must reach thither also, at least in some degrees, or it will be to small purpose to think of mortifying our spirit in some instances of temptation ; In vain does that man think to keep his honour and chastity, that invites his lust to an activeness by soft beds and high diet, and idlenesse and opportunity ; make the souls instrument unapt, and half the work is done. And this is true in all instances of carnality or naturall desires ; whose scene lies in the lower region of passions, and are acted by the body ; but the operation of the cure must be in proportion to the designe ; as the mortification of the spirit is in severall degrees : so the mortification of the body also hath its severall parts of prudence, injunction and necessity. For the prescribing all sorts of mortifications corporall, indefinitely and indiscriminately to all persons, without separation of their ends, and distinct capacities is a snare to mens Consciences, makes religion impertinently troublesome, occasions some men to glory in corporall austertie, as if of it self it were an act of piety, and a distinction of the man from the more imperfect persons of the world, and is all the way unreasonable and inartificiall.

14

Huic epulæ vi-  
cise fa rem mag-  
niq; penates  
Summoxi hys-  
tem teato pre-  
tiosaq; veltis  
Hirtan membra  
super Rotani  
more quiritis  
Induxisse togas.  
De Catone dixit  
Lucanus, & de e-  
odem.  
Intonsus rigidam  
in frontem de-  
scendere canos  
paulus erat, mæ-  
stamq; genis in-  
crebere barbam.

1. Therefore such whose ingagements in the world or capacities of person confine them to the lowest and first step of mortification, those who fight onely for life and liberty, not for priviledges and honour, that are in perpetuall contestation and close fightings with sin, it is necessary that their *body* also be *mortified* in such a degree, that their desires transport them not beyond the permissions of divine and humane Laws : let such men be strict in the rules of Temperance and sobriety, be chaste within the laws of marriage, cherish their body to preserve their health, and their health to serve GOD, and to do their offices : to these persons the best instruments of discipline are the strict laws of Temperance, denying all transgressions of the appetite boylng over its marginet and proper limit, assiduous prayer and observation of the publike laws of fasting, which are framed so moderate and even as to be proportionable to the common manner of living of persons secular and incumbred. For though many persons of common imployments and even manner of living have in the midst of worldly avocations undertaken austerties very rude and rigorous, yet it was in order to a higher mortification of Spirit ; and it is also necessary they shoulde, if either naturally, or habitually,

habitually, or easily they suffer violent transportation of passions: for since the occasions of anger and disturbance in the world frequently occurre, if such passions be not restrained by greater violence, then is competent to the ordinary offices of a moderate piety, the cure is weaker then the humour, and so leaves the work imperfect.

2. But this is coincident to the second degree of mortification, for if either out of desire of a farther step towards perfection, or out of the necessities of nature or evill customes it be necessary also to subdue our passions aswell as the direct invitations to sinne, in both these cases the body must suffer more austerties, even such as directly are contrariant to every passionate disturbance, though it be not ever sinfull in the instance. All Mortifiers must abstaine from every thing that is unlawfull, but these that they may abstaine from things *unlawfull*, must also deny to themselves satisfaction in things *lawfull* and *pleasant*; and this is in a just proportion to the end, the subduing the passions, least their liberty and boldnesse become licentious. And we shall easier deny their opportunity to sin, when we will not please them in those things in which we may: such in which the feare of GOD, and the danger of our soules, and the convictions of reason and religion doe not immediately cooperate. And this was the practise of *David*, when he had thirsted for the waters of Bethlehem, and some of his worthies ventured their lives and brought it, he refused to drinke it, but poured it *upon the ground unto the Lord, that is, it became a drink-offering unto the Lord*: an acceptable oblation, in which he sacrificed his *desires* to GOD, denying himself the satisfaction of such a desire, which was naturall and innocent, save that it was something nice, delicate and curious. Like this was the act of the Fathers in the mountain *Nitria*, to one of which a fair cluster of dried grapes being sent, he refused to taste them, least he shold be too sensuall and much pleased, but sent them to another, and he to a third, and the same consideration transmitted the present through all their cells, till it came to the first man again: all of them not daring to content their appetite in a thing too much desired, least the like impertunity in the instance of a sin should prevail upon them. To these persons the best instruments of Discipline are subtractions rather then imposition of austerties; let them be great haters of corporall pleasures, eating for necessity, diet spare and cheap; abridging and making short the opportunites of naturall and permitted solaces, \* refusing exteriour comforts, not choosing the most pleasant object, not suffering delight to be the end of eating, and therfore separating delight from it,asmuch as prudently they may,not being too importunate with God to remove this gentler hand of paternal correction but inuring our selves to patient suffering, and indifferent accepration of the Crose that GOD layes upon us; at no hand living *delicately*, or *curiously* or *impatiently*. And this was the condition of S. *Paul*, suffering with excellent temper all those persecutions and inconveniences,which the enemies of religion loaded him withall; which he called, *bearing the markes of the Lord JESUS in his body*: and *carrying about in his body the dying or mortification of the Lord JESUS*; it was in the matter of persecution, which because he bore patiently, and was accustomed to, and he accepted with indifference and renunciation, they were the mortifications and the markes of JESUS, that is, a true conserfmy to the passion of CHRIST, and of great effect and interest for the preventing sins by the mortification of his naturall desres.

2. Sam. 23. 17.

Apud Pallas. in  
hiro. Lauiac.\* quanto quisq;  
ibi plura nega-verit  
A. Iiis plura fe-

ret. Hor.

2. Cor 4. 10.

Gal. 6. 17.

3. But

16.

3- But in the pale of the church there are and have been many tall Cedars, whose tops have reached to heaven ; some there are, that choose afflictions of the body that by turning the bent and inclination of their affections into sensuall displeasures, they may not onely cut off all pretensions of temptation, but grow in spirituall graces, and perfections intellectuall and beatified. To this purpose they served themselves with the instances of sack-cloth, hard lodging, long fasts, pernoctation in prayers, renunciation of all secular possessions, great and expenſive charity, bodily labours to great wearineſſe and affliction, and many other prodigies of voluntary ſuffering, which scripture and the Ecclesiastical ſtories do frequently mention. S. Lewis King of France wore ſackcloth every day, unleſſe fickneſſe hindred ; and S. Zenobius as long as he was a Bishop ; And when Severus Sulpicius ſent a ſackcloth to S. Paulinus Bishop of Nola, he returned to him a letter of thanks, and diſcourſed pioſously concerning the uſe of corporal auſterities : and that I need not iſtance, it was ſo generall that this was by way of appropriation called the garment of the Church, because of the frequent uſe of ſuch instruments of exterior mortification, and ſo it was in other iſtances. S. James neither ate fresh nor drank wine, S. Matthew lived upon acorns, seeds and herbs ; and amongst the elder Christians, ſome rolled themſelves naked in ſnows, ſome upon thorns, ſome on burning coales, ſome chewed bitter pills, and masticated gummies, and ſipped frequently on horrid potions, and wore iron vpon their ſkin, and bolts upon their legs, and in witty torments excelled the cruelty of many of their perſecutors, whose rage determined quickly in death, and had certainly leſſe of torment, then the tedious afflictions and rude penances of Simeon ſurnamed Stylites. But as all great examples have excellencies above the ordinary devotions of good people, ſo have they ſome danger and much conſideration.

17.

1. Therefore I conſider, that theſe bodily and voluntary ſelf afflictions can onely be of uſe in carnall and natuſal temptations, of no uſe in spirituall : for aſcetick diet, hard lodging, and ſevere disciplines cannot be directly operative upon the ſpirit, but onely by mediation of the body, by abating its extravagancies, by ſubtracting its maintenance, by leſſening its temptations ; theſe may help to preferve the foul chraft, or temperate, because the ſcene of theſe fins lyes in the body, and thence they have their maintenance, and from thence also may receive their \* abatements ; but in actions, which are leſſe materiall, ſuch as pride, and envy, and blaſphemey and impenitence, and all the kindes and degrees of malice, extermal mortifications do ſo little cooperate to their cure, that often times they are their greatest inflamiers and incentives, and are like cordials given to cure a cold lit of anague, they do their work, but bring a hot fit in its place ; and beſides that great mortifiers have been ſoonest assaulted by the ſpirit of pride, we finde that great fasters are naturally angry and cholericke. S. Hieron found it in himſelf, and Ruffinus felt ſome of the effects of it, and therefore this laſt part of corporal mortification, and the chooſing ſuch afflictions by a voluntary imposition is at no hand to be applied in all caſes, but in caſes of lust only and intemperance or natuſal impatieneſſe, or ſuch crimes which dwell in the ſenes, and then it alſo would be conſidered, whether or no any ſuch auſterities which can conſift with health will do the work ; ſo long as the body is in health, it will do its offices of nature ; if it is not in health

\* Εἰ λησμονὴ δὲ  
καὶ πειναὶ ἡ τὸν  
καρδίας πεινασσον,  
καὶ εἰς τὸν αὐγόν  
τη βερτοῦ.

Antiphon.

health, it cannot do all offices of grace, nor many of our calling; and therefore although they may do some advantages to persons tempted with the lowest sins, yet it were better that the mortification of the spirit, to the greatest and most perfect purposes were set upon by means spiritual and of immediate efficacy; for they are the lowest operations of the soul, which are moved and produced by actions corporall; the soul may from those become lustfull or chaste, chearful or sad, timorous or confident; but yet even in these the soul receives but some dispositions thence, and more forward inclinations; but nothing from the body can be operative in the begetting or increase of charity, or the love of GOD, or devotion, or in mortifying spirituall and iatlectuall vices: and therefore those greater perfections, and heights of the soul, such as are designed in this highest degree of mortification are not apt to be enkindled by corporall austuries, and therefore "Nigrinus in Lucian findes fault with those Phylosophers, who thought vertue is be purchased by cutting the skin with whips, binding the nerves, razing the body with iron: but he taught that vertue is to be placed in the mind by actions internall and immateriall and that from thence remedies are to be derived against perturbations and actions criminall. And this is determined by the Apostle in fairest intimation, Mortify therefore your earthly members; and he instances in carnall crimes, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupisence, and covetousnesse, which are things may be something abated by corporall mortifications, and that these are by distinct manner to be helped from other more spirituall vices, he addes, but now therefore put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication and lying: to both these sorts of sins, mortification being the generall remedy, particular applications are to be made, and it must be onely spirituall or also corporall in proportion to the nature of the sins: he seems to distinguish the remedy by separation of the nature of the crimes, and possibly also by the differing words of [ mortify ] applied to carnall sins, and [ put off ] to crimes spirituall.

2. But in the lesser degrees of mortification in order to subduing of all passions of the sensitiue appetite, and the consequent and symbolical sins, bodily austuries are of good use, if well understood and prudently undertaken; to which purpose I also consider. No acts of corporall austerity or externall religion are of themselves to be esteemed holy or acceptable to GOD; are no where precisely commanded, no instruments of union with CHRIST, no immediate parts of divine worship; and therefore to suffer corporal austuries with thoughts determining upon the externall action or imaginations of sanctity inherent in the action is against the purity, the spirituality, and simplicity of the Gospel. And this is the meaning of S. Paul, It is a good thing that the heart be establisched with grace, not with meates, which have not profited them, which walked in them; and, the kingdome of GOD consists not in meat and drink but in righteousness and peace and joy in the holy Ghost. And Clem. Alex. Pedag. 2. bodily exercise profiteth little, but godliness is profitable unto all things. Now if Rom. 14. 17. externall mortifications are not for themselves, then they are to receive their estimate as they cooperate to the end; Whatsoever is a prudent restraint of an extravagant passion, whatsoever is a direct deniall of a sin, whatsoever makes provision for the spirit, or withdrawes the fuel from the impure fires of carnality, that is an act of mortification; but those austuries which Baals Priests did use, or the Flagellantes, an ignorant

ignorant faction that went up and down villages whipping themselves, or those which return periodically on a set day of Discipline, and using rudenesses to the body by way of ceremony and solemnity, not directed against the actuall incursion of a pungent lust are not within the verge of the grace of mortification. For unlesse the temptation to a carnall sin be actually incumbent and pressing upon the Soul, pains of infliction and smart do no benefit toward suppressing the habit or inclination : for such sharp disciplines are but short and transient troubles ; and although they take away the present fancies of a temptation, yet unlesse it be rash and uncharitable there is no effect remanent upon the body but that the temptation may speedily return. As is the danger, so must be the application of the remedy ; actuall severities are not imprudently undertaken in case of imminent danger, but to cure an habituall lust, such corporall mortifications are most reasonable, whose effect is permanent, and which takes away whatsoever does minister more fuel, and puts a torch to the pile.

19.

But this is altogether a discourse of Christian prudence, not of precise duty and religion, for if we do by any means provide for our indemnity and secure our innocence, all other exterior mortifications are not necessary, and they are convenient but as they do facilitate, or cooperate towards the end. And if that be well understood it will concern us that they be used with prudence and caution, with purity of intention, and without pride ; for since they are *nothing in themselves*, but are hallowed and adopted into the family of religious actions by participation of the end, the doing them not for themselves takes off all complacencie and fancy reflecting from an opinion of the externall actions ; guides and purifies the intention, and teaches us to be prudent in the managing of those austerties which as they are in themselves afflictive, so have in them nothing that is eligible, if they be imprudent.

20.

*Kai nira eiseta  
mysteries di-  
Sopites negeap-  
tis, teni mi,  
tuxes, teni j,  
nupel G, teni j  
inuas ne k ric  
negnes; ayom.*  
Nigrinus, apud Lu, or disbanding of the inclination.

21.

It may also concern the prudence of this duty not to neglect the smallest inadvertencies and minutes of lust or spirituall inconvenience, but to contradict them in their weaknesse, and first beginnings. We see that great disturbances are brought from the smallest occasions meeting with an impatient spirit, like great flames kindled from a little spark, fallen into an heap of prepared nitre. S. Austin tells a story of a certain person much vexed with flies in the region of his dwelling, and himself heightned the trouble by too violent and busy reflection upon the inconsideratenesse of the instrument, and the greatness of the vexation alighting upon a peevish spirit. In this disposition he was visited by a Manichee ( a heretick, that denied G O D to be the maker of things visible : ) he being busy to rub his infection upon the next thing

Tract. I. in Joh.

thing he met, asked the impatient person whom he thought to be the maker of flies ? He answered, I think the Devil was : for they are instruments of great vexation and perpetual trouble ; what he rather fancied then believed, or expressed by anger, rather than at all had entertain'd within, the Manichee confirm'd by such arguments to which his adversary was very apt to give consent by reason of his impatience and peevishnes. The Manichee having set his foot firm upon this first breach proceeded in his Question, If the Devil made Flyes, why not bees, who are but a little bigger, and have a sting too ? The consideration of the sting made him fit to think, that the little difference in bigness needed not a distinct and a greater Efficient, especially since the same workman can make a great as well as a little vessel. The Manichee proceeded, If a Bee why not a Locust ? if a Locust, then a Lizzard, if a Lizzard, then a Bird, if a Bird, then a Lamb, and thence he made bold to proceed to a Cow, to an Elephant, to a Man. His adversary by this time being insnared by granting so much, and now ashamed not to grant more, lest his first concessions should seem unreasonable and impious, confessed the Devil to be the Maker of all Creatures visible. The use which is made of this story, is this caution, that the Devil do not abuse us in Flyes, and provoke our spirits by trifles and impertinent accidents ; for if we be unmorified in our smalleſt motions it is not imaginable we ſhould stand the blaſt of an impetuous accident and violent perturbation. Let us not therefore give our paſſions course in a ſmall accident, because the iſtance is inconſiderable ; for though it be, the conſequenee may be dangerous, and a wave may follow a wave till the inundation be generall and deſperate. And therefore here it is intended for advice, that we be obſervant of the accidents of our domeſtique affairs, and curioſ that every trifling inadverſtency of a ſervant, or ſlight miſbecoming action, or imprudent words be not apprehended as instruments of vexation : for ſo many ſmall occasions, if they be productive of many ſmall diſturbances will produce an habitual churliſhneſſe and immortification of ſpirit.

3. Let our greatest diligence and care be employed in mortifying our predominant paſſion : for if our care be ſo great, as not to entertain the ſmallest, and our resolution ſo strong and holy, as not to be subdued by the greatest and moſt paſſionate deſires, the Spirit hath done all its work, ſecures the future, and ſanctifies the preſent, and nothing is wanting but perfeverance in the fame paſture and religion; and this is typiſtically commanded in the precept of GOD to Moses and Aaron in the matter of Peor ; Vex the Midianites, because they vexed you, and made you ſin by their daughers ; and Phineas did fo ; he kill'd a Prince of the house of Simeon, and a Princesſe of Midian, and GOD confirmed the priēthoſt to him for ever ; meaning that we ſhall for ever be admitted to a neerer relation to GOD, if we ſacrifice to GOD our deareſt luſt ; and this is not ſo properly an act, as the end of Mortification; therefore it concerns the paſture of the duty, that all the efficacy and violence of it be employed againſt the ſtrongeſt, and therewhere is the moſt dangerous hoſtili ty.

4. But if we mean to be Maſters of the field and pat our victory paſt diſpute, let us mortifie our moroſty and naturall aversations, reducing them to an indiſcrenſy, having in our wiſs no fondueſſes, in our ſpirits no faction of persons or nations : being prepared to love all men, and to endure all things, and to undertake all imployments which are duty or counſell in all circum-

12

22.

23.

circumstances and disadvantages. For the excellency of Evangelical sanctity does surmount all Antipathies, as a vessel climbs up, and rides upon a wave ; *the Wolf and the Lamb shall cohabit, and a Childe shall play and put his fingers in the Cavern of an Aspick*; nations whose interest are most contradictory, must be knit by the confederations of a mortified and a Christian Spirit, and single persons must triumph over the difficulties of an indisposed nature, or els their own will is unmortified, and nature is stronger then can well censit with the dominion and absolute empire of grace. To this I reduce such peevish and unhandsome niceeneses in matters of religion, that are unsatisfied, unless they have all exterior circumstances, trimm'd up and made pompous for their religious offices, such who cannot pray without a convenient room, and their devotion is made active onely by a well built chappel, and they cannot sing lauds without Church musick, and too much light dissolves their intention, and too much dark promotes their melancholy ; and because these and the like exterior ministeries are good advantag es, therefore without them they can do nothing ; which certainly is a great intimation and likenesse to immortification. Our will should be like the Candle of the eye, without all colour in it self, that it may entertain the species of all colours from without : and when we lust after mandrakes and deliciousnes of exterior ministeries, we many times are brought to betray our own interest, and prostitute our dearest affections to more ignoble and stranger desires. Let us love all natures, and serve all persons, and pray in all places, and fast without opportunities, and do alms above our power, and set our selves heartily on work to neglect and frustrate those lower temptations of the Devil, who will frequently enough make our religion inopportune, if we then will make it infrequent, and will present us with objects enough and flyes to disquiet our persons, if our natures be petulant, peevish, curious and unmortified.

24.

It is a great mercy of G O D to have an affable, sweet and well disposed nature, and it does half the work of Mortification for us ; we have the lesse trouble to subdue our passions and destroy our lusts. But then as those, whose natures are morose, cholericke, peevish and lustfull, have greater difficulty, so is their vertue of greater excellency, and returnd with a more ample reward: but it is in all mens natures, as with them who gathered Manna, *they that gathered little had no lack, and they that gathered much had nothing over* ; they who are of ill natures shall want \* no assistance of GODS grace to work

\* *Nemo adeo fatus est, ut non misereatur possit si modo cultura patientem conmodetur aurum.*  
Hor. ep. 1.

their cure, though their flesh be longer healing, and they who are sweetly tempered, being naturally meek and modest, chaste, or temperate will finde work enough to contest against their temptations from without, though from within possibly they may have fewer; yet there are greater degrees of vertue and heroical excellencies, and great rewards to which GOD hath designed them by so fair dispositions, and it will concern all their industry to mortifie their spirit, which though it be malleable and more ductile, yet it is as bare and naked of imagery, as the rudest and most iron nature : so that mortification will be *every mans duty* ; no nature, nor piety, nor wisdom, nor perfection but will need it, either to subdue a lust or a passion, to cut off an occasion, or to resist a temptation, to persevere or to go on, to secure our present estate or to proceed towards perfection. But all men do not think so.

25.

For there are some who have great peace ; no fightings within, no troubles without, no disputes or contradictions in their spirit : but these men have the peace of tributaries or a conquer'd people, the gates of their city stand open

open day and night, that all the carriages may enter without disputing the passage: the flesh and the spirit dispute not, because the spirit is there in pupillage or in bonds, and the flesh rides in triumph, with the tyranny, and pride and impotency of a female Tyrant. For in the sense of religion we all are *warriers or slaves*; either our selves are stark dead in trespasses, and sins, or we need to stand perpetually upon our guards in continual observation, and in contestation against our lusts and our passions; so long denying and contradicting our own wills, till we will and choose to do things against our wills having an eye alwayes to those infinite satisfactions which shall glorify our wills, and all our faculties, when we arrive to that state, in which there shall be no more contradiction, but onely that our mortall shall put on immortality.

But as some have a vain and dangerous peace, so others double their trouble by too nice and impertinent scruples, thinking that every temptation is a degree of immortification; as long as we live we shall have to do with Enemies; but as this life is ever a state of imperfection, so the very designe and purpose of Mortification is not to take away temptations, but to overcome them: it endeavours to facilitate the work, and secure our condition by removing all occasions it can: but the opportunity of a crime, and the sollicitation to a sin is no fault of ours, unlesse it be of our procuring, or findes entertainment when it comes unsent for. To suffer a temptation is a misery, but if we then set upon the mortification of it, it is an occasion of vertue, and never is criminall, unlesse we give consent. But then also it would be considered, that it is not good offering our selves to *fire ordeal* to confirm our innocence, nor prudent to enter into battel without need, and to shew our valour; nor safe to procure a temptation, that we may have the reward of mortification of it. For Mortification of the spirit is not commanded, as a duty finally resting in it self, or immediately landing upon GODS glory, such as are acts of charity and devotion, chastity and justice; but it is the great instrument of humility and all other graces: and therefore is to be undertaken to destroy a sin, and to secure a virtuous habit; and besides that to call on a danger is to tempt GOD, and to invite the Devil, (and no man is sure of a victory;) it is also great imprudence to create a need, that we may take it away again; to drink poyon to make experiment of the antidote; and at the best it is but a running back to come just to the same place again; for he that is not tempted, does not sin: but he that invites a temptation, that he might overcome it, or provokes a Passion, that he may allay it, is then but in the same condition after his pains and his danger: He was not sure he should come so far.

Vide disc. of  
Temptation.



## The PRAYER.

O Dearest GOD, who hast framed man of soul and body, and fitted him with faculties, and proportionable instruments to serve thee according to all

our capacities: let thy Holy Spirit rule and sanctifie every power and member both of soul and body, that they may keep that beauteous order, which in our creation thou didst intend, and to which thou doest restore thy people in the renovations of grace that our affections may be guided by reason, our understanding may be enlightened with thy word, and then may guide and perswade our will, that we suffer no violent transportation of passions, nor be overcome by a temptation, nor consent to the impure sollicitations of lust; that sin may not reign in our mortal bodies, but that both bodies and souls may be conformable to the sufferings of the holy JESUS, that in our bodie we may bear the marks and dying of our LORD: and in our spirits we may be humble and mortified, and like him in all his imitable perfections, that we may die to sin and live to righteousness, and after our suffering together with him in this world, we may reign together with him hereafter, to whom in the unity of the most mysterious Trinity be all glory and dominion and praise for ever and ever. Amen.



### Sect. 9.

## Of JESUS being baptized, and going into the wildernesse to be tempted.

**N**ow the full time was come, JESUS took leave of his Mother and his trade, to begin his Fathers work and the office Propheticall in order to the redeniptio[n] of the world; and when John was baptizing in Jordan, JESUS came to John to be baptized of him. The Baptist had never seen his face, because they had been from their infancy driven to severall places, designed to severall imployments, and never met till now. But immediately the holy Ghost inspired S. John with a discerning and knowing spirit, and at his first arrivall he knew him, and did him worship. And when Jesus desired to be baptized, John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee and comest thou to me? For the Baptisme of John, although it was not a direct instrument of the spirit for the collation of grace, nor that we finde administred in any form of words, not so much as in the name of CHRIST to come (as \* many dream). because even after John had baptized the Pharisees still doubted, if he were the Messias, which they would not, if in his form of ministration he had published CH RIST to come after him: and also because it had not been proper for CH RIST himself to have received that baptism, whose form had specified himself to come hereafter) yet it was a ceremonious consignation of the doctrine of repentance, which was one great

\* Gabriel, Sotus,  
Scotus, &c.

part of the Covenant Evangelical, and was a Divine institution, the suscep-  
tion of it was in order to the fulfilling all righteousness, it was a signe of  
humility, the persons baptized confessed their sins, it was a sacramental  
dispensing to the baptism of CHRIST; but therefore John wondered, why  
the *Messias*, the Lamb of GOD, pure and without spot, who needed not  
the abstinencies of repentance, or the washings of baptisme, should demand  
it, and of him, a sinner and his servant.

But the holy JESUS who came (as himself in answer to the *Baptist's* que-  
stion professed) to fulfil all righteousness, would receive that rite which  
his Father had instituted in order to the manifestation of his Sonne.  
For although the *Baptist* had a glimpse of him by the first irradiations  
of the Spirit, yet John professed That he therefore came baptizing  
with water, that Jesus might be manifested to Israel, and it was also a signe  
given to the *Baptist* himself, that on whomsoeuer he saw the spirit descend-  
ing and remaining, he is the person that baptizeth with the holy Ghost. And  
GOD chose to actuate the signe at the waters of Jordan in great and religio-  
us assemblies conven'd there at Johns baptisme, and therefore J E S U S  
came to be baptized, and by this baptisme became known to John (who  
as before he gave to him an indiscriminate testimony, so now he point-  
ed out the person in his Sermons and discourses.) He was now manifest  
to Israel, he confirmed the baptisme of John, he sanctified the water to  
become sacramental and ministerial in the remission of sins, and he did in  
a symbol purifie humane nature, whose stains and guilt he had undertaken.

As soon as John had performed his ministry, and Jesus was baptized,  
he prayed and the heavens were opened and the air clarilied by a new and  
glorious light, and the holy Ghost in the visible representment of a Dove  
alighted upon his sacred head, and GOD the Father gave a voice from  
Heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. This  
was the inauguration and proclamation of the *Messias*, when he be-  
gan to be the Great Prophet of the New Covenant. And this was  
the greatest meeting that ever was upon earth, where the whole Cabi-  
net of the mysterious Trinity was opened, and slewn, as much as the  
capacities of our present imperfections will permit: the second person in  
the veil of humanity, the third in the shape of a Dove, but the first kept  
his primitive state, and as to the Israclites he gave notice by way of  
caution, ye saw no shape, but ye heard a voice; so now also GOD the Father  
gave testimony to his holy Son, and appeared onely in a voice, without  
any visible representment.

3.

When the rite and the solemnity was over, CHRIST ascended up out  
of the waters, and left so much vertue behinde him, that, as *Gregorius Turonensis*  
reports, that creek of the River, where his holy body had been baptizt,  
was indued with a healing quality, and a power of curing  
Lepers, that bath'd themselves in those waters, in the faith and with invoca-  
tion of the holy Name of JESUS. But the manifestation of this power  
was not till afterwards, for as yet JESUS did no miracles.

4.

As soon as ever the S A V I O U R of the World was baptized, had  
opened the heavens, which yet never had been opened to Man, and was  
declared the Sonne of GOD, JESUS was by the Spirit driven into the  
Wildernes, not by an unnatural violence, but by the efficacies of inspira-  
tion, and a supernatural inclination and activity of resolution; for it  
was

5.

was the holy spirit that bore him thither, he was lead by the good Spirit, to be tempted by the *evil*, whither also he was pleased to retire to make demonstration that even in an active life, such as he was designed to and intended, some recesses and temporary dimissions of the world are most expedient, for such persons especially whose office is Propheticall, and for institution of others; that by such vacancies in prayer and contemplation they may be better enabled to teach others, when they have in such retirements conversed with God.

In the Desert, which was four miles from the place of his Baptisme, and about twenty miles from Jerusalem, as the common computations are, he did abide forty dayes, and forty nights, where he was perpetually disturbed and assaulted with evil spirits, in the midst of wilde beasts, in a continuall fast without eating bread or drinking water; *and the Angels ministred to him*, being Messengers of comfort and sustentation sent from his Father for the support and service of his humanity, and employed in resisting and discountenancing the assaults and temporall hostilities of the spirits of darknesse.

Whether the Devils appeared in any horrid and affrighting shapes is not certain; but it is more likely, to a person of so great sanctity and high designation they would appear more Angelical and immateriall, in representments intellectuall, in words and idea's, temptations and inticements, because JESUS was not a person of those low weaknesses to be affrighted or troubled with an ugly phantasm, which can do nothing but abuse the weak and imperfect conceptions of persons nothing extraordinary. And this was the way which Satan or the Prince of the Devils took, whose temptations were reserved for the last assault, and the great day of triall, for at the expiration of his forty dayes, JESUS being hungry, the tempter invited him only to eat bread of his own providing, which might refresh his humanity and prove his Divinity, hoping that his hunger, and the desire of convincing the Devil, might tempt him to eat before the time appointed. But Jesus answered, *It is written Man shall not live by Bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.*

The Devil having failed in this assault, tries him again, requiring but a demonstration of his being the Son of GOD. He sets him upon a pinnacle of the Temple, and invites him to throw himself down, upon a pretence that GOD would send his Angels to keep his Son, and quotes Scripture for it: but JESUS understood it well; and though he was secur'd of GODS protection, yet he would not tempt GOD, nor sollicite his providence to a dereliction by tempting him to an unnecessary conservation. This assault was silly and weak. But at last he unites all his power of stratagem, and places the holy JESUS upon an exceeding high Mountain, and by an Angelical power draws into one Center Species and Idea's from all the Kingdoms and glories of the World, and makes an admirable Map of beauties, and representeth it to the eyes of JESUS, saying, that, all that was put into his power to give, and he would give it him, if he would fall down and worship him. But then the holy Lamb was angry as a provoked Lion, and commanded him away, when his temptations were violent and his demands impudent and blasphemous. Then the Devil leaveth him, and the Angels came and ministred unto him, bringing such things as his necessities required, after he had

by

by a fourty dayes fast done penance for our sins, and consign'd to his Church the doctrine and discipline of fasting, in order to a contemplative life, and the resisting and overcoming all the temptations and allurements of the Devil, and all our ghoſtly enemies.

### Ad. Sect. 9.

## *Considerations upon the baptizing, fasting, and temptation of holy JESUS by the Devil.*

¶ Hen the day did break, and the *Baptist* was busie in his offices, the Sun of Righteouſneſſe ſoon entred upon our Hemisphere; and after he had lived a life of darkneſſe and ſilence for thirty yeers together, yet now that he came to do the greatest work in the World, and to minister in the moſt honourable Embaſſie, he would do nothing of ſingularity, but fulfiſ all righteouſneſſe and ſatisfie all Commands, and joyn in the common rites and Sacraſtis, which all people innocent or penitent did undergo, either as deleteries of ſin or instruments of grace. For ſo he would neeſt be baptiſed by his ſervant; and though he was of purity ſufficient to do it, and did actuall by his baptism purifie the purifier, and ſanctifie that, and all other ſtreams to a holy miniftry and effect, yet he went in, bowing his head like a finner, unclothing himſelf like an im‐perfect person, and craving to be washt, as if he had been crufed with an impure leprouſie, thereby teaching us to submit our ſelves to all those rites which he would iſtitute; and although ſome of them, be like the baptism of *John* joyned with confeſſion of lins, and publication of our infirmities, yet it were better for us, to lay by our loads, and wash our ulcers, then by con‐cealing them, out of vainer deſires of impertinent reputation, cover our diſ‐caſe till we are heart‐ſick and dye. But when ſo holy a perfon does all the pious miſteries of the more imperfect, it is a demonstration to us, that a life common and ordinary, without affectation or ſingularity, is the moſt prudent and ſafe. Every great change, every violence of fortune, all eminencies and unevennesſes whatſoever, whither of perfon or accident or ci‐cumſtance, puts us to a new trouble, requires a diſtinct care, creates new dangers, objects more tempiations, marks us out the obiect of envy, makes our ſtanding more inſecu‐re, and our fall moſe contemptible and ri‐diculous. But an ever life ſpent with as much rigour of duty to GOD as ought to be, yet in the ſame manner of devotions, in the fulception of ordinary offices, in bearing publick burdens, frequen‐ting publick assemblies, performing offices of civility, receiving all the rites of an eſtabliſhed religion, complying with na‐tional cuſtomes, and hereditary ſolemnities of a people, in nothing diſquieting publick peace, or diſrelifiing the great instruments of an innocent communion, or diſſolving the circumſtantial ligaments of charity, or breaking Laws, and the great relations and neceſſitudes of the World, out of fancy or ſingularity, is the beſt way to live holi‐ly and ſa‐fely, and happily: laſter from ſin & envy, and more removed from trouble & tempiation.

When

2.

When JESUS came to John to be baptized, John out of humility and modesty refused him, but when JESUS by reduplication of his desire, fortifying it with a command, made it in the Baptist to become a duty, then he obeyed. And so also did the primitive Clerks refuse to do offices of great dignity, and highest ministry, looking through the honour upon the danger, and passing by the dignity they considered the charge of the cure, and knew, that the eminency of the office was in all senses *insecure* to the person, till by command and peremptory injunction of their Superiors it was put past a dispute, and became necessary, and that either they must perish instantly in the ruines and precipices of disobedience, or put it to the hazard, and a fair venture for a brighter crown, or a bigger damnation. I wish also this care were entailed, and did descend upon all ages of the Church; for the ambitious seeking of dignities and prelatures Ecclesiastical is grown the Pest of the Church, and corrupts the salt it self, and extinguishes the lights, and gives too apparent evidences to the world that neither the end is pure, nor the intention sanctified, nor the person innocent, but the purpose ambitious or covetous, and the person vicious, and the very entrance into Church offices is with an impure torch, and a foul hand, or a heart empty of the affections of religion, or thoughts of doing Gods work. I do not think the present age is to be treated with, concerning denying to accept rich Prelacies and pompous dignities, but it were but reasonable that the main intention, and intellectuall design shoulde be to appreciate, and esteem the office and imployment to be of greatest consideration. It is lawfull to desire a Bishoprick, neither can the unwillingnesse to accept it be, in a prudent account, adjudged the aptest disposition to receive it, (especially if done in \* ceremony, just in the instant of their entertainment of it, and possibly after a long ambition) but yet it were well if we remember, that such desires must be sanctified with holy care and diligence in the office; for the honey is guarded with thousands of little, and sharp stings and dangers, and it will be a sad account, if we be called to audite for the crimes of our Diocese, after our own talleys are made even; and he, that beleeveth his own load to be big enough, and trembles at the apprehension of the horrors of Doomesday, is not very wise, if he takes up those burdens, which, he sees, have crushed their Bearers, and presses his own shoulders till the bones crack, onely because the bundles are wrapt in white linnen, and bound with silken cords. *He that desires the office of a Bishop, desires a good work*, saith S. Paul, and therefore we must not look on it for the fair spreading sailes and the beauteous streamers, which the favour of Princes hath put to it, to make it saile fairer, and more secure against the dangers of secular disconforts; but upon the burden it bears; Prelacy is a good work, and a good work well done is very honourable, and shall be rewarded, but he, that consideris the infinite dangers of miscarrying, and that the losse of the ship will be imputed to the Pilot, may think it many times the safest course to put God or his superiors to the charge of a Command, before he undertakes such grear ministeries; And he that enters in by the force of authority as he himself receives a testimony of his worth and aptnesse to the imployment, so he gives the world another, that his search for it was not criminall, nor his person immodest, and by his weighty apprehension of his dangers he will consider his work and obtain a grace to do it diligently, and to be accepted graciously. And this was the modesty and prudence of the Baptist.

\* In Pontifical  
Rom.

When

*When Jesus was baptized, he prayed and the heavens were opened.* External rites of Divine Institution receive benediction and energy from above, but it is by the mediation of Prayer; \* for there is nothing ritual, but it is also <sup>2.3.</sup> joyned with something moral, and required on our part in all persons capable of the use of reason, that we may understand that the blessings of Religion are works and graces too; GOD therefore requiring us to do something, not that we may glory in it, but that we may estimate the grace, and go to GOD for it in the means of his own hallowing; Naaman had been stupid, if when the Prophet bad him wash seven times in Jordan for his cure, he had not confessed the cure to be wrought by the GOD of Israel, and the ministry of his Prophet, but had made himself the Author, because of his obedience to the enjoyned condition; and it is but a weak fancy to derogate from GODS grace, and the glory and the freedom of it, because he bids us wash before we are cleansed, and pray when we are washed, and commands us to ask before we shall receive. But this also is true from this instance, that the external rite of Sacrament, is so instrumental in a spiritual grace, that it never does it, but with the conjunction of something moral; and this truth is of so great perswasion in the Greek Church, that the mystery of Consecration in the venerable Eucharist is amongst them attributed not to any mystical words, and secret operations of syllables, but to the efficacy of the prayers of the Church, in the just imitation of the whole action, and the rite of institution. And the purpose of it is, that we might secure the excellence and holinesse of such prædispositions, and concomitant graces, which are necessary to the worthy and effectual susception of the external rites of Christianity.

After the holy JESUS was baptized and had prayed, *the Heavens opened, the holy Ghost descended*, and a voice from Heaven proclaimed him to be the Son of GOD, and one in whom the Father was well pleased; and the same ointment, that was cast upon the head of our High Priest, went unto his beard, and thence fell to the borders of his garment; for as CHRIST our Head felt these effects in manifestation, so the Church believes G O D does to her, and to her meanest children in the susception of the holy rite of Baptism in right, apt, and holy dispositions. For the Heavens open too upon us, and the holy Ghost descends to sanctifie the waters, and to hallow the Catechumen, and to pardon the passed and repented sins, and to configne him to the inheritance of sons, and to put on his military girdle, and give him the Sacrament and oath of fidelity; for all this is understood to be meant by those frequent expreſſions of Scripture, calling baptism the laver of regeneration, illumination, a wajing away the filth of the flesh, and the answer of a good conscience, a being buried with Christ, and many others of the like purpose and signification. But we may also learn hence sacredly to esteem the rites of Religion, which he first sanctified by his own personal susception, and then made necessary by his own institution and command, and GOD hath made to be conveyances of blessing and ministeries of the holy Spirit.

The holy Ghost descended upon JESUS in the symbole or visible representation of a Doye, whose proprieties of nature are pretty and modest Hieroglyphicks of the duty of spiritual persons, which are thus observed in both Philosophies; the Dove sings not but mourns, it hath no gall, strikes not with its bill, hath no crooked talons, and forgets its young ones soonest.

Austin Mart a-  
pol. Euseb. E-  
stis lemn. de  
pach. S. August.  
1.3 c.4. de Trin.

4.

Ephes.5.26.  
Hebr.10.32.  
1 Pet.3.21.  
Rom.5.4.

5.

soonest of any the inhabitants of the air ; and the effects of the holy Spirit are symbolical in all the sons of sanctification. For the voice of the Church is sad in those accents, which expresse her own condition ; but as the Dove is not so sad in her brest, as in her note : so neither is the interiour condition of the Church wretched and miserable , but indeed her song is most of it Elegy within her own walls, and her condition looks sad, and her joyes are not pleasures in the publike estimate , but they , that afflict her, think her miserable , because they know not the sweetnesse of a holy peace and serenity , which supports her spirit , and plaines the heart under a rugged brow, making the soul festivall under the noise of a Threne and fadde groanings. But the Sons of consolation are also taught their duty by this apparition : for upon whomsoever the Spirit descends , he teaches him to be meek and charitable, neither offending by the violence of hands, or looser language. For the Dove is inoffensive in beak , and foot , and feelest no disturbance and violence of passions when its dearest intereests are destroyed, that we also may be of an even Spirit in the faddest accidentes, which usually discompose our peace ; and however , such symbolicall intimationes, receive their efficacy from the Fancy of the contriver, yet here, whether this apparition did intend any such morall representment , or no, it is certain that where ever the Holy Spirit does dwell, there also Peace and Sanctity, Meeknesse and Charity, a mortified will, and an active dereliction of our desires do inhabite.

6

*Ecclesiasticus. 2. 1.* No sooner had the voice of God pronounced Jesus to be the welbeloved Son of God, but the Devil thought it of great concernment to attempt him withall his malice and his art ; and that is the condition of all those, whom Gods grace hath separated from the common expectations and societies of the world ; and therefore the Son of Sirach gave geod advice, *My Son, if thou come to serve the Lord, prepare thy Soul for temptation* ; for not onely the Spirits of darknesse are exasperated at the declension of their own kingdom, but also the nature and constitution of vertues , and eminent graces, which holy persons exercise in their lives, is such as to be easily assaileable by their contraries, apt to be lessened by time, to be interrupted by wearinesse, to grow flat and insipid by tediousnesse of labour, to be omitted and grow infrequent by the impertinent diversions of society and secular occasions ; so that to reſcind the ligaments of vice, made firm by nature and evil habits, to acquire every new degree of vertue , to continue the holy fires of zeal in their just proportion, to overcome the Devil , and to reject the invitations of the world, and the softer embraces of the flesh, which are the proper imployment of the sons of God, is a perpetuall difficulty , and every possibility of prevaricating the strictnesses of a duty is a temptation, and an insecuritie to them who have begun to serve God in hard battles.

7

The Holy Spirit did drive J E S U S into the wildernes to be tempted by the Devil ; and though we are bound to pray instantly , that we fall in no temptation , yet if by divine permission , or by an inspiration of the Holy Spirit we be engaged in an action or course of life that is full of temptation, and empty of comfort , let us apprehend it as an issue of Divine Providence, as an occasion of the rewards of diligence and Patience , as an instrument of vertue, as a designation of that way , in which we must glorie GOD , but no argument of disfavour , since our Dearest LORD,

the

the most Holy JESUS, who could have driven the Devil away by the breath of his mouth yet was by the Spirit of his Father, permitted to a triall and molestaſtation by the ſpirits of Darkneſſe. And this is S. James counſell, *James 1.2.*  
*My Brethren, count it all joy, when ye enter into divers temptations, knowing that the triall of your faith worketh Patience.* So far is a Bleſſing, when the Spirit is the iſtrument of our motion, and brings us to the triall of our Faith: but if the Spirit leaves us and delivers us over to the Devil, not to be tempted, but to be abuſed and ruined, it is a ſad condition, and the greateſt iſtance of their infelicity, whom the Churche upon ſufficient reaſon and with coniuent authority delivers over to Satan, by the iſtinction of the Greater Excommunication.

8

As ſoo as it was permitted to the Devil to tempt our Lord, he, like fire, had no power to ſuſpend his act, but was as intirely determined by the fullneſſe of his malice, as a naturall agent by the appetites of nature, that we may know, to whom we owe the happinesses of all thofe hours and dayes of peace, in which we ſit under the trees of Paradise, and ſee no ſerpent encircling the branches, and preſenting uſ with fair fruit to riui us. It is the mercy of God, we have the quietneſſe of a minute, for if the Devils chain were taken off, he would make our very beds a torment, *our tables to be a ſnare, our ſleeps phantaſtick, luſtfull and illuſive, and every ſenſe ſhould have an object of delight and danger, an Hyana to kiſſe, and to periſh in its embraces.* But the Holy JESUS having been auſſaulted by the Devil, and ſelt his malice by the experiments of humanity, is become ſo merciſfull a high Prieſt and ſo ſenſible of our ſufferings and danger, by the apprehenſions of compassion, that he hath put a hook into the noſtrils of Leviathan, and although the reliques of ſeven nations be in our borders and fringes of our Countrey, yet we live as ſafe as did the Israelites, upon whom ſometimes an inroad and iuſtation was made, and ſometimes they had reſt fourty yeares, and when the ſtorm came, ſome remedy was found out, by his grace, by whose permission the tempeſt was ſtirred up; and we find many persons, who in ſeven yeares meet not with a violent temptation to a crime; but their battels are againſt impediments and retardations of improvement: their own rights are not directly queſtioned; but the Devil and ſin are wholly upon the deſenſive. Our duty here is an act of affection to God, making returns of thankeſ for the protection; and of duty to ſecure and continue the fauour.

But the deſign of the Holy Ghost being to expoſe JESUS to the temptation, he arns himſelf with fasting and prayer againſt the day of battle, he continues in the wildernesſe fourty dayes and fourty nights without meat or drink, attending to the immediate addreſſes and colloquies with God, not ſuffering the interruption of meales, but repreſenting his own, and the neceſſities of all mankind with affections and iſtances of ſpirit, love and wiſdom, as might expreſſe the excellency of his perſon and promote the work of our redempſion, his converſation being in this intervaſl, but a reſemblance of Angelicall perfeſtion; and his fasts not an iſtrument of mortification, for he needed none, he had contracted no ſtaiñ from his own, nor his Parents acts, neither do we finde, that he was at all hungry, or affliſted with his abſtinence, till after the expiraſion of the fourty dayes. *He was afterwards an hungry* (ſaid the Evangelie)

9

Evangelist,) and his abstinence from meat might be a defecation of his facultie, and an opportunity of Prayer, but we are not sure it intended any thing else : but it may concern the prudence of religion to snatch at this occasion of duty, so far as the instance is imitable ; and in all violences of temptation to fast and pray, Prayer being a rare antidote against the poyson, and Fasting a convenient disposition to intense, actuall, and vndisturbed prayer.

10

The Devils first temptation of Christ was upon the instances and first necessities of nature , Christ was hungry and the Devil invited him to break his fast upon the expense of a miracle , by turning the stones into bread. But the answer JESUS made, was such as taught us , since the ordinary providence of God is sufficient for our provision or support, extraordinary wayes of satisfying necessities are not to be undertaken, but God must be relied upon, his time attended , his manner exacted, and his measure thankfully received. JESUS refused to be relieved , and denied to manifest the Divinity of his person rather then he would do an act, which had in it the intimation of a diffident spirit, or might be expounded a disreputation to Gods Providence. And therefore it is an impudent care, and impious security to take evill courses, and use vile instruments to furnish our Table, and provide for our necessities. God will certainly give us bread , and till he does , we can live by the breath of his mouth, by the word of God , by the light of his countenance , by the refreshment of his promises ; for if God gives not provisions into our granaries, he can feed us out of his own, that is, out of the repositories of charity. If the flesh pots be removed, he can also alter the appetite , and when our stock is spent, he can also lessen the necessity : or if that continues, he can drown the sense of it, in a deluge of patience and resignation. Every word of Gods mouth can create a grace , and every grace can supply two necessities, both of the body and the spirit, by the comforts of this, to support that , that they may bear each others burden and alleviate the pressure.

11

But the Devil is always prompting us to change our stones into bread, our sadness into sensuell comfort, our drynesses into inundations of fancy and exterior sweetneses : for he knows that the ascetick Tables of Mortification, and the stones of the Desert are more healthfull, then the fullnesses of voluptuousnesse , and the corn of the valleys. He cannot endure we should live a life of austerity or self Denial: if he can get us but to satisfie our senses, and a little more freely to please our naturall desires, he then hath a fair field for the battle ; but so long as we force him to fight in hedges and morasses, encircling and crowding up his strengths into disadvantages, by our stone walls our hardnesses of Discipline and rudenesses of Mortification, we can with more facilities repell his flatteries and receive fewer incommodities of spirit : but thus the Devill will abuse us by the impotency of our naturall desires, and therefore let us go to God for satisfaction of our wishes ; God can and does, when it is good for us change our stones into bread : for he is a Father so mercifull, that if we ask him a Fish , he will not give us a Scorpion : if we ask him bread, he will not offer us a stone ; but will satisfie all our desires by ministrations of the spirit, making stones to become our meat, and teares our drink ; which, although they are unpleasent , and harsh to naturall appetites , yet by the operation and influences of Gods

GODS holy Spirit, they are made instruments of health, and life, and salvation.

The Devil, perceiving JESUS to be a person of greater eminency and perfection then to be moved by sensual and low desires, makes a second assault by a temptation something more spiritual, and tempts him to presumption and indiscreet confidence, to a throwing himself down from the pinnacles of the Temple, upon the stock of Predestination, that GOD might secure him by the ministry of Angels, and so prove his being the Son of GOD. And indeed it is usual with the Devil, when severe persons have so much mortified their lower appetites, that they are not easily overcome by an invitation of carnality or intemperance, to stir them to opinions of their own sanctity, and make their first escaping prove their second and greater dangers. But that the Devil should perswade JESUS to throw himself down, because he was the Son of GOD, was an invitation to no purpose, save only that it gave occasion to this truth, that GODS providence secures all his sons in the wayes of Nature, and while they are doing their duty; but loves not to be tempted to acts unreasonable and unnecessary. Heron, an inhabitant of the Desert, suffered the same temptation and was overcome by it, for he died with his fall, sinfully and ingloriously. For the carelesse of GODS love to his saints and servants are security against all, but themselves. The Devil and all the World offer to do them mischief, but then they shall be safe, because they are innocent; if they once offer to do the same to themselves, they lose their protection because they lost their prudence and their charity. But here also it will concern all those, who by their eminent imployment and greater ministeries in Ecclesiasticals are set upon the pinnacle of the Temple, to take care that the Devil tempt not them to a precipice; a fall from so great a height will break the bones in pieces: and yet there also the station is least firm, the posture most uneasie, the prospect vertiginous, and the Devil busie and desirous to thrust us headlong.

S. Hierome here observes well, the Devil intending mischief to our blessed SAVIOUR invited him to cast himself down. He may perswade us to a fall, but cannot precipitate us without our own act. And it is an infinite mercy in GOD, that the Devil, who is of malice infinite, is of so restrain'd and limited a power, that he can do us no ghostly disadvantage, but by persuading us to do it our selves. And then it will be a strange imprudence to lay violent and unreasonable hands upon our selves, and do that mischief, which our strongest and most malicious Adversary cannot, or to be invited by the onely Rhetorick of a Dogs barking to come neer him, to untye his chains, to unloose his muzzle for no other end, but that we may be bitten. Just such a fool is every person that consents to the temptations of the Devil.

By this time the Devil began to perceive that this was the Son of GOD, and designed to be the King of all the World, and therefore resolved for the last assault to proffer him the Kingdoms of the World; thinking ambition more likely to mine him, because he knew it was that, which prevailed upon himself, and all those fallen stars, the Angels of Darknesse. That the Devil told a lye it is most likely, when he said, he had power to dispose the Kingdoms of the World; for originally and by proper inherent right GOD alone disposes all governments; but it is also certain, that the Devil is a person

12.

13.

S. Hieron. in 4.  
cap. Mat.

14.

a person capable of a delegate imployment in some great mutation of States, and many probabilites have been observed by wise personages, persuading that the *Grandeur* of the Roman Empire was in the degrees of increment and decrement permitted to the power and managing of the *Dévil*, that the greatnesse of that government being in all appearance full of advantage to Satans kingdom, and employed for the dis-improvement of the weak beginnings and improbable increase of Christianity, might give lustre and demonstration to it that it came from GOD, since the great permissions of power made to the Devil, and acted with all art and malice in defiance of the religion, could produce no other effect upon it, but that it made it grow greater; and the greatnesse was made more miraculous, since the Devil when his chain was off, fain woud, but could not suppress it.

15.

The Lamb of GOD, that heard him with patience tempt him to do himself a mischief, and to throw himself headlong, could by no means endure it, when he tempted to a direct dishonouring GOD; our own injuries are opportunities of patience; but when the glory of GOD and his immediate honour is the question, then is the occasion and precise minute for the flames of a clear shining and unconsuming zeal. But the care of GODS glory had so filled and employed all the faculties of JESUS, that it takes no notice of the offer; and it were well also that we had fewer opinions of the lustre of worldly dignities, or at least that we in imitation of our blessed Master should refuse to accept all the World when it is to be bought of the Devil at the expence of a deadly sin. For that government cannot be very honourable, that makes us slaves to the worst of Tyrants; and all those Princes and great personages who by injury and usurpation possesse and invade others rights, would do well to consider, that a Kingdom is too dearely paid for, if the condition be first to worship the Devil.

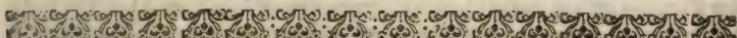
16.

When the Devil could do no good, he departed for a time. If he could ever have spied a time of returning he wanted nor will nor malice to observe and use it, and although JESUS was a person without danger, yet I doubt not but the holy Ghost described that circumstance, that we should not have the securities of a deep peace, when we have had the successe of conquerours; for a surprize is most full of horrour and of more certain ruine; so that we have no security, but a perpetual observation; that, together with the grace of GOD, (who takes care of all his servants, and will drive away the Tempter, when he pleases, and help us alwayes when we need) is as great argument for our confidence and encouragement to our prayers and addresse to GOD, as it is safety to our person, and honour to our victory. And let us account it our honour, that the trials of temptation, which is the greatest sadnessse of our condition, is hallowed by the temptation of JESUS, and our condition assured by his assistances, and the assistances procured by our prayers, most easily upon the advantage of his sufferings and compassion.

The

# The PRAYER.

O Holy JESUS, who didst fulfil all righteousness, and didst live a life of evenesse, and obedience and community, submitting thy self to all rites and sanctons of divine ordinance, give me grace to live in the fellowship of thy holy Church, a life of piety, and without singularity, receiving the sweet influence of thy Sacraments and rites, and living in the purities and innocencies of my first Sanctification. I adore thy goodness infinite, that thou hast been pleased to wash my soul in the laver of Regeneration, that thou hast confign'd me to the participation of thy favours by the holy Eucharist; let me not return to the infirmities of the old Man, whom thou hast crucified on thy crosse, and who was buried with thee in Baptisme, nor renew the crimes of my sinful years, which were so many recessions from baptismal purities, but let me ever receive the emissions of thy Divine Spirit, and be a Son of GOD, a partner of thine immortal inheritance; and when thou seest it needful, I may receive testimony from heaven, that I am thy servant, and thy childe; and grant that I may so walk, that I neither disrepute the honour of the Christian institution, nor stain the whiteness of that innocence, which thou didst invest my soul withal, when I put on the Baptismal Robe, nor break my holy vow, nor lose my right of inheritance, which thou hast given me by promise and grace, but that thou mayest love me, with the love of a Father, and a Brother, and a Husband, and a Lord, and I serve thee in the communion of Saints, in the susception of Sacraments, in the actions of a holy life, and in a never-failing love, or interrupted Devotion; to the glory of thy Name, and the promotion of all those ends of Religion, which thou hast design'd in the excellent Oeconomy of Christianity. Grant this holy JESUS for thy mercies sake, and for the honour of thy Name, which is and shall be adored for ever and ever. Amen.



## Discourse V.

### Of TEMPTATION.

**G**OD, who is the Fountain of good, did choose rather to bring good out of evil, then not to suffer any evil to be; not only because variety of accidents and natures do better entertain our affections, and move our spirits, who are transported and suffer great impressions by a circumstance, by the very opposition and accidental lustre and eminency of contraries, but also that the glory of the Divine Providence in turning the nature of things into the desigues of GOD might be illustrious, and that we may in a mixt condition have more observation, and after our danger and our labour may obtain a greater reward; for Temptation is the opportunity of Vertue and a Crown; GOD having disposed us in such a condition, that our vertues must be difficult, our inclinations averse and corrigible, our avocations many, our hostilities bitter, our dangers proportionable, that our labour might be great, our inclinations suppressed and corrected, our intentions be made actu-

Eras mi frater,  
erras si puras un  
quam Christia-  
num persecu-  
tionem non pati  
Tunc maxime  
oppugnaris, si  
te oppugnari  
necis. S. Hier.  
ad Heliod.

all, our enemies be resisted, and our dangers passe into security and hon-  
ours if puras un nour, after a contestation, and a victory, and a perseverance. It is  
every Mans case; trouble is as certainly the lot of our nature and inheri-  
tance, and we are so sure to be tempted, that in the deepest peace and si-  
lence of spirit oftentimes is our greatest danger; *not to be tempted* is often-  
times our most subtle temptation. It is certain then, we cannot be secure  
when our security is our enemy; but therefore we must do as GOD himself  
does, make the best of it, and not to be sad at that, which is the publick  
portion and the case of all Men, but to order it according to the intention,  
place it in the eye of virtue, that al its actions & motions may tend thither,  
there to be chang'd into felicities. But certain it is, unless we first be cut  
and hewen in the mountains, we shall not be fixed in the Temple of  
GOD; but by incision and contusions our roughnesses may become plain, or  
our sparks kindled, and we may be either for the Temple, or the Altar, spi-  
ritual building, or holy fire, something that GOD shall delight in, and then  
the temptation was not amise.

And therefore we must not wonder, that oftentimes it so happens,  
that nothing will remove a temptation, no diligence, no advices, no  
labour, no prayers; not because these are ineffectual, but because it is most  
fit the temptation shoud abide, for ends of GODS designing; and al-  
though Saint Paul was a person, whose prayers were likely to be preva-  
leant, and his industry of much prudence and efficacy toward the drawing  
out of his thorne, yet GOD would not do it, but continued his war, onely  
promising to send him succour, *My grace is sufficient for thee*; meaning he  
should have an enemy to try his spirit and improve it, and he should  
also have GODS grace to comfort and support it, but as without GODS  
grace the Enemy would spoil him, so without an Enemy GODS grace  
would never swell up into glory and crown him. For the caresses of a plea-  
sant Fortune are apt to swel into extravagancies of spirit, and burst into the  
dissolution of manners; an unmixt joy is dangerous; but if in our fairest  
flowers we spie a Locust, or feel the uneasiness of a Sackcloth under our fine  
linen, or our purple be tyed with an uneven and a rude cord; any little  
trouble, but to correct our wildnesse, though it be but a Deaths-head fer-  
ved up at our feasts, it will make our tables fuller of health, and freer from  
snare, it will allay our spirits, making them to retire from the weaknesse of  
dispersion, to the union and strength of a sober recollection.

Since therefore it is no part of our imployment or our care to be free  
from al the attempts of an enemy, but to be safe in despight of his hostility;  
it now will concern us to inform our selves of the state of the war in gene-  
ral, and then to make provisions and to put on armour accordingly.

I. S. \* Cyprian often observes, and makes much of the discourse, that  
the Devil when he intends a battery, first views the strengths and situ-  
ation of the place; His sense drawn out of the cloud of an allegory is this,  
The Devil first considers the constitution and temper of the person he is to  
tempt, and where he observes his natural inclination apt for a vice, he pre-  
sents him with objects and opportunity, and arguments fitting to his cay-  
tive disposition; from which he is likely to receive the smaller opposition,  
since there is a party within, that desires his intromission. Thus to lustfull  
natures he represents the softer whispers of the spirit of fornication. To the  
angry and revengeful he offers to consideration the satisfactions and content  
of

\* Serm. de  
celo.

of a full revenge, and the emissions of anger: To the envious he makes Panegyricks of our rivals, and swels our fancies to opinion, our opinion to self-love, self-love to arrogance, and these are supported by contempt of others, and all determine upon envy, and expire in malice. Now in these cases, when our natures are caytive and unhandsome, it were good we were conscious of our own weaknesses, and by special arts and strengths of mortification fortifie that part, where we are apt and exposed to danger; we are sure enough to meet a storm there, and we also are likely to perish in it, unless we correct those aversenesses and natural indispositions, and reduce them to the evennesses of vertue, or the affections and moderation of a good nature: Let us be sure that the Devil take not a helle from our own branches to fit his ax, that so he may cut the tree down; and certainly he that does violence to his nature will not be easie to the entertainment of affections preternatural and violent.

2. But the Devil also observes all our exterioir accidents, occasions and opportunities of action; he sees what company we keep, he observes what degrees of love we have to our Wives, what loosenesse of affection towards children, how prevalent their persuasions, how inconvenient their discourses, how trifling their interests, and to what degrees of determination they move us by their importunity or their power. The Devil tempted Adam by his wife, because he saw his affections too pliant, and encircling her with the entertainment of fondnesse, joy, wonder, and amorous fancy; it was her hand that made the fruit beauteous to Adam; *she saw it fair of it self, and so she eat;* but Adam was not moved by that argument, but the Woman gave it me and I did eat: she gave vivacity to the temptation, and efficacy to the argument. And the severity of the Mans understanding would have given a reasonable answer to the insinuations of the Serpent; that was an ugly beast, and his arguments not being of themselves convincing to a wise person, either must put on advantages of a fair insinuation and reprehentment, or they are return'd with scorn; but when the beauteous hands of his young Virgin Mistresse became the Oratours, the temptation was an amorevolezza, he kisstes the presenter and hugs the ruine. Here therefore it is our safest course to make a retrenchment of all those excrescencies of affections, which like wilde and irregular succours, draw away nourishment from the Trunk, making it as sterile as it self is unprofitable; as we must restrain the inclinations of nature, so also of society and relation, when they become inconvenient, and let nothing of our family be so adopted or naturalized into our affections, as to create with in us a new concupiscence, and a second time spoil our nature; what God intended to us for a help, let not our fondnesse convert into a snare, and he, that is not ready to deny the importunitiess, and to reject the interests of a Wife or childe or Friend, when the question is for God, deserves to misse the comforts of a good, and to feel the troubles of an imperious woman.

We also have ends and designes of our own; some greate purpose, upon which the greatest part of our life turns; It may be, we are to raise a family, to recover a lunk estate, or else ambition, honour, or a great imployment is the great hinge of all our greater actions. And some men are apt to make hast to be rich, or are to passe through a great many difficulties to be honourable; and here the Devil will swell the hopes, and obstruct the passages; he will heighten the desire, and multiply the

Habet n. volup-  
tem quandam  
ad nonitio uxo-  
ria, quum plurī.  
mūnā a natur  
quod consulte.  
S. Chrysoſt.

the businesse of accessse, making the concupisence more impatient, and yet the way to the purchase of our purposes so full of imployment and variety, that both the implacable desire and the multitude of changes and transactions may increase the danger, and multiply the sin. For when the Enemy hath observed our ends, he makes his tentations to reflect from that angle which is direct upon them, provoking to malice and impatience against whomsoever we find standing in our way, whether willingly or by accident; then follow naturally all those sins, which are instrumentall to removing the impediments, to facilitating the passage, to endearing our friends, to procuring more confidents, to securing our hopes, and entring upon possession. Simon Magus had a desire to be accounted some great one, and by that purpose, he was tempted to sorcery and divination, and with a new object he brought a new sin into the world, adding simonie to his sorcery, and taught posterity that crime, which till then had neither name nor being. And those Ecclesiasticks, who violently affect rich or pompous Prelacies, pollute themselves with wordly arts, growing covetous as Syrian Merchants, ambitious as the Levantine Princes, factious as the people, revengefull as jealousie, and proud as conquerours and usurpers, and by this means beasts are brought into the Temple, and the Temple it self is exposed to sale, and the holy rites aswell as the beasts of Sacrifice are made venall; To prevent the infinite inconveniences, that thrust themselves into the common and great roades of our life, the best course is to cut our great channell into little rivulets, making our ends the more, that we may be indifferent to any, proposing nothing great, that our desires may be little, for so we shall be better able to digest the troubles of an Enemy, the contradictions of an unhandsome accident, the crossing of our hopes; because our desires are even, and our ends are lesse considerable, and we can with much readinesse divert upon another purpose, having another ready with the same proportion to our hopes and deires as the first. Thus if we propound to our selves an honest imployment, or a quiet retirement, a work of charity abroad, or of devotion at home, if we misse in our first setting forth, we return to shoar, where we can negotiate with content, it being alike to us, either to traffick abroad with more gain, or trade at home with more safety; but when we once grow great in our desires, fixing too earnestly upon one object, we either grow impatient as Rachel. (Give me children, or I dye) or take ill courses and use unlawfull means (as Thamar, choosing rather to lie with her Father, than to die without issue) or else are miserable in the losse and frustration of our hopes (like the Women of Ramah, who would not be comforted:) Let therefore our life be moderate, our desires reasonable, our hopes little, our ends none in eminency and prelation above others; for as the rayes of light passing through the thin air, end in a small and undiscerned Pyramis; but reflected upon a wall are doubled and increase the warneth to a scorching and troublesome heat: So the desires of Man, if they passe through an even, and an indifferent life towards the issues of an ordinary and necessary course, they are little, and within command; but if they passe upon an end or aim of difficulty or ambition, they duplicate and grow to a disturbance; and we have seen the even and temperate lives of indifferents persons continue in many degrees of innocence; but the temptation of busie designes is too great even for the best of dispositions.

*Vim temperata  
tam Dii quoq;  
provehunt  
In majus: ijdem  
odl're vires  
Omne nefas a-  
timo moventes.*

But these temptations are crasse and material, and soon discernable; it will require some greater observation to arm against such as are more spiritual and immaterial. For he hath apples to cozen children, and gold for Men, the Kingdoms of the World for the ambition of Princes, and the vanities of the World for the intemperate: he hath discourses, and fair spoken principles, to abuse the pretenders to reason, and he hath common prejudices for the more vulgar understandings. Amongst these I chose to consider such as are by way of principle or proposition.

1. The first great principle of temptation, I shall note, is a generall mistake, which excuses very many of our crimes upon pretence of infirmity; calling all these sins, to which by natural disposition we are inclined (though by carelessness and evil customes, they are heightened to a habit,) by the name of *sins of infirmitie*: to which Men suppose they have reason and title to pretend. If, when they have committed a crime, their conscience checks them, and they are troubled, and during the interval and abatement of the heats of desire, resolve against it, and commit it readily at the next opportunity; then they cry out against the weaknesse of their nature; and think, as long as *this body of death* is about them, it must be thus; and that this condition may stand with the state of Grace: And then the sinnes shall return periodically, like the revolutions of a Quartan Ague, well and ill for ever, till Death surprizes the mistaker. This is a Patron of sins, and makes the temptation prevalent by an authentick instrument; and they pretend the words of S. Paul: *For the good that I would, that I do not; but the evil that I would not, that I do: For there is a law in my members rebelling against the law of my minde, bringing me into captivity to the law of sin.* And thus the state of sinne is mistaken for a state of Grace, and the imperfections of the Law are miscalled the afflictions and necessities of Nature, that they might seem to be incurable, and the persons apt for an excuse, therefore, because for nature there is no absolute cure. But that these words of S. Paul may not become a favour of death, and instruments of a temptation to us, it is observable, that the Apostle by a fiction of person (as is usual \* with him) speaks of himself not as in the state of Regeneration, under the Gospel, but under the difficulties, obscurities, insufficiencies, and imperfections of the Law, which indeed he there contends to have been a rule good, and holy, apt to remonstrate our misery, because by its prohibitions, & limits given to natural desires, it made actions (before indifferent) now to be sins; it added many curses to the breakers of it; and by an efficacy of contrariety it made us more desirous of what was now unlawful: but it was a covenant in which our nature was restrained, but not helped; it was provoked, but not sweetly assisted; our understandings were instructed, but our wils not sanctified, and there were no suppletories of repentance; every greater sin was like the fall of an Angel, irreparable by any mystery, or expresse recorded or enjoyned: Now of a Man under this Covenant he describes the condition to be such, that he understands his duty, but by the infirmities of Nature he is certain to fall, and by the helps of the Law not strengthened against it, nor restored after it, and therefore he calls himself under that notion, *a miserable man sold under sin*, not doing according to the rules of the Law or the dictates of his reason, but by the unaltered misery of his nature, certain to prevaricate. But the person described here is not S. Paul, is not any justified person;

Rom.7.152

\* Ut videre  
est. Rom.3.7.  
Gal.2.18.1 Cor.6.12. &  
10.23.29,30.  
& 13.2.

Rom.7.v.8.

11.

Ez 22.

Et v.25.

Gal.5.24.

Rom.6.6.12.

14.

Rom.8.2.

9.

Gal.5.17.

\* *is p̄ m̄t̄*.

Rom.7.14.

Rom.8.6.

10.

not so much as a Christian, but one who is under a state of direct opposition to the state of grace, as will manifestly appear if we observe the antithesis from S. Paul's own characters; for the Man here named is such, as in whom sin wrought all concupiscence, in whom sin lived, and slew him, (so that he was dead in trespasses and sins) and although he did delight in the law after his inward man, that is, his understanding had intellectual complacencies, and satisfactions, which afterwards he calls serving the law of God with his minde (that is, in the first dispositions and preparations of his spirit) yet he could act nothing. For the law in his members did inflave him, and brought him into captivity to the law of sin; so that this person was full of actual and elective lusts, he was a slave to sin and dead in trespasses: But the state of a re-  
generate person is such, as to have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts, in whom sin did not reign, not only in the minde, but even also not in the mortal body; over whom sin had no dominion, in whom the old man was crucified, and the body of sin was destroyed, and sin not at all served. And to make the antithesis yet clearer, in the very beginning of the next Chapter the Apostle saith, that the spirit of life in Christ Jesus had made him free from the law of sin and death: under which law he complained immediately before, he was sold, and killed, to shew the person was not the same in these so different and contradictory representations. No Man in the state of grace can say, *I be evil that I would not that I do*; if by evil he means any evil that is habitual, or in its own nature deadly.

So that now let no Man pretend an inevitable necessity to sin; for if ever it comes to a custome, or to a great violation, though but in a single act, it is a condition of carnality, not of spiritual life; and those are not the infirmities of nature, but the weaknesses of grace that make us sin so frequently, which the Apostle truly affirms to the same purpose; *The flesh lusteth against the spirit, and the spirit against the flesh; & these are contrary the one to the other;* so that [ye cannot] or [that ye \* do not do] the things that ye would. This disability proceeds from the strength of the flesh, and weakness of the spirit: For he addes, *But if ye be led by the spirit, ye are not under the law:* saying plainly, that the state of such a combate, and disability of doing good, is a state of a Man under the law, or in the flesh, which he accounts all one: but every Man that is sanctified under the Gospel, is, *led by the spirit, and walks in the spirit, and brings forth the fruits of the spirit.* It is not our excuse, but the aggravation of our sin, that we fall again in despite of so many resolutions to the contrary: And let us not flatter our selves into a confidence of sin, by supposing the state of grace can stand with the custome of any sin: For it is the state, either of an *animalis homo* (as the Apostle calls him) that is, a Man in pure naturals without the clarity of divine revelations, who cannot perceive or understand the things of God; or else of the *carnal man*, that is, a person, who though in his minde he is convinced, yet he is not yet freed from the dominion of sin; but only hath his eyes opened, but not his bonds loosed. For by the perpetual analogy and frequent expresses in Scripture, the *spiritual person*, or the Man redeemed by the spirit of life in Christ Jesus, is free from the Law, and the Dominion, & the Kingdom, &c the Power of all sin. *For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.*

But sins of infirmity in true sense of Scripture signify nothing, but the sins of an unholie and an unsanctified nature; when they are taken for actions done against the strength of resolution out of the strength of natural appetite.

petite and violence of desire : and therefore in scripture the state of Sin, and the state of infirmity is all one. For, when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the \* ungodly (saith the Apostle;) the condition in which we were, when Christ became a sacrifice for us, was certainly a condition of sin and enmity with God, and yet this he calls a being without strength, or in a state of weakness and infirmity ; which we, who believe all our strength to be derived from Christs death, and the assistance of the Holy Spirit, the fruit of his ascension, may soon apprehend to be the true meaning of the word. And in this sense is that saying of our Blessed SAVIOUR, *The whole have no need of a Physician but they that are weak* : for therfore Christ came into the world to save sinners those are the persons of Christs infirmary , whose restitution and reduction to a state of life and health was his great designe. So that whoever sin habitually; that is, constantly, periodically, at the revolution of a temptation , or frequently, or easily , are persons who still remain in the state of sin and death. And their intervalls of piety are but preparations to a state of grace , which they may then be , when they are not used to countenance or excuse the sin or to flatter the person. But if the intermediate resolutions of emendation (though they never run beyond the next assault of passion or desire) be taken for a state of grace blended with infirmities of nature , they become destructive of all those purposes through our mistake , which they might have promoted, if they had been rightly understood , observed and cherished. Sometimes indeed the greatness of a temptation may become an instrument to excuse some degrees of the sin , and make the man pityable , whose ruin seemes almost certain because of the greatness and violence of the enemy, meeting with a naturall aptnesse ; but then the question will be whither and to what actions that strong temptation carries him ? whether to a work of a mortall nature , or onely to a small irregularity ? that is , whether to death, or to a wound ? for what ever the principle be, if the effect be death, the mans case was therefore to be pitied , because his ruin was the more inevitable ; not so pitied, as to excuse hiu from the state of death. For let the temptation be never so strong, every Christian man hath assistances sufficient to support him, so as that without his own yeelding, no temptation is stronger then that grace which God offers him; for if it were, it were not so much as a sin of infirmity; it were no sin at all. This therefore must be certain to us; when the violence of our passions , or desires overcomes our resolutions, and fairer purposes against the dictate of our reason , that indeed is a state of infirmity, but it is also of sin and death, a state of immortification; because the offices of grace are to crucifie the old man, that is, our former, and impurer conversation ; to subdue the petulancy of our passions , to reduce them to reason, and to restore Empire and dominion to the superior faculties. So that this condition in proper speaking is not so good as the infirmity of grace, but it is no grace at all : for who ever are Christs , have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts, those other imperfect ineffective resolutions are but the first approaches of the kingdom of Christ nothing but the clarities of lightning, dark as soon as light ; and they therefore cannot be excuses to us because the contrary weaknesses, (as we call them) do not make the sin involuntary , but chosen and pursued , and in true speaking is the strength of the lust, not the infirmity of a state of grace.

Rom. 5. 6.

*οὐτοὶ οὐδὲ ἀσθενεῖς  
νέοι, καὶ οὐδὲ  
εἰδῶ, without  
strength, that  
is, ungodly.*

Vide August.  
I 2 c.17. de pec-  
catorum meritis.  
& Anachir. 81.

Gal. 5. 24.

II.

But yet there is a condition of grace, which is a state of little and imperfect ones, such as are called in Scripture, *Smoking flax and bruised reeds*; which is a state of the first dawning of the Sun of righteousness, when the lights of grace new rise upon our eyes; and then indeed they are weak and have a more dangerous neighbourhood of temptations and desires, but they are not subdued by them: they sin not by direct election, their actions criminall are but like the slime of Nilus, leaving rats half formed, they sin but seldom, and when they do, it is in small instances, and then also by surprise, by inadvertency, and interrupt their own acts and lessen them perpetually; and never do an act of sinfullnesse, but the principle is such as makes it to be involuntary in many degrees. For when the understanding is clear, and the dictate of reason undisturbed, and determinate, whatsoever then produces an irregular action excuses not, because the action is not made the lese voluntary by it; for the action is not made involuntary from any other principle but from some defect of understanding either in act or habit, or faculty. For where there is no such defect, there is a full deliberation according to the capacity of the man, and then the act of election that follows is clear, and full; and is that proper disposition which makes him truely capable of punishment, or reward respectively. Now although in the first beginnings of grace there is not a direct ignorance to excuse totally, yet because a sudden surprise or an inadvertency is not always in our power to prevent, these things do lessen the election & freedom of the action, & then because they are but seldom, and never proceed to any length of time, or any great instances of crime, and are every day made still more infrequent, because grace growing stronger, the observation and advertency of the Spirit, and the attendance of the inner man grows more effectuall and busy, this is a state of the imperfection of grace, but a state of grace it is. And it is more commonly observed to be expressed in the imperfection of our good actions, than in the irregularity of bad actions: and in this sense are those words of our Blessed SAUIOVR: *The Spirit truly is willing, but the flesh is weak*; which in this instance was not expressed in sin, but in a naturall imperfection, which then was a recession from a civility, a not watching with the Lord. And such as this is the *only infirmity* that can consist with the state of grace.

32.

So that now we may lay what load we please upon our nature, and call our violent and unmortified desires by the name of an imperfect grace; but then we are dangerously mistaken & flatter our selves into an opinion of piety, when we are in the gall of bitterness; so making our misery the more certain and irremediable, because we think it needs nothing but a perpetuity and perseverance to bring us to heaven. The violence of passion and desires is a misery of nature, but a perfect principle of sin; multiplying, and repeating the acts, but not lessening the malignity: But sins of infirmity, when we mean sins of a lese and lower malice are sins of a lese and imperfect choyce, because of the unavoideable imperfection of the understanding. Sins of infirmity are alwaies infirme sins, that is, weak and imperfect in their principle, and in their nature and in their designe; that is, they are actions incomplete in all their capacities; but then passions and periodical inclinations consisting with a regular and determined and actuall understanding must never be their principle; for whatsoever proceeds thence is destructive of spirituall life, and inconsistent with the state of Grace. But sins of infirmity, when they pretend to a lese degree of malignity, and a greater degree

S August. lib. de  
gratia & liber:  
arbit. c. 17.  
& c 29.

degree of excuse, are such as are little more then sins of pure and inculpable ignorance; for in that degree, in which any other principle is mixt with them, in the same degree they are criminal and inexcusable. For as a sin of infirmity is pretended to be little in its value and malignity: so it is certain, if it be great in the infirmitie, it is not a sin of infirmity, that is, it is a state or act of death, and absolutely inconsistent with the state of grace.

2. Another principle of temptation pregnant with sin, and frutifull of monsters is a weaker pretence, which lessle wary and credulous persons abuse themselves withall, pretending as a ground for their confidence and incorrigible pursuance of their courses; that they have a good meaning, that they intend sometimes well, and sometimes not ill: and this shall be sufficient to sanctifie their actions and to hallow their sin. And this is of worse malice, when religion is the colour for a war, and the preservation of faith made the warrant for destruction of charity, and a zeal for GOD made the false light to lead us to disobedience to Man, and hatred of idolatry is the huisher of sacrilegious, and reformation made the colour for a schisme, and liberty of conscience the way to a bold and sawcy heresy: for the end may indeed hallow an indifferent action, but can never make straight a crooked and irregular. It was not enough for Saul to cry, for GOD and the sacrifice, that he spared the fat flocks of Amalek: and it would be a strange zeal and forwardnesse, that rather then the altar of incense should not smoak, will burn *assa fxtida*, or the marrow of a mans bones. For as GOD will be honoured by us, so also in wayes of his own appointment: for we are the makers of our own religion, if we in our zeal for GOD do what he hath forbidden us. And every sin committed for religion, is just such a violence done to it, as it seeks to prevent or remedy.

And so it is, if it be committed for an end or pretence of charity as well as of religion; we must be curious that no pretence engage us upon an action that is certainly criminal in its own nature; charity may sometimes require our lives, but no obligation can endear a damnation to us; we are not bound to the choice of an eternal ruine to save another. Indeed so far as an option will go, it may concern the excrescencies of piety to choofe by a tacite or exprefse act of volition to become anathema for our Brethren, that is, by putting a case and fiction of law to suppose it better and wish it rather, that I should perish then my Nation. Thus far is charitable, because it is innocent; for as it is great love to our Countrey, so it is no uncharitableness to our selves: for such options alwayes are ineffective, and produce nothing but rewards of charity, and a greater glory. And the holy JESUS himself, who onely could be, and was effectively accursed to save us, gott by it an exceeding and mighty glorification; and Saint Paul did himself advantage by his charitable devotion for his Countreymen. But since, God never puts the question to us, so that either we or our nation must be damned, he having fixt every mans finall condition upon his own actions in the vertue and obedience of Christ, if we mistake the exprefses of charity, and suffer our selves to be damned indeed for Gods glory, or our Brethrens good, we spoil the duty, and ruin our selves when our option comes to act. But it is observable, that although religion is often pretended to justifie a sin, yet charity is but seldom; which makes it full of suspicion, that religion is but the cover

Videl istorum  
Uzze. 2. am.  
6 cap. - 7. 8.  
9. verste.

14.

Rom.9:3.

to the deaths head ; and at the best is but an accusing of GOD, that he is not willing, or not able to preserve Religion without our irregular and impious cooperations. But however, though it might concern us to wish our selves rather accursed, then Religion, or our Prince, or our Countrey should perish (for I finde no instances that it is lawful so much as to wish it for the preservation of a single friend) yet it is against charity to bring such a wish to passe, and by sin to damn our selves really for a good end either of Religion or charity.

15

Let us therefore serve GOD, as he hath described the way, for all our access to him being acts of his free concession and grace must be by his own designation and appointment. We might as well have chosen, what shape our bodies should be of, as of what instances the substance of our religion should consist.

16

3. A third principle of temptation is , an opinion of prosecuting actions of civility, compliance, and society, to the luxation of a point of piety and stricter duty ; and good natures , persons of humane and sweeter dispositions, are too apt to dash upon this rock of offence. But the evil, that I would note is , that there are some conditions of Men, to whom a vice is so accustomed , that he that mingles with them must handle the crime and touch the venome. There are some vices which are *national*, there are some that are points of *honour*, some are *civilities* of entertainment , and they are therefore accounted unavoidable, because the understandings of Men are degenerous as their manners, and it is accounted sottish and phantasticall not to communicate in their accustomed loosenesse. Amongst some Men all their first addressees are drinkings , their entertainments intemperate beyond the permissions of Christian austerity ; their drink is humoros , and their humours quarrelous, and it is dishonourable not to engage in Duell, and venture your foul to ascertain an empty reputation. These inconveniences rely upon false opinions, and vain fancies, having no greater foundation , then the sottish discourses of ignorant and ungodly persons , and they have no peculiar and appropriate remedy , but a resolute severity of manners , and a consideration what is required of us as Christians to confront against those fonder customes and expectations from us, as we engage in the puddles of the world and are blended in society.

17.

To which purposes we must be carefull not to engage too freely in loose company , never without busynesse or unavoidable accidents ; and when we mingle in affairs, it will concern our safety to watch, lest multitude of talk, goodness and facility of nature , the delight of company , and the freedom and ill customed civilities do by degrees draw us away from our guards and retirement of spirit. For in these cases, every degree of dissolution disarms us of our strengths, and if we give way so far , as we think it tolerable, we instantly and undiscerneably passe into *unlawfull* and *criminally*. But our best defences are deposited in a severe and prudent understanding, and discerning the sottishnesse of such principles , which represent vice in civil language, and propound a crime to you under a cover of kindnesse, which is just so much recompence as it is satisfaction to a condemned person, that he was accused by a witty Oratour, and sentenced by an eloquent Judge. Remember alwayes, that the *friendships* of the world are *enmity with God*, and that those societies, which are combin'd by relations of drink & wantonnesse, and impertinency and crimes, are either considerable in civili-

ty,

ty, or reason, or reputation; no wise man is moved by their testimony, or discourses, and they are so impotent, rude and undiscerning a theatre, that most commonly he is the best man, who from thence is the worst reported and represented.

But in all the instances of this great evill, the very stating the question right is above half the victory. For it is a question betweene mistaken civility and certain duty: piety on one side, and the disguises of humanity on the other. God and Man are the parties interested, and to counterpoise the influence of the sight and face of man, (which being in a visible communication, it is not in some natures to neglect or contradict) there are all the excellencies of God, the effects of his power, his certain presence, and omniscience, the severities of his judgement, and the sweetnesse and invitation of his mercies, besides the prudence, wisdom and satisfaction to the spirit when we wisely neglect such sottish and low abuses and temptations, to conform to the rules of reason and duty in compliance with the purposes of God and our own felicities.

3. These ill managed principles are dangers as universal as an infected air; yet there are some diseases more proper to the particular state of religion, 1. to young beginners in religion he represents the difficulties of religion, and propounds the greater examples of holy persons, and attrights them with those mountains of piety, observing where and upon what instance of severity his fancy will be most apprehensive and afflicted; & this he fails not often to represent with a purpose, that by believing no piety lesse, then the greatest can be good, he may despair of those heights and retire into the securities and indifferencies of a careless life. But this is to be cured by all those instruments of piety, which in speciaall are incentives of the love of GOD, and endearments of spirituall and religious affections: and particularly by consideration of the Divine goodness, *who knows whereof we are made, and remembers that we are but dust*, and will require no more of us then according to our powers and present capacities. But the subject matter of this temptation is considered and refuted in the Discourse of the love of G O D.

But most commonly young beginners are zealous and high, and not so easily tempted to a recession, till after a long time by a revolution of affections they are abated by a deservescency in holy actions; the Devilites to prompt them on, not that he loves the piety, and the progresse, but that he would engage the person in imprudences and such forwardnesse of expresses, which either are in their own nature, indiscretions, or from which, by reason of the incapacity of the person, it is necessary for him to retire. A new Convert is like a bird newly entred into a net, through which possibly she might passe without danger, if her fears and unreasonable stirvings did not intangle her, but when by busy and disturbed flutterings she discomposes the erder of it, she is intangled and unpenned, and made a prey to her treacherous Enemy. Such are the undiscreet stirvings and too forward enterprizes of new penitents, whom we shall observe too often undertaking great austeries, making vows and casting bands upon their libertie, and snares upon their persons, thinking nothing great enough to expiate their sin, or to present to G O D, or to endear their services, or secure their perseveriance: and therefore they lay a load of fetters upon themselves, or rather cut off their legs, that they may never go back; therefore laying an obligation

Part. 1 in Expli-  
cat. of the De-  
calogue 1. Com.

20

gation of vows and intollerable burdens on themselves, that by these they may by a compendium of piety redeem the time, and by those make it impossible to prevaricate. But the observation of the sad events and small accidents of these men hath given probation of the indiscretion of such furious addresses, and beginnings. And it was prudently done of *Meletius* of

- Theod. ret 1. 5. Antioch when he visited the dioceses of Syria, and the severall religious persons, famous for severe undertakings, espying that *Simeon Stylites* dwelt upon a pillar, and had bound his leg with a strong chain of iron, he sent for a Smith causing it to be knocked off, and said, *To a man that loves GOD his mind is a sufficient chaine.* For the loads of voluntary austerities rashly undertaken makes religion a burden, when their first heates expire; and their vowes which are intended to secure the practise and perpetuate the piety, are but the occasions of an aggravate crime, and the vow does not secure the piety, but the wearinesse and satiety of the duty tempts to the breaking of the vow, or at least makes the man impatient, when he cannot perfist with content, nor retire with saferty.

21. It therefore concerns all spirituall guides to manage their new Converts with sober Counsels, and moderate permissions, knowing that sublime speculations in the Metaphyficks are not fit entertainment for an infant understanding. *There is milk for babes and strong meat for men of riper piety,* and it will imploy all the regular strength of young beginners to contest against the reliques of those mischiefs, which remain since the expulsion of the old man, and to master those difficulties, which by the nature of the state are certainly consequent to so late mutation. And if we by the furies of zeal, and the impatience of mistaken piety, are violent and indiscreet in the destroying of our Enemies, we probably may tread the thistle down, and trample upon all its appearances, and yet leave the root in the ground with haft, and imprudent forwardnesse. Gentle and soft counsels are the surest Enemies to your vice, and the best conservatours and promoters of a vertuous state: but a hafty charge, and the conduct of a young Leader may engage an early spirit in dangers, and dishonours. And this temptation is of so much greater danger, because it hath a face of zeal and meets with all enconragements from without, every Man being apt to cherish a new convert, and to enflame his new fires: but few consider the inconveniences that are consequent to indiscreet beginnings, and the worse events usually appendant to such inconveniences.

22. Indeed it is not usuall that prudence and a new kindled zeal meet in the same person: but it will therefore concern the safety of new converts, who cannot guide themselves, to give themselves up to the conduct of an experienced spirituall person, who being disinterest in those heats of the first apprehensions, and being long taught by the observation of the accidents of a spirituall life, upon what rocks, rashnesse and zeal usually do engage us, can best tell what degrees and what instanees of religion they may with most safety undertake: but for the generall, it is best in the addresses of grace to follow the course of nature; let there be an infancy, and a childehood, and a vigorous youth, and by the divers and distant degrees of increment let the persons be establisched in wisdom and grace. But above all things let them be carefull, that they do not lay upon themselves necessities of any lasting course; no *vows of perpetuity* in any instance of unmanded action, or degree of religion; for he may alter in his capacity and

and exterior condition; he may see by experience, that the particular engagement is imprudent, he may by the vertue of obedience be engaged on a duty inconsistent with the conveniences and advantages of the other, and his very loss of liberty in an uncommanded instance may tempt him to inconvenience. But then, for the single and transient actions of piety, although in them the danger is lese, even though the imprudence be great, yet it were well if new beginners in religion would attempt a moderate and an even piety, rather than actions of eminency, lest they retire with shame, and be afflicted with scruple, when their first heats are spent, and expire in weariness and temptation. It is good to keep within the circuits of a mans affections, not stretching out all the degrees of fancy and desire, but leaving the appetites of religion rather unsatisfied, and still desiring more, then by stretching out the whole faculty leave no desires, but what are fulfilled and wearied.

3. I shall not need here to observe such temptations, which are direct invitations to sin, upon occasion of the piety of holy persons, such as are security, too much confidence, pride and vanity; these are part of every mans danger, and are to be considered upon their severall arguments. Here I was onely to note the generall instruments of mischief. It remains now that I speak of such remedies and generall antidotes, not which are proportioned to sins in speciall, but such as are preventions or remedies, and good advices in general.

1. Let every man abstain from all occasions of sin, as much as his condition will permit. And it were better to do some violence to our secular affairs, then to procure apparent or probable danger to our souls. For if we see not a way open and ready prepared to our iniquitie, our desires oftentimes are not willing to be troubled, but opportunitie gives life and activeness to our appetites. If David had not from his towers beheld the private beauties of Bathshebab, Uriah had lived, and his wife been unattempted, but sin was brought to him by that chance, and entring at the casements of his eyes set his heart on fire, and despoild him of his robes of honour and innocence. The riches of the wedge of gold, and the beauty of the Babylonish garment made Achan sacrilegious upon the place, who was innocent enough in his preceding purposes: and therefore that foul, that makes it self an object to sin, and invites an Enemy to view its posses-sions, and live in the voisnage, loves the sin it self: and he that is pleased with the danger, would willingly be betrayed into the necessity and the pleasure of the sin: for he can have no other ends to entertain the hazards; but that he hath a further purpose to serve upon them; he loves the pleasure of the sin, and therefore he would make the condition of sinning certain and unavoidable. And therefore holy Scripture, which is admirable and carious in the cautions and securities of vertue, does not determine its precepts in the precise commands of vertuous actions, but also binds up our senses, obstructs the passage of temptation, blocks up all the wayes, and avenues of vice, commanding us to make a covenant with our eyes, not to look upon a Maid, not to sit with a Woman that is a singer, not to consider the wine when it sparkles, and gives its colour rightly in the cup, but to set a watch before our mouths, to keep the door of our lips, and many more instances to this purpose, that sin may not come so neer as to be repulsed; as knowing,

23.

24.

knowing sin hath then prevailed too far, when we give the denyall to its solicitations.

25.

We read a story of a vertuous Lady, that desired of S. Athanasius to procure for her, out of the number of the Widows sed from the Ecclesiastical Corban, an old woman, morose, peevish, and impatient, that she might by the society of so ungentle a person have often occasion to exercise her patience, her forgivenesse and charity. I know not how well the counsel succeeded with her; I am sure it was not very safe: and to invite the trouble to triumph over it, is to wage a war of an uncertain issue, for no end but to get the pleasures of the victory, which oftentimes do not pay for the trouble, never for the danger. An Egyptian who acknowledged fire for his God, one day doing his devotions kissed his God after the manner of worshippers, and burnt his lips. It was not in the power of that false and imaginary Deity to cure the real hurt he had done, to his devoutest worshipper. Just such a fool is he that kisstes a danger, though with a designe of virtue, and hugs an opportunity of sin for an advantage of piety, he burns himself in the neighbourhood of the flame, and twenty to one but he may perish in its embraces; And he that looks out a danger, that he may overcome it, does as did the Persian, who worshipping the Sun, looked upon him, when he prayed him to cure his sore eyes. The Sun may as well cure a weak eye, or a great burden knit a broken arme, as a danger can do him advantage that seeks such a combate, which may ruine him, and after which he rarely may have this reward, that it may be said of him, he had the good fortune not to perish in his folly. It is easier to prevent a mischief then to cure it, and besides the paine of the wound, it is infinitely more full of difficulty to cure a broken leg, which a little care and observation would have prevered whole. To recover from a sin is none of the easiest labours, that concern the sons of men, and therefore it concerns them rather not to enter into a such a narrow streight, from which they can never draw back their head, without leaving their hair and skin, and their ears behinde. If G O D please to try us, he means us no hurt, and he does it with great reason, and great mercy; but if we go to try our selves, we may mean well, but not wisely: For as it is simply unlawfull for weak persons to seek a temptation, so for the more perfect it is dangerous. We have Enenies enough without, and one of our own within: but we become our own Tempter, when we run out to meet the world or invite the Devil home, that we may throw holy water upon his flames, and call the danger neerer, that we may run from it. And certainly men are more guilty of many of their temptations then the Devil, through their incuriousnesse or rashnesse, doing as much mischief to themselves, as he can. For he can but offer, and so much we do, when we run into danger. Such were those stories of S. Anthony provoking the Devil to battel; If the stories had been as true, as the actions were rash, and ridiculous, the story had fastned a note of indiscretion upon that good Man: though now I think there is nothing, but a mark of fiction and falsehood on the writer.

26.

2. Possibly without fault we may be engaged in a temptation, but then we must be diligent to resist the first beginnings: For when our strength is yet intire, and unabated, if we suffer our selves to be overcome, and consent to its first, and weakest attempts, how shall we be able to resist, when it hath tyred our contestation, and wearied our patience, when we are weaker and

Sed quid ego  
omne malum  
mundiq; homi-  
nusq; maligni  
Hostis ad invidi-  
diam detorqueo?  
quum mala  
nostra  
Ex nostris con-  
creta axi nis, ge-  
nus & caput &  
vim,  
Quid fint, quid  
valeant. sumunt  
de corde paren-  
te. Prud. Hanar.  
*Eccl. 21.27.*  
Quum execratur  
impius Satanam,  
suum ipsius ani-  
mam execratur.

and prevailed upon, and the temptation is stronger and triumphant in many degrees of victory. By how much a heccliffe Fever is harder to be cured than a Tertian, or a consumption of the lungs, than a little distillation of rheume upon the throat; by so much is it harder to prevaile upon a triumphing lust, than upon its first instiations: But the wayes of resisting are of a different consideration, proportionably to the nature of the crimes.

1. If the temptation be to crimes of pleasure, and sensuality; let the resistance be by flight: For in case of lust even to consider the arguments against it, is half as great temptation as to presse the arguments for it. For all considerations of such allurements makes the soul perceive something of its relish, and entertains the Fanzie. Even the pulling pitch from our clothes defiles the fingers, and some adherences of pleasant and carnall sins will be remanent, even from those considerations, which stay within the circuit of the flames, though but with purpose to quench the fire and preserve the house. Chastity cannot suffer the least thought of the reproaches of the spirit of impurity: and it is necessary to all, that will keep their purity, and innocence against sensuall temptation, to avoyd every thing that may prejudice decorum. Libanius the Sophister reports, that a Painter one day desirous to paint Apollo upon a lawrell boord, the colours would not stick but were rejected, out of which his fancy found out this extraction; that the chaste Daphne (concerning whom the Poets fain that flying from Apollo, who attempted to ravish her, she was turned into a Lawrell tree) could not endure him even in painting, and rejected him after the losse of her sensitive powers. And indeed chaste souls do even to death resent the least image and offer of impurity: whatsoever is like a sin of uncleanness, he, that means to preserve himself chaste, must avoid, as he would avoyd the sin; in this case there being no difference but of degrees between the inward temptation, and the crime.

2. If the temptation be, to crimes of troublesome and preternaturall desires, or intellectuall nature, let the resistance be made *conserta manu*, by a perfect fight, by the amassing of such arguments in generall, and remedies in particular, which are apt to become deleteries to the sin, and to abate the temptation. But in both these instances, the resistance must at least be as soon as the attempt is, least the violence of the temptation outrun our powers; for if against our full strength it hath prevailed to the first degrees, its progresse to a complete victory is not so improbable, as were its successes at the first beginnings.

But to serve this and all other ends in the resisting and subduing a Temptation, these following considerations have the best and most univerfall influence.

1. Consideration of the presence of God, who is witnesse of all our actions, and a revenger of all impiety: This is so great an instrument of fear and religion, that whoever does actually consider God to be present, and considers what the first consideration signifies, either must be restrained from the present temptation, or must have thrown off all the possibilities and aptnesses for vertue; such as are, Modesty, and Reverence, and holy Fear. For if the face of a Man scatters all base machinations, and we dare not act our crimes in the Theatre, unlesse we be impudent, aswell as criminal; much more does the sense of a present Deity fill the places of our heart with veneration

27

Time videre u,  
de posis cadere  
noli fieri per-  
versa simplicita-  
te incurus.  
5. Augustin.

28

Kai d'apostoli m. is  
εστι τα κατ' από-  
διδογμ.

29

veneration, and the awe of religion, when it is throughly apprehended and actually considered. We see not God, he is not in our thoughts, when we run into darknesse to act our impurities. For we dare not commit adultery, if a boy be present; behold the boy is sent off with an excuse, and God abides there, but yet we committ the crime: it is because, as Jacob said at Bethel; *God was in that place and we knew not of it;* and yet we neither breath, nor move an artery but in him, and by his assistance. *In him we live, and move, and have our being.* And all things are naked and open in his sight. *The iniquity of my people is very great: for they say, the Lord seeth not. Shall not he that made the eye, see? To him the night and day are both alike.* These and many more to the same design are the voices of Scripture, that our spirits may retire into the beholding of GOD, to the purposes of fear and holiness, with whom we do cohabit by the necessities of nature, and the condition of our essence, wholly in dependance; and then onely we may sin securely, when we can contrive to do it, so that GOD may not see us.

30.

*Eph. 6.*

Ἄφετανεσθέατο  
Non n. virtute  
ac studijs utha-  
berentur philo-  
sophi labora-  
bant, sed vultum,  
et tristitiam et  
dissidentem a  
caeris habitum  
pefsumis mori-  
bus pretende-  
bant. Quintil:  
I. i. pross: n.  
Ambitio, et lux-  
uria et impoten-  
tia scenam desi-  
derant; Tanabis,  
ifa si absconde-  
vis Senec ep. 95  
Magna vobis si  
dissi nulare non  
vultus injecta  
necessitas pro-  
bitatis cum om-  
nia agitis ante  
oculos judicis  
cuncta cernen-  
tis. Boeth: lib.

5 consol: profa  
ut:

31.

There are many men, who are servants of the eyes, as the Apostles phrase is, who when they are looked on, act vertue with much pomposness, and theatricall bravery: But these men, when the Theatre is empty, put off their upper garment, and retire into their primitive baseness; Diogenes endured the extremity of winters cold, that the people might wonder at his austerity and philosophicall patience: but Plato, seeing the people admiring the man, and pitying the sufferance, told them, that the way to make him warm himself was, for them to be gone and take no notice of him. For they that walk as in the sight of men serve that design well enough, when they fill the publike voice with noises and opinions, and are not by their purposes engaged to act in private. But they who are servants of the eyes of God, and walk as in the Divine presence, perceive the same restraints in darknesse and closets, and grotts, as in the light and midst of theatres, and that consideration imposes upon us a happy necessity of doing vertuously, which represents us placed in the eyes of our Judge. And therefore it was not unhandsomely said of a Jewish Doctor: *If every man would consider God to be the great eye of the world watching perpetually over all our actions, and that his hand is indefatigable, and his ear ever open, possibly sin might be extirpated from off the face of the earth.* And this is the condition of beatitude; and the blessed souls within their regions of light and felicity cannot sin, because of the vision beatificall, they alwayes behold the face of GOD; and those who partake of this state by way of consideration, which is essential to the condition of the Blessed, and derive it into practise and discourse, in proportion to this shall retain an innocence and a part of glory.

For it is a great declension of humane reason, and a disreputation to our Spirits, that we are so wholly led by sense; that we will not walk in the regions of the Spirit, and behold God by our eyes of faith and discourse; suffering our course of life to be guided by such principles, which distinguish our natures from beasts, and our conditions from vicious, and our spirits from the world; and our hopes from the common satisfactions of sense and Corruption. The better half of our nature is of the same constitution with that of Angels, and therefore although we are drenched in matter, and the communications of Earth, yet our better part was designed to converse with God; and we had besides the eye of reason,

son another eye of faith put into our souls, and both clarified with revelations and demonstrations of the spirit, expressing to us so visible and clear characters of Gods presence, that as the expression of the same Spirit is, *We may feel him, for he is within us*, and about us, and we are in him, and in the comprehensions of his embracings as birds in the Air, or infants in the womb of their pregnant Mothers. And that God is pleased not to communicate himself to the eyes of our body, but still to remain invisible, besides that it is his own glory and perfection, it is also no more to us, but like a retreat behind a curtain, where when we know our Judge stands as an Espial, and a watch over our actions, we shall be fottish if we dare to provoke his jealousie, because we see him not; when we know him that he is close by, though behind the cloud.

There are some generall impressions upon our spirits which by way of presumption and custom possesse our persuasions and make restraint upon us to excellent purposes, such as are the religion of holy places, reverence of our Parents, presence of an austere an honourable or a vertuous person. For many sins are prevented by the company of a witness, especially if besides the ties of modesty we have also toward him an endeerement of \* reverence, and fair opinion, and if he were with us in our priuacies, he would cause our retirements to be more holy. Saint Ambrose reports of the Virgin *Mary*, that she had so much piety and religion in her countenance and deportment, that divers persons moved by the veneration and regard of her person, in her presence have first commençed their resolutions of chastity and sober living. However the story be, her person certainly was of so expresse and great devotion and sanctity, that he must needes have been of a very impudent disposition, and firm immodesty, who durst have spoken unhandsome language in the presence of so rare a person. And why then any rudenesse in the presence of God ? if that were as certainly believed and considered. For whatsoever amongst men can be a restraint of vice, or an endeerement of vertue, all this is highly verified in the presence of God, to whom our conscience in its very concealements is as a faire table written in capitall letters by his own finger ; and then, if we fail of the advantage of this exercise it must proceed either from our dishonourable opinion of God, or our own fearlesse inadvertency, or from a direct spirit of reprobation : for it is certain, that this consideration is in its own nature apt to correct our manners, to produce the fear of God, and humility, and spirituall, and holy thoughts, and the knowledge of God, and of our selves, and the consequents of all these, holy walking, and holy comforts. And by this onely argument Saint *Paphnutius*, and Saint *Ephrem* are reported in Church story to have converted two harlots from a course of dissolution to great sanctity and austerity.

But then this presence of GOD must not be a meer speculation of the understanding, though so onely it is of very great benefit and immediate efficacy, yet it must reflet as well from the will as from discourse, and then onely we walk in the presence of G O D, when by faith we behold him present, when we speak to him in frequent and holy Prayers, when we beg aid from him in all our needs, and ask counsell of him in all our doubts, and before him bewail our sins and tremble

*Aet. 17. 27.*  
*Περιεπιμνησθε*  
*τοις*  
*\* Ήσχι ταρπίμη*  
*παύτην γειαναν*  
*ιανά ελαν*  
*\* Αρδπάτην, ε-*  
*Ερπε την γειαναν*  
*ιπογείας.*

*Aliquem habeat ani-*  
*mum quem rever-*  
*teatur, cu-*  
*jus autoritate etiam*  
*secutus ruum san-*  
*ctus fiat. Quid pro-*  
*dest inclusum esse*  
*confidit? pat-*  
*mentum Deo. Senec. 1.*  
*ep. 11.*

\* Tiberius I inter bad-  
na malag; mixus in-  
columni in atri; intellabi-  
tus levitatis, fed obli-  
ctus libidinibus, dum  
Sejanum dilexit ti-  
mutiuere: postremo in  
focula simul ac dede-  
cra prorupt, post-  
quam temore pudore  
& metu, suo tantum  
ingenio ueberatur.  
Tacit. 1. 6.

*Ορζη γινήσκε*  
*ζέδη δητες διλλο,*  
*παλαιι ειδωλ. ουτε*  
*περ ζερπη, η κε-*  
*ρια ουτε. Τον*  
*αυτα ποιησε επο-*  
*ει. Κατηρην*  
*πεντε τοι ειπε*  
*διδος εις δρε*  
*της.*

Sophoc. *Ajass.*

at his presence. This is an entire exercise of religion, and beside that the presence of GOD serves to all this, it hath also especial influence in the disimprovement of temptations, because it hath in it many things contrariant to the nature and efficacy of temptations. Such as are consideration, reverence, spirituall thoughts, and the fear of God: for where ever this consideration is actuall, there either God is highly despised, or certainly feared. In this case we are made to declare; for our purposes are concealed onely in an incuriousnesse and inconsideration; but whoever considers God as present, will in all reason be as religious as in a Temple, the reverence of which place custome or religion hath imprinted in the spirits of most men; so that as Ahasuerus said of Haman;

34.

*Totaphilosophia nihil est nisi meditatio mortis.*

Plato.

\* *Moy. Q. 3rō,*

*δο Στάσιος εί δε  
επι δέ αι δέ  
διανοια, ει θεομορφία  
δια τοις. Eschy.*

GOOD, and the wised personages of the world. *My soul is always in my Psal. 119. hand, therefore doe I keep thy commandments*, said David: He looked upon himself as a dying person, and that restrained all his inordinations, and so he prayed, *LORD teach me to number my dayes that I may apply my heart unto wisdome*. And therefore the Egyptians used to serve up a Skeleton to their feasts, that the dissolutions and vapours of wine Θάνατος τῷ ὄφει might be restrained with that bunch of myrrhe, and the vanities of Σαλμων ἵππον τῷ ὄφει their eyes chafised by that sad object: for they thought it unlikely a man should be transported farre with any thing low or vicious, that looked long and often into the hollow eye-pits of a deaths πενίας ἀνθρώπου, head, or dwelt in a charnell houle: and such considerations make οὐδὲν ἀγαθὸν πάνταν all the opportunity and violence of sensuall desires to disband. For πάντας τὴν ζωήν. when a man stands perpetually at the door of Eternity, and as did John Epist. Enchir. cap. 28. the Almoner, every day is building of his Sepulchre, and every night one day of our life is gone and passed into the possession of death, it will concern us to take care, that the door leading to Hell doe not open upon us, that we be not crusht to ruine by the stones of our grave, and that our death become not a confignation to us to a sad eternity. For all the pleasures of the whole world, and in Lingenda tel- all its duration, cannot make recompence for one hours torment lus. & dominus, &c placens in hell, and yet if wicked persons were to sit in hell for ever uxori: neq; ha- without any change of posture, or variety of torment beyond that fessio: run, quas colis, session; it were unsufferable beyond the endurance of nature: and arborum therefore where little lesse than infinite misery in an infinite duration Te prater invilas shall punish the pleasures of sudden and transient crimes, the gain of cupressos Ulla brevem do- and miserable death, is a permutation fit to be made by none but fools minu sequestr. and desperate persons, who made no use of a reasonable foul, but that they Hor. 1. 2. od. 14 in their perishing might be convinced of unreasonableness, and die by their own fault.

The use that wise men have made, when they reduced this consideration to practise, is to believe every day to be the last of their life, for so it may be, and for ought we know it will; and then think what you would avoid, or what you would do, if you were dying, or were to day to suffer death by sentence, and conviction; and that in all reason, and in proportion to the strength of your consideration you will do every day. For that is the sublimity of wisdom to do those things living which are to be desired and chosen by dying persons. An allaim of death every day renewed, and pressed earnestly will watch a man so tame and soft, that the precepts of religion will dwell deep in his spirit. But they that make a covenant with the grave, and put the evill day farre from them, they are the men that eat spiders and toads for meat greedily, and a temptation to them is as welcome as joy, and they seldom dispute the point in behalf of piety or mortification, for they that look upon death at distance, apprechend it not, but in such generall lines and great representations that describe it only as future and possible, but nothing of its terrors, or affrightments, or circumstances of advantage are discernable by such an eye that disturbs its sight and discomposes the posture, that the object may seem another thing, then what it is truely and really. S. Austin with his Mother Monica was led one day by a Roman Prator to see the tomb of Cesar.

36.

Hic est apes summa sapientia ea viventia facere quae morienti essent appetenda. Cicero.

Kai γε οὐαὶ τοι— “Himself thus describes the corps. It looked of a blew mould, the bone of  
 ἀσθενεῖς θανάτου, Νίκη— “the nose laid bare, the flesh of the neither lip quite fallen off, his mouth ful  
 μυρίδων βαστάζει— “of worms, and in his eye pits two hungry toads feasting upon the remanent  
 τοι. In epitaph. “portion of flesh and moisture, and so he dwelt in his house of darknes. And  
 Sardanapali. if every person tempted by an opportunity of lust or intemperance would  
 Ηλέαντος εἰς τὴν σί— choose such a room for his privacy, that company for his witnesse, that ob-  
 πορτράχιαν ἄρματα— ject to allay his appetite, he would soon finde his spirit more sober, and his  
 εἰναι τοιποτοῦ— desires obedient. I end this with the counsel of S. Bernard. ‘Let every  
 Αἰδηπός, εἰρωγεῖ το— man in the first addresse to his actions consider, whether if he were now  
 ναὶ γάια μέταν’ “to die, he might safely and prudently do such an act, and whether he  
 ξούση. Fragm. “would not be infinitely troubled that death should surprize him in the  
 Theogn. “present dispositions, and then let him proceed accordingly. For since  
 In speculo mo- our treasure is in earthen vessels, which may be broken in pieces by the col-  
 nach. them, for if we doe, we shall certainly drinke it in the day of recom-  
 pense.

36.

*Math. 26.41.* 3. Before, and in, and after all this the blessed J E S U S propounds  
 prayer as a remedy against temptations : *Watch and pray that ye enter not into  
 temptation* : for besides that prayer is the great instrument of obtaining  
 victory by the grace of GOD, as a fruit of our deires, and of G O D S  
 naturall and essentiall goodnesse ; the very praying against a temptation,  
 if it be hearty, fervent and devout, is a denying of it, and part of the victo-  
 ry : for it is a disclaiming the entertainment of it, it is a positive rejection  
 of the crime ; and every consent to it is a *ceasing to pray*, and to desire re-  
 medy. And we shall observe that whensoever we begin to listen to  
 the whispers of a tempting spirit : our *prayers* against it lessen, as the  
 consent increases, their being nothing a more direct enemy to the  
 temptation then *prayer*, which as it is of it self a professed hostility against  
 the crime, so it is a calling in auxiliaries from above to make the  
 victory more certain. *If temptation sets upon thee, do thou set upon G O D,*  
 \* *hic levare* for he is affoon overcome as thou art, affoon moved to good as thou  
 fundum art to evil, \* he is as quickly invited to pity thee, as thou to ask him,  
 pauperem labo- provided, thou doest not finally rest in the petition, but passe into action,  
 ribus vocatus atq; non and endeavour by all means humane and morall to quench the flame  
 vocatus audit. newly kindled in thy bowels before it come to devour the marrow of  
*Nor.l.2.od.18.* the bones. For a strong prayer, and a lazy, incurious, unobservant  
*2 Lib. 3. 13.* walking are contradictions in the discourses of religion. *a Ruffinus* tells a  
 story of a young man, sollicited by the spirit of uncleanness, who  
 came to an old religious person, and begged his prayers : It was  
 in that age when G O D used to answer prayers of very holy persons  
 by more clear and familiar significations of his pleasure, then he knows  
 now to be necessary : but after many earnest prayers sent up to the  
 throne of grace, and the young man not at all bettered, upon con-  
 sideration and enquiry of particulars, he found the cause to be, be-  
 cause the young man relied so upon the prayers of the old Hernite,  
 that *he did nothing at all* to discountenance his lust, or contradict  
 the temptation. But then he took another course, enjoyned him  
 austerities and exercises of Devotion, gave him rules of pru-  
 dence and caution, tyed him to work, and to stand upon his guard,  
 and then the prayers returned in triumph, and the young Man tram-  
 pled

pled upon his lust. And so shall I and you, by GODS grace, if we pray earnestly and frequently, if we watch carefully, that we be not surprized, if we be not idle in secret, nor talkative in publick; if we read Scriptures, and consult with a spiritual Guide; and make Religion to be our work, that serving of GOD be the businesse of our life, and our designes be to purchase eternity; then we shall walk safely or recover speedily, and by doing advantages to piety secure a greatnesse of Religion, and spirituality to our spirits and understandings. But remember that, when Israel fought against Amalek, Moses prayer, and Moses hand secured the victory, his prayer grew ineffectual, when his hands were slack, to remonstrate to us, that we must coope-rate with the grace of GOD praying devoutly, and watching carefully, and observing prudently, and labouring with diligence and affiduity.



## THE PRAYER.

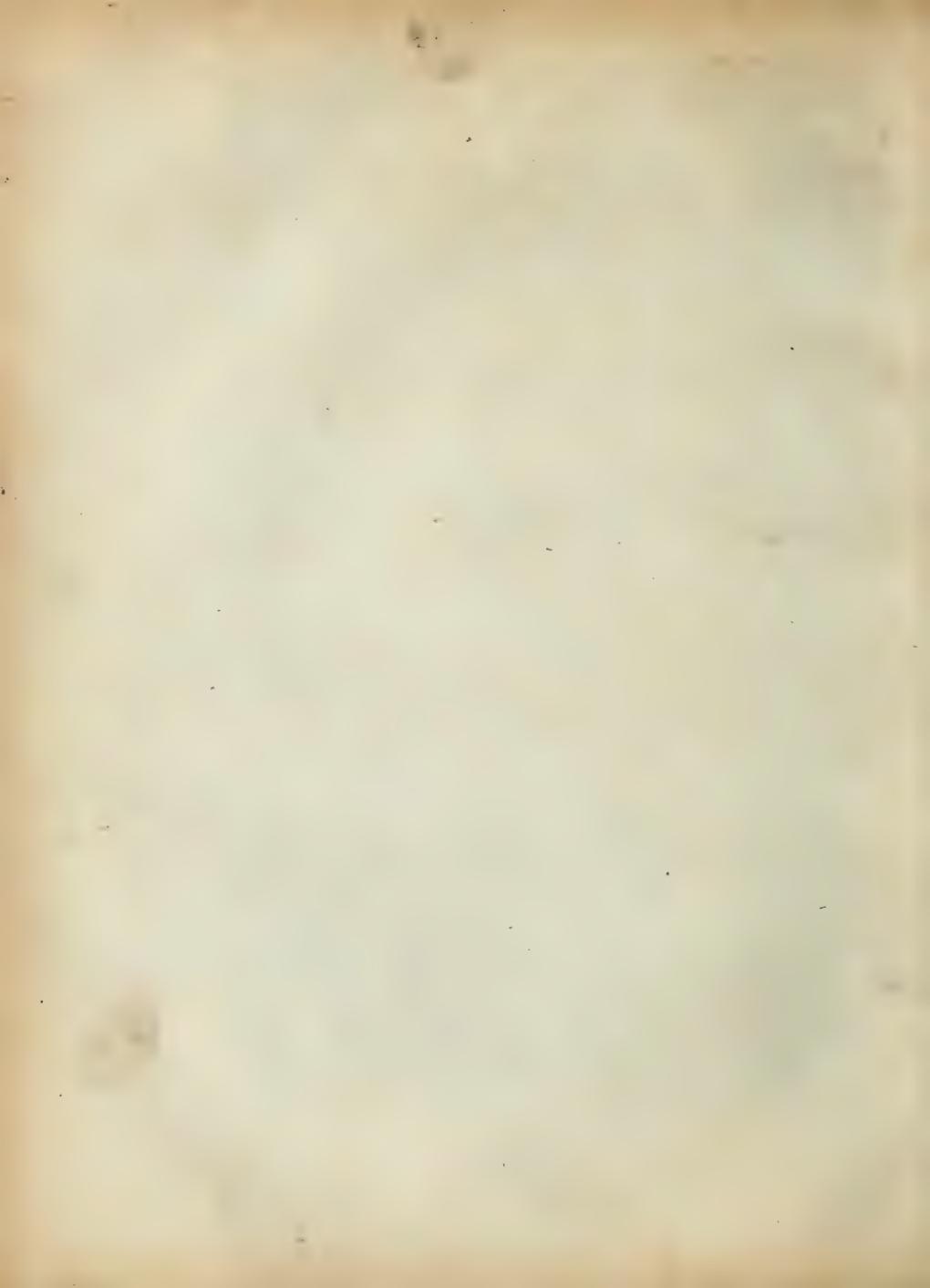
Eternal GOD and most mercifull Father, I adore thy wisdom, pro-vidence and admirable dispensation of affairs in the spirituall Kingdome of our LORD JESUS, that thou, who art infinitely good, doest permit so many sadnesses and dangers to discompose that order of things and spirits, which thou didst create innocent and harmlesse, and doest designe to great and spirituall perfections; that the emanation of good from evil by thy over-ruling power and excellencies, may force glory to thee from our shame, and honour to thy wisdome by these contradictory accidents, and events; LORD, have pitty upon me in these sad disorders, and with mercy know my infirmities. Let me, by suffering what thou pleaseſt, cooperate to the glorification of thy grace, and magnifying thy mercy; but never let me consent to sinne, but with the power of thy Majesty, and mightinesse of thy prevailing mercy, rescue me from those throngs of dangers, and enemies, which daily seek to deflower that innocence, with which thou didſt clothe my soul in the new birth. Behold, O GOD, how all the Spirits of Darknesse endeavour the extinction of our hopes, and the dispersion of all thoſe graces, and the prevention of all thoſe glories, which the holy JESUS hath purchased for every loving and obedient soul. Our very meat and drink are full of poison, our ſenses are ſnares, our businesſe is various temptation, our ſins are inlets to more, and our good actions made occasions of ſinnes. LORD deliver me from the malice of the Devil, from the fallacies of the World, from my own folly, that I be not devoured by the firſt, nor cheated by the

second, nor betrayed by my self : but let thy grace which is sufficient for me, be alwaies present with me, let thy spirit instruct me in the spiritual warfare, arming my understanding, and securing my will, and fortifying my spirit with resolutions of piety, and incentives of religion, and deteteries of sin ; that the dangers I am encompassed withall, may become unto me an occasion of victory, and triumph, through the aides of the holy Ghost, and by the Crosse of the LORD JESUS, who hath for himself and all his servants triumphed over Sin, and Hell, and the Grave, even all the powers of darknesse, from which by the mercies of JESUS, and the merits of his Passion, now and ever deliver me and all thy faithfull people.  
Amen.

<sup>st</sup>AγνΩ ο Θεος.







THE  
SECOND PART  
OF  
THE HISTORY OF  
The LIFE and DEATH  
of the Holy  
IESVS.

B E G I N N I N G

At the time of his first Miracle, untill the  
second Yeare of His Preaching.

With Considerations and Discourses upon the  
severall parts of the Story, and Prayers fitted  
to the severall Mysteries.

---

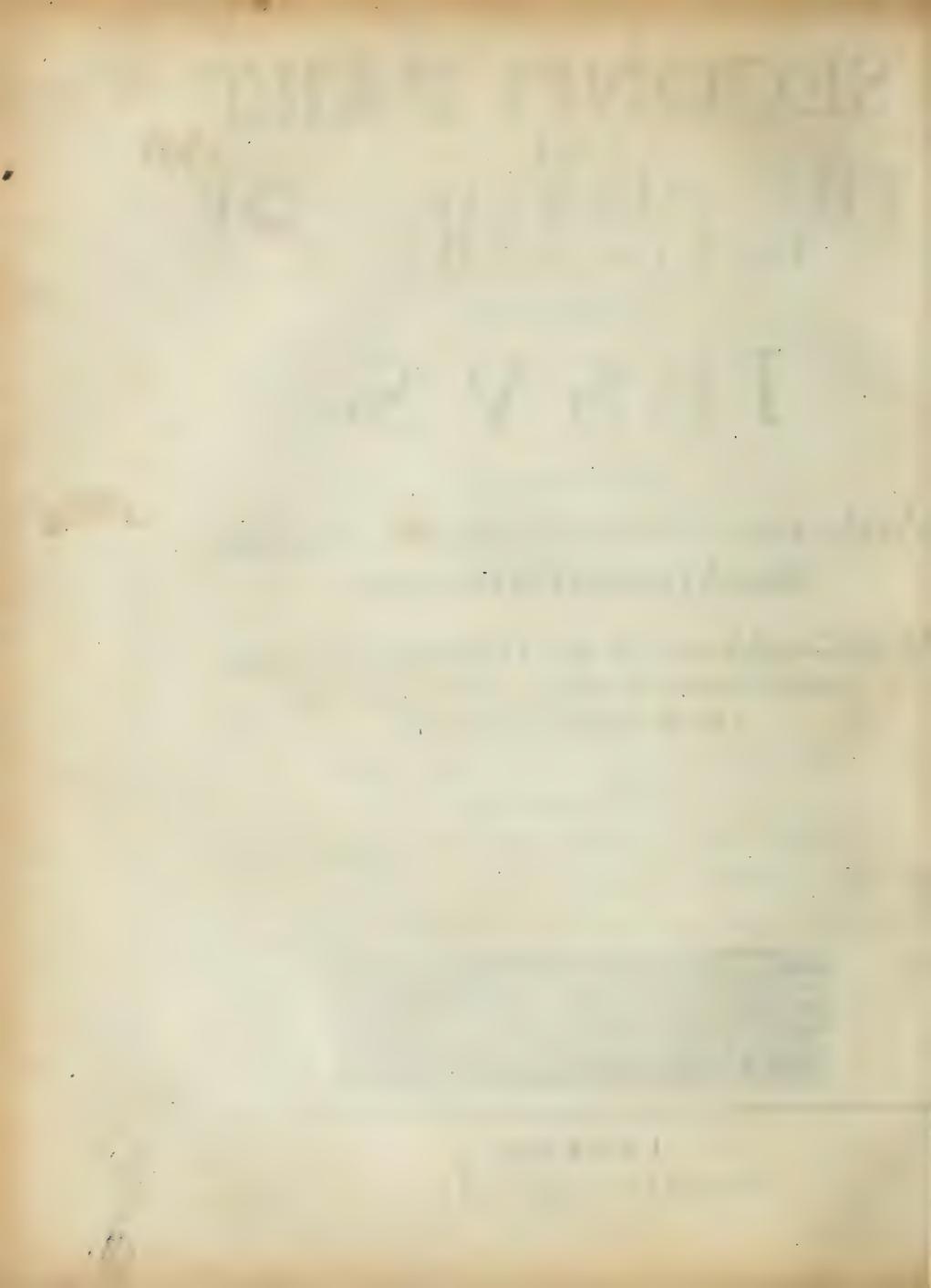
Chrysostom. ad Demetr.

Τὸ ἀπίτεν ταῖς ἐγολαῖς ἐκ τῆς πρὸς τὴν ἐκπλήρωσι ἐκ-  
λελῦθαι τῷν ἐτολῶι γίνεται.

---



L O N D O N,  
Printed by R. N. 1649.





TO THE  
RIGHT HONOURABLE  
and excellent Lady, the Lady  
**M A R Y**  
Countesse Dowager of Northampton,

**M** am now to present to your Honour part of that production of which your great love to sanctity was parent, and which was partly designed to satisfy those great appetites to vertue which have made you hugely apprehensive and forward to entertaine any instrument whereby you may grow and increase in the service of God, and the communion and charities of holy people. Your Honour best knowes in what soyle the first designe of these papers grew, and but that the Excellent personage who was their first roote is transplanted for

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

for a time , that he may not have his righteous soule vexed with the impurer conversation of ill minded men , I am confident you would have received the fruits of his abode , to more excellent purposes . But because he was pleased to leave the managing of this to me , I hope your Honour will for his sake entertaine what that rare person conceived , though I was left to the paines and dangers of bringing forth ; and that it may dwell with you for its first relation rather then be rejected for its appendant imperfections , which it contracted not in the fountaine , but in the channes of its progresse and emanation . Madam , I shall beg of GOD that your honour may receive as great increment of piety and Ghostly strength in the reading this booke , as I receive honour if you shall be pleased to accept and owne this as a confession of your great worthinesse and a testimony of the service which ought to be payed to your Honour by

Madam

Your Honours most humble

and most Obliged

Servant,

TAYLOR.



## Sect. 10.

Of the first Manifestation of  
J E S U S ,By the testimony of J O H N ,  
and a Miracle.

After that the Baptist by a signe from heaven was confirmed in spirit and understanding, that J E S U S was the Messias, he immediately published to the Jewes what G O D had manifested to him; and first to the Priests and Levites sent in legation from the Sanhedrim, he professed indefinitely in answer to their question, that himself was not the C H R I S T, nor Elias, nor that Prophet whom they by a speciall tradition did expect to be revealed. they knew not when. And concerning himself definitely he said nothing, but that he was the *voynce of one crying in the wildernesse, Make straight the way of the Lord.* He it was who was then amongst them, but not known, a person of great dignity, to whom the Baptist was not worthy to do the office of the lowest Ministry, who coming after John was preferred far before him, who was to increase, and the Baptist was to decrease, who did baptize with the holy Ghost and with Fire.

This was the Character of his personall *Prerogatives*, but as yet no demonstration was made of his Person, till after the descent of the Holy Ghost upon J E S U S , and then when ever the Baptist saw J E S U S , he points him out with his finger, *Behold the Lambe of God that taketh away the sinnes of the world, This is he.* Then he shewes him to *Andrew, Simon Peters brother*, with the same designation, and to another Disciple with him, *who both followed JESUS, and abode with him all night;* *Andrew brings his brother Simon with him, and then C H R I S T changes his name from Simon to Peter, or Cephas, which signifies a stone.* Then J E S U S himself findes out *Philip of Bethsaida*, and bade him follow him, and Philip findes out *Nathanael*, and calls him to see. Thus persons bred in a dark cell, upon their first ascent up to the chambers of light, all run staring npon the beauties of the Sun, and call the partners of their darkness to communicate in their new and stranger revelation.

## Part II.

3.

When *Nathanael* was come to J E S U S , C H R I S T saw his heart, and gave him a testimony to be truly honest, and full of holy simplicity, a true *Israelite without guile*. And *Nathanael*, being overjoyed that he had found the *Messias*, believing out of love, and loving by reason of his joy, and no suspicion; took that for a proof and verification of his person, which was very insufficient to confirm a doubt, or ratifie a probability; But so we believe a story, which we love, taking probabilities for demonstrations, and casuall accidents for probabilities, and any thing creates vehement presumptions, in which cases our guides are not our knowing faculties, but our affections, and if they be holy, G O D guides them into the right perswasions, as he does little birds to make rare nests; though they understand not the mystery of operation, nor the designe and purpose of the action.

4.

But J E S U S took his will and forwardnesse of affections in so good part, that he promised him greater things, and this gave occasion to the first prophecy, which was made by J E S U S . For J E S U S said unto him, Because I said, I saw thee under the Figtree, believest thou? Thou shalt see greater things then these: and then he prophesied that he should see heaven open, and the Angels of G O D ascending, and descending upon the Sonne of Man. But, being a Doctor of the Law C H R I S T chose him not at all to the Colledge of Apostles.

S. Aug. tra. 17.  
• 1. in Johan.

5.

Much about the same time there hapned to be a marriage in *Cana of Galilee* in the voisnage of his dwelling, where *John* the Evangelist is by some supposed to have been the bridegroom; (but of this there is no certainty) and thither J E S U S being with his Mother invited, he went to do civility to the persons espoused, and to do honour to the holy rite of marriage. The persons then married were but of indifferent fortunes, richer in love of neighbours, then in the fullnesse of rich possessions; they had more company then wine. For the Master of the feast, whom according to the order and piety of the nation they chose, from the order of Priests to be president of the Feast, by the reverence of his person to restrain all inordination, by his discretion to govern and order the Circumstances, by his religious knowledge to direct the solemnities of marriage, and to retain all the persons and actions in the bounds of prudence and modesty, complained to the Bridegroome that the Guests wanted wine.

2 Gaudent.  
Brixian. trax.  
9.  
Hujusmodi fu-  
erunt modesta  
illa Sertorii  
convivia que  
descripsit Plu-  
tarctus, &c. περ  
πολὺς ἔχοια  
αἰδοῖς οὐ κοσμώ-  
σθεὶς ὅπερ τίταν  
εἰσεγένεται, εἴτε α-  
κέειν ψευστήρων  
τοῦτο δῆλον οὐ  
ποὺς συντίθεται  
τάξιστος οὐ ἀν-  
θρώποις παρατίθε-  
ται, οὐ φι-  
λαργούσιν θε-  
τονται, Plut.  
in Sertor.

As soone as the holy Virgin Mother had notice of the want; out of charity, that uses to be employed in supplying even the minutes and smallest articles of necessity, as well as the clamorous importunity of extremities and great indigencies, complained to her Sonne by an indefinite addresse; not desiring him to make supply, for she knew not how he should, but either out of an habituall commiseration she complained without hoping for remedy, or else she looked on him who was a fountain of holinesse and of plenty, as expecting a derivation from him, either of discourses or miracles. But J E S U S answered her, Woman what have I to do with thee? Mine hour is not yet come. By this answer intending no deniall to the purpose of his Mothers intimation, to whom he alwayes bare a religious, and pious reverence, but to signifie that he was not yet entered into his period and yeers

of miracles ; and when he did , it must be not for respect of kindred, or civil relations ; but as it is a derivation of power from above, so it must be in pursuit of that service and designe, which he had received in charge together with his power.

And so his Mother understood him, giving expresse charge to the Ministers to do whatsoever he commanded, *J E S U S therefore bid them fill the water-pots which stood there for the use of frequent washings, which the Lewes did use in all publike meetings, for feare of touching pollutions, or contracting legall impurities ; which they did with a curiosnesse next to superstition, washing the very beds and tables used at their feasts.* The Ministers filled them to the brim, and as they were commanded, drew out and bare unto the Gouvernor of the Feast , who knew not of it, till the miracle grew publike , and like light shewed it self : for while they wondred at the œconomy of that Feast in keeping the best wine till the last, it grew apparent , that he who was the Lord of the Creatures, who in their first seeds have an obedientiall capacity to receive the im-presses of what formes he pleases to imprint , could give new natures, and produce new qualities in that subiect, in which he chooses to glorie his Sonne.

This beginning of miracles did J E S U S in *Cana of Galilee.* For all those miracles which are reported to be done by C H R I S T in his infancie , and intervall of his younger yeares are Apocryphall and Spurious , fayned by trifling understandings , ( who think to serve G O D with a well-meant lye , ) and promoted by the credulity of such persons , in whose hearts easinesse, folly, and credulity are bound up and tryed fast with filken thread , and easie softnesses of religious affections, not made severe by the rigours of wisdome and experience. *This first miracle manifested his Glory, and his Disciples believed in him.*



*Ad. Sect. 10.*

## CONSIDERATIONS

touching

*The vocation of five Disciples, and of the first  
Miracle of Jesus done at Cana in  
Galilee.*

**A**S soon as ever John the Baptist was taught by the descent of the holy Spirit, that this was JESUS, he instantly preaches him to all that came neer him. For the holy Ghost was his Commission, and instruction; and now he was a Minister Evangelicall; and taught all those that have the honour to be servants in so sacred imployment, that they must not go, till they be sent, nor speak till they be instructed, nor yet hold their peace when their Commission is signed by the confignation of the spirit in ordinary Ministry. For all power and all wisdom is from above, and in spirituall ministrations is a direct emanation from the holy Spirit: that as no man is fit to speak the mysteries of godlinesse, be his person never so holy, unlesse he derive wisdom in order to such ministeries; so be he never so instructed by the assistance of art or infused knowledge, yet unlesse he also have derived power as well as skill, authority as well as knowledge from the same spirit, he is not enabled to minister in publike in ordinary ministrations. The Baptist was sent by a prime designation to prepare the way to JESUS, and was instructed by the same spirit, which had sanctified or consecrated him in his Mothers wombe to this holy purpose.

When the Baptist had shewed JESUS to Andrew and another Disciple, they immediately follow him with the distances and fears of the first approach, and the infirmities of new Converts; but JESUS seeing them following their first light, invited them to see the Sunne; For GOD loves to cherish infants in grace, and having sown the immortall seed in their hearts if it takes root downwards, and springs out into the verdure of a leafe, he still waters it with the gentle raine of the holy Spirit, in graces and new assistances, till it brings forth the fruits of a holy conversation. And GOD, who knowes that infants have need of pleasant, and gentle, and frequent nutriment, hath given to them this comfort, that himself will take care of their first beginnings, and improve them to the strength of men, and give them the strengths of nature, and the wisdom of spirit, which innoble men to excellencies and perfecti-

perfections. By the preaching of the Baptist they were brought to seek for C H R I S T, and when they did, C H R I S T found them, and brought them home, and made them stay all night with him; which was more favour, than they looked for. For so GOD usually dispenses his mercies, that they may runne over our thoughts and expectations, and are given in no proportion to us, but according to GODS measures, he considering not what we are worthy of, but what is fit for him to give; he only requiring of us capacities to receive his favour, and fair reception and entertainment of his graces.

When Andrew had found J E S U S, he calls his Brother *Simon* to be partaker of his joyes, which (as it happens in accidents of greatest pleasure) cannot be contained within the limits of the possessors thoughts. But this calling of *Peter* was not to a beholding, but to a participation of his felicities; for he is strangely covetous, who would enjoy the sun, or the air, or the sea, alone; here was treasure for him and all the world; and by lighting his Brother *Simons* taper he made his own light the greater, and more glorious. And this is the nature of grace, to be diffusive of its own excellencies; for here no envy can inhabite; the proper and personall ends of holy persons in the contact, and transmissions of grace are increased by the participation and communion of others. For our prayers are more effectuall, our aids increased, our encouragement and examples more prevalent, GOD more honoured, and the rewards of glory have accidentall advantages by the superaddition of every new Saint and beatified person; the members of the mysticall body, when they have received nutriment from G O D, and his holy Sonne, supplying to each other the same, which themselves received, and live on, in the communion of Saints. Every new starre gilds the firmament and increases its first glories; and those, who are instruments of the conversion of others, shall not only introduce new beauties, but when themselves shine like the stars in glory, they shall have some reflexions from the light of others, to whose fixing in the Orbe of heaven themselves have been instrumentall. And this consideration is not only of use in the exaltations of the dignity Apostolicall and Clericall, but for the enkindling even of private charityes; who may do well to promote others interests of piety, in which themselves also have some concernment,

These Disciples asked of C H R I S T where he dwelt; J E S U S answered, Come and see. It was an answer very expressive of our duty in this instance. It is not enough for us to understand where CHRIST inhabites, or where he is to be found; for our understandings may follow him a farre off, and we receive no satisfaction, unless it be to curiosity; but we must go where he is, eat of his meat, wash in his lavatory, rest on his beds, and dwell with him; for the holy J E S U S hath no kinde influence upon those, who stand at distance, save only the affections of a Loadstone, apt to draw them nigher, that he may transmitt his vertues by union and Confederations; but if they persist in a sullen distance, they shall learn his glories, as *Dives* understood the peace of *Lazarus*, of which he was never to participate. Although the Sonne of man hath not where to bide his head, yet he hath many houses where to convey his graces; He hath nothing to cover his

## Part II.

his own, but he hath enough to sanctifie ours; and as he dwelt in such houses, which the charity of good people then afforded for his entertainment, so now he loves to abide in places; which the religion of his servants hath vowed to his honour, and the advantages of Evangelicall ministrations. Thither we must come to him, or any where else, where we may enjoy him; he is to be found in a Church; in his ordinances, in the communion of Saints, in every religious duty, in the heart of every holy person; and if we go to him by the addresies of religion in holy places, by the ministery of holy rites, by charity, by the adherences of faith, and hope, and other combining graces, the graces of union and society, or prepare a lodging for him within us, that he may come to us, then shall we see such glories, and interieur beauties, which none know, but they that dwell with him. The secrets of spirituall benediction are understood only by them, to whom they are conveyed, even by the children of his house. *Come and see.*

*Secreta mea mihi, et filii dominus meus. Clem. Alex. Strom.*

5.

S. Andrew was first called, and that by C H R I S T immediately, his Brother Simon next, and that by *Andrew*; but yet J E S U S changed *Simons* name, and not the others; and by this change design'd him to an eminency of office, at least in signification, principally above his Brother, or else separately, and distinctly from him; to shew, that these graces and favours, which do not immediately cooperate to Eternity, but are gifts and offices, or impresses of authority, are given to men irregularly, and without any order of pradisponent causes, or probabilityes on our part, but are issues of absolute prædestination; and as they have efficacy from those reas ons which G O D conceales, so they have some purposes as conceal'd as their causes; onely if G O D pleases to make us vessels of fair imployment, and of great capacity, we shall bear a greater burden, and are bound to glorifie G O D with speciall offices; but as these exteriour and ineffecti ve graces are given upon the same good will of G O D, which made this matter to be a humane body, when if G O D had so pleased, it was as capable of being made a fungus or a sponge: so they are given to us with the same intentions as are our souls, that we might glorifie G O D in the distinct capacity of grace, as before of a reasonable nature. And besides that it teaches us to magnifie G O D S free mercy, so it removes every such exalted person from being an object of envy to others, or from pleasing himself in vainer opini ons; for G O D hath made him of such an imployment as freely and voluntarily as he hath made him a man, and he no more co-operated to this grace, then to his own creation, and may as well admire himself for being born in *Italy*, or from rich parents, or for having two hands, or two feet, as for having received such a designation extraordinary. But these things are never instruments of reputation among severe understandings, and never but in the softish and unmanly apprehensions of the vulgar. Onely this, when G O D hath imprinted an authority upon a person, although the man hath nothing to please himself withall but G O D S grace, yet others are to pay the duty, which that impression demands; which duty because it r'apports to G O D, and touches not the man, but as it passes through him to the fountain of authority and grace, it extinguishes all pretences of opinion and pride.

When J E S U S espied *Nathanael* (who also had been called by the first Disciples) coming towards him, he gave him an excellent character,

racter, calling him a true *Israelite in whom was no guile*, and admitted him amongst the first Disciples of the institution; by this character in one of the first of his Schollers hallowing *simplicity of spirit*, and receiving it into his Discipline, that it might now become a vertue and duty Evangelicall. For although it concerns us, as a Christian duty, to be prudent, yet the prudence of Christianity is a duty of spirituall effect, and in instances of religion, with no other purposes then to avoid giving offence to those that are without, and to those that are within; that we cause no disreputation to Christianity; that we do nothing, that may encourage enemies to the religion, and that those, that are within the communion and obedience of the Church, may not suffer as great inconveniences by the indiscreet conduct of religious actions as by direct temptations to a sin. These are the purposes of private prudence, to which in a greater measure, and upon more variety of rules the Governours of Churches are obliged. But that, which Christian simplicity prohibites, is the mixing arts, and unhandsonie meanes for the purchase of our ends: witty counsels that are underminings of our neighbour, destroying his just interest to serve our own; stratagems to deceive, indefinite and insignificant answers, unjust and unlawfull concealement of our purposes, fallacious promises and false pretences, flattery, and unjust, and unreasonable praise, saying one thing and meaning the contrary, pretending religion to secular designes, breaking faith, taking false oaths, and such other instruments of humane purposes framed by the Devill, and sent into the world to be perfected by man. Christian simplicity speakes nothing but its thoughts; and when it concernes prudence, that a thought or purpose should be concealed, it concerns simplicity that silence be its Cover, and not a false vizor; it rather suffers inconvenience than a lye, it destroyes no mans right, though it be inconsistent with my advantages, it reproves freely, palliates no mans wickednesse, it intends what it ought, and does what is bidden, and uses courses regular and just, sneakes not in corners, and walkes awayes in the eye of God, and the face of the world.

JESUS told Nathanael, that he knew him, when he saw him under the fig-tree, and Nathanael took that to be probation sufficient, that he was the Messias, and believed rightly upon an insufficient motive; which because JESUS did accept, it gives testimony to us that however faith be produced, by means regular, or by arguments incompetent, whether it be proved or not proved, whether by chance or deliberation, whether wisely or by occasion; so that faith be produced by the instrument, and love by faith, Gods worke is done, and so is ours. For if S. Paul rejoiced that CHRIST was preached, though by the envie of peevish persons: certainly G O D will not reject an excellent product, because it came from a weake and sickly parent: and he that brings good out of evill, and rejoices in that good, having first triumphed upon the evill, will certainly take delight in the faith of the most ignorant persons, which his owne grace hath produced out of innocent though insufficient beginnings. It was folly in Naaman to refuse to be cured, because he was to recover only by washing in Jordan. The more incompetent the meanes is, the greater is the glory of GOD, who hath produced waters from a rock, and fire from the collision of a sponge and wooll; and it is certaine, the end, unlesse it be in products meerly naturall, does not take its estimate and degrees from the externall meanes. Grace does miracles, and the productions of the spirit in respect of its

## Part II.

instruments, are equivocall, extraordinary, and supernaturall; and ignorant persons beleeve as strongly, though they know not why, and love God as heartily, as greater spirits and more excellent understandings; and when G O D please, or if he sees it expedient, he will do to others, as to *Nathanael*, give them greater arguments, and better instruments for the confirmation and heightning of their faith, then they had for the first production.

When JESUS had chosen these few Disciples to be witnesses of succeeding accidents, every one of which was to be a probation of his mission and Divinity, he entred into the theatre of the world at a marriage feast; which he now first hallowed to a sacramentall signification, and made to become mysterious; he now began to choose his spouse out from the communities of the world, and did mean to endear her by unions ineffable and glorious, and configne the Sacrament by his blood, which he first gave in a secret representment, and afterwards in letter and apparent effusion. And although the holy JESUS did in his owne person consecrate coelibate; and abstinence and chastity in his mothers: yet by his presence he also hallowed marriage, and made it honourable, not only in civill account, and the rites of Heraldry, but in a spirituall sense, he having new sublim'd it by making it a Sacramentall representment of the union of Christ and his Spouse the Church. And all married persons should do well to remember, what the conjugall society does represent, and not break the matrimoniall bond, which is a mysterious ligament of CHRIST and his Church; for whoever dissolves the sacrednesse of the mystery, and unhallowes the vow by violence and impurity, he dissolves his relation to CHRIST. To break faith with a wife or Husband is a divorce from JESUS, and that is a separation from all possibilities of felicity. In the time of the Mosaicall Statutes, to violate marriage was to do injustice and dishonour, and a breach to the fandions of nature, or the first constitutions; But two bands more are added in the Gospel, to make Marriage more sacred: For now our bodies are made Temples of the Holy Ghost, and the rite of Marriage is made significant and Sacramentall, and every act of adultery is prophanation and irreligion, it desecrates a Temple, and defloures a mystery.

The married paire were *holy*, but *poor*, and they wanted wine, and the blessed Virgin Mother, pitying the affront of the young man, complained to JESUS of the want; and JESUS gave her an answer which promised no satisfaction to her purposes. For now that J E S U S had lived thirty years, and done in person nothing answerable to his glorious birth, and miraculous accidents of his person, she longed till the time came in which he was to manifest himself by actions as miraculous, as the star of his birth; she knew by the rejecting of his trade, and his going abroad, and probably by his owne discourse to her, that the time was neer; and the forwardnesse of her love and holy desires possibly might go some minutes before his owne precise limit. However J E S U S answered to this purpose, to shew, that the work he was to do, was done, not to satisfie her importunity, which is not occasion enough for a miracle, but to prosecute the great work of divine designation. For in works spirituall, and religious, all exterior relation ceases; the worlds order and the manner of our nature, and the infirmities of our person have produced societies, and they have been

been the parents of relation ; and GOD hath tyed them fast by the knots of duty, and made the duty the occasion, and opportunities of reward ; But in actions spirituall, in which we relate to GOD, our relations are founded upon the spirit, and therefore we must do our duties upon considerations separate, and spirituall ; but never suffer temporall relations to impede our religious duties ; Christian charity is a higher thing then to be confined within the termes of dependance and correlation ; and those endearements, which leagues, or nature, or society have made, passe into spirituall, and like stars in the presence of the Sun appeare not, when the heights of the spirit are in place. Where duty hath prepared speciall instances, there we must for religions sake promote them ; but even to our parents, or our children the charities of religion ought to be greater then the affections of society : And though we are bound in all offices exterior to prefer our relatives before others, because that is made a duty ; yet to purposes spirituall, all persons eminently holy, put on the efficacy of the same relations, and passe a duty upon us of religious affections.

At the command of JESUS the Water-pots were filled with water, and the water was by his Divine power turned into wine ; where the different œconomy of GOD and the world is highly observable. *Every man sets forth good wine at first, and then the worse* ; but GOD not onely turnes the water into wine, but into such wine that the last draught is most pleasant. The World presents us with faire language, promising hopes, convenient fortunes, pompous honours, and these are the outsides of the bole ; but when it is swallowed, these dissolve in the instant, and there remaines bitterness, and the malignity of Colliquintida. Every sin smiles in the first ad-dresse, and carries light in the face, and honey in the lip, but *when we have well drunk, then comes that which is worse*, a whip with six strings, feares and terrors of conscience, and shame and displeasure, and a caytive disposition, and diffidence in the day of death. But when *after the manner of the purifying of the Christians we fill our waterpots with water*, watering our couch with our teares, and moystening our cheeks with the perpetuall distillations of repentance, then CHRIST turns our water into wine, *first penitents and then communicants*, first waters of sorrow, and then the wine of the Chalice ; first the justifications of correction, and then the sanctifications of the Sacrament, and the effects of the Divine power, joy, and peace, and serenity, hopes full of confidence, and confidence without shame, and holdnesse without presumption ; for J E S U S keeps the *best wine till the last*, not onely because of the direct reservations of the highest joyes till the neerer approaches of glory, but also because our relishes are higher after a long fruition, then at the first Essays, such being the nature of grace, that it increases in relish, as it does in fruition, every part of grace being new duty and new reward.

10.



## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Eternall and ever blessed JESU, who didst choose Disciples, to be witnesses of thy life and miracles. so adopting man into a participation of thy great imployment of bringing us to heaven by the meanes of a holy doctrine, be pleased to give me thy grace that I may love and revere their persons, whom thou hast set over me, and follow their faith, and imitate their lives, whiles they imitate thee, and that I also in my capacity and proportion may do some of the meaner offices of spirituall building, by prayers, and by holy discourses, and fraternall correllation, and friendly exhortations, doing advantages to such soules with whom I shall converse: and since thou wert pleased to enter upon the stage of the world with the commencement of mercy, and a miracle, be pleased to visit my soul with thy miraculous grace, turn my water into wine, my naturall desires into supernaturall perfections, and let my sorrowes be turned into joyes, my sins into vertuous habits, the weakneses of humanity into communications of the Divine nature, that since thou keepest the best unto the last, I may by thy assistance grow from grace to grace, till thy gifts be turned to reward, and thy graces to participation of thy glory, O eternall and ever blessed JESU. Amen.



## Discourse 6.

### Of F A I T H.



Athanael's faith was produced by an argument not demonstrative, not certainly concluding; CHRIST knew him, when he saw him first, and he beleaved him to be the Messias; his faith was excellent, whatever the argument was. And if I beleeve a God, because the Sun is a glorious body, or because of the variety of plants, or the fabrick and rare contexture of a mans eye, I may as fully assent to the Conclusion, as if my beleefe dwelt upon the Demonstrations made by the Prince of Philosophers in the 8. of his Physicks, and 12. of his Metaphyficks. This I premise as an inlet into the consideration concerning the faith of ignorant persons. For if we consider upon what easie termes most of us now are Christians, we may possibly suspect that either faith hath but little excellency in it, or we but little faith, or that we are mistaken generally in its definition. For we are born of Christian parents, made Christians at ten dayes old, interrogated concerning the articles of our faith by way of anticipation, even then when we understand not the difference between the Sun and a tallow candle, from whence

thence we are taught to say our Catechisme, as we are taught to speak, when we have no reason to judge, no discourse to discern, no arguments to contest against a proposition, in case we be catechized into false doctrine; and all that is put to us, we beleieve infinitely, and without choyce, as children use not to choose their language; and as our children are made Christians, just so are thoufands others made Mahumetans, with the same necessity, the same facility. So that thus far there is little thanks due to us for beleeving the Christian Creed, it was indifferent to us at first, and at last our education had so possest us, and our interest, and our no temptation to the contrary, that as we were disposed into this condition by providence, so we remain in it without praise or excellency. For as our beginnings are inevitable, so our progresse is imperfect, and insufficient, and what we begun by education we retain onely by custome, and if we be instructed in some lighter arguments to maintaine the sect or faction of our countrey religion, as it disturbs the unity of Christendomie, yet if we examine and consider the account upon what slight arguments we have taken up Christianity it self, (as that it is the religion of our Countrey, or that our fathers before us were of the same faith, or because the Priest bids them, and he is a good man, or for something else, but we know not what) we must needs conclude it the good providence of GOD, not our choice, that made us Christians.

But if the question be, Whether such a faith be in it self good and acceptable, that relies upon *insufficient* and *unconvincing grounds*, I suppose this case of *Nathanael* will determine us, and when we consider, that faith is an *infused grace*, if GOD pleases to behold his own glory in our weaknesse of understanding, it is but the same thing he does in the instances of his other graces. For as GOD enkindles *charity* upon variety of meanes, and instruments, by a thought, by a chance, by a text of Scripture, by a naturall tendernesse, by the sight of a dying or a tormented beast: So also he may produce *faith* by arguments of a differing quality, and by issues of his providence he may engage us in such conditions, in which as our understanding is not great enough to choose the best, so neither is it furnished with powers to reject any proposition; and to beleeve well is an effect of a singular predestination, and is a gift in order to a grace, as that grace is in order to salvation. But the insufficiency of an argument, or disability to prove our religion is so far from disabling the goodnesse of an ignorant mans faith, that as it may be as strong as the faith of the greatest Scholler, so it hath full as much excellency, not of nature, but in order to divine acceptance. For as he, who beleeves upon the onely stock of education, made no election of his faith; so he, who beleeves what is demonstrably proved, is forced by the demonstration of his choice. *Neither* of them did *choose*, and *both* of them may equally *love* the article.

So that, since a small argument in a weak understanding does the same work, that a strong argument in a more sober and learned, that is, it convinces and makes faith, and yet neither of them is matter of choice; if the thing beleaved be good, and matter of duty or necessity, the faith is not rejected by GOD upon the weaknesse of the first, nor accepted upon the strength of the latter principles; when we are once in, it will not be enquired by what entrance we passed thither, whether *G O D leads us*, or *drives us in*, whether we come by *Discourse* or by *inspiration*, by the guide

## Part. II.

of an Angel or the conduct of Moses , whether we be born or made Christians , it is indifferent , so we be there , where we should be ; for this is but the gate of duty , and the entrance to felicity . For thus farre faith is but *an act of the understanding* , which is a naturall faculty , serving indeed as an instrument to godlinesse , but of it selfe no part of it ; and is just like fire producing its act inevitably , and burning as long as it can , without power to interrupt or suspend its action ; and therefore we cannot be more pleasing to G O D for understanding rightly , than the fire is for burning cheerfully : which puts us evidently upon this consideration , that Christian faith , that glorious duty , which gives to Christians a great degree of approximation to G O D by JESUS CHRIST , must have a great proportion of that ingredient . which makes actions good or bad , that is , of choice and election .

4. For the faith of a Christian hath more in it of the *will* , than of the *understanding* . Faith is that great mark of distinction , which separates and gives formality to the Covenent of the Gospell , which is a *law of faith* . The faith of a Christian is his religion , that is , it is that whole conformity to the institution or Discipline of JESUS CHRIST , which distinguishes him from the believers of false religions . And to be one of the *faithfull* signifies the same with being a *Disciple* , and that containes obedience as well as believing . For to the same sence are all those appellatiues in Scripture [the *faithfull*] Brethren , believers , the Saints , Disciples ] all , representing the duty of a Christian , a Believer and a Saint , or a holy person is the same thing . [Brethren ,] signifies charity , and [believers] faith in the intellectuall sense , [the *faithfull* and Disciples] signifie both ; for besides the consent to the proposition , the first of them is also used for perseverance and sanctity , and the greatest of charity mixt with a confident faith up to the height of Martyrdome . Be faithfull unto the death (said the holy spirit) and I will give thee the Crown of life . And when the Apostles by way of abbreviation expresse all the body of Christian religion , they call it *faith working by love* , which also S. Paul in a parallel place calls a *New Creature* , it is a keeping of the commandmenis of G O D ; that is the faith of a Christian , into whose definition charity , is ingredient , whose sence is the same with keeping of GODS commandments ; so that if we define faith , we must first distinguish it . The faith of a naturall person , or the faith of Devills is a mere believing a certain number of propositions , upon conviction of the understanding . But the faith of a Christian , the faith that justifies , and saves him , is *faith working by charity* , or *faith keeping the Commandments of God* . They are *distinct faiths* in order to *different ends* , and therefore of different constitution , and the instrument of distinction , is charity or obedience .

**Galat. 5.6.6.15.** 5. And this great truth is cleare in the perpetuall testimony of holy Scripture . For Abraham is called the Father of the *faithfull* , and yet our blessed Saviour told the Jewes , that if they had been the sons of Abraham they would have done the *workes of Abraham* , and therefore good workes are by the Apostle called , the *footsteps of the faith of our Father Abraham* . For faith in every of its stages , at its first beginning , at its increment , at its greatest perfection is a duty made up of the concurrence of the will and the understanding , when it pretends to the Divine acceptance ; Faith and repentence begin the Christian course . Repent and believe the Gospell was the summe of the Apostles Sermons , and all the way after , it is , *faith working*

**Gal. 5.6.****5. John 8.39.****Rom. 4.12.**

by love. Repentance puts the first spirit and life into faith, and charity preserves it, and gives it nourishment, and increase; it selfe also growing by a mutuall supply of spirits and nutriment from faith. Whoever does heartily believe a resurrection and life eternall upon certain conditions, will certainly endeavour to acquire the promises by the purchase of obedience and observation of the conditions. For it is not in the nature or power of man, directly to despise and reject so infinite a good: so that faith supplies charity with argument and maintenance, and charity supplies faith with life and motion: faith makes charity reasonable; and charity makes faith living and effectuall. And therefore the old Greekes called faith and charity, *a miraculous chariot or yoke*, they bear the burthen of the Lord with an equall confederacion; These are like Hippocrates twins, they live and die together. Indeed faith is the first born of the twins, but they must come both at a birth, or else they dye, being strangled at the gates of the wombe. But if charity, like Jacob, layes hold upon his elder brothers heele, it makes a timely and a prosperous birth, and gives certaine title to the eternall promises. For let us give the right of primogeniture to faith, yet the blessing, yea and the inheritance too, will at last fall to charity. Not that faith is disinherited, but that charity onely enters into the possession. The nature of faith passes into the excellencie of charity, before they can be rewarded, and that both may have their estimate, that which justifies and saves us keeps the name of *faith* but doth not doe the deed till it hath the nature of *charity*: For to thinke well, or to have a good opinion, or an excellent or a fortunate understanding intitles us not to the love of GOD, and the consequent inheritance, but to choose the wayes of the spirit and to relinquish the paths of darknesse, this is the way of the kingdom, and the purpose of the Gospell, and the proper work of faith.

And if we consider upon what stocke faith it selfe is instrumentall and operative of salvation, we shall find it is it selfe acceptable, because it is a duty, and commanded, and therefore it is an act of obedience, a work of the Gospell, a submitting the understanding, a denying the affections, a laying aside all interest, and a bringing our thoughts under the obedience of Christ. This the Apostle calls *the obedience of faith*, and it is of the same condition and constitution with other graces, all which equally relate to Christ, and are as firme instruments of union, and are washed by the blood of Christ, and are sanctified by his death, and apprehend him in their capacity and degrees, some higher, and some not so high: but *hope and charity* apprehend Christ in a measure and proportion greater then faith, when it distinguishes from them; so that if faith does the work of justification, as it is a meere relation to Christ, then so also does *hope and charity*; or if these are duties and good works, so also is faith, and they all being alike commanded in order to the same end, and encouraged by the same reward, are also accepted upon the same stocke, which is, that they are acts of *obedience and relation* too, they obey Christ, and lay hold upon Christs merits, and are but severall instances of the great duty of a Christian, but the *actions of severall faculties of the new Creature*. But because Faith is the beginning grace, and hath influence and causality in the production of the other, therefore all the other as they are united in duty are also united in their title and appellative; they

*σωματική θυντεία.*

*Τὸ διαδέει πάντας ἐναγγεῖλες ἀρχές τοῦ Θεοῦ, τὰ τὰ μάρτυρες θύνεις γιανουρίας, αἵτινες ποιοῦνται, αἵτινες ποιοῦνται.*

*Just.M.*

*resp. ad orthodox.*

*et si, resp. ad i-*

*η; μάρτυρες με-*

*λείας, εἰς δοκο-*

*μίαν. Chrys.l.4.*

*de facerd.*

6.

*Rom.16.26.*

## Part II.

they are all called by the name of faith, because they are parts of faith, as faith is taken in the larger sense, and when it is taken in the strictest and distinguishing sense, they are effects and proper products by way of natural emanation.

7. That a good life is the genuine and true born issue of faith no man questions, that knowes himselfe the Disciple of the holy JESUS; but that obedience is the same thing with faith, and that all Christian graces are parts of its bulke and constitution is also the doctrine of the holy Ghost, and the Grammar of Scripture, making faith and obedience to be termes coincident and expressive of each other. For faith is not a fingle starre, but a constellation, a chaine of graces, called by S. Paul, the power of God unto salvation to every believer, that is, faith is all that great instrument, by which GOD intends to bring us to heaven; and he gives this reason, *In the Gospell the righteousnesse of G O D is revealed from faith to faith*, for it is written *The just shall live by faith*. Which discourse makes faith to be a course of sanctity and holy habites, a continuation of a Christians dutie, such a duty as not only gives the first breach, but by which a man lives the life of grace.

*Rom 1:16 17.*

ibid:

*Exinde annuntiationis Evangelium in fidem obediientiam va-*  
*gabo, d. Augusti;*  
 whole righteousnesse of G O D be fulfilled in it. From faith to faith (faith the Apostle) which S. Austin expounds, from faith believing, to faith obeying, from imperfect faith, to faith made perfect by the animation of charity, that he who is justified may be justified still: for as there are severall degrees and parts of justification, so there are severall degrees of faith answerable to it, that in all senses it may be true, that by faith we are justified, and by faith we live, and by faith we are saved; for if we proceed from faith to faith, from believing to obeying, from faith in the understanding to faith in the will, from faith barely assenting to the revelations of G O D, to faith obeying the commandments of GOD, from the body of faith to the soul of faith, that is, to faith formed and made alive by charity, then we shall proceed from justification, to justification that is, from remission of sins to become the Sons of GOD, and at last to an actuall possession of those glories, to which we were here consigned by the fruits of the holy Ghost.

8.

*Hebr. 12. 2.*

*Ibid. v. 1.*

*James 2. 21. 22.*

*ver. 23.*

And in this sense the holy JESUS is called by the Apostle, *The Author and Finisher of our Faith*, he is the principle, and he is the promoter, he begins our faith in revelations, and perfects it in Commandments; he leads us by the ascent of our understanding, and finishes the work of his grace by a holy life: which St. Paul there expresses by its severall constituent parts, as laying aside every weight; and, the sin that so easily besets us; and running with patience the race, that is set before us; resisting unto blood: striving against sin, for in these things JESUS is therefore made our example, because he is the author and finisher of our faith; without these, faith is imperfect. But the thing is something plainer yet, for S. James sayes that faith lives not, but by charity; and the life or essence of a thing is certainly the better part of its constitution, as the soule is to a man. And if we mark the manner of his probation it will come home to the maine point. For he proves that Abrahams faith was therefore imputed to him for righteousnesse, because he was justified by works; Was not Abraham our Father justified by works, when he offered up his son? And the Scripture was fulfilled saying, Abraham believed G O D, and it was imputed to him for righteousnesse, for faith wrought with his works, and made his faith perfect; It was a dead and

an imperfect faith, unless obedience gave it being, and all its integrall or essential parts; so that faith and charity in the sense of a Christian are but one duty, as the understanding and the will are but one reasonable soule, onely they produce severall actions in order to one another, which are but divers operations and the same spirit.

Thus S. Paul describing the faith of the Thessalonians calls it that, where-  
by they turned from Idols, and whereby they served the living GOD; and the  
faith of the Patriarches believed the worlds Creation, received the promises, did  
miracles, wrought righteousness, and did and suffered so many things, as make  
up the integrity of a holy life. And therefore disobedience and unrighteousnesse is  
called want of faith, and heresy which is opposed to faith is a work of the  
flesh, because faith it selfe is a work of righteousness; and that I may e-  
numerate no more particulars, the thing is so known, that the word  
~~etiam~~, which in proprie of language signifies mispersuasion or infidelity  
is rendered disobedience; and the not providing for our families is an act of  
infidelity, by the same reason and analogy, that obedience or charity and a  
holy life are the duties of a Christian, of a justifying faith; and although in  
the naturall or philosophicall sense, faith and charity are distinct habites,  
yet in the sense of a Christian and the signification of duty they are the  
same; for we can not believe aright, as believing is in the Commandment,  
unless we live aright, for our faith is put upon the account just as it is  
made precious by charity; according to that rare saying of S. Bartholomew, *οὐαὶ σικελο-*  
recorded by the supposed S. Denis, *Charity is the greatest and the least Theo-* *γία τόπην, οὐαὶ σικελο-*  
*logy, all our faith, that is, all our religion is compleated in the duties of uni-* *ιακτιστή, cap. I.*  
*versall charity; As our charity or our manner of living is, so is our faith. If de myst. Theolog*  
our life be unholy, it may be the faith of Devills, but not the faith of  
Christians. For this is the difference.

The faith of the Devills hath more of the *understanding* in it, the faith  
of Christians more of the *will*: The Devills in their faith have better dis-  
course, the Christians better affections: They in their faith have better  
arguments, we more charity: So that charity or a good life is so necessary  
an ingredient into the definition of a Christians faith, that we have nothing  
else to distinguish it from the faith of Devills: and we need no triall of  
our faith, but the examination of our lives. *If you keep the Commandments of* Apocal.14.12  
*GOD, then have you the faith of JESUS* (they are immediate in S. Johns  
expression) but if you be *importune and ungodly*, you are in S. Pauls list a-  
mongst them, that *have no faith*. Every vice, that rules amongst us, and  
fullies the faire beauty of our soules, is a conviction of infidelity.

For it was the faith of Moses, that made him despise the riches of Egypt;  
the faith of Joshua, that made him valiant; the faith of Joseph, that made  
him chaste: Abrahams faith made him obedient: S. Mary Magdalens faith  
made her penitent; and the faith of S. Paul made him travell so farre, and  
suffer so much, till he became a prodigy both of zeale and patience. Faith  
is a Catholicon, and cures all the distempers of the soule, it overcomes  
the world, (faith S. Iohn) it workes righteousness (faith S. Paul) it purifies Acts 15.9.  
the heart (faith S. Peter) it workes miracles (faith our blessed Saviour)  
miracles in grace alwayes, as it did miracles in nature at its first publication;  
and whatsoever is good, if it be a grace, it is an act of faith, if it be a  
reward, it is the fruit of faith; so that as all the actions of man are but the  
productions of the soule: so are all the actions of the new man the effects of  
faith.

Part II.

---

12.

Luke 18. 8.

faith. For faith is the life of Christianity, and a good life is the life of faith.

Upon the grounds of this discourse we may understand the sense of that Question of our blessed Saviour. *When the Sonne of man comes shall he finde faith on the earth?* Truely just so much as he findeas charity, and holy living, and no more. For then onely, we can be confident that *faith is not failed from among the children of men*, when we feel the hearts of the primitive charity return, and the calentures of the first old devotion are renewed, when it shall be accounted honourable to be a servant of C H R I S T, and a shame to committ a sinne; then, and then onely, our churches shall be assemblies of the faithfull, and the kingdomes of the world Christian Countryes. But so long as it is notorious, that we have made Christian religion another thing then what the holy J E S U S designed it to be; when it does not make us live good lives, but it self is made a pretence to all manner of impiety, a stratagem to serve ends, the ends of covetousnesse, of ambition and revenge; when the Christian charity ends in killing one another for conscience sake, so that faith is made to cut the throat of charity, and our faith kills more then our charity preserves; when the humility of a Christian hath indeed a name amongst us, but it is like a mute person talk'd of onely; while ambition and rebellion, pride and scorne, self-seeking, and proud understandings transact most of the great affairs of Christendome; when the custody of our senses is to no other purposes, but that no opportunity of pleasing them passe away; when our Oaths are like the fringes of our discourses, going round about them, as if they were ornaments and trimmings; when our blasphemies, prophanation, sacrilege and irreligion are become scandalous to the very Turkes and Jewes; while our lusts are alwayes habituall, sometimes unnatural; will any wise man thinke that we believe those doctrines of humility and obedience, of chastity and charity, of temperance and justice, which the Saviour of the world made sacred by his sermon and example; or indeed any thing he either said or did, promised or threatned? For is it possible, a man with his wits about him and believing that he should certainly be damned (that is, be eternally tormented in body and soul, with torments greater then can be in this world) if he be a swearer or lyar or drunkard, or cheates his neighbour, that this man shold dare to do these things; to which the temptations are so small, in which the delight is so inconsiderable, and the satisfaction so none at all?

Tham se sitat  
intraeis in te  
mpo rur latde  
conu interiu  
nra cito, pte  
Iw. S. Chrys.  
ad Demetr.

13

We see by the experience of the whole world, that the beliefe of an honest man in a matter of temporall advantage makes us do actions of such danger and difficulty, that half so much industry and sufferance would ascertain us into a possession of all the promises Evangelicall. Now let any man be asked, whether he had rather be rich, or be saved, he will tell you without all doubt, heaven is the better option, by infinite degrees: for it cannot be, that riches, or revenge or lust should be directly preferred, that is, be thought more eligible then the glories of immortality. That therefore men neglect so great salvation, and so greedily run after the satisfaction of their baser appetites, can be attributed to nothing, but want of faith, they do not heartily believe, that heaven is worth so much; there is upon them a stupidity of spirit, and their faith is dull, and its actions suspended most commonly, and often interrupted

interrupted, and it never enters into the will : so that the propositions are considered nakedly and precisely in themselves, but not as referring to us or our interests, there is nothing of faith in it, but so much as is the first and direct act of understanding, there is no consideration, nor reflection upon the act or upon the person, or upon the subject : so that even as it is seated in the understanding, our faith is commonly lame, mutilous and imperfect, and therefore much more is it culpable, because it is destitute of all cooperation of the rational appetite.

But let us consider the power and efficacy of worldly belief. If a man believes, that there is gold to be had in Peru for fetching, or pearles and rich Jewels in India for the exchange of trifles, he instantly, if he be in capacity leaves the wife of his bosom, and the pretty delights of chidren, and his own security, and ventures into the dangers of waters, and unknown seas, and freezings and valentures, thirst and hunger, pirates and shipwrecks, and hath within him a principle strong enough to answer all objections, because he believes that riches are desirable, and by such meanes likely to be had. Our blessed Saviour comparing the Gospele to a Merchant man, that found a pearle of great price, and sold all to buy it, hath brought this instance home to the present discourse. For if we did as verily believe, that in heaven those great felicities, which transcend all our apprehensions are certainly to be obtained by leaving our vices, and lower desires, what can hinder us, but we shoud at least doe as much for obtaining those great felicities, as for the lesser, if the beliefe were equall; for if any man thinkes he may have them without holinesse and justice and charity, then he wants faith, for he believes not that saying of *S. Paul*; *follow peace with all men and holiness, without which no man shall ever see G O D.* If a man believes learning to be Hebr.12.14. the onely or chiefest Ornament and beauty of soules, that which will ennable him to a faire imployment in his owne time, and an honourable memory to succeeding ages, this if he believes heartily, it hath power to make him endure *Catarrhes*, goutes, hypochondriacall passions, to read till his eyes almost fixe in their orbes, to despise the pleasures of idlenesse, or tedious sports, and to undervalue whatsoever does not cooperate to the end of his faith, the desire of learning. Why is the Italian so abstentious in his drinkings, or the Helvetician so valiant in his fight, or so true to the Prince that employes him, but that they believe it to be noble so to be? If they believed the same, and had the same honourable thoughts of other vertues, they also would be as nationall as these. For faith will doe its proper worke : and when the understanding is peremptorily and fully determind upon the persualion of a proposition, if the will shoud then dissent and choose the contrary, it were unnaturall and monstros, and possibly no man ever does so; for that men doe things without reasoun and against their conscience, is because they have put out their light, and discourse their wills into the election of a sensible good, and want faith to believe truely all circumstances, which are necessary by way of predisposition for choice of the intellectuall.

But when mens faith is confiden<sup>t</sup>, their resolution and actions are in proportion;

## Part II.

*Ephes.5.18.*

portion; for thus the faith of Mahumetans makes them to abstaine from wine for ever: and therefore if we had the Christian faith, we should much rather abstaine from drunke[n]esse for ever; It being an expresse rule Apostolicall, *Be not drunke with wine, wherein is exceſſe.* The faith of the Circumcellions made them to run greedily to violent and horrid deaths as willingly, as to a crowne: for they thought it was the Kings high way to Martyrdome. And there was never any man zealous for his religion, and of an imperious bold faith, but he was also willing to dye for it; and therefore also by as much reason to live in it, and to be a strict observer of its prescriptions. And the stories of the strict sanctity, and prodigious sufferings and severe disciplines, and expensive religion, and complyant and laborious charity of the primitive Christians, is abundant argument to convince us, that the faith of Christians is infinitely more fruitfull, and productive of its vniuocall and proper issues, then the faith of hereticks, or the false religions of misbelievers, or the persuasions of secular persons, or the spirit of Antichrist; and therefore when we see men serving their Prince with such difficult and ambitious services, because they believe him able to reward them, though of his will they are not so certain; and yet so supinely negligent, and incurious of their services to G O D, of whose power and will to reward us infinitely, there is certainty absolute and irrespective, is certain probation, that we believe it not; for if we believe there is such a thing as heaven, and that every single mans portion of heaven is farre better then all the wealth of the world, it is morally impossible we should preferre so little before so great a profit.

16.

I instance but once more. The faith of *Abraham* was instanced in the matter of confidence, or trust in the Divine promises: and, he being the father of the faithfull, we must imitate his fai[h] by a cleere dereliction of our selves, and our own interests, and an intire confident relying upon the divine goodnesse in all cases of our needs or danger. Now, this also is a triall of the verity of our faith, the excellency of our condition, and what title we have to the glorious names of *Christian* and *faithfull* and *believers*. If our Fathers, when we were in pupillage and minority, or a true and an able friend, when

*Quare cognosces non  
Deo esse facile Deo  
fieri re alia non ali-  
tum propter credere propter  
eum quia in nobis  
est cum mortali com-  
page cognitionem.  
At his a purgari  
omnibus . . . uni a.  
Deo confidere, magno  
& celesti animi est  
opus, & ejus q.i.n pul-  
lis amplius captiatur  
terum quas videmus  
serum illecebris. Phil.  
Judas, libr. Quis  
serum Div. heres.*

*\* Enei 70 πάντα  
τέλον τὸν τερπνόν  
δικαιούσα, τοὺς  
οὐλαῖς μη τιποτοί-  
σιν. Ἀschyl.  
Prometh.*

we were in need, had made promises to supply our necessities, our confidence was so great, that our care determined. It were also well, that we were as confident of GOD, and as secure of the event, whea we had disposed our selves to reception of the blessing, as we were of our friend or parents. We all professe, that G O D is Almighty, that all his promises are certain, and yet when it comes to a pinch we find that man to be more confident, that hath ten thousand pounds in his purse, then he that readeſ GODS promises over ten thousand times. *Men of a common spirit,* (saith St. Chrysostome) *of an ordinary sanctity, will not steale, or kill, or lye, or commit adultery;* but it requires a rare faith, and a sublimity of pious affections to believe, that G O D will worke a deliverance, which to me seemes impossible. And indeed S.Chrysostome hit upon the right. He had need be a good man and love GOD well, that puts his trust in him. For those we love we are most apt to trust; \* and although trust and confidence is sometimes founded upon experience, yet it is also begotten and increased by *love*, as often as by *reason* and *discourse*. And to this purpose it was excellently said by

*S.Basil.*

S.Basil : That the knowledge which one man learneth of another is made perfect by continuall use, and exercise, but that, which through the grace of GOD is engraffed in the mind of man, is made absolute by justice, gentlenesse and charity. So that if you are willing even in death to confess not onely the articles, but in affliction and death to trust the promises ; If in the lowest nakednesse of poverty you can cherish your selves with expectation of Gods promises and dispensation, being as confident of food and rayment, and deliverance or support, when all is in Gods hand ; as you are, when it is in your own; If you can be cheerfull in a storne, smile when the world frownes; be content in the midst of spirituall desertions, and anguish of spirit, expecting all should worke together for the best according to the promise ; If you can strengthen your selves in GOD, when you are weakest, believe when ye see no hope, and entertain no jealousies or suspicions of GOD, though you see nothing to make you confident ; then, and then onely, you have faith, which in coniunction with its other parts is able to save your soules. For in this precife duty of trusting GOD these are the rayes of hope, and great porportions of charity and resignation.

The summe is, that pious and most Christian sentece of the Author of the ordinary Glosse : To believe in GOD through JESUS CHRIST is by believing to love him, to adhere to him, to be united to him by charity and obedience, and to be incorporated into Christs mysticall body in the communion of Saints. I conclude this with collation of certain excellent words of S.Paul, highly to the present purpose. Examine your selves, Brethren, whether ye be in the faith ? Prove your own selves : Well, but how ? Know you not your own selves how that JESUS CHRIST is in you except ye be reprobates ? There's the touchstone of faith. If JESUS CHRIST dwells in us, then we are true believers ; If he does not, we are reprobates, we have no faith : But how shall we know whether Christ be in us or no ? S.Paul tells us that too. If Rom.8.10. Christ be in you, the body is dead by reason of sin, but the spirit is life because of righteousness. That's the Christians marke, and the Characteristick of a true believer ; a death unto sin, and a living unto righteousness, a mortified body and a quickned spirit. This is plaine enough, and by this we see, what we must trust to. A man of a wicked life does in vain hope to be saved by his faith, for indeed his faith is but equivocall and dead, which as to his purpose is just none at all; and therefore let him no more deceive himself. For (that I may still use the words of S.Paul) This is a faithful saying, and these things I wil that thou affirme constantly, that they which have believed in GOD might be carefull to maintain good works. For such, and such onely in the great scrutiny for faith in the day of doom, shall have their portion in the bosom of faithfull Abraham. Titus 3.8.

17.  
Credere in Deum est  
crederendo amare cre-  
dendo diligere, et cre-  
dendo cumire, et uem-  
bris eius incorporari.  
Gloss.ord.in Rom.4.

## THE PRAYER.

## I.

O Eternall GOD, fountain of all truth and holinesse, in whom to believe is life eternal, let thy grace descend with a mighty power into my soule, beating down every strong hold, and vainer imagination, and bringing every proud thought, and my confident and ignorant understanding into the obedience of JESUS. Take from me all disobedience and refractorinesse of spirit, all ambition and private

## THE PRAYER.

## Part II.

and baser interests, remove from me all prejudice and weaknesse of persvasion, that I may wholly resign my understanding to the persuasions of Christianity; acknowledging thee to be the principle of truth, and thy word the measure of knowledge, and thy lawes the rule of my life, and thy promises, the satisfaction of my hopes, and an union with thee to be the consummation of charity in the fruition of glory. Amen.

2.

Holy J E S U S make me to acknowledge thee to be my L O R D and Master, and my selfe a servant and Disciple of thy holy Discipline and institution; let me love to sit at thy feet, and suck in with my eares and heart the sweetnesse of thy holy Sermons. Let my soule be shod with the preparation of the Gospell of peace, with a peaceable and docile disposition. Give me great boldnesse in the publike confession of thy name and the truth of thy Gospell, in despite of all hostilities and temptations; and grant I may alwayes remember that thy Name is called upon me, and I may so behave my selfe, that I neither give scandal to others, nor cause disreputation to the honour of religion, but that thou mayest be glorified in me, and I by thy mercies after a strict observance of all the holy lawes of Christianity. Amen.

3.

O holy and ever blessed spirit, let thy gracious influences be the perpetuall guide of my rnational faculties. Inspire me with wisdome and knowledge, spirituall understanding and a holy faith, and sanctify my faith, that it may arise up to the confidence of hope, and the adherencies of charity, and be fruitfull in a holy conversation; mortifie in me all peevishnesse and pride of spirit, all heretical dispositions, and whatsoever is contrary to sound doctrine; that when the eternall Son of GOD, the Author and finisher of our faith shall come to make scrutiny and an inquest for faith, I may receive the promises laid up for them, that believe in the LORD J E S U S, and waite for his coming in holinesse and purity; to whom with the Father and thee, O Blessed Spirit, be all honour and eternall adoration payed with all sanctity and joy and Eucharist now and for ever. Amen.





## Sect. 11.

Of C H R I S T S going to Jerusalem  
to the Passeover the first time after his  
manifestation, and what followed till  
the expiration of the office of JOHN  
the Baptist.

**H**Immediately after this miracle JESUS abode a few dayes in Capernaum, but because of the approach of the great feast of Passeover he ascended to Jerusalem, and the first publike act of record, that he did, was an *act of holy zeale* and religion in behalfe of the honour of the temple. For divers Merchants and exchangers of money made the temple to be the market and the banke, and brought beasts thither to be sold for sacrifice against the great Paschall solemnity. At the sight of which JESUS, being moved with zeale and indignation, made a whip of cords, and drove the beasts out of the Temple, overthrew the accounting tables, and commanded them that sold the Doves to take them from thence. For his anger was holy, and he would mingle no injury with it, and therefore the Doves, which if let loose would be detrimentall to the owners, he caused to be fairly removed, and published the religion of holy places, establishing their sacrednesse for ever by his first Gospell Sermon, that he made at Jerusalem. *Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house a house of merchandise, for it shall be called a house of prayer to all nations.* And being required to give a signe of his vocation, for this being an action like the religion of the zealots among the Jewes, if it was not attested by something extraordinary might be abused into an excuse of liberty, he only foretold the resurrection of his body after three dayes death, but he expressed it in the metaphor of the Temple. *Destroy this Temple and I will build it againe in three dayes,* he spake of the temple of his body, and they understood him of the temple at Jerusalem, and it was never rightly construed, till it was accomplished.

At this publike convention of the Jewish nation J E S U S did many miracles, published himselfe to be the Messias, and persuaded many disciples, amongst whom was Nicodemus a Doctor of the Law, and a ruler of the nation; he came by night to JESUS and affirmed himself to be convinced by the miracles, which he had seen, *for no man could doe those miracles except GOD be with him.* When J E S U S perceived his understanding to be so farr disposed, he began to instruct him in the great secre-

## Part II.

and mysteriousnesse of regeneration , telling him that every production  
 ' is of the same nature and condition with its parent ; from flesh comes  
 ' flesh and corruption, from the spirit comes spirit and life and immortalit-  
 ' ty. And nothing from a principle of nature could arrive to a supernaturall  
 ' end, and therefore the only doore to enter into the Kingdome of G O D  
 ' was water by the mandacion of the spirit, and by this regeneration we are  
 ' put into a new capacity, of living spirituall life in order to a spirituall and  
 supernaturall end.

3.  
 This was strange philosophy to *Nicodemus* ; but JESUS bad him not  
 ' to wonder, for this is not a work of humanity but a fruit of Gods spirit,  
 ' and an issue of predestination. *For the spirit bloweth, where it listeth* ; and is  
 ' as the wind, certain and notorious in the effects, but secret in the principle  
 ' and in the manner of production, and therefore this doctrine was not to be  
 ' estimated by any proportions to naturall principles or exprements of sense,  
 ' but to the secrets of a new Metaphyficks, and abstracted, separate specula-  
 ' tions. Then Christ proceeds in his Sermon, telling him there are yet  
 ' higher things for him to apprehend and believe ; for this in respect of  
 ' some other mysteriousnesse of his Gospell, was but as earth in comparison  
 ' of heaven. Then he tells of his own descent from heaven, foretells his death  
 ' and ascension, and the blessing of redemption, which he came to worke for  
 mankind; he preaches of the love of the Father, the mission of the Son, the  
 rewards of faith, and the glories of eternity. He upbraides the unbelieving  
 and impenitent, and declares the differences of a holy and a corrupt con-  
 science, the shame and feares of one, the confidence and serenity of the o-  
 ther. And this is the summe of his Sermon to *Nicodemus*, which was the  
 ' fullest of mystery and speculation and abstracted senses of any, that he  
 ' ever made, except that which he made immediately before his passion, all  
 ' his other Sermons being more practical.

From Jerusalem JESUS goeth into the country of Judea, attended by  
 divers Disciples, whose understandings were brought into subjection and ob-  
 edience to Christ, upon confidence of the divinity of his miracles. There  
 his Disciples did receive all comers and baptised them , as *John* at the same  
 time did, and by that ceremony admitted them to the Discipline and insti-  
 tution according to the custome of the Doctors and great Prophets among  
 the Jews, whose baptizing their Schollers, was the ceremony of their admis-  
 sion. As soone as *John* heard it, he acquitted himself in publicke by renewing  
 his former testimony concerning JESUS , affirming him to be the Messias,  
 ' and now the time was come , that Christ must increase , and the Baptist  
 ' suffer diminution; for Christ came from above, was above all, and the summe  
 ' of his doctrine was that which he had heard and seen from the father,  
 ' whom GOD sent to that purpose, to whom GOD had set his seale, that he  
 ' was true, who spake the words of God, whom the Father loved , to whom  
 ' he gave the spirit without measure, and into whose hands God had deliver-  
 ' ed all things ; this was he, whose testimony the world received not ; and  
 that they might know not onely what person they slighted, but how great  
 salvation also they neglected, he summes up all his Sermons, and finishes his  
 mission with this saying, *He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life :*  
*' and he that believeth not on the Sonne shall not see life, but the wrath of GOD a-*  
*' bideth on him.*

John. 3.36.

5.

For now that the Baptist had fulfilled his office of bearing witness  
 unto

unto JESUS, GOD was pleased to give him his writ of ease, and bring him to his reward upon this occasion. John who had so learned to despise the world, and all its exterior vanities and impudent relations, did his duty justly and so without respect of persons, that as he reproved the people for their prevarications, so he spared not Herod for his, but abstaining from all expostions of the spirit of scorning and asperity, mingling no discontents, interests nor mutinous intimations with his Sermons, he told Herod it was not lawfull for him to have his \* Brothers wife. For which Sermon he felt the furies and malice of a womans spleen, was cast into prison, and about a yeare after was sacrificed to the scorning and pride of a lustfull woman, and her immodest daughter, being at the end of the second yeare of CHRISTS preaching beheaded by Herods command, who would not retract his promise, because of his honour and a rash vow he made in the gayety of his lust, and complacencies of his riotous dancings. His head was brought up in a dish, and made a festivall present to the young girle (who gave it to her mother) a cruelty that was not known among the barbarisms of the worst of people; to mingle banqueting with blood, and fights of death; an insolency and inhumanity, for which the Roman Orators accused Q. Flaminius of treason, because to satisfy the wanton cruelty of Placentia he caused a condemned slave to be killed at supper : and which had no precedent but in the furies of Marius, who caused the head of the Consul Antonius to be brought up to him in his feasts, which he handled with much pleasure and insolency.

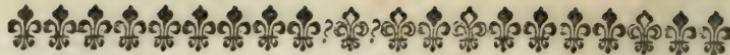
But Gods judgements which, which sleep not \* long, found out Herod, and marked him for a curse. For the wife of Herod, who was the daughter of Aretas a King of Arabia Petrea, being repudiated by paction with Herodias provoked her father to commence a warr with Herod, who prevailed against Herod in a great battell, defeating his whole army, and forcing him to an inglorious flight: which the Jews generally expounded to be a judgement on him for the unworthy and barbarous execution and murder of John the Baptist: GOD in his wisdome and severity making one sin to be the punishment of another, and neither of them both to passe without the signature of a curse. And Nicephorus reports, that the dancing daughter of Herodias passing over a frozen lake, the ice brake, and she fell up to the neck in water, and her head was parted from her body, by the violence of the fragments shaked by the water and its own fall, and so perished; GOD having fitted a judgment to the analogy, and representment of her sinne. Herodias her selfe with her adulterous Paramour Herod were banished to Lyons in France by decree of the Roman Senate, where they lived ingloriously and dyed miserably, so paying dearly for her triumphall scorne superadded to her crime of murder for when she saw the head of the Baptist, which her daughter Salome had presented to her in a charger, she thrust the tongue through with a needle, as Fulvia had formerly done to Cicero. But her selfe paid the charges of her triumph.

## Part II

\* Montanis, &  
cum his Tertul.  
adv. Marcion. I.  
4. c. 34. aiunt  
philippum de-  
f. n. e. u. f. u. l. e. &  
i. n. d. a. p. r. o. b. a.  
tagunt fecundas  
nuptias illi t. s.  
e. s. e. Sed h. o. c. t. a.  
a. p. e. r. t. a. f. r. a. u. d.  
a. g. e. n. s. a. d. v.  
c. a. t. h. o. l. i. c. o. s.  
T. e. r. t. u. l. i. a. n. u. s.  
a. b. s. t. r. i. e. a. t. a. b. s.  
P. t. a. i. n. i. q. u. a. r. e.  
r. e. c. t. a. t. i. o. n. e.  
M. a. r. c. i. o. n. i. a.  
E. v. a. n. g. e. l. i. u. m.  
n. e. g. a. n. t. i. h. o. c.  
o. b. r. u. d. e. r. e. i. n.  
t. a. c. c. i. e. r. a. t.  
S. e. n. s. e. c. o. n. t. r. o. v.  
l. t. 4. 5.  
L. i. v. i. u. s. l. i. b. 39.  
P. l. u. . i. n. M. a. r. i. o.  
6.

\* οὐδὲ τὸ θεῖον  
μίμησις ταῦτα  
τοῦτο σύνθετον τοῦ  
χρυσοῦ μετεπέβαλεν  
τοὺς μὲν σκληράς,  
ταῦτα δέ τινας  
στιγμῶν εἰς γῆ παρ-  
εστικόν ποστον αἱ το-  
μωσίαι.

Πανοιστά φύλοις,  
καὶ οὐκέτι τοσοῦτη τρί-  
πον Θεογόνοις  
αὐτοῖς ἢ τοι πα-  
τεῖσαι πάντας  
έσται, τὰ φίσαι  
χειρότατα κεφαλή-  
ταν ἃ συνεχθε-  
σι, ὅφειται κα-  
κοὶ πίστη πιθα-  
νότεροι ἢ χρή-  
μα. Theodect.  
of anti 1.8.67  
lib. I. p. 52



## Ad. Sect. II.

## CONSIDERATIONS

*Upon the first journey of the holy JESUS to Jerusalem, when he whipt the Merchants out of the Temple.*

1.

hen the Feast came, and J E S U S was ascended up to *Jerusalem*, the first place we finde him in, is the Temple, where not onely was the *area* and court of Religion, but by occasion of publike conventions, the most opportune scene for transfaction of his commission and his Fathers busynesse. And those Christians, who have been religious and affectionate even in the circumstances of piety, have taken this for precedent, and accounted it a good expresse of the regularity of their devotion and order of piety, at their first arrivall to a city to pay their first visits to G O D, the next to his servante the President of religious rites; first they went into the Church and worshipt, then to the Angel of the Church to the Bishop and begd his blessing, and having thus commenced with the auspiciousnesse of religion, they had better hopes, their just affaires would succeed prosperouly, which after the rites of Christian Countries had thus been begun with devotion and religious order.

2.

When the holy JESUS entred the Temple, and espied a Mart kept in the holy Sept, a Faire upon holy ground, he who suffered no transportations of anger in matters and accidents temporall was born high with an extasie of zeale, and according to the custome of the zealots of the nation, took upon him the office of a private infliction of punishment in the cause of GOD, which ought to be dearer to every single person then their own interest and reputation. What the exterminating Angel did to *Herodorus*, who came into the Temple upon design of sacrilege, that the neekest J E S U S did to them, who came with acts of prophanation; he whipt them forth; and as usually good lawes spring from ill manners, and excellent Sermons are occasioned by mens iniquities, now also our great Master upon this accident, asserted the sacrednesse of holy places in the words of a Prophet, which now he made a lesson Evangelicall, *My house shall be called an house of prayer to all nations.*

3.

The beasts and birds there sold were brought for Sacrifice, and the banks of money were for the advantage of the people that came from far, that their retournes might be safe and easie, when they came to Jerusalem upon the imployments of Religion. But they were not yet fit for the Temple, they who brought them thither purposed their own gaine, and meant to passe them through an unholie usage, before they could be made

made anathemata, vowes to G O D : and when religion is but the purpose at the second hand, it cannot hallow a Lay designe, and make it fitte to become a religous ministry, much lesse sanctifie an unlawfull action. When *Rachel* stole her Fathers gods, though possibly she might do it of zeal against her Fathers superstition, yet it was occasion of a sad accident to her self. For the Jews say, that *Rachel* dyed in childe-birth of her second sonne because of that imprecation of *Jacob*, with whomf'ever thou *Gen. 31. 32.*  
*findest thy gods, let him not live.* *Saul* pretended sacrifice, when he spared the fat cattell of *Amalek*, and *Micah* was zealous, when he made him an Ephod and a Teraphim, and meant to make himself an image for religion, when he stole his mothers money : but these are colours of religion, in which not onely the world, but our selves also are deceived by a latent purpose, which we are willing to cover with a remote designe of religion, leaft it should appear unhandsome in its own dressing. Thus some believe a covetousnesse allowable, if they greedily heap treasure with a purpose to build Hospitalls or Colledges ; and sinifter acts of acquiring Church livings are not so soon condemned, if the designe be to preferre an able person ; and actions of revenge come neer to piety if it be to the ruine of an ungodly man ; and indirect proceedings made sacred if they be for the good of the holy cause. This is prophaning the Temple with beasts brought for sacrifices, and dishonours G O D by making himself accessory to his own dishonour as farre as lyes in them, for it diserves him with a pretence of religion : and but that our hearts are deceitfull we should easily perceiue, that the greatest businesse of the letter is written in postscript ; the great pretence is the least purpose, and the latent covetousnesse or revenge, or the fsecular appendix is the main engine to which the end of religion is made but instrumentall and pretended. But men, when they sell a mule, use to speak of the horse, that begat him, not of the asse, that bore him.

The holy J E S U S made a whip of cords to represent and to chastise the implications and ensouldings of finne and the cords of vanity. 1. There are some finnes, that of themselves are a whip of cords, those are the crying finnes, that by their degree and malignity speake loud for vengeance, or such as have great disreputation, and are accounted the basest issues of a caytive disposition, or such which are unnaturall, and unusuall, or which by publike observation are marked with the signature of divine judgements. Such are murder, oppresion of widowes and orphans, detaining the labourers hire, lusts against nature, parricide, treason, betraying a just trust in great instances and base manners, lying to a king, perjury in a priest, these carry *Cains* mark upon them, or *Judas* his sting, or *Manasses* sorrow, unlesse they be made impudent by the spirit of obdurbation. 2. But there are some finnes, that bear shame upon them and are used as correctives of pride and vanity, and if they do their cure, they are converted into instruments of good, by the great power of the Divine grace, but if the spirit of the man growes impudent and hardned against the shame, that which commonly follows is the wors string of the whip, a direct confignation to a reprobate spirit. 3. Other sins there are, for the chastising of which C H R I S T takes the whip into his own hand, and there is much need, when finnes are the customes of a nation and mark'd with no exteriour disadvantage, or have such circumstances of encouragement,

## Part II.

encouragement, that they are unapt to disquiet a conscience, or make our beds unease till the pillowes be softned with penitentiall showers. In both these cases the condition of a sinner is sad and miserable. For it is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living GOD, his hand is heavy, and his sword is sharp, and pierces to the dividing the marrow and the bones ; and he, that confidrs the distance infinite between GOD and us, must tremble when he rememberes, that he is to feele the issues of that anger, which he is not certain whether or no it will destroy him infinitely and eternally.

4. But if the whip be given into our hands, that we become executioners of the Divine wrath, it is sometimes worse, for we seldome strike our selves for emendation, but adde a sinne to sinne, till we perish miserably and inevitably. GOD scourges us often into repentance, but when a sinne is the whip of another sinne, the rod is put into our hands, who like blinde men strike with a rude and undiscerning hand, and because we love the punishment, doe it without internission, or choyce, and have no end but ruine.

When the holy JESUS had whipt the Merchants in the Temple, they took away all the instruments of their sin. For a judgement is usually the commencement of repentance ; love is the last of graces, and seldome at the beginning of a new life, but is reserved to the perfections and ripenessse of a Christian. We begin in feare, *the feare of the LORD is the beginning of wisdome* ; when he smote them, then they turned, and enquired early after GOD, and afterwards the impreffes of fear continue like a hedge of thornes about us, to restrain our dissolutions within the awfulness of the Divine Majestie, that it may preserve what was from the same principle begun.

This principle of their emendation was from G O D, and therefore ianocent and holy, and the very purpose of Divine threatenings, is that upon them as upon one of the great hinges, the piety of the greatest part of men should turn ; and the effect was answerable; but so are not the actions of all those who follow this precedent in the tract of the letter. For indeed there have been some reformations which have been so like this, that the greatest alteration which hath been made was, that they carried all things out of the Temple, the money, and the Tables, and the sacrifice, and the Temple it self went at last. But these mens scourge is to follow after, and CHRIST the Prince of the Catholike Church will provide one of his own contexture, more severe then the stripes which *Heliodorus* felt from the infliction of the exterminating Angel. But the holy Spirit of GOD by making provision against such a reformation hath prophetically declared the aptnesse which are in pretences of religious alterations to degenerate into sacrilegious desires. *Thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?* In this case there is no amendment, onely one sin resignes to another, and the person still remaines under its power, and the same dominion.

Psal. 78. 34.

Rom. 2. 22.

THE

## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Eternall JESU, thou bright image of thy Fathers glories, whose light did shine to all the world, when thy heart was inflamed with zeale and love of God, and of religion, let a coale from thy altar, faan'd with the wings of the holy Dove, kindle in my soule such holy flames, that I may be zealous of thy honour and glory, forward in religious duties, earnest in their pursuit, prudent in their managing, ingenious in my purposes, making my religion to serve no end, but of thy glories, and the obtaining of thy promises; and so sanctifie my soule and my body, that I may be a holy temple, fit and prepared for the inhabitation of thy ever blessed spirit, whom grant, that I may never grieve by admitting any impure thing to deface the place, and unhallow the courts of his abode; but give me a pure soule in a chaste and healthfull body, a spirit full of holy simplicity, and designes of great ingenuity, and perfect religion, that I may intend what thou commandest, and may with proper instruments, prosecute what I so intend, and by thy aydes may obtaine the end of my labours, the rewards of obedience and holy living, even the society and inheritance of JESUS in the participation of the joyes of thy temple, where thou dwellest and reignest with the Father and the Holy Ghost, O eternall JESUS. Amen.



## Discourse 7.

### Of the Religion of holy places.

**D**He holy JESUS brought a divine warrant for his zeale. The selling sacrifices, and the exchang of money, and every lay employmont did violence and dishonour to the temple, which was hallowed to ecclesiastical ministeries, and set apart for offices of Religion, for the use of holy things, for it was GODS house; and so is every house by publike designation separate for prayer, or others uses, of Religion, it is GODS house. [My house] GOD had a propriety in it and had se this mark on it, even his own name. And therefore it was in the Jewes Idiome of speech called the mountaine of the LORDS house, and the house of the LORD by David frequently; GOD had put his Name into all places appointed for solemn worship, In all places where I record my name, I will come unto thee and bleſſe thee. For GOD, who was never visible to mortall eye, was pleased to make himself praſentiall by substitution of his Name, that is, in certain places he hath appointed, that his name shall be called upon, and by promising and imparting such blessings, which he hath made

Exod. 20. 24.

## Part I.I.

made consequent to the invocation of his name, hath made such places to be a certain determination of some speciall manner of his presence. For Gods name is not a distinct thing from himself, not an Idea, & it cannot be put into a place in literal signification ; the expression is to be resolved into some other sense ; GODS name is that, whereby he is known, by which he is invoked, that which is the most immediate publication of his essence, nearer then which we cannot go unto him ; and because GOD is essentially present in all places, when he makes himself present in one place more then another, it cannot be understood to any other purpose, but that in such places he gives speciall blessings, and graces, or that in those places he appoints his name, that is, himself specially to be invoked.

2.

So that when GOD puts his name in any place by a speciall manner, it signifies, that there himself is in that manner ; but in separate and hallow'd places GOD hath expressed, that he puts his name, with a purpose it should be called upon, therefore in plain signification, it is thus ; in consecrate places GOD himself is present to be invok'd ; that is, there he is most delighted to hear the prayers we make unto him. For all the expressions of Scriptures, of GODS houses, the tabernacle of GOD, GOD dwellings, putting his name there, his sanctuary ; are resolved into that saying of GOD to Solomon, who prayed, that he would hear the prayers of necessitous people in that place : GOD granting the request expressed is thus, *I have sanctified the house, which thou hast built* : that is, the house, which thou hast designed for my worship, I have design'd for your blessing ; what you have dedicated I have accepted ; what you have consecrated I have hallowed, I have taken it to the same purpose, to which your desires and designation pretended it in your first purposes and expence. So that since the purpose of man in separating places of worship is, that thither by order and with convenience and in communities of men GOD may be worshipped and prayed unto, GOD having declared, that he accepts of such separate places to the same purposes, sayes, that there he will be called upon, that such places shall be places of advantage to our devotions in respect of humane order and Divine acceptance and benediction.

3.

Now these are therefore GODS houses, because they were given by men, and accepted by GOD for the services of GOD and the offices of religion. And this is not the effect, or result of any distinct covenant GOD hath made with man in any period of the world, but it is merely a favour of GOD either hearing the prayer of dedication, or complying with humane order or necessities. For there is nothing in the Covenant of Moses law, that by vertue of speciall stipulation makes the assignment of a house for the service of GOD to be proper to Moses rite. Not onely because GOD had speciall memorials and determinations of this manner of his presence before Moses law, as at Bethel, where Jacob laid the first stone of the Church, (nothing but a stone was GODS memorial) and the beginning and first rudenessse of a temple ; but also because after Moses law was given as long as the nation was ambulatory, So were their places and instruments of religion ; and although the ark was not confined to a place till Solomons time, yet GOD was pleased in this manner to confine himself to the ark ; and in all places wherever his name was put, even in synagogues and oratories and threshing floors, when they were hallowed with

Nec fortuitum  
spernere celi-  
cem leges sum-  
bant, opida  
pulsore sumptu  
jubentes, & De-  
orum Te ipla  
nevo decora e  
favo. Hor. 1.1.  
od. 15.

with an altar and Religion, thither GOD came, that is, there he heard them pray, and answered and blessed accordingly, still in proportion to that degree of religion, which was put upon them; and those places, when they had once entertained Religion, grew separate and sacred for ever; for therefore David bought the threshing-floore of Araunah, that it might never return to common use any more; for it had been no trouble or inconvenience to Araunah to have used his floore for one solemnity; but he offered to give it, and David resolved to buy it, because it must of necessity be aliened from common uses, to which it never could return any more, when once it had been the instrument of a religious solemnity; and yet this was no part of Moses law, that every place of a temporary Sacrifice should be holy for ever. David had no guide in this, but right reason and the religion of all the world. For such things which were great instruments of publike ends, and things of highest use, were also in all societies of men of greatest honour, and immured by reverence and the security of Lawes. For honour and reputation is not a thing inherent in any creature, but depends upon the estimate of GOD or men, who either in diffusion or representation become fountaines of a derivative honour. Thus some men are honourable, that is, those who are fountaines of honour in civill account, have commanded that they shall be honoured. And so places and things are made honourable; that as honourable persons are to be distinguished from others by honourable usages and circumstances proper to them, so also should places and things (upon speciaall reason separate) have an usage proper to them, when by a publike instrument or Minister they are so separated. No common usage then, something proper to tell what they are, and to what purposes they are designed, and to signifie their separation and extraordinariesse. Such are the person of the Prince, the Archives and Records of a Kingdom, the walls and great defences of the Imperiall City, the Eagles and Ensignes of warre amongst the Ronians, and above all things, though not above all persons, the Temples, and Altars, and all the instruments of Religion. And there is much reason in it. For thus a servant of a King, though his imployment be naturally mean, yet is more honourable, because he relates to the most excellent person; and therefore much more those things which relate to GOD. And though this be the reason why it should be so, yet for this and other reasons, they that have power, that is, they who are acknowledged to be the fountaines, and the channels of honour, I mean the supreme power, and publike fame have made it actually to be so. For whatsoever all wise men, and all good men, and all publike societies, and all supreme authority hath commanded to be honoured, or rever'd, that is honourable and reverend, and this honour and reverence is to be expressed according to the customs of the nation, and instruments of honour proper to the nature of the thing or person respectively. Whatsoever is esteemeed so, is so; because Honour and Noble separations are relative actions and termes, creatures and productions of fame, and the voyce of Princes and the sence of people; and they who will not honour those things or those persons which are thus decreed to be honourable, have no communications with the civilities of humanity, or the guises of wise Nations: They do not give honour to whom honour belongs. Now that which in civill account we call [honourable] the same in religious account we call [sacred] for by both these words we mean things or persons.

## Part II.

a Ceremonia  
Deorum, sancti-  
tas Regum Jul.  
Caesar apud  
Sueton.

b Ex lege ciuil-  
que ciuitatis iu-  
bentur Dii colii.  
Dictam s. Sapi-  
ent. apud Xeno-  
phon,

sions made separate and retired from common opinion, and vulgar usages by reason of some excellencie really inherent in them (such as are excellent men) or for their relation to excellent persons, or great ends, publike or religious, (and so servants of Princes, and Ministers of Religion, and its instruments and utensils are made honourable, or sacred) and the expressions of their honour are all those actions and usages which are contrary to despite, and above the usage of vulgar things or places.<sup>(a)</sup> Whatsoever is sacred, that is honourable for its religious relation; and whatsoever is honourable, that also is sacred (that is, separate from the vulgar usages and account) for its civil excellency or relation. The result is this, that when publike authority, or the consent <sup>(b)</sup> of a Nation hath made any place sacred for the uses of Religion, we must esteem it sacred, just as we esteem persons honourable who are so honoured. And thus are Judges, and the very places of Judicature, the Kings presence chamber, the Chayre of State, the Senate-house, the Royall Ensignes of a Prince, whose gold and purple in its naturall capacity hath in it no more dignity then the money of the bank, or the cloth of the Mart; but it hath much more for its signification and relative use. And it is certaine, these things whose excellencie depends upon their relation, must receive the degree of their honour in that proportion they have to their terme and foundation; and therefore what belongs to God (as holy places of Religion) must rise highest in this account: I mean higher then any other places. And this is besides the honour which G O D hath put upon them, by his presence and his title to them, which in all religions he hath signified to us.

4.

Indeed among the Jewes, as G O D had confined his Church and the rites of religion to be used only in communion, and participation with the nation, so also he had limited his presence, and was more sparing of it, then in the time of the Gospel his Son declared he wold be. It was said of old, that at Jerusalem men ought to worship, that is, by a solemn, publike, and great addresse in the capitall expresses of Religion, in the distinguishing rites of Liturgy, for else it had been no new thing. For, in ordinary prayers G O D was then, and long before, pleased to heare Jeremy in the dungeon, Manasses in prison, Daniel in the Lyons den, Jonas in the belly of the deep, and in the offices, yet more solemn in the Proseuche, in the houses of prayer which the Jewes had, not only in their dispersion, but even in Palestine for their diurnall and nocturnall offices: But when the holy JESUS had broken down the partition wall, then the most solemn Offices of Religion were as unlimited as their private devotions were before; for where ever a Temple should be built, thither G O D would come, if he were worshipped *spiritually*, and *in truth*, that is, according to the rites of C H R I S T, (who is grace and truth) and the dictate of the spirit and analogie of the Gospel. All places were now alike to build Churches in, or memorials for GOD, GODS houes. And that our blessed Saviour discourses of places of publike worship to the woman of Samaria is notorious, because the whole question was concerning the great addresses of Moses rites whether at Jerusalem or Mount Gerizim, which were the places of the right and the schismatrical temple, the confinements of the whole religion: and in antithesis, Jesus said, nor here nor there shalbe the solemnities of addresse to GOD, but in all places you may build a temple, and God will dwell in it.

4.

And this hath descended from the first beginings of religion down to the

CON-

consummation of it in the perfections of the Gospel. For the Apostles of our LORD carried the offices of the Gospel into the Temple of Jerusalem, there they preached and prayed, and payed vowed, but never, that we read of, offered sacrifice; which shewes that the offices purely Evangelicall were proper to be done in any of GODS proper places, and that thither they went not in compliance with *Moses* rites, but merely for Gospel duties, or for such offices, which were common to *Moses* and Christ, such as were, prayer, and vowed. While the Temple was yet standing they had peculiar places for the assemblies of the faithfull, where either by accident, or observation, or religion, or choice, they met regularly. And I instance in the house of *John* surnamed *Mark*, which as *Alexander* reports in the life of *Saint Barnabas* was consecrated by many actions of religion, by our blessed Saviours eating the Passeover, his institution of the holy Eucharist, his farewell sermon, and the Apostles met there in the octaves of Easter, whither C H R I S T came again, and hallowed it with his presence; and there to make up the relative sanctification compleate, the holy Ghost descended upon their heads in the feast of Pentecost; and this was erected into a fair fabrick, and is mentioned as a famous Church by *Saint Jerome*, Epist. 27. and *V. Bede*; in which as *Adrichomius* addes, *S. Peter* preached that sermon, De locis Sancti. which was miraculously prosperous in the conversion of three thousand; c. 3. there Saint James Brother of our L O R D was consecrated first bishop of In descript Hierusalem, Saint Stephen and the other fix were there ordained Deacons; epof. n. 6. there the Apostles kept their first Councell, and compiled their Creed, by these actions and their frequent conventions shewing the same reason, order and prudence of religion in assignation of speciall places of Divine service, which were ever observed by all the nations and religions, and wise men of the world. And it were a strange imagination to fancy, that in Christian religion there is any principle contrary to that wisdom of God, and all the world, which for order, for necessity, for convenience, for the solemnity of worship hath set a part places for G O D and for religion. Private prayer had alwayes an unlimited residence and relation, even under *Moses* Law; but publike prayer in the Law of *Moses* was restraint to one Temple; in the law of nature it was not confined to one, but yet determined to publike and solemne places; and when the holy Jesus dissparked the inclosures of *Moses*, wee all returned to the permissions and liberty of the Naturall law, in which although the publike and solemne prayers were confined to a Temple, yet the Temple was not confined to a place; but they might be any where, so they were at all; instruments of order, conveniences of assembling, residences of religion; and G O D who alwayes loved order and was apt to heare all holy and prudent prayers (and therefore also the prayers of consecration) hath often declared that he loves such places, that he will dwell in them; not that they are advantages to him, but that he is pleased to make them so to us. And therefore all Nations of the world built publike houses for religion, and since all ages of the Church did so too, it had need be a strong and a convincing argument, that must shew they were deceived. And if any man list to be contentious, he must be answered with *Saint Pauls* reproofe wee have no such custome, nor the Churches of G O D.

## Part II.

6.

I Cor. 11. 22.

Thus S. Paul reproved the Corinthians for despising the *Church of God* by such uses, which were therefore unfit for Gods because they were proper for their own, that is, for common houses. And although they were at first, and in the descending ages so afflicted by the tyranny of enemies that they could not build many Churches, yet some they did, and the Churches themselves suffered part of the persecution. For so Eusebius reports, that when under *Severus* and *Gordianus*, *Philip* and *Galianus* the Christian affaires were in a tolerable condition, they built Churches in great number and expence. But when the persecution waxed hot under *Dioclesian*, down went the Churches upon a designe to extinguish, or disadvantage the religion. *Maximinus* gave leave to rebuild them. Upon which rescript (faith the story) the Christians were overjoyed, and raised them up to an incredible height, and \* incomparable beauty. This was Christian Religion then, and so it hath continued ever since, and unlesse we should have new reason and new revelation, it must continue so till our Churches are exchanged for thrones, and our Chappells for seats placed before the lamb, in the eternall temple of cælestiall Jerusalem.

\* καὶ δὴ δι-  
κλησομεν Σωτῆ-  
ρας το πόλες

ἀγ̄ χαλάσσας ἑδὲς, ἀπαθετος ἢ πλειστας πολυπλοκωτερός, το χρυσούχος ὅνος ἀπεθεμένος ὁποιος ὁποιος τον Μαντελον φυτο. Lucian. Philopat. de templo Christiano.

7.

And to this purpose it is observed, that the holy JESUS first ejected the beasts of Sacrifice out of the temple, and then proclaimed the place holy, and the scene of repreffenting prayers, which in type intimated the same thing which is involved in the expression of the next words, My house shall bee called the house of prayer to all nations; now and for ever, to the Jewes and to the Gentiles in all circumstances and variety of time and nation, GODS houses are holy in order to holy uses; the time as unlimited as the nations are indefinite and universall; which is the more observeable, because it was of the outward courts, not whether Moses rites alone were admitted, but the naturall devotion of Jewes, and Gentile Profelytes, that CHRI ST affirmed it to bee holy, to bee the house of GOD, and the place of prayer: So that the Religion of publike places of prayer, is not a rite of *Levi*, but a naturall and prudent circumstance, and advantage of religion; in which all wise men agree, who therefore must have some common principle with influence upon all the world, which must be the univocal cause of the consent of all men; which common principle must either be a dictate of naturall or prime reason, or else some tradition from the first parents of mankinde, which because it had order in it, beauty, religion, and confirmation from heaven, and no reason to contest against it, it hath surpriz'd the understanding, and practises of all nations. And indeed we finde, that even in paradise GOD had that, which is analogicall to a Church, a distinct place, where he manifested himselfe present in proper manner: For *Adam* and *Eve*, when they had sinned, hid themselves from the presence of the L O R D ; and this was the word in all descent of the Church, for the being of GOD in holy places, the presence of the L O R D was there. And probably when *Adam* from this intimation, or a greater direction had taught *Cain* and *Abel* to offer sacrifice to G O D

Quod ab omni-  
bus gentibus  
observatum est,  
id non nisi a  
Deo sanctum  
est. Socrates.  
Χρόνος ἡπολοίδι-  
ζει οτι γένεται  
δημοκρατία, ιχ-  
εγγένερον. Nicet.  
Τοις απεριπτωτο-  
ασφαλίσασα, τέ-  
λεις είναι τας  
τοις περιπτωτι-  
σηση, καὶ νομοι  
των καὶ χειρο-  
νη, οἵτινες δια-  
ποτε πολλήν-  
την. Alcibiad.  
καὶ Thucyd.

in a certain place, where they were observed of each in their severall offerings it became one of the rules of religion, which was derived to their posseſſity by tradition, the onely way they had to communicate the dictates of divine commandment.

There is no more necessary to be added in behalf of holy places, and to assert them into the family and relatives of religion; our estimate and deportment toward them is matter of præcise, and therefore of proper conſideration. To which purpose I consider, that holy places being the reſidence of G O D S name upon earth, there where he hath put it, that by fiction of law it may be the \* sanctuary and the laſt refort in all calamities\* and need, G O D hath ſent his agents to poſleſſe them in perfon for him. Churches and oratories are regions and courts of Angels, and they are there, not onely to minister to the Saints, but also they poſleſſe them in the right of G O D . There they are: ſo the greatest and Prince of Spirits tells us, the holy Ghost. *I ſaw the L O R D ſitting upon his throne, and his train filled the temple, About it stood the Seraphim;* that was G O D S train, and therefore holy David knew, that his addresses to GOD were in the presence of Angels: *I will praise thee with my whole heart; before the gods will I sing praise unto thee.* Before the Angels, ſo it is in the Septuagint. And that we might know, where or how the kingly worshipper would pay this adoration, he addes; *I will worship towards thy holy temple;* and this was ſo known by him, that it became expressive of GODS manner of preſence in heaven. *The charets of G O D are twenty thousand, even thousands of Angels, and the L O R D is among them as in Sinai,* in the Orat. Agrip. holy place, G O D in the midst of Angels, and the Angels in the midst of the holy place; and G O D in heaven in the midst of that holy circle, as ſure as he is amongſt Angels in the recesses of his Sanctuary. Were the rudiments of the law worthy of an attendance of Angels, and are the memorials of the G oſpel deſtitute of ſo brave a retinue? Did the beatified spirits wait upon the types, and do they decline the office at the miniftration of the ſubſtance? Is the nature of man made worse ſince the incarnation of the Son of G O D , and the Angels purchased an exemption from their miniftry, ſince C H R I ſT became our Brother? We have little reaſon to thiſke ſo. And therefore S. Paul ſtill makes uſe of the argument to preſle women to modeſty and humility in Churches, because of the Angels. And upon the ſame ſtocke S. Chrysſtome chides the people of his Diocefe for walking, and laughing and prating in Churches: *The Church is not a ſhop of manufactures, or merchandise, but the place of Angels and of Archangels, the Court of G O D , and the image or repreſentment of heaven it ſelfe.*

For if we we conſider, that Christianity is ſomething more then ordinary, that there are muſteries in our religion, and in none else, that Gods Angels are miniftring ſpirits for our good, and eſpecially about the conveyances of our Prayers; either we muſt thiſke very low of Christianity, or that greater things are in it, then the preſence of Angels in our Churches; and yet, if there were no more, we ſhould doe well to behave our ſelves there with the thoughts and apprehenſions of heaven abourus; alwayes remembring, that our buſineſſe there is an errand of religion, and G O D is the object of our worſhippings, and therefore although by our weakenesse we are fixt in the loweſſe of men, yet becauſe Gods infinity is our object, it were

## Part II.

Levit. 19.30.

Psal. 87. 2.

Mat. 23. 17.

\* Answ. to

Sicut et nos

xuxerit dixit

Pythagoras.

Maimonides

ait nefas fuisse

Iudas calcas-

tis ingredi san-

ctuarium,

aut vestitis

vestibus o-

fiscum.

Just. Martyr

at Gentes in

sacris anot. b-

reco.

Intramus tem-

pla compotis,

ad sacrificium

accessuri vul-

num submitti-

mus, togam ad-

ducimus, in om-

ne argumen-

tum modestia.

singimur. Sen.

Ex templo illo

te ducam ubi

non desjuas.

Nexius in Tri-

phallo. Quo ore

Thurarius

Christianus si

per tempa

transbit, su-

mantes aras de

spus? Tert. de

Idol.c.1. Comil

our devotion is

distinguished by them,

and be the offering never so

Gangr. cap.5.

Contemptible, it is a rich devotion, that gives the best we have, because

1 Cor. 14.25.

P. 17. p. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100. 101. 102. 103. 104. 105. 106. 107. 108. 109. 110. 111. 112. 113. 114. 115. 116. 117. 118. 119. 120. 121. 122. 123. 124. 125. 126. 127. 128. 129. 130. 131. 132. 133. 134. 135. 136. 137. 138. 139. 140. 141. 142. 143. 144. 145. 146. 147. 148. 149. 150. 151. 152. 153. 154. 155. 156. 157. 158. 159. 160. 161. 162. 163. 164. 165. 166. 167. 168. 169. 170. 171. 172. 173. 174. 175. 176. 177. 178. 179. 180. 181. 182. 183. 184. 185. 186. 187. 188. 189. 190. 191. 192. 193. 194. 195. 196. 197. 198. 199. 200. 201. 202. 203. 204. 205. 206. 207. 208. 209. 210. 211. 212. 213. 214. 215. 216. 217. 218. 219. 220. 221. 222. 223. 224. 225. 226. 227. 228. 229. 230. 231. 232. 233. 234. 235. 236. 237. 238. 239. 240. 241. 242. 243. 244. 245. 246. 247. 248. 249. 250. 251. 252. 253. 254. 255. 256. 257. 258. 259. 260. 261. 262. 263. 264. 265. 266. 267. 268. 269. 270. 271. 272. 273. 274. 275. 276. 277. 278. 279. 280. 281. 282. 283. 284. 285. 286. 287. 288. 289. 290. 291. 292. 293. 294. 295. 296. 297. 298. 299. 300. 301. 302. 303. 304. 305. 306. 307. 308. 309. 310. 311. 312. 313. 314. 315. 316. 317. 318. 319. 320. 321. 322. 323. 324. 325. 326. 327. 328. 329. 330. 331. 332. 333. 334. 335. 336. 337. 338. 339. 340. 341. 342. 343. 344. 345. 346. 347. 348. 349. 350. 351. 352. 353. 354. 355. 356. 357. 358. 359. 360. 361. 362. 363. 364. 365. 366. 367. 368. 369. 370. 371. 372. 373. 374. 375. 376. 377. 378. 379. 380. 381. 382. 383. 384. 385. 386. 387. 388. 389. 390. 391. 392. 393. 394. 395. 396. 397. 398. 399. 400. 401. 402. 403. 404. 405. 406. 407. 408. 409. 410. 411. 412. 413. 414. 415. 416. 417. 418. 419. 420. 421. 422. 423. 424. 425. 426. 427. 428. 429. 430. 431. 432. 433. 434. 435. 436. 437. 438. 439. 440. 441. 442. 443. 444. 445. 446. 447. 448. 449. 450. 451. 452. 453. 454. 455. 456. 457. 458. 459. 460. 461. 462. 463. 464. 465. 466. 467. 468. 469. 470. 471. 472. 473. 474. 475. 476. 477. 478. 479. 480. 481. 482. 483. 484. 485. 486. 487. 488. 489. 490. 491. 492. 493. 494. 495. 496. 497. 498. 499. 500. 501. 502. 503. 504. 505. 506. 507. 508. 509. 510. 511. 512. 513. 514. 515. 516. 517. 518. 519. 520. 521. 522. 523. 524. 525. 526. 527. 528. 529. 530. 531. 532. 533. 534. 535. 536. 537. 538. 539. 540. 541. 542. 543. 544. 545. 546. 547. 548. 549. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 550. 551. 552. 553. 554. 555. 556. 557. 558. 559. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 560. 561. 562. 563. 564. 565. 566. 567. 568. 569. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 570. 571. 572. 573. 574. 575. 576. 577. 578. 579. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 580. 581. 582. 583. 584. 585. 586. 587. 588. 589. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 590. 591. 592. 593. 594. 595. 596. 597. 598. 599. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 600. 601. 602. 603. 604. 605. 606. 607. 608. 609. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 610. 611. 612. 613. 614. 615. 616. 617. 618. 619. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 620. 621. 622. 623. 624. 625. 626. 627. 628. 629. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 630. 631. 632. 633. 634. 635. 636. 637. 638. 639. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 640. 641. 642. 643. 644. 645. 646. 647. 648. 649. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 650. 651. 652. 653. 654. 655. 656. 657. 658. 659. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 660. 661. 662. 663. 664. 665. 666. 667. 668. 669. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 670. 671. 672. 673. 674. 675. 676. 677. 678. 679. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 680. 681. 682. 683. 684. 685. 686. 687. 688. 689. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 690. 691. 692. 693. 694. 695. 696. 697. 698. 699. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 700. 701. 702. 703. 704. 705. 706. 707. 708. 709. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 710. 711. 712. 713. 714. 715. 716. 717. 718. 719. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 720. 721. 722. 723. 724. 725. 726. 727. 728. 729. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 730. 731. 732. 733. 734. 735. 736. 737. 738. 739. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 740. 741. 742. 743. 744. 745. 746. 747. 748. 749. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 750. 751. 752. 753. 754. 755. 756. 757. 758. 759. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 760. 761. 762. 763. 764. 765. 766. 767. 768. 769. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 770. 771. 772. 773. 774. 775. 776. 777. 778. 779. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 780. 781. 782. 783. 784. 785. 786. 787. 788. 789. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 790. 791. 792. 793. 794. 795. 796. 797. 798. 799. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 800. 801. 802. 803. 804. 805. 806. 807. 808. 809. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 810. 811. 812. 813. 814. 815. 816. 817. 818. 819. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 820. 821. 822. 823. 824. 825. 826. 827. 828. 829. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 830. 831. 832. 833. 834. 835. 836. 837. 838. 839. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847. 848. 849. 840. 841. 842. 843. 844. 845. 846. 847. 848. 849. 850. 851. 852. 853. 854. 855. 856. 857. 858. 859. 850. 851. 852. 853. 854. 855. 856. 857. 858. 859. 860. 861. 862. 863. 864. 865. 866. 867. 868. 869. 860. 861. 862. 863. 864. 865. 866. 867. 868. 869. 870. 871. 872. 873. 874. 875. 876. 877. 878. 879. 870. 871. 872. 873. 874. 875. 876. 877. 878. 879. 880. 881. 882. 883. 884. 885. 886. 887. 888. 889. 880. 881. 882. 883. 884. 885. 886. 887. 888. 889. 890. 891. 892. 893. 894. 895. 896. 897. 898. 899. 890. 891. 892. 893. 894. 895. 896. 897. 898. 899. 900. 901. 902. 903. 904. 905. 906. 907. 908. 909. 900. 901. 902. 903. 904. 905. 906. 907. 908. 909. 910. 911. 912. 913. 914. 915. 916. 917. 918. 919. 910. 911. 912. 913. 914. 915. 916. 917. 918. 919. 920. 921. 922. 923. 924. 925. 926. 927. 928. 929. 920. 921. 922. 923. 924. 925. 926. 927. 928. 929. 930. 931. 932. 933. 934. 935. 936. 937. 938. 939. 930. 931. 932. 933. 934. 935. 936. 937. 938. 939. 940. 941. 942. 943. 944. 945. 946. 947. 948. 949. 940. 941. 942. 943. 944. 945. 946. 947. 948. 949. 950. 951. 952. 953. 954. 955. 956. 957. 958. 959. 950. 951. 952. 953. 954. 955. 956. 957. 958. 959. 960. 961. 962. 963. 964. 965. 966. 967. 968. 969. 960. 961. 962. 963. 964. 965. 966. 967. 968. 969. 970. 971. 972. 973. 974. 975. 976. 977. 978. 979. 970. 971. 972. 973. 974. 975. 976. 977. 978. 979. 980. 981. 982. 983. 984. 985. 986. 987. 988. 989. 980. 981. 982. 983. 984. 985. 986. 987. 988. 989. 990. 991. 992. 993. 994. 995. 996. 997. 998. 999. 990. 991. 992. 993. 994. 995. 996. 997. 998. 999. 1000. 1001. 1002. 1003. 1004. 1005. 1006. 1007. 1008. 1009. 1000. 1001. 1002. 1003. 1004. 1005. 1006. 1007. 1008. 1009. 1010. 1011. 1012. 1013. 1014. 1015. 1016. 1017. 1018. 1019. 1010. 1011. 1012. 1013. 1014. 1015. 1016. 1017. 1018. 1019. 1020. 1021. 1022. 1023. 1024. 1025. 1026. 1027. 1028. 1029. 1020. 1021. 1022. 1023. 1024. 1025. 1026. 1027. 1028. 1029. 1030. 1031. 1032. 1033. 1034. 1035. 1036. 1037. 1038. 1039. 1030. 1031. 1032. 1033. 1034. 1035. 1036. 1037. 1038. 1039. 1040. 1041. 1042. 1043. 1044. 1045. 1046. 1047. 1048. 1049. 1040. 1041. 1042. 1043. 1044. 1045. 1046. 1047. 1048. 1049. 1050. 1051. 1052. 1053. 1054. 1055. 1056. 1057. 1058. 1059. 1050. 1051. 1052. 1053. 1054. 1055. 1056. 1057. 1058. 1059. 1060. 1061. 1062. 1063. 1064. 1065. 1066. 1067. 1068. 1069. 1060. 1061. 1062. 1063. 1064. 1065. 1066. 1067. 1068. 1069. 1070. 1071. 1072. 1073. 1074. 1075. 1076. 1077. 1078. 1079. 1070. 1071. 1072. 1073. 1074. 1075. 1076. 1077. 1078. 1079. 1080. 1081. 1082. 1083. 1084. 1085. 1086. 1087. 1088. 1089. 1080. 1081. 1082. 1083. 1084. 1085. 1086. 1087. 1088. 1089. 1090. 1091. 1092. 1093. 1094. 1095. 1096. 1097. 1098. 1099. 1090. 1091. 1092. 1093. 1094. 1095. 1096. 1097. 1098. 1099. 1100. 1101. 1102. 1103. 1104. 1105. 1106. 1107. 1108. 1109. 1100. 1101. 1102. 1103. 1104. 1105. 1106. 1107. 1108. 1109. 1110. 1111. 1112. 1113. 1114. 1115. 1116. 1117. 1118. 1119. 1110. 1111. 1112. 1113. 1114. 1115. 1116. 1117. 1118. 1119. 1120. 1121. 1122. 1123. 1124. 1125. 1126. 1127. 1128. 1129. 1120. 1121. 1122. 1123. 1124. 1125. 1126. 1127. 1128. 1129. 1130. 1131. 1132. 1133. 1134. 1135. 1136. 1137. 1138. 1139. 1130. 1131. 1132. 1133. 1134. 1135. 1136. 1137. 1138. 1139. 1140. 1141. 1142. 1143. 1144. 1145. 1146. 1147. 1148. 1149. 1140. 1141. 1142. 1143. 1144. 1145. 1146. 1147. 1148. 1149. 1150. 1151. 1152. 1153. 1154. 1155. 1156. 1157. 1158. 1159. 1150. 1151. 1152. 1153. 1154. 1155. 1156. 1157. 1158. 1159. 1160. 1161. 1162. 1163. 1164. 1165. 1166. 1167. 1168. 1169. 1160. 1161. 1162. 1163. 1164. 1165. 1166. 1167. 1168. 1169. 1170. 1171. 1172. 1173. 1174. 1175. 1176. 1177. 1178. 1179. 1170. 1171. 1172. 1173. 1174. 1175. 1176. 1177. 1178. 1179. 1180. 1181. 1182. 1183. 1184. 1185. 1186. 1187. 1188. 1189. 1180. 1181. 1182. 1183. 1184. 1185. 1186. 1187. 1188. 1189. 1190. 1191. 1192. 1193. 1194. 1195. 1196. 1197. 1198. 1199. 1190. 1191. 1192. 1193. 1194. 1195. 1196. 1197. 1198. 1199. 1200. 1201. 1202. 1203. 1204. 1205. 1206. 1207. 1208. 1209. 1200. 1201. 1202. 1203. 1204. 1205. 1206. 1207. 1208. 1209. 1210. 1211. 1212. 1213. 1214. 1215. 1216. 1217. 1218. 1219. 1210. 1211. 1212. 1213. 1214. 1215. 1216. 1217. 1218. 1219. 1220. 1221. 1222. 1223. 1224. 1225. 1226. 1227. 1228. 1229. 1220. 1221. 1222. 1223. 1224. 1225. 1226. 1227. 1228. 1229. 1230. 1231. 1232. 1233. 1234. 1235. 1236. 1237. 1238. 1239. 1230. 1231. 1232. 1233. 1234. 1235. 1236. 1237. 1238. 1239. 1240. 1241. 1242. 1243. 1244. 1245. 1246. 1247. 1248. 1249. 1240. 1241. 1242. 1243. 1244. 1245. 1246. 1247. 1248. 1249. 1250. 1251. 1252. 1253. 1254. 1255. 1256. 1257. 1258. 1259. 1250. 1251. 1252. 1253. 1254. 1255. 1256. 1257. 1258. 1259. 1260. 1261. 1262. 1263. 1264. 1265. 1266. 1267. 1268. 1269. 1260. 1261. 1262. 1263. 1264. 1265. 1266. 1267. 1268. 1269. 1270. 1271. 1272. 1273. 1274. 1275. 1276. 1277. 1278. 1279. 1270. 1271. 1272. 1273. 1274. 1275. 1276. 1277. 1278. 1279. 1280. 1281. 1282. 1283. 1284. 1285. 1286. 1287. 1288. 1289. 1280. 1281. 1282. 1283. 1284. 1285. 1286. 1287. 1288. 1289. 1290. 1291. 1292. 1293. 1294. 1295. 1296. 1297. 1298. 1299. 1290. 1291. 1292. 1293. 1294. 1295. 1296. 1297. 1298. 1

although if all the wealth of the Levant were united into a present, it were short of GODS infinity: yet such an offertory, or any less we have, makes demonstration, that, if we had an offering infinitely better, we should give it to expresse our love, and our belief of GODS infinite merit and perfection. And therefore let not the widows two mites become a precedent to the instance, and value of our donation; and because she who gave no more, was accepted, think that two farthings is as fit to be cast into the Corban as two thousand pound. For the reason why our blessed S A V I O U R commended the widows oblation was for the greatnesse of it, not the smallnesse, *she gave all she had, even all her living,* therefore she was accepted. And indeed since GOD gives to us more then enough, beyond our necessities, much for our conveniency, much for ease, much for repute, much for pylke compliances, for variety, for content, for pleasure, for ornament, we should deal unworthily with GOD Almighty, if we limit and restrain our returns to him, by confining them within the narrow bounds of meere necessity. Certainly beggerly ser-  
vices and cheapnesse is not more pleasing to GOD, then a rich and magni-  
ficent addresie. To the best of essences the best of presents is most proportionable, and although the service of the soul, and spirit is most delectable and esteemed by GOD, yet because our souls are served by things perishing and materiall, and we are of that constitution, that by the body we serve the spirit, and by both we serve GOD, as the spirit is chiefly to be offered to GOD, because it is better then the body, so the richest oblation is the best in an equall power, and the same person; because it is the best of things materiall: and although it hath not the excellency of the Spirit: it hath an excellency that a cheap oblation hath not, and at least is capable of the same commendation from the piety of the presenters spirit, and may be as much purified, and made holy as the cheaper or the more contemptible. GOD hath nowhere expressed, that he accepts of a cheaper offering, but when we are not able to give him better. When the people brought offerings more then enough for the tabernacle, Moses restrained their forwardnesse by saying it was enough, but yet commended the disposition highly, and wished it might be perpetuall: But GOD chid the people, when they let his house waft without reparation of its decaying beauty; and therefore sent famine upon the land, & a curse into their estate, because they would not by giving a portion to religion sanctify and secure all the rest. For the way for a man to be a saver by his religion is to deposite one part of his estate in the temple, and one in the hands of the poor, for these are GODS treasury, and stewards respectively; and this is laying up treasures in heaven; and besides, that it will procure blessing to other parts, it will help to save our souls, and that's good husbandry, that's worth the saving.

For I consider, that those riches and beauties in Churches and religious solemnities, which adde nothing to GOD, adde much devotion to us, and much honour and efficacy to devotion. For since impression is made upon the soul by the intervening of corporall things, our religion and devotion of the soul receives the addition of many degrees by such instruments. Insomuch that we see persons of the greatest fancy, and such who are most pleased with outward fairnesses are most religious. Great understandings make religion lasting and reasonable, but great fancies make it more scrupulous, strict, operative, and effectuall. And there-

*Delicta Majo-**rum immeritus.**Iues Romane,**donec templis**refeceris ades;**labentes Deo-**rum, & Feda**nigro simula-**cra fumo.**Hor. l. 3. od. 6.**Impietatis no-**tatur Zeno quod**dixerit iux*et***us*et* iux*et* iux*et***Et Barbara-**rum Genitum**mos erat aras**Dij*et* ponere in**lucis, novori-**bus, & moniti-**um jugis, e*o***quod Deus**temporis inclu-**dendos non esse**dicerant.*

12.

*ta*et* d*et* r*et* s*et* r*et***u*et* r*et* u*et* r*et***e*o* n*et* s*et* r*et***Phila.*

## Part II.

fore it is strange, that we shall bestow such great expences to make our owne houses convenient and delectable, that we may entertaine our selves with complacency and appetite, and yet think that religion is not worth the ornament, nor our fancies fit to be carried into the choyce, and prosecution of religious actions with sweetnesse, entertainments, and fair propositions. If we say that GOD is not the better for a rich house, or a costly service ; we may also remember, that neither are we the better for rich clothes ; and the sheep will keep us as modest, as warme, and as cleane, as the silk-worm ; and a gold chaine, or a carkenet of pearle does no more contribute to our happenesse, then it does to the service of Religion. For if we reply, that they help to the esteem, and reputation of our persons, and the distinction of them from the vulgar , from the servants of the lot of Issachar, and adde reverence and veneration to us ; how great a shame is it, if we study by great expences to get reputation, and accidentall advantages to our selves, and not by the same meanes to purchase reverence and esteem to religion ? since we see that Religion amongst persons of ordinary understandings receives as much externall and accidentall advantages by the accession of exterioour ornaments and accommodation, as we our selves can, by rich clothes, and garments of wealth, ceremony and distinction. And as in Princes Courts the reverence to Princes is quickned, and increased by an outward state and glory: So also it is in the service of G O D ; although the understandings of men are no more satisfied by a pompous magnificence , then by a cheap plainnesse , yet the eye is, and the fancy, and the affections , and the fences , that is, many of our faculties are more pleased with Religion, when Religion by such instruments and conveyances pleases them. And it was noted by Sozomen concerning Valens the Arian Emperour, that when he came to Cesarea in Cappadocia he praised S. Basil their Bishop, and upon more easie terms revoked his banishment : because he was a grave person, and did his holy offices with reverent, and decent addresses, and kept his Church-assemblies with much ornament and solemnity.

Quo ! cum tanto  
ornatu, tamque  
decenter iacer-  
do io fungeretur  
conventualique  
agere.

13.  
*Eiusmodi esti-  
matio ipsius  
etiam.*

*Ipsorum tamen  
etiam excedit ratio,  
quam per ruris  
in sanctaria ducen-  
tus. Arist.*

But when I consider that saying of S. Gregory , That the Church is Heaven within the Tabernacle , Heaven dwelling among the sonnes of men , and remember that G O D hath studded all the Firmament , and paved it with starres , because he loves to have his house beauteous, and highly representative of his Glory , I see no reason we should not do as Apollinaris sylas GOD does, *In earth do the works of heaven*. For he is the GOD of beauties, and perfections, and every excellency in the Creature is a portion of influence from the Divinity, and therefore is the best instrument of conveying honour to him, who made them for no other end, but for his own honour, as the last resort of all other ends for which they were created.

14.  
*Gravitas ho-  
nesta, diligen-  
tia attonita,  
cura sollicita,  
apparitus devo-  
ta, et processio modesta. Tertul. de prescript, confluunt ad Ecclesiam casta celebritate, honesta utrius-  
que sexus discrezione. S. Aug. l.2. c.28. de civit. Dei.*

offices,

and receive the daily consecration by the assistance of sanctified, and religious persons. *Foris canes*, dogs and criminall persons are unsit for Churches; the best ornament and beauty of a Church is a holy Priest and a sanctified people. For since Angels dwell in Churches, and G O D hath made his Name to dwell there too, if there also be a holy people, that there be Saints as well as Angels, it is a holy fellowship, and a blessed communion: But to see a Devill there, would scare the most confident and bold fancy, and disturb the good meeting; and such is every wicked and gracelesse person: *Have I not chosen twelve of you, and one of you is a Devill?* An evill soule is an evill spirit, and such are no good ornaments for Temples; and it is a shame that a godly Christian Church shoud be like an Egyptian Temple, without, godly buildings; within, a Dog or a Cat for the Deity they adore: It is worse, if in our addresses to holy places, and offices we beare our lusts under our garments. For Dogs and Cats are of GODS making, but our lusts are not; but are GODS enemies, and therefore besides the unholinesse it is an affront to GOD to bring them along, and it defiles the place in a great degree.

For there is a defiling of a Temple by *insinuation* of impurities, and another by direct and *positive prophanation*, and a third by *expresse \* sacrilege*, *this defiles a Temple to the ground*. Every small sinne is an unwelcome guest, and is a spot in those Feasts of charity, which entertain us often in GODS houses; but there are some (and all great crimes are such) which defecrate the place, unhallow the ground, as to our particulars, stop the ascent of our prayers, obstruct the current of Gods blessing, turn Religion into bitterness, and devotion into gall; such as are markt in Scripture with a distinguishing character, as enemies to the peculiar dispositions of religion; and such are *unchastity*, which defiles the Temples of our bodies; *covetousnesse*, which sets up an Idol instead of GOD; and *unmercifulnesse*, which is a direct enemy to the mercies of G O D, and the faire retурне of our prayers. He that shewes not the mercies of almes, of forgivenesse and comfort, is forbid to hope for comfort, reliefe or forgivenesse from the hands of GOD. A pure minde is the best manner of worship, and the impurity of a crime is the greatest contradiction to the honour and religion of holy places; and therefore let us imitate the precedent of the most religious of Kings, *I will wash my hands in innocency, O LORD, and so will I go to thine altar*, awayes remembraing those decretory and finall words of S. Paul, *He that defiles a Temple, him will God destroy.*

*litabo, Pers. Sat. 2. \* Animadverto gratiorem existimari, qui delubris Deorum puram, castaque mentem, quam qui meditatum carmen intulerit. Plin. see pan. Trajan. Αγνοοειν ταυτα ησαν επιφανει. αγνειας εστι φρονησις. Porphy. de non esu animal. l.2. Optimus animus pulcherrimus cultus. μη καθαρη καθαρη ιερωπλειται μη ε δειπλο. Hierocl. Psal. 26. 1 Cor. 3. 27.*

The P R A Y E R.

**O** Eternal GOD, who dwellest not in Temples made with hands, the Heaven of Heavens is not able to containe thee, and yet thou art pleased to manifest thy presence amongst the sons of men by speciall issues of thy favour and benediction; make my body and soule to be a temple pure and holy, apt for the entertainments of the holy JESUS, and for the habitation of the H. Spirit. LORD be pleased, with thy rod of paternall discipline to cast out all impure lusts, all worldly affections, all covetous desires from this thy Temple, that it may be a place of prayer and meditation, of holy appetites and chaste thoughts, of pure intentions, and zealous desires of pleasing thee; that I may become also a sacrifice as well as a temple, eaten up with the zeale of thy glory, and consumed with the fire of love, that not one thought may be entertained by me but such as may be like perfume, breathing from the altar of incense; and not a word may passe from me, but may have the accent of heaven upon it, and sound pleasantly in thy eares. O dearest GOD fill every faculty of my soule with impresees, dispositions, capacities and aptnesses of religion, and do thou hallow my soule, that I may be possessed with zeale and religious affections, loving thee above all things in the world, worshipping thee with the humblest adorations and frequent addresses, continually feeding upon the apprehensions of thy divine sweetnesse, and consideration of thy infinite excellencies and observations of thy righteous commandments, and the feast of the holy Conscience as an antepost of eternity, and consignation to the joyes of Heaven, through JESUS CHRIST our LORD Amen.



Sect. 12.

*Of Jesus departure into Galilee, his manner of life, miracles, and preaching, his calling of Disciples, and what happened untill the second Passeover.*

**W**hen JESUS understood that John was cast into prison, and that the Pharisees were envious at him for the great multitudes of people that resorted to his Baptisme, which he ministred not in his own person, but by the deputation of his Disciples, they finishing the ministrition which himself began, (who as Evodius Bishop of Antioch reports, baptized Peter onely, and Peter baptized Andrew, James and John, and they others) he left Judaea, and came into Galilee; and in his passage he must touch Sychar a citie

of Samaria, where in the heat of the day, and the weariness of his journey he sat himself down upon the margin of Jacobs well; whither when his Disciples were gone to buy meat, a Samaritan woman cometh to draw water, of whom J E S U S asked some to cool his thirst, and refresh his weariness.

Little knew the woman the excellency of the person that asked so small a charity; neither had she been taught, that a cup of cold water given to a Disciple should be rewarded, and much rather such a present to the L O R D himself. But she prosecuted the spite of her nation, and the interest and quarrell of the schisme and instead of washing JESUS feet, and giving him drink, demanded why he being a Jew should ask water of a Samaritan: for the Jewes have no intercoure with the Samaritans.

The ground of the quarrell was this. In the fixt year of *Hezekiah Salmanazar* King of Assyria sacked Samaria transported the Israelites to Assyria, and planted an Assyrian Colony in the Town and Countrey, who by Divine vengeance were destroyed by Lyons, which no power of man could restrain or lessen. The King thought the caufe was their not serving the G O D of Israel according to the rites of *Moses*; and therefore sent a Jewish captive Priest to instruct the remanent inhabitants in the Jewish religion; who so learned and practised it, that they still retained the superstitution of the Gentile rites; till *Manasses* the Brother of *Jaddi* the high Priest at Jerusalem married the daughter of *Sanballat*, who was the Goverour under King *Darius*. *Manasses* being reproved for marrying a stranger, the daughter of an uncircumcised Gentile and admonished to dismiss her, flyes to Samaria, perwades his Father in law to build a temple in Mount Gerizim, introduces the rites of daily Sacrifice, and makes himself high Priest, and began to pretend to be the true successor of *Aaron*, and commences a Schisme, in the time of *Alexander the Great*. From whence the Question of religion grew so high, that it begat disaffections, anger, animosities, quarrells, bloodshed and murders, not onely in Palestine, but where ever a Jew and Samaritan had the ill fortune to meet: Such being the nature of men, that they think it the greatest injury in the world, when other men are not of their mindes; and that they please G O D most, when they are most furiously zealous; and no zeal better to be expresed then by hating all those whom they are pleased to think G O D hates. This Schisme was prosecuted with the greatest spite, that ever any was because both the people were much given to superstition, and this was helped forward by the constitution of their religion, consisting much in externals and ceremonials, and which they cared not much to hallow and make morall by the intertexture of spirituall senses and charity. And therefore the Jewes called the Samaritans accursed, the Samaritans at the Paschall solemnity would at midnight, when the Jewes Temple was open, scatter dead mens bones to profane and desecrate the place, and both would fight, and eternally dispute the Question, sometimes referring it to arbitrators, and then the conquered party would decline the arbitration after sentence, which they did at Alexandria before *Ptolemaeus Philometor* when *Andronicus* had by a rare and exquisite oration procured sentence against *Theodosius & Sabbas* the Samaritan advocates. The sentence was given for Jerufalem, and the schisme increased, and lasted till the time of our S A V I O U R S conference with this woman.

Non mo<sup>r</sup>strare  
vias eadem nisi  
sacra colenti,  
quæstum ad  
fontem iolæ de-  
ducere verpos.  
Juvenal.

3°

*Joseph antiq.*  
l. 19. c. 3.

## Part II.

4.

And it was so implanted and woven in with every understanding, that when the woman perceived J E S U S to be a Prophet, she undertook this Question with him. *Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say that Jerusalem is the place, where men ought to worship.* J E S U S knew the Schisme was great enough already, and was not willing to make the rent wider, and though he gave testimony to the truth by saying, *Salvation is of the Jewes, and we know what we worship, ye do not:* Yet because the subject of this Question was shortly to be taken away, J E S U S takes occasion to preach the Gospell, to hasten an expedient, and by way of anticipation to reconcile the disagreeing interefis, and settle a revelation to be verified for ever. Neither here, nor there by way of confinement, no one Countrey more then another, but where ever any man shall call upon G O D in spirit and truth, there he shall be heard.

5.

But all this while the holy J E S U S was a thirst, and therefore hastens at least to discourse of water, though as yet he got none. He tells her of living water of eternall satisfactions, of never thirsting again, of her own personall condition of matrimoniall relation, and professes himself to be the *Messias.* And then was interrupted by the coming of his Disciples, who wondred to see him alone talk with a woman, besides his custome, and usuall reservation. But the Woman full of joy and wonder left her water-pot, and ran to the city to publish the *Messias*, and immediately all the city came out to see, and many believed on him upon the testimony of the woman, and more when they heard his own discourses. They invited him to the Town, and received him with hospitable civilities for two dayes, after which he departed to his own Galilee.

6.

J E S U S therefore came into the Countrey, where he was received with respect and fair entertainment, because of the miracles, which the Galileans saw done by him at the feast; and being at Canna where he wrought the first miracle, a Noble personage, a little King say some, a Palatine sayes Saint Hierome, a kingly person certainly, came to J E S U S with much reverence and desire, that he would be pleased to come to his house, and cure his Sonne now ready to dye, which he seconds with much importunity, fearing least his Sonne be dead, before he get thither. J E S U S who did not do his miracles by naturall operations, cured the childe at distance, and dismissed the Prince, telling him, his sonne lived, which by narration of his servants he found to be true, and that he recovered at the same time, when J E S U S spake these salutary and healing words; Upon which accident he and all his house became Disciples.

7.

And now J E S U S left Nazareth, and came to Capernaum a maritime town, and of great resort, choosing that for his scene of preaching, and his place of dwelling. For now the time was fulfilled, the office of the Baptist was expired, and the kingdome of G O D was at hand. He therefore preached the Summe of the Gospell, Faith and repentance. *Repent ye and believe the Gospell.* And what that Gospell was, the summe and series of all his sermons afterwards did declare.

8.

The work was now grown high and pregnant, and J E S U S saw it convenient to choose Disciples to his ministery and service, in the work

worke of preaching, and to be witneses of all, that he shold say doe or teach, for ends, which were afterwards made publike and excellent; J E S U S therefore as he walked by the Sea of Galilee called *Simon* and *Andrew* who knew him before by the preaching of *John*, and now left all, their ship and their net, and followed him. And when he was gone a little farther, he calls the two sons of *Zebedee*, *James* and *John*, and they went after him: and with this family he goes up and downe the whole Galilee preaching the Gospell of the Kingdome, healing all manner of diseases, curing demoniacks, cleansing lepers, and giving strength to Paralytiques, and lame people

But, when the people pressed on him, to heare the word of G O D , he stood by the lake of Genelareth, and presently entring into *Simons* ship commanded him to lanch into the deep, and from thence he taught the people, and there wrought a miracle; for being L O R D of the Creaturtes he commanded the fishes of the Sea, and they obeyed. For when *Simon*, who had fished all night in vain, let down his net at the command of J E S U S , he inclosed so great multitude of fishes, that the net brake, and the fishermen were amazed, and fearefull at so prodigious a draught. But beyond the miracle it was intended, that a representation should be made of the plenitude of the Catholick Church, and multitudes of believers who should be taken by *Simon*, and the rest of the Disciples, whom by that miracle he confignd to become fishers of men; who by their artifices of prudence and holy doctrine might gaine soules to G O D , that when the net should be drawne to shore and separation made by the Angels, they and their disciples might be differenced from the reprobate portion.

But the light of the Sun uses not to be confined to a Province or a Kingdome; so great a Prophet and so divine a Physician, and so great miracles created a fame loud as thunder, but not so full of sadnessse and prefage. Immediately the fame of J E S U S went into all Syria, and there came to him multitudes from Galilee, Decapolis, Jerusalem and Judea. And all that had any sicke with divers diseases brought them to him, and he laid his hands on every one of them and healed them. And when he cured the lunaticks and persons possessed with evill spirits, the Devills cryed out and confessed him to be C H R I S T the Son of G O D ; but he suffered them not, choosing rather to worke faith in the persuasions of his Disciples by morall arguments, and the placid demonstrations of the spirit, that there might in faith be an excellency in proportion to the choice; and that it might not be made violent, by the conviction and forced testimonies of accursed and unwilling spirits.

But when J E S U S saw his assembly was grown full, and his audience numerous, he went up into a mountain, and when his Disciples came unto him he made that admirable Sermon, called the Sermon upon the mount; which is a Divine repository of such excellent truths, and mysterious dictates of secret Theology, that contains a breviary of all those precepts, which integrate the morality of Christian religion; pressing the morall precepts given by *Moses* and enlarging their obligation on a stricter sense, and more severe exposition: that their righteousness might exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisee; preaches perfection,

## Part II.

fection, and the doctrines of meeknesse, poverty of spirit, Christian mourning, desire of holy things, mercy and purity, peace and tolleration of injuries, affixing a speciall promise of blessing to be the guerdon and inheritance of those graces, and spirituall excellencies. He explices some parts of the Decalogue, and addes appendices and preceptrs of his own. He teaches his Disciples to pray, how to fast, how to give alms, contempt of the world, not to judge others, forgiving injuries, an indifferency and incuriousnesse of temporall provisions, and a seeking of the kingdome of GOD, and its appendant righteousnesse.

12.

When JESUS had finished his sermon, and descended from the mountain, a poor leprosous person came and worshipped, and begged to be cleansed; which J E S U S soon granted, engaging him not to publish it, where he should go abroad, but sending him to the Priest to offer an oblation according to the rites of Moses law, and then came directly to Capernaum, and taught in their Synagogues upon the Sabbath dayes: Where in his sermons he expressed the dignity of a Prophet, and the authority of a person sent from GOD, not inviting the people by the soft arguments and insinuations of Scribes and Pharisees, but by demonstrations and issuances of Divinity. There he cures a Daemoniack in one of their Synagogues, and by and by after going abroad he heals Peters wives mother of a feaver; in somuch that he grew the talk of all men, and their wonder, till they flocked so to him, to see him, to hear him, to satisfie their curiositie, and their needs, that after he had healed those multitudes, which beset the house of Simon, where he cured his Mother of the feaver, he retired himself into a desert place very early in the morning, that he might have an opportunity to pray, free from the oppressions and noises of the multitude.

13.

But neither so could he be hid, but like a light shining by the fringes of a curtain, he was soon discovered in his solitude, for the multitude found him out, imprisoning him in their circuits and undenieable attendances. But J E S U S told them plainly, he must preach the Gospell to other cities also, and therefore resolved to passe to the other side of the lake of Genefareth, so to quit the throng. Whither as he was going, a Scribe offered himself a Disciple to his institution; till J E S U S told him his condition to be worse then foxes and birds, for whom an habitation is provided, but none for him, no not a place, where to bow his head and finde rest. And what became of this forward professor afterward, we finde not. Others, that were probationers of this fellowship, J E S U S bound to a speedy profession, not suffering one to go home to bid his Friends farewell, nor another so much as to bury his dead.

By the time JESUS got to the ship it was late, and he heavy to sleep, rested on a pillow, and slept soundly, as wearinesse, meeknesse, and innocence could make him; insomuch that a violent storm, the chiding of the winds, and waters, which then happened, could not awake him; till the Ship being almost covered with broken billowes, and the impetuosit dashings of the waters, the men already sunke in their spirits, and the ship like enough to sinke too, the Disciples awaked him, and called for helpe. Master carest thou not, that we perish? JESUS arising reproved their infidelity, comandement the wind to be still and the seas peace-

peaceable, and immediately there was a great calme, and they presently arrived into the land of the Gergesenes, or Gerasenes.

In the land of Gergesites or Gergesenes, which was the remaining name of an extinct people, being one of the nations, whom the sons of Jacob drove from their inheritance, there were two cities; Gadara from the tribe of Gad, to whom it fell by lot in the division of the land (which having been destroyed by the Jewes, was rebuilt by Pompey at the request of Demetrius *Gadarenis, Pompeys freed man*) and neare to it was Gerasa, as Josephus reports: which diversity of towns and names is the cause of the various citation of this story by the Evangelists. Neere the city of Gadara there were many sepulchres in the hollownesse of rockes, where the dead were buried, and where many superstitious persons used Memphitick and Thesalick rites, invocating evill spirits; in so much that at the instant of our Saviours arrivall in the Countrey there met him two possessed with Devills from these tombes, exceeding fierce, and so had been long, in somuch that no man durst passe that way.

JESUS commanded the Devills out of the possessed persons; but there were certain men feeding swine, which though extremely abominated by the Jewish religion, yet for the use of the Roman armies, and quarterings of souldiers they were permitted, and divers priviledges \* granted to the Masters of such herds; The Devills therefore besought JESUS, he would not send them into the abyffe, but permit them to enter into the swine. He gave them leave, and the swine ran violently down a steep place into the hot baths, which were at the foot of the hill, on which Gadara was built, (which smaller congregation of waters the Jews used to call [ Sea, ] ut Mare *aneum* or else, as others thinke, into the lake of Genesareth, and perished in the waters. But this accident so troubled the inhabitants, that they came, and intreated JESUS to depart out of their coasts. And he did so; leaving Galilee of the Gentiles, he came to the lesster Galilee, and so again to the City of Capernaum.

But when he was come thither he was met by diverse Scribes and Pharisees, who came from Jerusalem; and Doctors of the Law from Galilee, and while they were sitting in a house, which was encompassted with multitudes, that no businesse or necessity could be admitted to the door, a poore Paralyticke was brought to be cured; and they were faine to uncover the tyles of the house, and let him down in his bed with cords in the midst before JESUS, sitting in conference with the Doctors. When JESUS saw their faith he said *Man thy sins be forgiven thee.* At which saying the Pharisees being troubled, thinking it to be blasphemy and that none but GOD could forgive sins; J E S U S was put to verifie his absolution, which he did in a just satisfaction and proportion to their understandings. For the Jewes did believe, that all afflictions were punishments for sin; [who sinned, this man, or his Father that he was borne blind] and that removing of the punishment was forgiving of the sin. And therefore J E S U S to prove, that his sins were forgiven, removed that, which they supposed to be the effect of his sin, and by curing the Palsey prevented their farther murmur about the pardon; that ye might know the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, he saith to the sick of the Palsey, Arise, take up thy bed, and walke. And the man arose, was healed and glorified GOD.

*Joseph. de bel. Jud. l. 1.c. 5. et l. 3.c. 2. et l. 5. c. 3. Epiph. contr. Eb. heres. 30.*

\**Cod. Theodor. de Suarijs.*

*ut Mare *aneum* was templi ad aquarum-ceptionem.*



A while after JESUS went again toward the Sea, and on his way, seeing

*Matthew*

## Part II.

Ciceron ep. famili  
11.13. & in orat.  
rop'ancio.

\* Idem ad Quin.  
Fratrem de regi-  
mis ex parte ecuria  
Asian.

a Vita Publica-  
norum aperta est  
violentia, impu-  
nita rapina, ne-  
gotiatio nulla  
ratione constans  
invercunda  
mercatura. Sui-  
das V. Publica-  
bus.

Apud Hebreum  
textum D. Mat.  
thazi publicani  
dicti Parilim,  
nomine proprio  
larionibus qui  
sepes & maceri-  
am diriunt,  
icet proprie  
dicti Gabbain,  
unde fortasse  
'Gabella,

Lib. de Solom.  
c. 5.  
b Lib. 7 hist c.  
14.

Ἐπιστολαὶ χριστοῦ  
Ἄγαπη τῷ τῷ  
Ἀριστοῖς ἀνδρί-  
αντα apud So-  
zomen, l. 5. c.  
20.

Johan. Damasc.  
de imagin. orat.  
3. ex Chronico  
Johan. Malale  
Antioch. Epic  
air supplice n  
libell. in oblati-  
tum Philippo  
Terarcha fra-  
choni idis regi-  
onis u. liceret  
statuas erigere  
in memoriam  
accepti bene-  
ficii.

*Matthew the Publican sitting at the receipt of custome he had him follow him. Matthew first feasted JESUS, and then became his Disciple. But the Pharisees that were with him, began to be troubled, that he eate with Publicanes and sinners. For the office of Publican though among the Romans it was honest, and of great account, and the flower of the Roman Knights, the ornament of the city, the security of the commonwealth was accounted to consist in the society of Publicans, yet amongst both the \* Jewes and Greekes, the name was odious and the persons were accursed; not onely because they were strangers that were the chiefe of them, who tooke into them some of the nation, where they were employed; but because the Jewes especially stood upon the charter of their nation, and the priviledge of their religion, that none of them shoulde pay tribute, and also because they exercised great injustices and a oppresions, having a power unlimitted, and a covetousnesse wide as hell, and greedy as the fire or the grave. But JESUS gave so faire an account concerning his converse with these persons, that the Objection turned to be his Apology, for therefore he converted with them because they were sinners; and it was as if a Physician should be reproved for having so much to doe with sicke persons, for therefore was he sent, not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance, to advance the reputation of mercy above the rites of sacrifice.*

But as the little bubbling and gentle murmurs of the water are presages of a storme, and are more troublesome in their prediction, then their violence: so were the arguings of the Pharisees symptomes of a secret displeasure, and an ensuing warr, though at first represented in the civilities of Question and scholasticall discourses, yet they did but forerunne vigorous objections, and bold calumpies, which were the fruits of the next summer. But as yet they discoursed fairly asking him, Why Johns Disciples fasted often, but the Disciples of JESUS did not fast. JESUS told them, 'it was because these were the dayes in which the bridegroome was come in person to espouse the Church unto himselfe; and therefore for the children of the bride chamber to fast then, was like the bringing of a dead corps to the joyes of a bride, or the pompes of coronation; the dayes should come, that the bridegroome should retire into his chamber and draw the curtains, and then they should fast in those dayes.'

While JESUS was discoursing with the Pharisees, *Jairus* a Ruler of the Synagogue came to him, desiring he would helpe his daughter, who Jay in the confines of death ready to depart. Whither as he was going, a woman met him who had been diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, without hope of remedy from art or nature, and therefore she runs to JESUS, thinking, without precedent, upon the confident persuals of a holy faith, that if she did but touch the hem of his garment, she should be whole. She came trembling, and full of hope and reverence, and touched his garment, and immedately the fountain of her unnaturall emanation was stopped, and reverted to its naturall course and offices. S. Ambrose sayes, that this woman was *Martha*. But it is not likely that she was a Jewesse, but a Gentile, because of that returne, which she made in memory of her cure, and honour of J E S U S according to the Gentile rites. For b Eusebius reports, that himselfe saw at *Cæsarea Philippi* a statue of brasse representing a woman kneeling at the feet of a goodly personage, who held his hand out to her in a posture of granting her request, and doing favour to her; and

the inhabitants said it was erected by the care and cost of this woman, adding (whether out of truth or easinesse is not certain) that at the pedestall of this statue an unusual plant did grow, which when it was come up to that maturity and height as to arrive at the fringes of the brasse monument, it was medicinall in many dangerous diseases, so far Eusebius.

When JESUS was come to the rulers, he found the minstrels making their funerall noises for the death of *Jairus* daughter, and his servants had met him, and acquainted him of the death of the childe; yet J E S U S turned out the minstrels, and entered with the parents of the childe into her chamber, and taking her by the hand called her, and awakened her from her sleep of death, and commanded them to give her to eate, and enjoyedn them not to publish the miracle. But as flames suppressed by violent detentions breake out and rage with a more impetuous and rapid motion: so it hapned to JESUS, who endeavouring to make the noises and reports of him lesse popular, made them to be Oecumenicall; for not onely we doe that most greedily, from which we are most restrained, but a great merit enamel'd with humility, and restrained with modesty growes more beauteous and florid, up to the heights of wonder and glories.

As he came from *Jairus* house he cured two blind men upon their petition and confession, that they did believe in him, and cast out a dumb Devill, so much to the wonder and amazement of the people, that the Pharisées could hold no longer, being ready to burst with envy, but said, he cast out Devils by help of the Devils. Their malice being, as usually it is, contradictory to its own design, by its being unreasonable, nothing being more sottish then for the Devill to divide his kingdome upon a plot, to ruine his certainties upon hopes future and contingent. But this was but the first eruption of their malice, all the yeare last past which was the first yeare of JESUS preaching, all was quiet, neither the Jews, nor the Samaritans, nor the Galileans did maligne his doctrine or person, but he preached with much peace on all hands, for this was the yeare which the Prophet *Isaiah* called in his prediction, the acceptable yeare of the L O R D.

*Epiphanius in Panar. lib. 2. tom. 1. heres. 91.*



## Ad. Sect. 12.

## CONSIDERATIONS

*Upon the intercourse happening between  
the holy JESUS, and the woman  
of Samaria.*

I.  
**W**hen the holy J E S U S perceiving it unsafe to be at Jerusalem returned to Galilee , where the largest scene of his Prophe-  
ticall office was to be represented , he journeyed on foote through Samaria , and being weary and faint , hungry and thirsty , he sate down by a well , and begged water of a Sa-  
maritan woman , that was a finner, who at first refused him with some incivility of language . But he , instead of returning anger , and passion to her rudenesse , which was commenced upon the interest of a mistaken \* religion , preached the coming of the Messias to her , unlockt the secrets of her heart , and let in his grace , and made a fountain of living water to spring up in her soule , to extinguish the impure flames of lust , which had set her on fire , burning like hell ever since the death of her <sup>a</sup> first hnsband , she then becoming a concubine to the fixt . Thus JESUS transplanted na-  
ture into grace , his hunger and thirst into religious appetites , the dark-  
nesse of the Samaritan into a cleare revelation , her sin into repentance and charity , and so quenched his own thirst by relieving her needs : and as it was meat to him to doe his Fathers will , so it was drinke to him to bring us to drinke of the fountain of living water . For thus GOD declared it to be a delight to him to see us live , as if he were refreshed by those felicities , which he gives to us as communications of his grace , and instances of mer-  
cy and consignations to heaven . Upon which we can looke with no eye , but such as sees and admires the excellency of the Divine charity , which being an emanation from the mercies , and essentiall compassion of eter-  
nity , G O D cannot choose but rejoice in it , and love the workes of his mercy , who was so well pleased in the works of his power . He that was de-  
lighted in the creation was highly pleased in the neerer conveyances of himselfe , when he sent the holy JESUS to beare his image , and his mer-  
cies , and his glories , and ofter them to the use and benefit of man . For this was the chiefe of the works of G O D , and therefore the blessed Master could not but be highlyest pleased with it , in imitation of his heavenly Father .

2.  
 The woman observing our Saviour to have come with his face from Jerusalem was angry at him upon the quarrell of the old schisme . The Jewes and the Samaritans had differing rites , and the zealous persons upon each side did commonly dispute themselves into uncharitableness :

\* Apud ipsos  
fides obtinata,  
misericordia in  
promptu, adver-  
sus omnes alios  
hostile odium.  
Tacitus.

a qua nabit to-  
ties non nabit,  
adultera lege est  
offendor Macha  
simpliciore min-  
us.

Martial.ep.

and

and so have Christians upon the same confidence, and zeale, and mistake. For althoough *righteousnesse bath no fellowship with unrighteousnesse, nor Christ with Belial;* yet the consideration of the crime of heresy, which is a spirituall wickednesse, is to be separate from the person, who is materiall. That is, no spirituall communion is to be endured with hereticall persons, when it is certain they are such, when they are convinced by competent authority and sufficient argument. But the persons of the men are to be pitied, to be reproved, to be redargued, and convinced, to be wrought upon by fair complyances and the offices of civility, and invited to the family of faith by the best arguments of charity, and the instances of a holy life; *having our conversation honest among them, that they may, beholding your good works glorify GOD in the day, when he shall visite them.* Indeed if there be danger, that is, a weake understanding may not safely converse in civil society with a subtile hereticke. In such cases they are to be avoided, not saluted: But as this is onely, when the danger is by reason of the unequall capacities, and strengths of the person; so it must be onely, when the article is certainly heresy, and the person criminall, and interest is the ingredient in the persvasion, and a certain and a necessary truth destroyed by the opinion. We read that S. John spying *Cerinthus* in a bath, refused to wash there where the enemy of GOD and his holy Son had been. This is a good precedent for us, when the case is equall. S. John could discerne the spirit of *Cerinthus*, and his heresy was notorious, fundamentall and highly criminall, and the Apostle a person assisted up to infallibility. And possibly it was done by the whisper of a Propheticke spirit, and upon a miraculous designe, for immediately upon his retreat the bath fell down, and crushed *Cerinthus* in the ruines. But such acts of aversation as these are not easily by us to be drawn into example, unlesse in the same or the parallel concurse of equally concluding accidents. We must not quickly, nor upon slight grounds, nor unworthy instances call [hereticke] there had need be a long proesse, and a high conviction, and a competent Judge, and a necessary article, that must be ingredients into so sad and decretory definitions, and condemnation of a person or opinion. But if such instances occurre, come not neere the danger, nor the scandal. And this advice S. Cyprian gave to the Lay people of his Diocese. Let them decline their discourses, whose Sermons creepe and corrode like a Cancer, let there be no colloquies, no banquets, no commerce with such, who are excommunicate and justly driven from the communion of the Church. For such persons (as S. Leo descants, upon the Apostles "expression of hereticall discourses) creep in humbly, and with small "and modest beginnings, they catch with flattery, they bind gently, and kill privily. Let therefore all persons, who are in danger, secure their persons, and persasions by removing farr from the infection. And for the scandall, S. Herminigilda gave an heroick example, which in her persvasion, and the circumstances of the age, and action, deserved the highest testimony of zeale, religious passion, and confident persvasion. For she rather chose to dye by the mandate of her tyrant Father Leoni- gildus the Goth, then she would at the Paschall solemnity receive the blessed Sacrament at the hand of an Arrian Bishop.

1 Pet. 2. 12.

2 Tit. 10.

2 Epist. Johan  
10.Jrena. l. 3. c. 3.  
Euseb. l. 3. c. 13.

lib. I. ep. 3.

Serm. 5. de je-  
jun. decimij  
Mensis.Gregor. l. 3. di-  
al. 3. 13.

## Part II.

3.

But excepting these cases, which are not to be judged with forwardnesse, nor rashly taken measure of, we finde that conversing charitably with persons of differing persuasions hath been instrumentall to their conversion, and G O D S glory. The believing wife may sanctifie the unbelieving husband; and we finde it verified in Church story. S. *Cecily* converted her husband *Valerianus*; S. *Theodora* converted *Sixtus*; Saint *Monica* converted *Patricius*; and *Theodelinda Agilolphus*; S. *Clotilda* perswaded King *Clodoveus* to be a Christian; And S. *Natolia* perswaded *Adrianus* to be a Martyr. For they having their conversation honest, and holy amongst the unbelievers shined likevirgin Tapers in the midst of an impure prison, and amus'd the eyes of the sonnes of darknesse with the brightness of the flame. For the excellency of a holy life is the best argument of the inhabitation of *G O D within the soul*, and who will not offer up his understanding upon that altar, where a Deity is placed as the President, and author of religion. And this very entercourse of the holy J E S U S with the woman is abundant argument, that it were well we were not so forward to refuse communion with dissenting persons, upon the easie and confident mistakes of a too forward zeal. They that call hareticke may themselves be the mistaken persons, and by refusing to communicate the civilities of hospitable entertainment may shut their doors upon truth, and their windows against light, and refuse to let salvation in. For sometimes ignorance is the onely parent of our persuasions, and many times interest hath made an impure commixture with it, and so produced the issue.

4

The holy J E S U S gently insinuates his discourses. *If thou hadst known, who it is, that askes thee water, thou wouldest have asked water of him.* Oftentimes we know not the person, that speaks, and we usually choose our doctrine by our affections to the man: but then if we are uncivill upon the stock of prejudice we do not know, that it is C H R I S T that calls our understandings to obedience, and our affections to duty, and compliances. The woman little thought of the glories, which stood right against her. He that sate upon the well had a throne placed above the heads of Cherubims. In his arms, who there rested himself, was the sanctuary of rest, and peace, where wearied souls were to lay their heads, and dispose their cares, and there to turne them into joyes, and to guild their thornes with glory. That holy tongue, which was parched with heat, streamed forth rivulets of holy doctrine, which were to water all the world, to turn our deserts into Paradise. And though he begged water at Jacobs well, yet Jacob drank at his: For at his charge all Jacobs flocks and family were sustaineid, and by him Jacobs posterity were made honourable and redeemed. But because this well was deep, and the woman had nothing to draw water with, and of her self could not fathome so great a depth, therefore she refused him, just as we do, when we refuse to give drink to a thirsty Disciple. C R I S T comes in that humble manner of addresse, under the veil of poverty or contempt, and we cannot see C H R I S T from under that robe, and we send him away without an almes, little considering, that when he begs an almes of us in the instance of any of his poor relatives, he askes of us but to give him occasion to give a blessing for an almes. Thus do the Ministers of religion aske support, but when the laws are not more just, then many of the people

people are charitable, they shall fare as their Master did; they shall preach, but unless they can draw water themselves, they shall not drink; but if scirent if men did but know, who it is that askes them, that it is C H R I S T either in his Ministers, or C H R I S T in his poor servants, certainly they could not be so obstructed in the issues of their justice and charity, but would remember that no honour could be greater, no love more fortunate, then to meet with an opportunity to be express'd in so noble a manner, that G O D himself is pleased to call his own relief.

5.

When the Disciples had returned from the town, whither they went to buy provision, they wondred to see the Master talking alone, with a woman. They knew he never did so before, they had observed him to be of a reserved deportment, and not onely innocent, but secure from the dangers of malice, and suspicion in the matter of incontinence. The Jewes were a jealous and froward people; and as nothing will more blast the reputation of a Prophet then effeminacy and wanton affections; so he knew no crime was sooner obiect'd, or harder cleared then that: Of which because comonly it is acted in privacy men look for no probation, but pregnant circumstances, and arguments of suspect: so nothing can wash it off, until a man can prove a negative; and if he could, yet he is guilty enough in the estimate of the vulgar for having been accused. But then because nothing is so destructive of the reputation of a Governour, so contradictory to the authority and dignity of his person as the low and baser appetites of uncleanness, and the consequent shame and scorn, (insomuch that David having fallen into it, prayed G O D to confirm or establish him *spiritu principali* with the Spirit of a Prince, The spirit of lust being uningenuous and slavish.) The holy J E S U S , who was to establish a new law in the authority of his person, was highly curious so to demean himself, that he might be a person uncapable of any such suspicions, and of a temper apt, not onely to answer the calumny, but also to prevent the jealousy. But yet now he had a great designe in hand, he meant to reveal to the Samaritanes the coming of the *Messias*, and to this, his discourse with the Woman was instrumentall. And in imitation of our great Master, spirituall persons and the guides of others, have been very prudent and reserved in their societies and entercourse with women. Hereticks have served their ends upon the impotency of the sexe, and having lead captive silly women, lead them about as triumphs of lust, and knew no scandall greater then the scandall of heresy, and therfore sought not to decline any, but were infamous in their unwary and lustfull mixtures; Simon Magus had his Helena partner of his lust and heresy; The author of the sect of the Nicolaitans (if S. Hierom was not misinformed) had whole troops of women. Marcion sent a woman as his emissary to Rome; Apelles had his Philomena; Montanus, Prisca and Maximilla; Donatus was served by Lucilla; Helpidius by Agape, Priscillian by Galla, and Arius spread his nets by opportunity of his conversation with the Princes sister, and first he corrupted her, then he seduced the world.

But holy persons preachers of true religion, and holy doctrines, although they were carefull by publike homilies to instruct the female

6.

## Part II.

Disciples, that they who are heires together with us of the same hope, may be servants in the same Discipline, and institution; yet they remitted them to their <sup>\*</sup>Husbands and *Guardians* to be taught at home. And when any personall transactions concerning the needs of their spirit were of necessity to intervene between the Priest and a woman, the action was done most commonly under publike test: or if in private; yet with much caution and observation of circumstance, which might aswell prevent suspicion, as preserve their innocence. Conversation and frequent and familiar addresse does too much rife the ligaments and reverence of spirituall authority, and amongst the best persons is matter of danger. When the Cedars of Libanus have been obserued to fall, when David and Solomon have been dishonoured, he is a bold man, that will venture further, then he is sent in errand by necessity, or invited by charity, or warranted by prudence. I deny not but some persons have made holy friendships with women: Saint Athanasius with a devout and religious virgin, Saint Chrysostome with Olympia, Saint Hierome with Paula Romana, Saint John with the elect Lady, Saint Peter and Saint Paul with <sup>\*</sup>Petronilla and Tecla. And therefore it were a jealousie beyond

<sup>\*Quam B. Pe-</sup> the suspicion of Monkes and Evnuchs to thinke it impossibly to have tri filiam natu- a chaste conversation with a distinct sexe. 1. A pure, and right in-  
ralemnon fuisse repte probat tention. 2. An entercourse not extended beyond necessity, or holy ends. 3. A short stay. 4. Great modesty. 5. And the businesse of religion, will by G O D S grace hallow the visit, and pre-serve the friendship in its being spirituall, that it may not degene-rate into carnall affection; and yet these are onely advises usefull, when there is danger in either of the persons, or some scandal inci-dent to the profession, that to some persons, and in the conjunc-tion of many circumstances are oftentimes not considerable.

7.

When J E S U S had resolved to reveale himselfe to the woman, he first gives her occasion to reveale her selfe to him, fairly insinu-ating an opportunity to confess her sins, that having purged her self from her impurity she might be apt to entertaine the article of the revelation of the Messias; and indeed a crime in our manners is the greatest indisposition of our understanding to entertaine the truth and doctri-nes of the Gospell: Especially when the revelation contests against the sinne, and profeses open hostility to the lust. For faith being the gift of G O D, and an illumination, the spirit of GOD will not give this light to them, that preferre their darknesse before it; either the will must open the windowes, or the light of faith will not shine into the chamber of the soule. *How can ye believe* (said our blessed Saviour) *that receive honour one of another?* Ambition and Faith; believing G O D, and seeking of our selves are incom-petent and totally incompossible. And therefore Serapion Bisliop of Thmuis spake like an Angel (faith Socrates) saying, *that the mind, which feed-eth upon spirituall knowledge, must throughly be cleansed. The irascible fa-*

John 5. 44.

*culty must first be cured with brotherly love and charity, and the concu-piscible, must be suppressed with continency and mortification.* Then may the understanding apprehend the mysteriousnesse of Christianity. For since Christianity is a holy doctrine, if there be any remenant affe-c-tions

ctions to a finne , there is in the soule a party disaffected to the enter-  
tainment of the institution, and we usually believe , what we have a mind  
to; Our understandings , if a crime be lodged in the will, being like icti-  
call eyes, transmitting the species to the soule with prejudice , disaf-  
fection , and colours of their own framing. If a preacher should discourse,  
that there ought to be a parity amongst Christians , and that their goods  
ought to be in common , all men will apprehend , that not Princes and  
rich persons , but the poore and the servants would soonest become Dis-  
ciples, and believe the Doctrines , because they are the onely persons  
likely to get by them, and it concerns the other not to believe him the  
doctrine being destructive of their interests. Just such a persuasion is every  
persevering love to a vicious habit , it having possessed the understanding  
with fair opinions of it , and surprised the will with passion , and de-  
sires , whatsoever doctrine is its enemy , will with infinite difficulty be  
entertained. And we know a great experience of it in the article of  
the Mealias dying on the Crosse, which though infinitely true , yet because  
to the Jewes it was a scandal , and to the Greeks foolishnesse , could not  
be believed , they remaining in that indisposition; or unless the will were  
first set right and they willing to believe any truth , though for it they must  
disclaime their interest : Their understanding was blind , because the heart  
was hardned , and could not receive the impression of the greatest morall  
demonstration in the world.

The holy JESUS asked water of the woman, unsatisfying water , but pro-  
mised that himselfe to them that aske him , would give waters of life , and sa-  
tisfaction infinite ; so distinguishing the pleasures , and appetites of this  
world from the desires and complacencies spirituall. Here we labour , but re-  
ceive no benefit; we sow many times , and reap not , or reap and do not gather  
in; or gather in and do not posseſſe; or posseſſe but do not enjoy; or if we  
do enjoy we are still unsatisfied , it is with anguish of ſpirit and circumſtance  
of vexation. A great heap of riches make neither our clothes warme nor our  
meat more nutritive , nor our beavrage more pleasant , and it feeds the eye ,  
but never fills it , but like drinke to an hydropick person increases the thirſt  
and promotes the torment. But the grace of God , though but like a graine  
of muſtard ſeed , fills the furrows of the heart ; and as the capacity increases ,  
it ſelfe growes up in equall degrees , and never ſuffers any emptinesse or di-  
ſatisfaction , but carries content and fullnesſe all the way , and the degrees of  
augmentation are not ſteps and neer approaches to ſatisfaction , but increa-  
ſings of the capacity ; the soule is ſatisfied all the way , and receives more ,  
not because it wanted any , but that it can now hold more , is more receptive  
of felicities ; and in every minute of ſanctification , there is ſo excellent a  
condition of joy , and high ſatisfaction , that the very calamities , the afflictions ,  
and persecutions of the world are turned into felicities by the activity  
of the prevailing ingredient , like a drop of water falling into a tunne of wine ,  
it is ascribed into a new family , looing its own nature by a conversion into  
the more noble. For now that all paſſionate desires are dead , & there is no-  
thing remenant that is vexatious , the peace , the ſerenity , the quiet ſleeps ,  
the evennes of ſpirit and contempt of things below , remove the soule from  
all neighbourhood of displeaſure , and place it at the foot of the throne , whi-  
ther when it is ascended , it is poſſeſſed of felicities eternal. These were the  
waters , which were given to us to drink , when with the rod of GOD the  
rock

## Part II.

rock CHRIST JESUS was smitten : the spirit of GOD moves for ever upon these waters, and when the Angel of the Covenant had stirred the poole, whosoever descends hither shall find health and peace, joyes spiritual and the satisfactions of eternity.



## THE PRAYER.

O Holy JESUS Fountain of eternall life, thou spring of joy, and spiritual satisfactions, let the holy streme of blood and water issuing from thy sacred side, coole the thirst, soften the hardnesse, and refresh the barrenesse of my de-sert soule ; that I thirsting after thee, as the weareted Hart after the coole streme may despise all the vaine complacencies of this world, refuse all societies, but such as are safe, pious, and charitable, mortify all sottish appetites, and may desire nothing but thee, seeke none but thee, and rest in thee with intire dereliction of my own caytive inclinations ; that the desires of nature may passe into desires of grace, and my thirst and my hunger may be spirituall, and my hopes placed in thee, and the expresses of my charity upon thy relatives, and all the parts of my life may speake thy love, and obedience to thy Commandments, that thou possesting my soule, and all its faculties during my whole life, I may possesse thy glories in the fruition of a blessed eternity ; by the light of thy Gospell here, and the stremes of thy grace being guided to thee the fountain of life, and glory, there to be inebriated with the waters of Paradise, with joy and love and contemplation, adoring and admiring the beauties of the LORD for ever and ever, Amen.



## Sect. 12.

## CONSIDERATIONS

Of CHRIST'S first preaching, and the accidents  
happening about that time.

**W**HEN John was cast into prison, then began JESUS to preach, not only because the ministers of John by order of divine designation were to precede the publication of JESUS, but also upon prudent considerations, and designes of providence, lest two great personages at once upon the theatre of Palestine might have been occasion of divided thoughts, and these have determined upon a schisme, some professing themselves to be of C H R I S T, some of John. For once an offer was made of a dividing Question by the spite of the Pharisees, *Why doe the Disciples of John fast often and thy Disciples fast not?* But when John went off from the scene, then J E S U S appeared like the Sun, in succession to the morning starr, and there were no divided interests upon mistake, or the fond adherencies of the followers: and although the holy J E S U S would certainly have cured all accidentall inconveniences, which might have hapned in such accidents, yet this may become a precedent to all Prelats to be prudent in avoiding all occasions of a schism and rather than divide a people, submit and relinquish an opportunity of preaching to their inferiours, as knowing that G O D is better served by charity, than a homily, and if my modesty made me resigne to my inferiour, the advantages of honour to G O D by the cession of humility is of greater consideration, then the smaller and accidentall advantages of better penned and more accurate discourses.

The holy JESUS the great Physician of our soules, now entring upon his cure, and the Dioceſe of Palestina, which was afterwards enlarged to the pale of the Catholick Church, was curious to observe all advantages of prudence for the benefit of soules, by the choice of place, by quitting the place of his education, (which because it had been poor and humble was apt to procure contempt to his doctrine and despite to his person) by fixing in Capernaum, which had the advantage of popularity, and the opportunity of extending the benefit, yet had not the honour, and ambition of Jerusalem; that the Ministers of religion might be taught to seeke and desire imployment ia such circumstances, which may serve the end of G O D, but not of ambition; to promote the interest of soules, but not the inordination of lower appetites. J E S U S quitted his naturall and civill interests, when they were leſſe conſistent with the end of G O D,

## Part II.

and his Propheticall office, and considered not his Mothers house, and the voisinage in the accounts of religion beyond those other places, in which he might better doe his Father's work; in which a forward piety might behold the insinuation of a duty to such persons, who by rights of law and custome were so far instrumentall to the cure of soules as to designe the persons; they might doe but duty if they first considered the interests of soules before the advantages of their kindred, and relatives; and although if all things else be alike, they may in equall dispositions preferr their own before strangers; yet it were but reason, that they should first consider sadly, if the men be equall, before they remember that they are of the kindred, and not let this consideration be ingredient into the former judgement. And, another degree of liberty yet there is, if our kindred be persons apt and holy, and without exceptions either of law or prudence, or religion, we may doe them advantages before others, who have some degrees of learning and improvement beyond the other; or else no man might lawfully preferre his kindred, unlesse they were absolutely the ablest in a Diocese or kingdome; which doctrine were a snare apt to produce scruples to the Consciences rather then advantages to the cure. But then also Patrons should be carefull, that they doe not account their Clerkes by an estimate taken from comparisyon with unworthy Candidates, set up on purpose, that when we choose our kindred we may abuse our consciences by saying we have fulfilled our trust, and made election of the more worthy. In these and the like cases, let every man who is concern'd, deale with justice, noblenesse, and sincerity, with the simplicity of a Christian, and the wisdome of a man, without trickes and stratagems to disadvantage the Church by doing temporal advantages to his freind or family.

3. The blessed Master began his office with a Sermon of repentance, as his Decessor *John* the Baptist did in his ministracion, to tell the world that the new Covenant, which was to be established by the mediation and office of the holy JESUS was a Covenant of grace and favour, not establisched upon workes, but upon promises, and remission of right on Gods part, and remission of sins on our part. The Law was a Covenant of works, and who ever prevaricated any of its sanctions in a considerable degree, he stood sentenced by it without any hopes of restitution supplied by the Law. And therefore it was the *Covenant of works*; not because good works were then required more then now, or because they had more efficacy then now, but because all our hopes did rely upon the perfection of works and innocence without the suppletories of grace, pardon, and repentence. But the Gospell is therefore a *Covenant of grace*, not that works are excluded from our duty, or from cooperating to heaven; but that because there is in it so much mercy, that the imperfection of the works are made up by the grace of JESUS, and the defects of innocence are supplyed by the substitution of repentance. Abatements are made for the infirmities and miseries of humanity; and if we doe our endeavour now after the maner of men, the faith of JESUS CHRIST, that is, conforrnity to his lawes, and submision to his doctrine entitles us to the grace he hath purchased for us, that is, our sins for his sake shall be pardoned. So that the Law and the Gospell are not opposed barely upon the title of *faith and workes*, but as the *Covenant of Faith*, and the *Covenant of workes*.

In the faith of a Christian works are the great ingredient, and the chief of the constitution, but the Gospel is not a *Covenant of works*, that is, it is not an agreement upon the stock of innocence without allowances of repentance, requiring obedience in rigour, and strictest estimate. But the Gospell requires the holiness of a Christian, and yet after the manner of a man; for, alwayes provided, that we do not allow to our selves; a liberty, but endeavour with all our strength, and love with all our soul; that, which if it were upon our allowance would be required at our hands, now that it is against our will, and highly contested against, is put upon the stock of CHRIST, and allowed to us by GOD in the accounts of pardon, by the merits of JESUS, by the Covenant of the Gospell. And this is, the repentance and remission of finnes, which John first preached upon the approximation of the kingdome, and CHRIST at the first manifestation of it, and the Apostles afterward in the Name of JESUS.

JESUS now having begun his preaching, began also to gather his family; and first called Simon and Andrew, then James and John, at whose vocation he wrought a miracle, which was a signification of their office, and the successe of it; a draught of fishes so great and prodigious, that it convinc'd them that he was a person very extraordinary, whose voice the Fishes heard, and came at his call; and since he designed them to become fishers of men, although themselves were as unlikely instruments to perswade men, as the voice of the Son of man to command fishes, yet they should prevale in so great numbers, that the whole world should run after them, and upon their Summons come into the nett of the Gospell; becoming Disciples of the glorious Nazarene. S. Peter the first time that he threw his nett at the descent of the holy Ghost in Pentecost catched three thousand men, and at one sermon sometimes the Princes of a Nation have been converted, and the whole land presently baptiz'd; and the multitudes so great, that the Apostles were forced to design some men to the ministrition of baptism by way of peculiar office; and it grew to be work enough, the easinesse of the ministry being made busie, and full of imployment, where a whole Nation became Disciple. And indeed the Doctrine is so holy, the principle so divine, the instruments so supernaturall, the promises so glorious, the revelations so admirable, the rites so mysterious, the whole fabrick of the Discipline so full of wisdome, perswasion and energy, that the infinite number of the first conversions were not so great a wonder, as that there are so few now: Every man calling himself Christian, but few having that power of Godlineſſe, which distinguishes Christian from a word, and an empty Name. And the word is now the same, and the arguments greater, for some have bin growing ever since, as the prophesies have been fulfilled, and the sermons more, and the Spirit the same, and yet such diversity of operations, that we hear and read the sermons and dictates Evangelicall, as we do a Romance, but that it is with leſſe passion but altogether as much unconcerned, as with a story of *Salomonassar*, or *Ibrahim Bassa*; For we do not leave one vice, nor reject one lust, nor deny one impetuous temptation the more for the four Gospels sake, and all S. Pauls Epistles mingled in the argument. And yet all think themselves fishes within CHRIST'S net, and the

## Part II.

the prey of the Gospel ; and it is true they are so ; for the kingdom is like unto a net, which inclosed fishes good and bad, but this shall be of small advantage, when the net shall be drawn to the shore, and the separation made.

5. When J E S U S called those Disciples, they had been fishing all night, and caught nothing ; but when C H R I S T had them let down the net, they took multitudes, to shew to us, that the successe of our endeavours is not in proportion to our labours, but the Divine assistance, and benediction. It is not the excellency of the instrument, but the capacitie of the Subject, nor yet this alone, but the aptnesse of the application, nor that without an influence from heaven, can produce the fruits of a holy perswasion, and conversion. *Paul may plant, and Apollo may water, but GOD gives the increase.* Indeed when we let down the nets at the Divine appointment, the successe is the more probable, and certainly G O D will bring benefit to the place, or honour to himself, or salvation to them, that will obey, or conviction to them that will not : But what ever the fruit be in respect of others, the reward shall be great to themselves. And therfore S. Paul did not say he had profited, *but he had laboured more than they all,* as knowing the Divine acceptance would take its account in proportion to our endeavours and intendments, not by commensuration to the effect, which being without us, depending upon G O D S blessing, and the cooperation of the recipients can be no ingredients into our account. But this also may help to support the wearinesse of our hopes, and the protraction and deferring of our expectation, if a laborious Prelate, and an affiduous Preacher have but few returnes to his many cares and greater labours. A whole night a man may labour (the longest life is no other) and yet catch nothing, and then the Lord may visit us with his speciaill presence, and more forward assistances, and the harvest may grow up with the swiftnesse of a gourd, and the fruitfulness of olives, and the plaisance of the vine, and the strength of wheat. And whole troops of penitents may arise from the darknesse of their graves, at the call of one Sermon, even when he please : and till then we must be content, that we do our duty, and lay the consideration of the effect at the feet of J E S U S.

6. In the dayes of the Patriarks, the governors of the Lords people were called *Shepherds* ; so was *Moses*, and so was *David*. In the dayes of the Gospel they are *Shepherds* still, but with the addition of a new appellative, for now they are called *Fishers* ; both the callings were honest, humble, and laborious, watchfull and full of trouble, but now that both the titles are conjunct we may observe the symbol of an implicit and folded duty. There is much simplicity and care in the Shepherds trade : There is much craft and labour in the Fishers ; and a Prelate is to be both, full of piety to his flock, carefull of their welfare ; yet because in the politicall and spirituall sense too, *feeding* and *governing* are the same duty, it concerns them that have cure of soules to be discreet and wary, observant of advantages, laying such baits for the people, as may intice them into the nets of JESUS Discipline. *But being crafty I caught you* (saith S. Paul.) For he was a Fisher too, and so must spirituall persons be fishers to all spirituall fenses of watchfulness and care and prudence, onely they must not fish for preferment and ambitious purposes, but must say with Abraham, *Date nobis animas, cetera vobis tollite*, which S. Paul renders, *We seek not yours, but you.* And in order to such

such acquist, the purchase of soules; let them have the diligence, and the craft of fishers, the watchfulnesse and care of shepherds, the prudence of politickes, the tendernesse of parents, the spirit of Government, the wariness of observation, great knowledge of the dispositions of their people, and experience of such advantages, by means of they may serve the ends of G O D, and of salvation upon their loul.

When *Peter* had received the fruits of a rich miracle in the prodigious and prosperous draught of fishes, he instantly falls down at the feet of J E S U S, and confesses himself a sinner, and unworthy of the presence of C H R I S T. In which confession I not onely consider the conviction of his understanding by the testimony of the miracle, but the modesty of his spirit, who in his exaltation, and the joy of a sudden and a happy success, retired into humility and consideration of his own unworthynesse, least as it happens in sudden joyes, the lavishnesse of his spirit should transport him to intemperance, to looser affections, to vanity, and garishnesse, leſſe becoming the severity and government of a Disciple of so great a Master. For in such great and sudden accidents men usually are dissolved and melted into joy and inconsideration, and let fly all their severe principles and discipline of manners, till as *Peter* here did, though to another purpose, they say to C H R I S T, Depart from me O L O R D, as if such excellencies of joyes like the lesser starres did disappear at the presence of him, who is the fountain of all joyes regular and just. When the spirits of the body have been bound up by the cold winter ayre, the warmth of the spring makes so great an aperture of the passages, and by consequence such dissolution of spirits in the presence of the Sunne, that it becomes the occasion of feavers and violent diseases, Just such a thing is a sudden joy, in which the spirits leap out from their cells of austerity and sobriety, and are warmed into feavers and wildnesses, and forfeiture of all judgement and rigorous understanding. In these accidents the best advice is to temper and allay our joyes with some instant consideration of the vileſt of our finnes, the shamefullerſt of our disgraces, the moſt dolorous accident of our lives, the worſt of our fears, with meditation of death, or the terrors of Doomes-day, or the unimaginable miseries of damned and accursed spirits. For ſuch conſiderations as theſe, are good instruments of sobriety, and are correctives to the malignity of excessive joyes, or temporall proſperities, which like mineralls, unleſſe allayed by art, prey upon the ſpirits, and become the union of a contradiction, being turned into mortall me- dicines.

At this time JESUS preached to the people from the Ship, which in the fancies and tropicall discouſings of the old Doctors signifies the Church, and declares that the homilies of order and authority, must be delivered from the Oracle; they that preach muſt be ſent, and G O D hath appointed Tutors and Inſtructors of our conſciences by ſpeciall deſignation, and peculiар appointment, if they that preach, do not make their Sermons from the Ship, their diſcourses either are the falſe murmures of hereticks, and falſe Shepherds, or elſe of theevess and invaders of authority, or corrup- tors of Discipline and Order. For G O D, that loves to heare us in ſpeciall places, will alſo bee heard himſelfe by ſpeciall persons;

Si nul & quod  
gaudes & quod  
times contrahē.  
Seneca.

## Part II.

and since he sent his Angels Ministers to convey his purposes of old then when the Law was ordained by Angels, as by the hands of a Mediator, now also he will send his servants the sonnes of men, since the new Law was ordained by the Sonne of man, who is the Mediatour between G O D and man in the New Covenant. And therefore in the Ship J E S U S preach , but he had first caused it to put off from land, to represent to us, that the Ship in which we preach must be put off from the vulgar communities of men \* separate from the people, by the designation of speciall appointment, and of speciall holinesse, that is, they neither must be common men, nor of common lives, but consecrated by order , and hallowed by holy living, lest the person want authority in destitution of a Divine Character, and his doctrine loose its energy and power , when the life is vulgar , and hath nothing in it holy and extraordinary.

\* χωρὶς γὰρ τὸ  
ἔμοιν πάρος τὸ  
ἔμοιν ὅδην καὶ  
μούσιερεύς ἐ  
σθφος λέγεται,  
μόνος θεοφοίνις,  
μόνος εἰδὼς εἴ-  
δαται μόνος γά-  
ρ οὐδὲ τικτεῖ, ὁ  
τινα αἴξται μὴ  
ευχάριστος τοῦτο  
μαρτύριον, καὶ ἐ<sup>π</sup>  
προγράψας εἰ-  
ρησιν εἰδὼς πρε-  
σάριον, Hieroc.  
in Pythag.

9.

The holy J E S U S in the choyce of his Apostles was resolute and determined to make election of persons bold and confident (for so the Galileans were observed naturally to be, and Peter was the boldest of the twelve, and a good Sword-man, till the Spirit of his Master had fastned his sword within the scabbard , and charmed his spirit into quietnesse ) but he never chose any of the Scribes , and Pharisees, none of the Doctors of the Law , but persons ignorant and unlearned ; which in designe, and institutions, whose divinity is not demonstrated from other arguments, would seem an art of concealement and distrust. But in this, which derives its rayes from the fountaine of wisdome , most openly and infallibly , it is a contestation against the powers of the world upon the interests of G O D , that he who does all the work, might have all the glory, and in the productions in which he is faine to make the instruments themselves, and give them capacity, and activity , every part of the operation, and causality, and effect, may give to G O D the same honour he had from the Creation, for his being the onely workman ; with the addition of those degrees of excellency,which in the works of redemption of man are beyond that of his Creation and first being.

THE

## The P R A Y E R.

O Eternall J E S U, Lord of the Creatures, and Prince of the Catholike Church, to whom all Creatures obey in acknowledgement of thy supreme Dominion, and all according to thy disposition cooperate to the advancement of thy Kingdome ; be pleased to order the affaires and accidents of the world, that all things in their capacity may doe the work of the Gospel, and cooperate to the good of the Elect, and retrench the growth of vice, and advance the interests of vertue. Make all the states and orders of men Disciples of thy holy institution : Let Princes worship thee and defend Religion ; let thy Clergy do thee honour by personall zeal, and vigilancy over their flocks ; let all the world submit to thy Scepter, and praise thy righteousness, and adore thy judgements, and revere thy lawes, and in the multitudes of thy people within the inclosure of thy nets, let me also communicate in the offices of a strict and religious duty, that I may know thy voyce, and obey thy call, and entertaine thy holy Spirit, and improve my talents ; that I may also communicate in the blessings of the Church, and when the nets shall be drawn to the shore and the Angels shall make separation of the good fishes from the bad, I may not be rejected, or thrown into those Seas of fire, which shall afflict the enemies of thy kingdome, but be admitted into the societies of Saints, and the everlasting communion of thy blessings and glories, O Blessed, and eternall J E S U. Amen.



## Discourse 8.

### Of R E P E N T A N C E.

**H**e whole Doctrine of the Gospel is comprehended by the Holy Ghost in these two Summaries, *Faith* and *Repentance*, that *AZ. 20. 21.* I. those two potent and imperious faculties, which command our lower powers, which are the fountain of actions, the occasion and capacity of Lawes, and the title to reward or punishment, the *Will* and the *Understanding*, that is, the whole man considered in his superior faculties, may become subjects of the Kingdome, servants of JESUS, and heires of glory. Faith supplyes our imperfect conceptions, and corrects our ignorance, making us to distinguish good from evill, not onely by the proportions of reason, and custome, and old lawes, but

## Part II.

but by the new standard of the Gospell, It teaches us all those duties, which were enjoyned us in order to a participation of mighty glories, it brings our understanding into subjection, making us apt to receive the Spirit for our guide, CHRIST for our Master, the Gospell for our rule, the lawes of Christianity for our measure of good and evill: And it supposes us naturally ignorant, and comes to supply those defects, which in our understandings were left after the spoiles of innocence, and wisdome made in Paradise upon Adams prevarication, and continued and increased by our neglect, evill customes voluntary deceptions, and infinite prejudices. And as Faith presupposes our ignorance: So repentance presupposes our malice and iniquity; the whole design of CHRISTS coming, and the doctrines of the Gospell being to recover us from a miserable condition, from ignorance to spirituall wisdome, by the conduct of Faith: and from a vicious, habitually depraved life, and ungodly manners to the purity of the Sonnes of GOD, by the instrument of Repentance.

201

And this is a loud publication of the excellency and glories of the Gospell, and the felicities of man over all the other instances of creation. The Angels, who were more excellent Spirits then humane souls, were not comprehended and made safer within a Covenant and Provisions of Repentance. Their first act of volition was their whole capacity of a blisfull or a miserable eternity: they made their own sentence, when they made their first Election, and having such excellent knowledge, and no weaknesses to prejudge and trouble their choice, what they first did, was not capable of repentance, because they had at first in their intuition and sight all, which could afterward bring them to repentance. But weak man, who knowes first by elements, and after long study learns a syllable, and in good time gets a word, could not at first know all those things, which were sufficient or apt to determine his choice, but as he grew to understand more, saw more reasons to rescind his first elections. The Angels had a full peremptory will, and a satisfied understanding at first, and therefore were not to mend their first act by a second contradictory. But poor man hath a will alwayes strongest, when his understanding is weakest, and chooseth most, when he is least able to determine, and therefore is most passionate in his desires, and followes his object with greatest earnestnesse, when he is blindest, and hath the least reason so to do. And therefore GOD pityng man, begins to reckon his choices to be criminall, just in the same degree, as he gives him understanding. The violences and unreasonable actions of childehood are no more remembred by GOD, then they are understood by the childe. The levities and passions of youth are not aggravated by the imputation of malice, but are sins of a lighter dye, because reason is not yet impressed, and marked upon them with characters, and tincture in grain: but he, who, when he may choose because he understands, shall choose the evill and reject the good, stands marked with a deep guilt; and hath no excuse left to him, but as his degrees of ignorance left his choice the more imperfect. And because every sinner in the stile of Scripture is a fool, and hath an election as imperfect, as is the action; that is, as great a declension from prudence, as it is from piety, and the man understands as imperfectly as he practises; Therefore GOD sent his Sonne to take upon him, not the nature of Angels,

but

but the seed of Abraham, and to propound salvation upon such termes, as were possible: that is, upon such a piety, which relies upon experience, and triall of good and evill; and hath given us leave, if we choose amisse at first, to choose again, and choose better. CHRIST having undertaken to pay for the issues of their first follies, to make up the breach made by our first weaknesses, and abused understandings.

But as GOD gave us this mercy by CHRIST, so he also revealed it by him. He first used the authority of a LORD, and a Creator, and a Law-giver, he required obedience, indeed upon reasonable termes, upon the instance of but a few Commandments at first, which when he afterwards multiplied, he also appointed wayes to expiate the smaller irregularities; But left them eternally bound without remedy, who shoulde doe any great violence or a crime. But then he bound them but to a temporall death. Only this; as an eternall death was also tacitely implied, so also a remedy was secretly ministred, and repentance particularly preached by homilies distinct from the Covenant of Moses law. The Law allowed no repentance for greater crimes, *he that was convicted of adultery was to die without mercy; but God pitied the miseries of man, & the inconveniences of the Law, and sent CHRIST to suffer for the one, and remedy the other, for so it behoved CHRIST to suffer, and to rise from the dead, and that repentance, and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations.* And now this is the last and only hope of man; who in his naturall condition is imperfect, in his customes vicious, in his habits impotent and criminall. Because man did not remain innocent, it became necessary he shoulde be penitent; and that this penitence should by some meanes be made acceptable, that is, become the instrument of his pardon, and restitution of his hope. Which because it is an act of favour, and depends wholly upon the Divine dignation, and was revealed to us by JESUS CHRIST, who was made not onely the Prophet and Preacher, but the Mediator of this new Covenant and mercy, it was necessary we shoulde become Disciples of the holy JESUS, and servants of his institution; that is, run to him to be made partakers of the mercies of this new Covenant, and accept of him such conditions as he should require of us.

This Covenant is then confign'd to us, when we first come to CHRIST, that is, when we first professse our selves his Disciples, and his servants, Disciples of his Doctrine, and servants of his institution; that is, in Baptisme, in which CHRIST who dyed for our finnes makes us partakers of his death. *For we are buried by Baptisme into his death, saith S. Paul.* Which was also represented in ceremony by the immersion appointed to be the rite of that Sacrament. And then it is, that GOD powres forth together with the Sacramental waters a salutary and holy fountain of grace to wase the soule from all its staines, and impure adherencies. And therefore this first accessio to CHRIST is in the stile of Scripture called regeneration, the new birth, redemption, renovation, expiation, or attonement with GOD, and justification. And these words in the new Testament relate principally, and properly to the abolition of sins committed before Baptisme. *For we are justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in JESUS CHRIST, whom GOD hath set forth to be a propitiation to declare his Righteousnesse for the remission of sinnes that are past.* To declare I say at this time his righteousness. And this is that, which S. Paul calls justification by faith, that boasting might be excluded.

Luk. 24. 26.

Rom. 3. 23.

*Parcus Deo-  
rum Cultor qz  
infrequens in-  
sanientis dum  
sapientia con-  
fultus erro;*

*nunc retrosum**vela dare, at-**que iterare**cursus cogor**relictos, Hor.*

I. Od. 34.

Rom. 6. 4.

I Pet. 3. 21.

Rom. 5. 1.

Tit. 3. 5. 3. 17.

Rom. 3. 26.

Gal. 2. 16.

Rom. 3. 24, 25.

ver. 27.

Part II.

and the grace of GOD by JESUS made exceeding glorious. For this being the proper work of CHRIST, the first entertainment of a Disciple, and manifestation of that state, which is first given him as a favour, and next intended as a duty, is a totall abolition of the precedent guilt of sinne, and leaves nothing remaining, that can condemne; we then freely receive the intire, and perfect effect of that attonement, which CHRIST made for us; we are put into a condition of innocence and favour. And this I say is done regularly in Baptisme; and S. Paul expresses it to this sense, after he had enumerated a series of vices subiected in many, *he addes, and such were sinne of you, but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified,* There is nothing of the old guilt remanent, when ye were washed ye were sanctified or as the Scripture calls it in another place, *Yee were redeemed from your vaine conversation.*

*I Cor. 6. 11.*

*I Pet. 1. 18.*

*S.*

*Mark 1. 15.*

*Act. 3. 19.*

*Act. 2. 38.*

*Mark 16. 16.*

*Ephes. 5. 26.*

For this grace was the formality of the Covenant. Repent, and believe the Gospel. Repent, and be converted, (so it is in S. Peters Sermon,) and your sinnes shall be done away, that was the Covenant. But that CHRIST chose Baptisme for its signature appeares in the Parallel; Repent and be baptized, and wash away your sinnes; For CHRIST loved his Church, and gave himselfe for it, that bee might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, that he might present it to himselfe a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy and without blemish. The sanctification is integrall, the pardon is universall and immediate.

But here the proesse is short, no more at first but this, Repent and be baptized, and wash away your sinnes, which baptisme because it was speedily \* administred, and yet not without the preparatives of Faith and Repentance, it is certain those predispositions were but instruments of reception, actions of great facility, of small imployment, and such as supposing the person not unapt did confess the infinitenesse of the Divine mercy, and fulnesse of the redemption; and is called by the Apostle, *a being justified freely.*

Upon this ground it is, that by the Doctrine of the Church, heathen persons, strangers from the Covenant of Grace, were invited to a confession of faith, and dereliction of false religions, with a promise, that at the very first resignation of their persons to the service of JESUS, they should obtain full pardon. It was S. Cyprians counsell to old Demetrianus. " Now in the evening of thy dayes, when thy soule is almost expiring, repent of thy sinnes, believe in JESUS, and turn Christian; and although thou art almost in the embraces of death, yet thou shalt be comprehended of immortality. Baptizatus ad horam securus hinc exit, faith S. Austin. A baptized person dying immediately shall live eternally and gloriously. And this was the case of the Thiefe \* upon the Croffe; he confessed CHRIST, and repented of his sins and beg'd pardon, and did acts enough to facilitate his first acceſſe to CHRIST, and but to remove the hindrances of Gods favour; then he was redeemed and reconciled to GOD by the death of JESUS, *xix.* *Just.*

*Mart. Dial. cum Tryph. Act. 8. 38. &c 10. 47. &c 16. cap. 15. &c ver. 33. Rom. 3. 24.*  
*\* Eadem est ratio laborantium in vinea, quos Dominus in Parabola, Matth. 20. undecima de-  
 rum hora conduxerat, omnes aequali sortem promerebantur. Ratio a. est, quia antea vocati  
 non erant. Nemo nos conduxerat, v.7.*

that

that is, he was pardoned with a full, instantaneous, integrall and cleare pardon: With such a pardon, which declared the glory of G O D S mercies, and the infinitenelle of C H R I S T S merit, and such as required a meere reception, and entertainment on mans part.

But hen we having received so great a favour, enter into Covenant to correspond with a proportionable endeavour; the benefit of absolute pardon, that is, salvation of our foules, being not to be received, till the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the L O R D ; all the inter-vall we have promised to live a holy life in obedience to the whole Discipline of J E S U S . That's the condition on our part: And if we prevaricate that, the inercy shewen to the \* Blessed Theife is no argument of hope to us, because he was saved by the mercies of the first acceſſe, which corresponds to the remission of sins, we receive in Baptisme; and we shall perish by breaking our own promises and obligations, which CHRIST pasſed upon us, when he made with us the Covenant of an intire and gracious pardon.

For in the precise Covenant there is nothing else described, but pardon so given, and ascertained upon an obedience persevering to the end. And this is clear in all those places of Scripture, which exprefſe a holy, and innocent life to have been the purpose and design of CHRISTS death for us, and redemption of us from the former estate. *CHRIST bare our finnes in his own body on the tree, that we being dead unto finnes, should live unto righteousness, by whose stripes ye are healed.* [Exinde] from our being healed, from our dying unto finne, from our being buried with CHRIST, from our being baptized unto his death; the end of CHRISTS dying for us is, that we should live unto righteousness: which was also highly and Prophetically expressed by S. Zachary in his Divine exatſie. *This was the oath, which he ſware to our father Abraham, that he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our Enemies might ſerve him without fear in holinesſe and righteousness before him all the dayes of our life.* And S. Paul diſcouſes to this purpose pertinently and largely. For the grace of G O D , that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us that denying ungodlienesſe and worldly luſtſ [hi ſunt Angeli, quibus in lavacro renantivimus. saith Ter-tullian, thoſe are the evill Angels, the Devill and his works, which we deny or renounce in Baptisme] we ſhould live soberly, righteouſly, and godly in this present world, that is, lead a whole life in the purſuit of universall holinesſe, [ſobriety, justice and godlienesſe being the proper lan-guage to ſignifie our religion, and respects to G O D , to our neighbours, and to our ſelvess,] and that this was the very end of our dying in baptisme, and the designe of C H R I S T S maniſteſtation of our redempſion he addes. [looking for that blessed hope, and glorious appearing of the great G O D , and our S A V I O U R J E S U S , who gave himſelfe for us] to this very purpose [that he might redeem us from all iniqutiy, and pu-riſie unto himſelfe a peculiар people zealous of good works] purifying a people peculiар to himſelfe in the lauer of regeneration, and, appropriating it to himſelfe in the rites of aduiffion and professiou. Which plainly designes the firſt conſignation of our redempſion to be in baptisme, and that C H R I S T there cleaſing his Church from e-very ſpot, or wrinkle, made a Covenant with us, that we ſhould renounce all our ſins, and he ſhould cleaſe them all, and then that we ſhould abide in that.

Licet latro veni-  
am meruiflet in-  
fine de omni tuo  
crimine, non ta-  
men dedit bap-  
tiza tis peccandi,  
& perverandi  
authoritatem.  
Tunc enim bap-  
tizatus eſt, qui  
tunc primum  
Chrifum in cru-  
ce confeffus eſt.  
Poenitentia enim  
ſi in extremo vi-  
ta hiatu adven-  
erit, fanatici & libe-  
rat in abſtione  
baptimi, illi au-  
tem, cum potue-  
runt, nunquam  
converti volue-  
runt, conſitentes  
cum iam peccare  
nequeant, non  
ſic facile acqui-  
rant, qnod vo-  
lunt. S. Aug cap.  
nullus de penit.  
dif. 7.

AET. 3.19.  
vid. part. 3 Con-  
ſid. of Crucifix.  
of Jesus.  
1. Pet. 2. 24.  
Luke 1. 73.  
2. Tit. 1. 1.

## Part II.

Rom. 6.3, 4.

verse 6.

10.

that state. Which is also very explictly set down by the same Apostle in that divine, and mysterious Epistle to the Romanes; *How shall we, that are dead to sinne, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us, as were baptized into J E S U S C H R I S T, were baptized into his death?* Well, what then? *Therefore we are buried with him by Baptisme into his death, that like as C H R I S T was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walke in newnesse of life.* That's the end, and mysteriounesse of baptisme, it is a confignation into the death of C H R I S T, and we dye with him that once, that is, dye to sinne, that we may for ever after live the life of righteoufnesse. *Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sinne.* That is from the day of our Baptisme, to the day of our death. And therefore G O D who knowes the weaknesses of our part, and yet the strictnesse and necessity of conserving baptisall grace by the Covenant Evangelicall hath appointed the auxiliaries of the holy Spirit to be ministred to all baptized people in the holy rite of Confirmation, that it might be made possible to be done by Divine aides, which is necessary to be done by the Divine Commandments.

And this might not be improperly said to be the meaning of those words of our blessed S A V I O U R. *He that speaks a word against the Sonne of Man, it shall be forgiven him, but he that speaks a word against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him.* That is, those finnes, which were committed in infidelity, before we became Disciples of the holy J E S U S are to be remitted in Baptisme, and our first profession of the religion: but the finnes committed after baptisme and confirmation, in which we receive the holy Ghost, and by which the holy Spirit is grieved, are to be accounted for with more severity. And therefore the \* Primitive Church, understanding our obligations according to this discourse admitted not any to holy Orders, who had lapsed and fallen into any sinne, of which she could take cognisance, that is, such who had not kept the integrity of their baptism, but finnes committed before baptisme were no impediments to the susception of orders, because they were absolutely extinguished in baptisme. This is the nature of the Covenant we made in baptisme, that's the grace of the Gospele, and the effect of faith and repentance, and it is expected we shold so remain. For it is no where expressed to be the mercy and intention of the Covenant Evangelicall, that this redemption should be any more then once, or that repentance which is in order to it, can be renewed to the same or so great purposes, and present effects.

But after we are once reconciled in Baptisme and put intirely into G O D S favour, when we have once been redeemed, if we then fall away into sinne, we must expect G O D S dealing with us in another manner, and to other purposes. Never must we expect to be so again justified; and upon such termes as formerly: the best dayes of our repentance are interrupted; not that G O D will never forgive them, that sin after baptisme, and recover by repentance; but that restitution by repentance after baptisme is another thing then the first redemption. No such intire cleare, and integral determinate, and presentiall effects of repentance; but an imperfect, little, growing, uncertain, and hazardous reconciliation. A repentance, that is alwayes in production, a renovation by parts, a pardon that

\*Vicia Catechumenon impunitar fidelit: ino & pligamia ante baptismum sa- cerdorio non ponebat obicem.

S. Hieron in fin. ap. I. contra Rufiu.

S. Aug. de bono conjugali. De Sacraento e- nimi agitur, non de peccato. Nam in baptismio omnia peccata di- mittuntur.

Can. Apost. 17. Concil. Eliber. c. 30, 31.

Mundus post diluvium rursus delinquens igni delinquitur: sicut & homo qui post baptismum de- licita restaurat. Tertull de bap-

tis.

II.

Nunc hic dies a- liam vitam ad- fert, alias mores postularat,

that is revocable, a *savation* to be wrought by *fear* and *trembling*; all our remanent life must be in *bitternesse*, our hopes allayed with *feares*, our meat attempered with *Colliquintida*, and death is in the pot: as our best actions are imperfect, so our greatest graces are but possibilities, and aptnesses to a reconciliation, and all our life we are working our selves into that condition, we had in Baptisme, and lost by our relapse. As the habit lessens, so does the guilt; as our vertues are imperfect, so is the pardon; and because our piety may be interrupted, our state is uncertaine, till our possibilities of sin are ceas'd, till our fight is finished, and the victory therefore made sure, because there is no more fight. And it is remarkable, that S. Peter gives counsell to live holily in pursuance of our *redemption*, of our *calling*, and of our *escaping from that corruption, that is in the world through lust*, lest we lose the benefit of our purgation, to which by way of antithesis he opposes this. *Wherefore the rather give diligence to make your calling and election sure.* And, if ye do these things ye shall never fall. Meaning, by the perpetuating our state of Baptisme, and first repentance we shall never fall, but be in a sure estate; *our calling and election shall be sure.* But not, if we fall; *if we forget we were purged from our old sins;* if we forfeit our calling, we have also made our election unsure, moveable, and disputable.

So that now the hopes of lapsed sinners relies upon another bottome. And as in Moses Law there was no revelation of repentance, but yet the Jewes had hopes in G O D, and were taught the succours of repentance by the homilies of the Prophets, and other accessory notices: So in the Gospel the Covenant was established upon faith and repentance, but it was confign'd in Baptisme, and was verifiable onely in the integrity of a following holy life: but yet the mercies of GOD in pardoning finniers lapsed after Baptisme was declared to us by collaterall and indirect occasions; by the sermons of the Apostles, and the Commentaries of Apostolicall persons, who understood the meaning of the spirit, and the purposes of the divine mercy, and those other significations of his will, which the blessed J E S U S left upon records in other parts of his Testament, as in codicils annexed, besides the precise Testament it self. And it is certain, if in the Covenant of grace there be the same involution of an after repentance, as there is of present pardon upon past repentance, and future sanctity, it is impossible to justify, that a holy life, and a persevering sanctity is enjoyned by the Covenant of the Gospel: If I say in its first intention it be declared, that we may as well, and upon the same termes hope for pardon upon a recovery hereafter, as upon the perseverance in the present condition.

From these premises we may soon understand, what is the duty of a Christian in all his life, even to pursue his own undertaking made in Baptisme, or his first accessse to C H R I S T, and redemption of his person from the guilt and punishment of sinnes. The state of a Christian is called in Scripture, *Regeneration, spirituall life, walking after the Spirit, walking in newnesse of life,* that is a bringing forth fruits meet for repentance. That repentance which tied up in the same ligament with faith was the dispositions of a Christian to his regeneration, and atonement must have holy life in perpetuall succession; for that is the apt and proper fruit of the first repentance, which John the B. preached as an introduction to Christianity, and as an entaining the redemption by the blood of the Covenant. And all that is spoken in

*Ante obitum nemmo supremaque funera felix.*  
2 Pet. 1. 9.  
ver. 4.  
ver. 10.

*Vide etiam Coloss. I. 21,*

Part II.

the new Testament is nothing but a calling upon us to do, what we promised in our regeneration, to perform that, which was the designe of CHRIST, who therefore, redeemed us, and bare our sins in his own body, that we might dye unto sin, and live unto righteousness.

14.

Heb. 12. 14.

This is that saying of S. Paul; Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the LORD, looking diligently, least any men fail of the grace of GOD, least any root of bitterness springing up trouble you. Plainly saying, that unless we pursue the state of holiness, and Christian communion, into which we were baptized, when we received the grace of GOD, we shall fail of the state of grace, and never come to see the glories of the LORD: And a little before, let us draw near with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water. That's the first state of our redemption, that's the Covenant GOD made with us, to remember our sins no more, and to put his lawes in our hearts and minds. And this was done, when our bodies were washed with water, and our hearts sprinkled from an evill conscience, that is, in Baptisme. It remains then, that we persist in the condition, that we may continue our title to the covenant, for so it follows: Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering. For if we sin wilfully after the profession, there remaines no more sacrifice: that is, If we hold not fast the profession of our Faith, and continue not the condition of the Covenant, but fall into a contrary state, we have forfeited the mercies of the covenant. So that all our hopes of blessednesse, relying upon the Covenant made with GOD in J E S U S C H R I S T , are ascertained upon us by holding fast that profession: by retaining our hearts still sprinkled from an evill conscience; by following peace with all men and holiness: For by not failing of the grace of GOD, we shall not fail of our hopes, the mighty price of our high calling; but without all this, we shall never see the face of GOD.

15.

2.Cor. 13. 5.Rom. 8.10.Gal. 5. 24.1. Joh. 3. 9.James 1. 18.

To the same purpose are all those places of scripture, which entitle us to CHRIST and the spirit upon no other condition, but a holy life, and a prevailing, habituall, victorious grace. Know ye not your own selves, Brethren, how that J E S U S C H R I S T is in you, except ye be reprobates? There are but two states of being in order to eternity, either a state of the inhabitation of CHSIST, or the state of reprobation. Either CHRIST is in us, or we are reprobates. But what does that signify, to have CHRIST dwelling in us? that also we learne at the feet of the same Doctor; If CHRIST be in you, the body is dead by reason of sin, but the spirit is life because of righteousness. The body of sin is mortified, and the life of grace is active, buify, and spirituall in all them, who are not in the state of reprobation. The Parallel with that other expression of his; They that are CHRISTS have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts, If sin be vigorous, if it be habituall, if it be beloved, if it be not dead or dying in us, we are not of CHRISTS portion, we belong not to him, nor he to us. For whoever is born of GOD doth not commit sin, for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of GOD; that is, every regenerate person is in a condition, whose very being is a contradiction, and an opposite design to sin. When he was regenerate and born a new of water, and the spirit; the seed of GOD, the originall of piety was put into him and bidden to encrease and multiply. The seed of GOD (in S. John) is the same with the word of GOD (in S. James,) by which he begat us, and as long as this remains,

maines, a regenerate person cannot be given up to sin, for when he is, he quits his baptism, he renounces the Covenant, he alters his relation to GOD in the same degree as he enters into a state of sinne.

And yet this discourse is no otherwise to be understood then according to the designe of the thing it self, and the purpose of GOD, that is, that it be a deep engagement, and an effectuall consideration for the necessity of a holy life: but at no hand let it be made an instrument of despaire, nor an argument to lessen the influences of the divine mercy. For although the nicety and limits of the Covenant being configned in Baptisme, are fixed upon the condition of a holy life, and persevering, uninterrupted sanctity; and our redemption is wrought but once, compleated but once, we are but once absolutely, intirely, and presentially forgiven, and reconciled to GOD, this reconciliation being in vertue of the sacrifice, and this sacrifice applied in Baptisme is one, as baptisme is one, and as the sacrifice is one: yet the mercies of GOD belides this great feast hath fragments, which the Apostles and Ministers spirituall are to gather up in baskets, and minister to the after needs of indigent and necessitous Disciples.

And this we gather, as fragments are gathered by respersed sayings, instances and examples of the Divine mercy recorded in holy Scripture. The holy J E S U S commanded us to forgive our brother 70. times seven times, when he asks our pardon, and implores our mercy; and since the Divine mercy is the pattern of ours, and is also procured by ours, the one being made the measure of ours by way of precedent, and by way of reward, GOD will certainly forgive us as we forgive our brother; and it cannot be imagined GOD should oblige us to give pardon oftner then he will give it himself, especially since he hath expressed ours to be a title of a proportionable reception of his; and hath also commanded us to ask pardon all dayes of our life, even in our daily offices, and to beg it in the measure, and rule of our owne charity, and forgivenesse to our brother. And therefore GOD in his infinite wisdome foreseeing our frequent relapses, and considering our infinite infirmities, appointed in his Church an ordinary ministry of pardon; designing the Minister to pray for sinners, and promising to accept him in that his adovation, or that he would open or shut heaven respectively to his act on earth, that is, he would heare his prayers, and verifie his ministry, to whom he hath committed the word of reconciliation. This became a duty to Christian Ministers, spirituall persons, [that they should restore a person overtaken in a fault] that is, reduce him to the condition he begins to loose, [that they shoulde pray over sick persons, who are also commanded to confess their sinnes, and GOD hath promised, that the sinnes they have committed shall be forgiven them. Thus S. Paul absolved the incestuous, excommunicate Cerinthian, In the person of Christ he forgave him. And this also is the confidence S. John taught the Christian Church, upon the stock of the excellent mercy of GOD, and propitiatiōn of JESUS. If we confess our sins he is faithfull and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousnesse. Which discourse he directs to them, who were Christians already initiated into the institution of JESUS. And the Epistles, which the Spirit sent to the 7. Asian Churches, and were particularly addressed to the Bishops, the Angels of those Churches, are exhortations, some to perseverance, some to repentance, that they may returne penit. from whence they are fallen. And the case is so with us, That 1 Joh. 1.9.

*Gal. 6. 1;  
James 5.  
Εἰ τοι ἵπποι  
πρὸς ἡμῶν  
τοποθετήσας τὸν εἰ-  
πικόλα χρόνον  
μαθαίσας & οὐγο-  
δέχεται, εἰνα  
δημοψιαῖς κα-  
ταπέπιπτος, ὅτε  
λυτρεῖ χρόνον  
τοῦ ἵππου, χρί-  
ει γινόμενος τῷ  
εἰρηνῇ δια-  
δικτυωμένος  
τανόντι, Καν.  
αποστολ. 51.*

*1 Cor. 11. 27  
εἰς τὸν κατεργά-  
τον διεργάτην  
S. Basil Can.  
It Apocal. 2..*

## Part II.

it is impossible we should be actually and perpetually free from sinne in the long succession of a busie , an impotent, and a tempted conversation. And without these reserves of the Divine grace, and after-emanations from the Mercy seat , no man could be saved; and the death of C H R I S T would become inconsiderable to most of his greatest purposes ; for none should have received advantages, but newly baptizt persons, whose albes of baptism served them also for a winding sheet.

18.

But now althoigh it is infinitely certain, that the gates of mercy stand open to sinners after baptisme , yet it is with some variety , and greater difficulty. He that renounces Christianity , and becomes Apostate from his religion , not by a seeming abjuration under a stome, but by a voluntary and hearty dereliction , he seemes to have quitted all that grace, which he had received, when he was illuminatd , and to have lost the benefits of his redemption , and former expiation. And I conceive this is the full meaning of those words of S. Paul, which are of highest difficulty, and latent sense. *For it is impossible for those , who were once enlightened, &c. If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance.* The reason is there subjoined, and more clearly explicated a little after : *For if we sinne wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remains no more sacrifice for sinnes; for he hath counted the blood of the Covenant , wherewith he was sanctified an unholie thing, and hath done despite to the spirit of grace.* The meaning is divers according to the degrees of Apostasy or relapse; they who fall away after they were once enlightened in Baptisme , and felt all those blessed effects of the sanctification , and the emanations of the spirit ; if it be into a contradictory state of sinne and mancipation, and obstinate purposes to serve Chrits enemies , then there remains nothing , but a fearfull expectation of judgement : but if the backsliding be but the interruption of the first sanctity by a single act , or an unconfirmed, unresolved, unmerciful habite , then also it is impossible to renew them unto repentance, viz. as formerly, that is, they can never be reconciled as before, integrally, fully , and at once , during this life. For that redemption, and expiation was by baptism into C H R I S T , nor any more sacramental configurations of the benefit of it, *there is no more sacrifice for sinnes*, but the redemption is one as the sacrifice is one , in whose vertue the redemption does operate. And therefore the Novatians , who were zealous men , denied to the first sort of persons the peace of the Church, and remitted them to the divine judgement. The \* Church her self was sometimes almost as zealous against the second sort of persons lapsed into capitall crimes , granting to them repentance but once ; by such disciplines configning this truth, that every recession from the state of grace , in which by Baptisme we were established and configned , is a further step from the possibilities of heaven , and so neer a ruine , that the Church thought them persons fit to be transmited to a judicature immediately Divine , as supposing either her power to be too little, or the others malice too great , or else the danger too violent, or the scandal insupportable. For concerning such persons, who once were pious, holy, and forgiven, ( for so is every person worthily and aptly baptizt) and afterwards fell into dissolution of manners, extinguishing the holy Ghost, doing despite to the spirit of grace, crucifying again the Lord of Life, that is , returning to such a condition , from which they

Heb. 6. 6.

Heb. 10. 26.

*Quid igitur rejecta est penitentia ? Haud quamvis Sed renovatio per novum baptisma rejecta est. Renovatio namque filius lavacri est; ex hac causa ab Apostolo dicitur lavacrum regenerationis & renovationis spiritus sancti. Theophyl. in hunc locum. Idem autem, S. Chrysostom. Am. bros. Anfelm. in 10 Heb. Collocavit in vestibulo penitentianis secundam que pulsantibus patefaciat, sed jam tenet, quia jam secundo sed amplius nunquam, quia proxime fructa Terruli. His de penit. c. 7. Huic igitur penitentie lecunda & unius &cc c 9.*

they were once , and could not otherwise be recovered , but by the death of our dearest Lord ; I say , concerning such persons the Scripture speaks very suspicioitly , and to the fence and signification of an infinite danger . For if the speaking a word against the Holy Ghost , be not to be pardoned here nor hereafter , what can we imagine to be the end of such an impiety , which crucifies the Lord of Life , and puts him to an open shame , which quenches the spirit , doing despite to the spirit of Grace ? Certainly that is worse then speaking against him . And such is every person , who falls into wilfull Apostasie from the faith , or does that violence to holinesse , which the other does to faith : that is , extinguishes the sparkes of illumination , quenches the spirit , and is habitually and obstinately criminall in any kinde . For the same thing that Atheisme was in the first period of the world , and Idolatry in the second ; the same is Apostasie in the last ; it is a state wholly contradictory to all our religious relation to God according to the nature & manner of the present communication . Only this last , because it is more malicious and a declension from a greater grace , is something like the fall of Angels . And of this the Emperour Julian was a sad example .

But as these are degrees immediately next , and a little lesse : so the hopes of pardon are the more visible . Simon Magus spake a word , or at least thought against the holy Ghost , he thought he was to be bought with money . Concerning him S. Peter pronounced : *Thou art in the gall of bitterness , and in the bond of iniquity , yet repent and pray G O D , if perhaps the thought of thy heart may be forgiven thee .* Here the matter was of great difficulty ; but yet there was a possibility left , at least no impossibility of recovery declared . And therefore Saint Jude bids us , *of some to have compassion making a difference : and others save with feare , pulling them out of the fire ;* meaning that their condition is onely nor desperat . And still in descent retaining the same proportion , every lesser sinne is easier pardoned , as better consisting with the state of grace : the whole spirit is not destroyed , and the body of sinne is not introduced : CHRIST is not quite ejected out of possession , but like an oppressed Prince , still continues his claime ; and such is his mercy , that he will still doe so , till all be lost , or that hee is provoked by too much violence , or that Antichrist is put in substitution , and sinne reigne in our mortall body . So that I may use the words of Saint John , *These things I write unto you , that yee sinne not . But if any man sinne , we have an Advocate with the Father , JESUS CHRIST the Righteous , and he is a propitiation for our sinnes , and not for ours onely , but for the finnes of the whole world .* That is plainly , [although the designe of the Gospel be , that we should erect a Throne for CHRIST to reign in our spirits , and this Doctrine of innocence be therefore preached , that ye sinne not , yet if one be overtaken in a fault , despaire not , CHRIST is our Advocate , and he is the propitiatiōn ;] he did propitiate the Father by his death , and the benefit of that we receive at our first acceso to him , but then he is our Advocate too , and prayes perpetually for our perveriance , or restituicō respectively . But his purpose is , and he is able so to do , *to keep you from falling , and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his Glory .*

This consideration I intend , should relate to all Christians of the world ; and although by the present custome of the Church we are baptizēd

19.

Act.8.22.

vers. 22. 23.

I Job.2.1,2.

20.

## Part II.

in our infancy, and do not actually reap that fruit of present pardon, which persons of a mature age in the primitive Church did (for we yet need it not, as we shall, when we have past the calentures of youth, which was the time, in which the wisest of our Fathers in C H R I S T chose for their Baptisme, as appears in the instance of S. Ambrose, S. Austin, and divers others) yet we must remember, that there is a Baptisme of the Spirit as well as of water, and when ever this happens, whether it be together with that Baptisme of water, as usually it was, when onely men and women of yeares of discretion were baptized : or whether it be ministred in the rite of confirmation, which is an admirable suppletory of an early Baptisme, and intended by the holy Ghost for a corroborative of baptisimall grace, and a defensative against danger ; or that lastly it be performed by an internall, and meerly spirituall Ministry, when we by acts of our own election verifie the promise made in Baptisme, and to bring back the rite, by receiving the effect of Baptisme, that is, when ever the filth of our flesh is *wash't away*, and that we have the answer of a pure conscience towards God, which S. Peter affirmes to be the true Baptisme, and which by the purpose and design of God it is expected we should not defer longer then a great reason, or a great necessity enforces ; when our sins are first expiated, and the sacrifice and death of CHRIST is made ours, and we made GODS by a more immediate title, (which at some time or other happens to all Christians, that pretend to any hopes of heaven) then let us look to our standing, and take heed lest we fall. When we once have tasted of the heavenly gift, and are made partakers of the holy Ghost, and have tasted the good word of GOD, and the powers of the world to come, that is, when we are redeemed by an actuall mercy and presentiall application, which every Christian that belongs to GOD is at some time or other of his life, then a fall into a deadly crime is highly dangerous, but a relapse into a contrary estate is next to desperate.

21.

2 Pet. 2.20,21

*—Neque amilios colores lana refert medicata fisco : nec vera virtus, cum semel excidit Curat reponi derisoribus.Hoc.*

I represent this sad but most true Doctrine in the words of S. Peter, If after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour JESUS CHRIST, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, then after they have known it to turn from the holy Commandment delivered unto them. So that a relapse after a state of grace into a state of sin, into confirmed habits, is to us a great signe, and possibly in it selfe it is more then a sign, even a state of reprobation, and finall abscission.

22.

The summe of all is this, there are two states of life like opposite termes. First CHRIST redeems us from our vain conversation, and reconciles us to GOD, putting us into an intire condition of pardon, favour, innocence, and acceptance, and becomes our Lord and King, his spirit dwelling and reigning in us. The opposite state to this is that, which in Scripture is called, a crucifying the Lord of life, a doing despite to the spirit of grace, a being entangled in the pollutions of the world, the Apostacie or falling away, an impotency or disability to do good, viz. of such who cannot cease from sin, who are slaves of sin, & in whom sin reigns in their bodies. This condition is a full & integral deletery of the first, is such a condition, which as it hath no holines, or remanent affection to vertue: so it hath no hope or revelation of a mercy, because all that benefit is lost, which they received by the Death of CHRIST ; and the first being

2 Pet. 2. 14.

Being lost, there remains no more sacrifice for sinnes, but a certain fearfull expectation of judgement. But between these two states, stand all those imperfections, and single delinquencies, those slips and falls, those parts of rection and Apostasie, those grievings of the Spirit: and so long as any thing of the first state is left, so long we are within the Covenant of grace, so long we are within the ordinary limits of mercy, and the Divine compassion; we are in possibilities of recovery, and the same sacrifice of CHRIST hath its power over us. CHRIST is in his possession, though he be disturbed, but then our restitution consists upon the only condition of a renovation of our integrity, as are the degrees of our innocence, so are our degrees of confidence.

Now because the intermediall state is divisible, various, successive, and alterable, so also is our condition of pardon. Our flesh shall no more return as that of a little childe, our wounds shall never be perfectly cured; but a scar, and pain and a danger of relapse shall for ever afflict us, our sins shall be pardoned by parts and degrees, to uncertain purposes, but with certain danger of being recalled again; and the pardon shall never be consummated till that day, in which all things have their consummation.

And this is evident to have been GODS usuall dealing with all those, upon whom his Name is called. GOD pardoned Davids sins of adultery and murder. But the pardon was but to a certain degree, and in a limited expression, *GOD hath taken away thy sin, thou shalt not die* (to which by Moses law he stood obliged;) but this pardon was as imperfect, as his condition was, *Nevertheless the childe, that is born unto thee, that shall die.* Thus GOD pardoned the Israelites at the importunity of Moses, and yet threatened to visit that sin upon them in the day of visitation. And so it is in Christianity, when once we have broke and discomposed the golden chain of vocation, election and justification, which are intire links, and methodicall periods of our happiness, when we first give up our names to CH R I S T, for ever after, our condition is imperfect, we have broken our Covenant and we must be saved by the excrescencies and overflowings of mercy. Our whole endeavour must be to be reduced to the state of our baptismall innocence and integrity, becasne in that, the Covenant was established. And since our life is full of defaillancies, and all our endeavours can never make us such as CH R I S T made us, and yet upon that condition our hopes of happiness were established; I mean of remaining such as he had made us; as are the degrees of our restitution and accessse to the first faderall condition, so also are the degrees of our pardon; but as it is alwayes in imperfection during this life, and subject to change and defaillance, so also are the hopes of our felicity, never certain till we are taken from all danger; never perfect, till all that is imperfect in us, is done away.

And therefore in the present condition of things our pardon was properly expressed by David, and Saint Paul, by a covering, and *not imputing.* For because the body of sinne dyes divisibly, and fights perpetually, and disputes with hopes of victory and may also prevale, all this life is a condition of suspence: Our sinne is rather covered then properly pardoned. GODS wrath is suspended, not satisfied; the sinne is not to all purposes of anger imputed, but yet is in some sense remanent, or at least lyes ready at the door. Our condition is a state of imperfection; and every degree of imperfection

23.

24.

25.

Mātē w̄'jārē  
t̄c̄ sp̄is m̄d̄-  
r̄t̄s̄t̄ id̄c̄. S̄-  
ph̄cl. Tyro.  
Psal. 33. 2.  
Rom. 4. 7.

## Part II.

on brings a degree of recession from the state, C H R I S T put us in ; and every recession from our innocence is also an abatement of our confidence, the anger of G O D hovers over our head, and breaks out into temporall judgements, and he retracts them again, and threatens worse, according as we approach to , or retire from that first innocence, which was the first entertainment of a Christian, and the Crown of the Evangelicall Covenant. Upon that we entertained the mercies of tedeption, and G O D established it upon such an obedience, which is constant, perpetuall, and universall ; and as we performe our part; so G O D verifies his, and not not onely gives a great assistance by the perpetuall influences of his holy Spirit, by which we are consigned to the day of redenption; but also takes an account of obedience, not according to the standard of the Law, and an exact scrutiny, but by an Evangelicall proportion, in which we are on one side look'd upon as persons already redeemed and assitsted, and therefore highly engaged: and on the other side as compassed about with infirmities and enemies, and therefore much pityed. So that as at first our calling and Election is presently good, and shall remain so, if we make it sure; so if we once prevaricate it, we are rendred them full of hazard, difficulty and uncertainty, and we must with paines and sedulity work out our salvation with fear and trembling: first by preventing a fall, or afterwards by returning to that excellent condition, from whence we have departed.

26.

But although the pardon of sinnes after Baptisme be, during this life, difficult, imperfect, and revocable; yet because it is to great effects for the present, and in order to a compleat pardon in the day of judgement, we are next to enquire, what are the parts of duty, to which we are obliged after such prevarications, which usually interrupt the state of Baptismall innocence, and the life of the Spirit. Saint John gives this account. If we say, we have fellowship with G O D, and walke in darknesse we lye, and do not the truth. But if we walk in the light, as he is in the light we have communion one with another, and the blood of J E S U S cleaseth us from all sinne.

x. Job. 1. 6.

Rom. 13. 13.

14.

1. Pet. 1. 15.

2. Pet. 3. 11.

x. Job. 3. 3.

1. Pet. 2. 1.

Hebr. 12. 1.

This state of duty Saint Paul calls a casting off the workes of darknesse a putting on the armour of light, a walking honestly, a putting on the L O R D J E S U S C H R I S T. And to it he confforts, making provision for the flesh to fulfille the lusts thereof. Saint Peter describing the duty of a Christian relates the proportion of it as high as the first precedent, even G O D himself. As he, which hath called you, is holy, so bee yee holy in all manner of conversation, not fashioning your selves according to the former lusts. And again, seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought we to be in all holy conversation and godlinesse. And Saint John with the same severity and perfection: Every one, that bath this hope ( that is every one who either does not, or ha's no reason to despaire ) purifeth himself even as G O D is pure; meaning that he is pure by a Divine purity, which G O D hath prescribed as an imitation of his holiness, according to our capacities and possibilities. That purity must needs be a laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and evill speakings. So S Peter expresses it; a laying aside every weight, and the sin that does so easily besets us.

So Saint Paul; this is to walke in the light as he is in the light, for in him is no darknesse at all, which we have then imitated, when we have escaped the corruption that is in the world through lusts, that is, so as we are not held by them, that we take them for our enemies, for the obiect and party of our contestation and spirituall fight, when we contend earnestly against them, and resist them unto blood if need be, that's being pure as he is pure. But besides this positive rejection of all evill, and perpetually contesting against sin, we must pursue the interests of vertue, and an active religion.

And besides this, saith Saint Peter, giving all diligence, adde to your faith vertue, to your vertue knowledge, and to knowledge temperance, and to temperance patience, and to patience godlinesse, and to godlinesse brotherly kindnesse, and to brotherly kindnesse charity. All this is an evident prosecution of the first designe, the holinesse and righteousnesse of a whole life, the being cleere from all spots and blemishes, a being pure and so presented unto Christ; for upon this the Covenant being founded, to this all industries must endeavour, and arrive in their proportions. For if these things be in you, and abound, they shall make that you be neither barren nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord JESUS Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and hath forgotten he was purged from his old sinnes; that is, he hath lost his baptismall grace, and is put from the first state of his redemption towards that state which is contradictory and destructive of it.

Now because all these things are in latitude, distance and divisibility, and onely enjoyne a sedulity, and great endeavour, all that we can dwell upon, is this, that he who endeavours most, is most secure, and every degree of negligence is a degree of danger, and although in the intermediall condition between the two states of Christianity, and a full impiety, there is a state of recovery and possibility, yet there is danger in every part of it, and it increases according as the deflexion and irregularity comes to its height, position, state and finality. So that we must give all diligence to worke out our salvation, and it will ever be with feare and trembling; with feare, that we doe not loose our innocence; and with trembling, if we have lost it, for feare we never recover, or never be accepted. But holiness of life, and uninterrupted sanctity being the condition of our salvation, the ingredient of the Covenant, we must proportion our degrees of hope, and confidence of heaven, according as we have obtained degrees of innocence, or perseverance or restitution. Only this, As it is certain he is in a state of reprobation, who lives unto sin, that is, whose actions are habitually criminall, who gives more of his consent to wickednesse then to vertue: so it is also certain he is not in the state of G O D S favour, and sanctification, unlesse he lives unto righteousness, that is, whose desires, and purposes, and endeavours, and actions, and customes are spirituall, holy, sanctified, and obedient. When sinne is dead and the spirit is life, when the lusts of the flesh are mortified, and the heart is purged from an evill conscience, and we abound in a whole systeme of Christian vertues, when our hearts are right to G O D, and with our affections and our wills we love G O D, and keep his Commandments; when we doe not onely cry LORD,LORD, but also doe his will, then C H R I S T dwells in us, and we in CHRIST. Now let all this be taken in the lowest sense that can be imagined, all I say which out of Scripture I have transcribed, casting away every weight laying

## Part II.

laying aside all malice , mortifying the deeds of the flesh, crucifying the old man with all his affections and lusts, and then having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust, besides this , adding vertue to vertue till all righteousness be fulfilled in us, walking in the light, putting on the LORD JESUS, purifying our selves as GOD is pure, following peace with all men and holiness, resisting unto blood, living in the spirit , being holy in all manner of conversation, as he is holy , being carefull and excellent in all conversation and godliness, all this being a pursuit of the first design of CHRISTS death and our reconciliation, can meane no lesse but that. 1. We should have in us no affection to a sinne ; of which we can best judge ; when we never choose it, and never fall under it but by surprise , and never lye under it at all, but instantly recover , judging our selves severely and. 2. That we shoud chooze vertue with great freedome of spirit and alacrity , and pursue it earnestly \* integrally and make it the busynesse of our \* lives, and that, 3. The effect of this be, that sinne be crucified in us , and the desires to it dead, flat, and uselesse, and that our desires of serving C H R I S T be quicke, spirited , active and effective, inquisitive for opportunities, apprehensive of the offer, cheerfull in the action, and persevering in the employment.

\* Bonum ex integra causa, malum ex quolibet defectu peculiari  
¶ x̄c̄r̄d̄ d̄sinḡ  
or̄ d̄nd̄p̄ d̄eix̄n̄  
or̄ μετ̄ος κακού  
ἢ κάτισθε πεπ̄  
μνίη μετ̄.  
Sophocl.Oedip.

26.

Now let a prudent Person imagine what infirmities and overights can consist with a state thus described , and all that, does no violence to the Covenant; GOD pities us, and calls us not to account for what morally cannot, or certainly will not with great industry be prevented. But whatsoever is inconsistent with this condition is an abatement from our hopes as it is a retiring from our duty, and is with greater or lesse difficulty cured, as the degrees of its distance from that condition , which Christ stipulated with us, when we became his Disciples. For we are just so restored to our state of grace and favour , as we are restored to our state of purity and holiness. Now this redintegration or renewing of us into the first condition is also called Repentance and is permitted to all persons , who still remaine within the powers and possibilities of the Covenant , that is, who are not in a state contradictory to the state and portion of grace ; but with a difficulty increased by all circumstances, and incidencies of the crime, and person. And this I shall best represent in repeating these considerations. 1. Some sins are past hopes of pardon in this life. 2. All that are pardoned are pardoned by parts , revocably and imperfectly during this life , not quickly, nor yet manifestly. 3. Repentance containes in it many operations, parts, and employments, its termes and purpose being to redintegrate our lost condition, that is, in a second and lesse perfect sense, but as much as in such circumstances we can, to verify our first obligations of innocence and holiness in all manner of conversation and godliness.

27.

Concerning the first, it is too sad a consideration to be too dogmaticall and conclusive in it, and therefore I shall onely recall those expresses of Scripture , which may with out envy decree the article, such as are those of S. Paul, that there is a certain sort of men, whom he twice describes, whom it is impossible to renew again unto repentance : or those of S. Peter Such whose latter end is worse then the beginning , because after they once had escaped the pollutions of the world they are intangled therein; such who as our blessed Saviour threatens shall never be forgiven in this world, nor in the world to come. For there is an unpardonable estate by reason of its malice, and opposition to the Covenant of grace, and there is a state unpardonable,because the time of repen-

tance

rance is past. There are dayes and periods of grace. *If thou hadst known at least in this thy day,* said the weeping Saviour of the world to foreknown and determined Jerusallem. When GODS decrees are gone out, they are not alwayes revocable: and therefore it was a great caution of the Apostle, *that we shoulde follow peace and holiness, and look diligently that we fall not from the grace of GOD, lest any of us become like Esau, to whose repentance there was no place left, though he sought it carefully with teares:* meaning that we also may put our selves into a condition, when it shall be impossible we should be renewed unto repentance; and those are they, *who sin a sin unto death, for whom we have from the Apostle no encouragement to pray.* And these are in so generall and conclusive termes described in Scripture, that every persevering sinner hath great reason to suspect himself to be in the number; if he endeavours, as soon as, he thinks of it, to recover, it is the best signe he was not arrived so farre; but he that lived long in a violent and habituall course of sinne is at the margin and brim of that state of finall reprobation, and some men are in it before they be aware, and to some GOD reckons their dayes swifter, and their periods shorter. The use I make of this consideration is, that if any man hath reason to suspect, or to be certain that his time of repentance is past, it must needs be a death-bed penitent after a vicious life; for he hath provoked GOD, as long as he could, and rejected the offers of grace as long as he lived, and refused vertue till he could not entertaine her, and hath done all those things, which a person rejected from hopes of repentance can easily be imagined to have done. And if there be any time of rejection, although it may be earlier, yet it is also certainly the last.

Concerning the second I shall adde this to the former discourse of it, that pardon of sins is not in this world at all after the first emission and great efflux of it in our first regeneration. During this life we are in imperfection, minority and under conditions, which we have prevaricated, and our recovery is in perpetuall fluxe, in heightnings and declensions, and we are highly uncertain of our acceptation, because we are not certain of our restitution, and innocence; we know not whether we have done all that is sufficient to repaire the breach made in the first state of favour and baptismall grace. *But he that is dead, saith S. Paul, is justified from sin;* not till then. And therfore in the doctrine of the most learned JESUS it is affirmed: He 'that is guilty of prophanation of the name of GOD, he shall not interrupt 'the apparent malignity of it by his present repentance, nor make atonement in the day of expiation, nor wash the stains away by chastising of 'himself, but during his life it remaines wholly in suspence, and before death is 'not extinguished according to the saying of the Prophet Elay; *This iniquity shall not be blotted out till ye dye,* saith the LORD of Hosts; and some wise persons have affirmed, that Jacob related to this in his expression, and appellatives of GOD; whome he called the GOD of Abraham, and the feare of his Father Isaak, because (as the Doctors of the Jewes tell us) Abraham being dead was ascribed into the finall condition of GODS family; but Isaak being living had apprehensions of GOD, not onely of a pious, but also of a tremutous feare: he was not sure of his own condition, much lesse of the degrees of his reconciliation, how far GOD had forgiven his sins, and how far he had retained them. And it is certain, that if every degree of the divine favour be not assured by a holy life, those sins, of whose pardon we were

Heb.12.16.

I Joh.5.16.

28.

Rom.6.7.

Isay 22.14.

Gen.31.42.

## Part II.

were most hopefull, returne in as full vigour, and clamorous importunity as ever, and are made more vocal by the appendant ingratitude, and other accidentall degrees. And this C H R I S T taught us by a parable; for as the Lord made his uncharitable servant pay all that debt, which he had formerly forgiven him, even so will GOD doe to us, if we from our hearts forgive not one another their trespasses. Behold the goodnesse, and severity of GOD, Rom. 11, 22. faith Saint Paul, on them which fell severity; but on thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in that goodnesse, otherwise thou shalt be cut off. For this is my Covenant which I shall make with them, when I shall take away their sins. And if this be true in those sins, which GOD certainly hath forgiven, such as were all those, which were committed before our illumination; much rather is it true in those, which we committed after, concerning whose actuall and full pardon we cannot be certain without a revelation. So that our pardon of sins, when it is granted after our breach of the Covenant, is just so secure as our perseverence is: concerning which because we must ascertain it as well as we can, but ever with feare and trembling, so also is the estate of our pardon, hazardous, conditional, revocable and uncertain; and therefore the best of men doe all their lives aske pardon even of those sins, for which they have wept bitterly, and done the sharpest and severest penance. And if it be necessary we pray, that we may not enter into temptation, because temptation is full of danger, and the danger may bring a sin, and the sinne may ruine us: it is also necessary, that we understand the condition of our pardon to be, as is the condition of our person, variable as will, fudden as affections, alterable as our purpos(es), revocable as our owne good intentions, and then made as ineffective as our inclinations to good actions. And there is no way to secure our confidence and our hope, but by being perfect and holy, and pure, as our heavenly Father is, that is, in the sense of humane capacity, free from the habites of all sinne; and active, and industrious, and continuing in the wayes of godlinesse. For upon this onely the promise is built, and by our proportion to this state we must proportion our confidence, we have no other revelation; Christ reconciled us to his Father upon no other conditions, and made the Covenant upon no other articles, but of a holy life, in obedience universall and perpetuall: And the abatements of the rigorous sense of the words, as they are such as may infinitely testify and prove his mercy, so they are such as must secure our duty and habituall graces; an industry manly, constant and Christian; and because these have so great latitude; (and to what degrees GOD will accept our returns he hath no where punctually described) he that is most severe in his determination does best secure himselfe, and by exacting the strictest account of himselfe shall obtaine the easier scrutiny at the hands of GOD. The use I make of this consideration is to the same purpose with the former: for if every day of sinne, and every criminall act is a degree of receste from the possibilities of heaven, it would be considered at how great distance a death-bed penitent after a vicious life may apprehend himselfe to stand from mercy, and pardon: and since the termes of restitution must in labour, and in extenson of time, or intention of degrees be of value great enough to restore him to some proportion, or equivalence with that state of grace from whence he is fallen, and upon which the Covenant was made with him, how impossible it will appeare to him to goe so farre, and doe so much

much in that state, and in those circumstances of disability.

Concerning the third particular, I consider, that Repentance, as it is described in Scripture, is a systeme of holy duties, not of one kind, nor properly consisting of parts as if it were a single grace, but it is the reparation of that estate, into which CHRIST first put us, *a renewing us in the spirit of our mind*, so the Apostle calls it, And the holy Ghost hath taught this truth to us, by the implication of many appellatives, and also by express discourse. For there is in Scripture, *a \* repentance to be repented of, and a a repentance never to be repented of.* The first is mere sorrow for what is past, an ineffective trouble producing nothing good, such as was the repentance of *Judas, he repented and hanged himself*, and such was that of *Esau*, when it was too late, and so was the repentance of the five foolish virgins, which examples tell us also, when ours is an impertinent, and ineffectuall repentance. To this repentance, pardon is no where promised in Scripture. But there is a repentance, which is called *conversion, or amendment of life*, a repentance productive of holy fruits, such as the Baptist and our blessed Saviour preached, such as himselfe also propounded in the example of the Ninevites, they repented at the preaching of *Jonah*, that is, they fasted, they covered them in sackcloth; they cryed mightily unto GOD, yea they turned every one from his evill way, and from the violence, that was in their hands. And this was it, that appeased GOD in that instance. GOD saw their works, that they turned from their evill way, and God repented of the evill, and did it not.

The faine Character of repentance we find in the Prophet *Ezekiel*. When the wicked man turneth away from his wickednesse, that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawfull and right; If the wicked restore the pledge, give again that he had robbed, walke in the statutes of life without committing iniquity, he hath done that, which is lawfull and right, he shall surely live, he shall not dy. And in the Gospell, repentance is described with as full and intire comprehensions, as in the old Prophets. For faith and repentance are the whole duty of the Gospell, Faith when it is in conjunction with a practicall grace, signifies an intellectuall. Faith signifies the submission of the understanding to the institution, and repentance includes all that whole practice, which is the intire duty of a Christian, after he hath been overtaken in a fault. And therefore repentance first includes a renunciation, and abolition of all evill, and then also enjoynes a pursuit of every vertue, and that till they arrive at an habituall confirmation.

Of the first sense are all those expressions of Scripture, which imply re-  
pentance to be the deleteries of sinner. *Repentance from dead works* Saint <sup>τοις ἀρεπτούσιν.</sup>  
*Polybius.*  
*Paul affirms* to be the prime fundamental of the religion, that is, *vide etia Clem*  
*conversion or returning from dead works*: for unless repentance be so <sup>Alex. Strom. I. 2</sup>  
*construed* it is not good sense. And this is therefore highly verified, be-  
*cause* repentance is intended to set us into the condition of our first under-<sup>ubi ad eundem</sup>  
*sensum definit*  
*taking, and articles covenanted with GOD.* And therefore it is called *a penitentium.*  
*redemption of the time*, that is, recovering what we lost, and making it up <sup>31.</sup>  
by our doubled industry. *Remember whence thou art fallen, repent,* that is, *Misericordia atra* <sup>¶</sup>  
*returne, and doe thy first works;* said the spirit to the Angel of the Church <sup>veneripan.</sup>  
*of Ephesus, or else I will remove thy Candlesticke,* except thou repent. *Heb. 6. 1.*  
It is a restitution; If a man be overtaken in a fault, restore such a *Apoc. 2. 5.*  
one, that is put him, where he was. And then, that, repentance also *Gal. 6. 1.*  
implies a doing all good, is certain by the Sermon of the Baptist, bring *Math. 3. 8.*  
*forth*

## Part II.

29.

\* Μελαχίλια<sup>τ</sup>  
a Melachilas.  
μητροπολιτεῖς ἐπί<sup>τ</sup>  
τρψ, cui in  
Aet. Apost. op:  
ponitur μητρο-  
πολεῖς εἰς τὴν  
σπίτιαν. Aet. 3.  
19. Huius enim  
promittitur pec-  
catorum remis-  
sionem in sequ. eis  
τὸ ιερουσαλήμ-  
α ὑπὲν τὰς αὐ-  
τας πατέρας.

*Matt. 12.41,  
Jonah. 3.8.10.*

*Ezek. 18.27.  
Ezek. 33.14  
Διάσπασθαι ποτε οὐκ εἰσίν τις φύσις  
χρηστούς μηδέ τις προσθέτουμενας  
λαζαρέτας, απότε-  
κτισθεῖ τῷ τελείῳ,  
η πάντα τὰ κα-  
λὰ γίνεται διάδει-  
τος ἀνθεγόνωστος.  
Polybius.*

*vide etia Clem  
Alex. Strom. l. 2  
ubi ad eundem  
sensum definit  
penitentiam.*

31.  
Malacaria anno 1718  
venerabilis papa.  
Heb.6.1.  
Apoc.2.5.  
Gal.6.1.  
Math.3.8.

## Part II.

forth fruits meet for repentance; Doe thy first workes was the sermon of the spirit; laying aside every weight, and the sinne that easily encircles us, let us run with patience the race that is set before us, so S. Paul taught. And S. Peter gives charge, that when we have escaped the corruptions of the world, and of lusts, besides this, give all diligence to acquire the rosary and con-jugation of Christian vertnes. And they are proper effects, or rather constituent parts of a holy repentance. For godly sorrow worketh a repentance (saith S. Paul) not to be repented off, and that ye may know what is signified by repentance behold the product was, carefullnesse, clearing of themselves, indignation, feare, vehement desires, zeale and revenge, to which if we adde the Epithete of holy (for these were the results of a godly sorrow, and the members of a repentance not to be repented of,) we are taught, that repentance,besides the purging out the malice of iniquity, is also a sanctification of the whole man, a turning nature into grace, passions into treason, and the flesh into spirit.

2. Cor. 7. 10.

32.

Tit. 3. 5.

Rom. 12. 2.

&amp; 13. 11.

James 4. 8.

Gal. 5. 24.

Eph. 5. 14.

— Scelerum

si bene penitent.

Bradenda Cupi-

dinis

Pravi sunt ele-

menta; &amp; tene-

re nimis

Mientes asperio-

ribus

Formandas stu-

dis. Hor. I. 3:

od. 24.

H dē mūlōna dū

rū pīlo nō pīlē dī-

xī gīn pīc iū rū

dī oītōtō tērōw rū

xī lērōw oūgū kū

dī qīmālānēlētē

lēnē iū pējōtē

pējōtēnē...

dī oītō wēgōdānē.

wētē lējōuētē

xī jādātē tō tētē

dī jādātē dī pātē

dī, dī nō pētē dī

ētētētē tō tē

wētē pātētētēpī

oītē, iōtētē dī

tō yōtētē wētē

tētētētētētētē

tētētētētētētē

mūdūm Hie-

recl. in Pythag.

33.

To this purpose I reckon those Phrases of Scripture, calling it, a renewing of our minds, a renewing of the holy Ghost, a cleansing of our hands, and purifying our hearts, that is, a becoming holy in our affections, and righteous in our actions, a transformation or utter change, a crucifying the flesh with the affections and lusts, a mortified state, a purging all the old leaven, and becoming a new consperion, a waking out of sleep, and walking honestly as in the day; a being born again, a being born from above, a new life. And I consider that these preparative actions of repentance, such as are, sorrow and confession of sins, and fasting, and exteriour mortifications and severities, are but forerunners of repentance, some of the retinue, and they are of the family, but they no more compleat the duty of repentance then the harbingers are the whole Court, or then the fingers are all the body. There is more joy in heaven, said our blessed S A V I O U R over one sinner that repenteth, then over ninety nine just persons, who need no repentance. There is no man but needs a tear, and a sorrow even for his daily weaknesses, and possibly they are the instrumentall expiations of our sudden and frequent and lesser surprises of imperfection; but the just persons need no repentance, that is, need no inversion of state, no transformation from condition to condition, but from the lesse to the more perfect the best man hath. And therefore those are vain persons, who when they owe G O D a hundred will write fourscore, or a thousand, and will write fifty. It was the saying of an excellent person, ‘that Repentance is the beginning of Philosophy, a flight and renunciation of evil works and words, and the first preparation and entrance into a life, which is never to be repented of; And therefore a penitent is not taken with umbrages and appearances, nor quits a reall good for an imaginary, or chooses evill for fear of Enemies and adverse accidents, but peremptorily conforms his sentence to the Divine Laws, and submits his whole life in a conformity with them. He that said those excellent words had not been taught the Christian institution, but it was admirable reason and deep philosophy, and most consonant to the reasonableness of vertue, and the proportions and designes of repentance, and no other then the doctrine of Christian Philosophy.

And it is considerable, since in Scripture there is a repentance mentioned, which is impertinent, and ineffectuall as to the obtaining pardon, a repentance implied which is to be repented of, and another expressed, which

is never to be repented of , and this is described to be a new state of life, a whole conversion and transformation of the man, it followes that whatsoever in any sense can be called repentance, and yet is lesse then this new life, must be that ineffective repentance : a sorrow is a repentance, and all the acts of dolorous expreſſion are but the ſame sorrow in other characters, and they are good , when they are parts or instruments of the true repentance : but when they are the whole repentance, the repentance is no better then that of *Judas*, nor more prosperous then that of *Esau*. Every sorrow is not a godly sorrow , and that which is , is but instrumentall , and in order to repentance. *Godly sorrow worketh a repentance* , ſaith Saint *Paul*, that is, it does its ſhare towards it, as every grace does toward the pardon, as every degree of pardon does toward heaven. By *Godly sorrow* it is probable S. *Paul* meaneſ the ſame thing, which the ſchoole hath ſince called contrition; a grieſe proceeding from a holy principle , from our love of GOD and anger, that we have offendēd him : and yet this is a great way off from that re-pen-tance, without the performance of which we ſhall certainly perish ; But no contrition alone is remiſſive of ſins , but as it cooperates towards the integrity of our duty. *Cum conversus ingenuerit*, is the Prophets expreſſion; When a man mourns and turns from all his evill way, that's a godly sorrow, and that's re-pen-tance too ; but the teares of a dolorous perſon, though running over with great eſtuiſhments , and ſhed in great bitternesſe , and expreſſed in actions of punitive justice, all being but the ſame ſense in louder language, being nothing but the expreſſions of sorrow, are good onely, as they tend further, and if they doe, they may by degrees bring us to re-pen-tance, and that re-pen-tance will bring us to heaven ; but of themſelves they may as well make the ſea ſwell beyond its mārgent , or water and refresh the ſunburnt earth as moue G O D to mercy and pierce the heavens. But then to the conſideration we may adde , that a ſorrow upon a death bed after a vitious life is ſuch as cannot easily be understood to be ordinarily ſo much as the beginning of vertue , or the first instance towards a holy life. For he that till then retained his ſins , and now when he is certain, and believes he ſhall dye, or is fearefull leaſt he ſhould, is ſorrowfull, that he hath finned: is onely ſorrowfull, because he is like to perish; and ſuch a ſorrow may perfectly conſift with as great an affection to ſin, as ever the man had in the highest caſtles, and invitation of his luſt. For even then in certain circumſtances he would have refuſed to have acted his greatest temptation. The boldeſt, & moſt pungent luſt would refuſe to be ſatiſhied in the market place, or with a dagger at his heart. And the greaſteſt intemperance would refuſe a pleaſante meale, if he believed the meat to be mixt with poyſon; and yet this restraint of appetiſe is no abatement of the affection , any more then the violent feares, which by being incumbent upon the death-bed Penitent make him grieve for the evill conſequents more, then to hate the malice & irregularity. He that did not grieve , till his greaſteſt feare preſſed him hard, and Damnation trod upon his heales, feeles indeed the effects of feare, but can haue no preſent benefit of his ſorrow, because it had no naturall principle but a violeſt, unnatural, and intolerable cauſe, inconſiſtent with a free , placid, and morall election.

The ſame also I conſider concerning the purpoſe of a new life, which that any man ſhould judge to be re-pen-tance, that duty which reſtores us , is more unreasonable then to thinke ſorrow will doe it: For as a man may ſorrow, and yet never be reſtored, (and he may ſorrow ſo much

Melancholias  
διατριβὴ.

Act. 3.19.

Ως γὰρ ἔχοντες δη-  
κλινόντες δι-  
κλινόντες, πεπονι-  
κέουσι, πεπονι-  
κέουσι. Arieſ.

2. Rhetor.

Ἄγαδοι αρεσκε-  
ιποὺς ἀρεσκε-

Hom. Il. 1.

Ο μελανχολίας φύ-  
γε τῆς ιατρίνης  
τῆς τοῦ καθετοῦ πάρε-  
ξιν αἱ φωναὶ.

Hierocl.

## Part II.

the more because he never shalbe restored as *Esau* did, as the five foolish Virgins did, and as many more may do ) so he that purposes to lead a new life hath convinced himself, that the Duty is undone, and therefore his pardon not granted, nor his condition restored : As a letter is not a word, nor a word an action, as an Embryo is not a man, nor the seed the fruit: so is a purpose of obedience, but the element of repentance, the first imaginations of it differing from the grace it self, as a disposition from a habit, or (because it self wil best expresse it self) as the purpose does from the act. For either a holy life is necessary; or it is not necessary. If it be not, why does any man hope to escape the wrath to come by resolving to doe an unnecessary thing, or if he does not purpose it, when he pretends he does, that is a mocking of GOD, and that is a great way from being an instrument of his restitution. But if a holy life be necessary, as it is certain by infinite testimonies of scriptures, it is the *unum necessarium*, the one great necessary, it cannot reasonably be thought, that any thing lesse then doing it shall serve our turnes. That which is onely in purpose is not yet done, and yet it is necessary it should be done, because it is necessary we should purpose it. And in this we are sufficiently concluded by that ingeminate expression used by S. Paul, in *JESUS CHRIST* nothing can avail but a new Creature. Nothing but faith working by charity, nothing but a keeping the Commandments of GOD And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, they are the Israel of GOD.

35.

This consideration I intended to oppose against the carnall security of Death-bed penitents, who have spent a vicious life, who have therefore mocked themselves, because they meant to mock GOD, they would reap, what they sowed not. But be not deceived, saith the Apostle, he that soweth to the flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption ; but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reap life everlasting. Onely this, let us not be weary of well-doing, for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not ; meaning that by a persevering industry, and a long work, and a succession of religious times we must sowe to the spirit ; a work of such length, that the greatest danger is of fainting and intercision. But he that sows to the spirit, not being weary of well-doing, not fainting in the long proesse, he, and he only shall reap life everlasting. But a purpose is none of all this. If it comes to act, and be productive of a holy life, then it is usefull, and it was like the Eve of a holy day, festivall in the midst of its abstinence and vigils, it was the beginnings of a repentance. But if it never come to act, it was to no purpose, a mocking of GOD, an act of direct hypocrisy, a provocation of GOD, and a deceiving our own selves ; you are unhappy, you began not early, or that your earlier dayes returne not together with your good purposes.

Muraens, dices  
(quoties te speculo videris alterum.)

Quia mens est  
hodie, eur ea-  
de non puer  
fuit ?

Vel cur his ani-  
mis incolumes  
non redeunt  
genza ?

Hor 1.1.Od 10.

36.

And neither can this have any other sentence, though the purpose be made upon our death-bed. For GOD hath made no Covenant with us on our death-bed, distinct from that he made with us in our life and health. And since in our life and present abilities good purposes, and resolutions, and vowed (for they are but the same thing in differing degrees) did signify nothing till they came to act, and no man was reconciled to GOD by good intentions, but by doing the will of GOD, can we imagine that such purposes can more prevaile at the end of a wicked life, then at the beginning ? that lesse piety will serve our turns after 50. or 60. years impiety, then after but 5. or 10. that a wicked and a sinfull life should by lesse paines be expiated

Nam illi qui ex  
aliis propositis  
in aliam transi-  
liunt, aut ne  
transilient qui  
dem, sed cum  
quodam trans-  
mittuntur, quo-  
modo habere  
quicquam cer-  
tum, manuturum  
ve possunt, si  
penit & vagi?

Senec. ep.23,

Gal. 6. 15.

5, 6.

1 Cor. 7. 19.

Gal. 6. 7.

expiated, then an unhappy year? For it is not in the state of grace as in other exterior actions of religion or charity, where God will accept the will for the deed when the external act is inculpably out of our powers, & may also be supplyed by the internal; as bendings of the body by the prostration of the soul; alms, by charity: preaching by praying for conversion. These things are necessary, because they are precepts, and obligatory onely in certain circumstances, which may fail, and we be innocent and disengaged. But it is otherwise in the essential parts of our duty, which God hath made the immediate, and next condition of our salvation, such which are never out of our power, but by our own fault. Such are charity, forgiveness, repentance, and faith; such to which we are assisted by GOD, such which are always put by Gods grace into our power, therefore because God indispensably demands them. In these cases as there is no revelation God wil accept the will for the deed, the purpose for the act, so it is unreasonable to expect it; because GOD did once put it into our powers, and if we put it out, we must not complain of want of fire, which our selves have quenched, nor complain we cannot see, when we have put our own lights out; and hope God will accept the will for the deed, since we had no will to it, when God put it into our powers. These are but fig-leaves to cover our nakednesse, which our sin hath introduced.

For either the reducing such vowels and purposes to act is the duty, without which the purpose is ineffectuall, or else that practise is but the signe, and testimony of a sincere intention and that very sincere intention was of it selfe accepted by God in the first spring. If it was nothing but a signe, then the covenant, whieh God made with man in Jesus Christ was faith and good meaning, not faith and repentance, and a man is justified as soone as ever he purposes well, before any endeavours are commenced, or any act produced, or habit ratified; and the duties of a holy life are but shadowes, and significations of a grace, no part of the Covenant, not so much as smoke is of fire, a meere signe of a person justified as soon as he made his vow, but then also a man may be justified 500. times in a yare, as often as he makes a new vow and confident resolution, which is then done most heartily, when the lust is newly satisfied & the pleasure disappears for the instant, though the purpose disbands upon the next temptation: yea but unlesse it be a sincere purpose it will doe no good, and although we cannot discerne it, nor the man himselfe, yet GOD knowes the heart, and if he sees it would have been reduced to act then he accepts it, and this is the hopes of a dying man. But faint they are and dying, as the man himselfe.

For it is impossible for us to know, but that what a man intends (as himselfe thinks) heartily, is sincerely meant, and if that may be insincere, and is to be judged only by a never following event (in case the man dyes) it cannot become to any man the ground of hope, nay even to those persons, who do neane sincerely it is still an instrument of distrust & feares infinite, since his owne sincere meaning hath nothing in the nature of the thing, no distinct formality, no principle, no signe to distinguish it from the unsincere vows of sorrowfull, but not truly penitent persons. 2. A purpose acted and not acted differ not in the principle, but in the effect, which is extrinsecall and accidental to the purpose, and each might be without the other: a man might live holily, though he had not made that vow, & when he hath made the vow he may fail of living holily.\* And as we should think it hard measure to have a damnation increased upon us for those sins, which we would have committed if we had lived: so it cannot be reasonable to build our hopes of heaven

*Eis vobis in χρι-*  
*τον αἰράται τὸν*  
*πειλίστης ἀγέλης*

*τοῦ τόπου τῆς μη-*  
*τραπέζας λόγων*

*τηρεῖται τοῦ θεο-*  
*τηρεῖται τοῦ θεο-*

*τηρεῖται τοῦ θεο-*  
*τη*

## Part II.

ginary piety, which we never did, and if we had lived, GOD knowes, whether we would or not. 3 GOD takes away the godly least malice should corrupt their understandings, and for the Elect's sake those dayes are shortened, which if they should continue, no flesh shoud escape, but now shall all that be laid upon their score, which if GOD had not so prevented by their death, GOD

*manquam crescit*: knowes they would have done? And GOD deals with the wicked in a proportionable manner, to the contrary purpose, he shortens their dayes, and takes away their possibilities, and opportunities, when the time of repentance is past because he will not do violence to their wills, and this least they should returne, and be converted, and I should heale them; so that it is evident, some persons are by

*Math: 13. 15.*  
*ex Isay. 6. 9.*  
*Marc. 4. 12.*  
*Luk. 8. 10.*  
*Iohn: 12. 40.*  
*Aet: 28. 29.*  
*Rom: 11. 8.*

some acts of God after a vicious life and the frequent rejection of the Divine grace at last prevented from mercy, who without such courses, &c in contrary circumstances might possibly doe acts of repentance, and return, and then GOD would heale them 4. Let their purposes and vowe be never so sincere in the principle, yet since a man who is in the state of grace may again faile of it, and forget he was purged from his old sins (and every dying sinner did so, if ever he was washed in the laver of regeneration, and sanctified in his spirit) then much more may such a sincere purpose fail, and then it would be known to what distance of time or state from his purpose, will GOD give his finall sentence? Whether will he quit him, because in the first stage he will correspond with his intention, and act his purposes, or condemne him because in his second stage he would prevaricate? And when a man does fail, it is not because his first principle was not good; for the H. spirit, which is certainly the best principle of spirituall actions, may be extinguished in a man, and a sincere, or hearty purpose may be lost, or it may again be recovered, and be lost again; so that it is as unreasonable, as it is unrevealed, that a sincere purpose on a deathbed shall obtain pardon, or passe for a new state of life. Few men are at those instants, \* and in such pressures hypocritical and vain, and yet to performe such purposes is a new worke, and a labour; it comes in upon a new stock differing from that principle, and will meet with temptations, difficulties and impediments; and an honest heart is not sure to remain so, but may split upon a rock of a violent invitation. A promise is made to be faithfull or unfaithfull *ex post facto* by the event, but it was sincere or unsincere in the principle, onely if the person promising did, or did not respectively at that time meane what he said. A sincere promise many times is not truly performed.

39

Concerning all the other acts, which it is to be supposed a dying person can doe, I have onely this consideration; if they can make up a new Creature, become a new state, be in any sense a holy life, a keeping the commandments of God, a following of peace and holines, a becoming holy in all conversation, if they can arrive to the lowest sense of that excellent condition Christ intended to all his Disciples, when he made, *keeping the Commandments* to be the condition of *entering into life*, and not *crying, Lord, Lord, but doing the will of God*: if he that hath served the lusts of the flesh, and taken pay under all Gods enemies, during a long and malicious life can for any thing a dying person can doe, be said in any sense to have lived holily, then his hopes are fairly built; if not, they rely upon a sand; and the storne of death, and the Divine displeasure will beate too violently upon them. There are no suppletories of the Evangelicall Covenant; if we walke according to the rule, then shall peace and righteousness kisse each other; if we have finned and prevaricated the rule, repentance must bring us into the

the wayes of righteousness, and then we must goe on upon the old stock; but the deeds of the flesh must be mortified, and Christ must dwell in us, and the spirit must reigne in us, and vertue must be habituall, and the habits must be confirmed, and this as we doe by the spirit of Christ, so it is hallowed and accepted by the grace of G O D, and we, put into a condition of favour, and redeemed from sin, and reconciled to GOD. But this will not be put off with single acts, nor divided parts, nor newly commenched purpoles, nor fruitleſſe sorrow; it is a great folly to venture eternity vpon dreames, so that now let me represent the condition of a dying person after a vicious life.

1. He that considers the frailty of humane bodies, their incidences and aptenesse to sicknesse, casualties, death, sudden or expected, the condition of severall diseases, that some are of too quick a ſenſe, and are intolerable, ſome are dull stupid and Lethargicall: then addes the prodigious judgements which fall upon many finners in the act of ſin, and are marks of our dangers, and Gods effentiall justice and severity, and that ſecurity, which poſſeffes ſuch persons, whose lives are vicious and habituall careleſſenesſe, and groundleſſe confidence, or an absolute incoſideration, which is generally the condition, and conſtitution of ſuch minds, every one whereof is likely enough to confound a perfevering ſinner in miseries eternall, will ſoon apprehend the danger of a delayed repenteſce to be infinite, and unmeaſureable.

2. But ſuppoſe ſuch a person having escaped the antecedent circumſtances of the danger, is ſet fairly upon his death-bed with the just apprehenſion of his fins about him and his addrefſes to repenteſce; conſider then the strength of his luſts, that the fins he is to mortify are invertebrate, habituall, and confirmed, having had the growth and stability of a whole life; that the liberty of his will is impaired (the Scripture ſaying, of ſuch perſons, *whose eyes are full of luſt and that cannot ceafe from finne;* and that *his ſer-va-ants they are whom they obeyed,* that they are slaves to fin, and ſo not *fui turis,* *Luci. Nigr.* not at their own diſpoſe) that his understanding is blinded, his appetiſte is mutinous, and of a long time uſed to rebell, and prevale; that all the inferior faculties are in disorder: that he wants the helpeſ of grace proportionable to his neceſſities (for the longer he hath continued in fin, the weaker the grace of God is in him; ſo that in effect, at that time the more need he hath, the leſſe he ſhall receive, it being Gods rule to give to him that hath, and from him, that hath not to take even what he hath) then adde the innumerable parts and great burdons of repenteſce, that it is not a ſorrow, nor a purpose, because both theſe ſuppoſe that to be undone, which is the onely neceſſary ſupport of all our hopes in Christ when it is done, the innumerable diſſicult caſes of conſcience that may then occurr, particularly in the point of reſtituſion/ (Which among many other neceſſary parts of repenteſce is indiſpenſably required of all persons, that are able, and in every degree in which they are able) the many tempiationes of the Devill, the strength of paſſions, the impotency of the Fleſh, the illuſions of the ſpirit of darkneſſe, the tremblings of the heart, the incogitancy of the minde, the implication and intranglings of ten thouſand thoughts and the impertinencies of a diſturbed fancy, and the great hinderances of a ſicke body, and a ſad and weary ſpirit, all theſe represent a death-bed to be but an ill ſtation for a penitent; If the person be ſuddenly ſnatched away he is not left ſo much as to diſpute.

Audies pleroq;  
dicentes, a quin-  
quagimo in o-  
tium ſcedam;  
te agelimus an-  
nus ab officijs me-  
dimitem. Et quen-  
tandem in longio-  
ris vita praedem  
accipies? Seneca.

τραπλεῖς δὲ τὰ  
τοῦ οὐρανοῦ μὲν  
αἰσθάνεται τὸ  
ἀγαθὸν ὅπῃ  
τὸν τοντὸς αὐτοῦ  
εἰς τριθυρίου

ἰσπάται, οὐ τομ-  
ιζεται τὸ περι-  
κεντρωνόν τοι  
οὐδὲ ποτε τοι  
τοντὸς αὐτοῦ  
εἰς τριθυρίου

2 Pet. 2. 14.

Ἐντὸνες λύγε  
το τὸ οἰδητήριον  
τοις, εἰσπά-  
της ἀντὶ φόβος,  
καὶ τρεπτι-  
κῆς, τοῦτο  
αὶ τὸ τρεπτι-  
κὸν εἰσιν. Platō  
de repub.

## Part II.

if he be permitted to languish in his sicknesse he is either stupid and apprehends nothing, or else miserable, and hath reason to apprehend too much. However, all these difficulties are to be passed and overcome before the man be put into a saveable condition. From this consideration (though perhaps it may inferre more) yet we cannot but conclude this difficulty to be as great as the former danger, that is vast, and ponderous, and insupportable

*Ante senectutem  
curandum est ut  
homo bene vivat  
in senectute au-  
tem ut bene mo-  
datur. Seneca.*

42.

3. Suppose the Clinick or death-bed Penitent to be as forward in these imployments, and as successfull in the mastering many of the objections as reasonably can be thought, yet it is considerable, that there is a repentance, which is to be repented of, and that is, a repentance, which is not productive of fruits of amendment, of life, that there is a period set downe by GOD in his judgement, and that many who have been prophane as *Esaū* was, are reduced into the condition of *Esaū*, and there is no place left for their repentance though they seeke it carefully with teares : that they, who have long refused to heare God calling them to repentance, GOD will refuse to heare them calling for grace and mercy, that he will laugh at some men, when their calamity comes, that the five foolish virgins addressed themselves at the noyse of the bridegroomes coming, and begg oyle, and went out to buy oyle, and yet for want of some more time, and an early diligence came too late, and were shut out for ever ; that it is no where revealed that such late endeavours, and imperfect practises shall be accepted; that GOD hath made but one covenant with us in JESUS CHRIST, which is faith and repentance configned in Baptisme; and the signification of them and the purpose of CHRIST is, that we should henceforth no more serve sinne, but mortify and kill him perpetually and destroy his kingdome, and extinguish as much as in us lyes his very title; that we shoud live holily, justly, and soberly in this present world, in al holy conversation and godlinesse, and that either we must be continued or reduced to this state of holy living, and habituall sanctity, or we have no title to the promises; that every degree of recession from the state of grace CHRIST first put us in, is a recession from our hopes, and an infsecuring our condition; and we adde to our confidence onely as our obedience is restored; All this is but a sad story to a dying person, who sold himself to work wickednesse in an habituall iniquity, and aversation from the conditions of the holy Covenant, in which he was sanctified'

*O si compundas  
humana superbia  
mentes Ante ob-  
litum mutare,  
nec expectare su-  
prema Fata velit.  
Paniter ambigue  
quem sero peni-  
tet, ergo praen-  
tis spatiū nobis  
dum creditus xvi  
Dum patulam  
cu. cōs. Christi  
clementia seſe  
præbet, præ-  
rite plangamus  
crimina vita  
Dum licet, et fa-  
no ingentioque a-  
nimoque vale-  
mus..*

*Alcimus Avit:  
Bis jam pene tibi  
consul trigeminus  
infat, et nume-  
rat paucos vix  
tua vita dies  
Mart. I. i. ep. 16.  
vide S. Ambros  
I. 1. de penit. c. 1.  
et ii 5. Aug in  
lib. ho. il. hom  
47. S. Basili: ora: 4  
S. Bernard in  
parvis term: ser*

33.

43.

44.

And certainly it is unreasonable to plant all our hopes of heaven upon a doctrine that is destructive of all piety, which supposes us in such a condition, that GOD hath been offended at us all our life long, and yet that we can never return our duties to him, unlesse he will unravell the purposes of his predestination, or call back time again, and begin a new computation of years for us; and if he did, it would be still as uncertain. For what hope is there to that man, who hath fulfilled all iniquity, and hath not fulfilled righteousness? Can a man live to the Devil and dye to God? sow to the Flesh, and reap to the spirit? hope GOD will in mercy reward him, who hath served his Enemy? sure it is; the Doctrine of the availe of a death-bed repentance cannot be reconciled with Gods purposes and intentions to have us live a good life, for it would reconcile us to the hopes of heaven for a few thoughts or words or single actions, when our life is done. It takes away the benefit of many graces, and the use of more, and the necessity of all.

For let it be seriously weighed. To what purpose is the variety of GODS grace? What use is there of preventing, restraining, concomitant,

subse-

subsequent, and persevering grace, unlesse it be in order to a religious conversation? And by deferring repentance to the last we despoile our soules, and rob the holy Ghost of the glory of many rayes, and holy influences, with which the Church is watered and refreshed, that it may grow from grace to grace, till it be consummate in glory. It takes away the very being of chastity, and temperance, no such vertues according to this doctrine need to be named among Christians. For the dying person is not in capacity to exercise these, and then either they are troublesome, without which we may do well enough, or else the condition of the unchaste and intemperate Clinick is sad and deploreable. For how can he eject those Devills of Lust, and drunkennesse, and gluttony, from whom the disease hath taken all powers of election and variety of choice. Unlesse it be possible to root out long contracted habits in a moment, or acquire the habits of chastity, sobriety and temperance, those self denying and laborious graces, without doing a single act of the respective vertues in order to obtaining of habites; unlesse it be so, that G O D will infuse habites into us more immediately then he creates our reasonable souls, in an instant, and without the cooperation of the suscipient, without the working out our salvation with fear, and without giving all diligence, and running with patience, and resisting unto blood, and striving to the last, and enduring unto the end in a long fight, and a long race. If G O D infuses such habites, why have we laws given us, and are commanded to work, and to do our duty with such a succession and lasting diligence, as if the habites were to be acquired, to which indeed GOD promises, and ministers his aides, still leaving us the persons obliged to the law, and the labour, as we are capable of the reward. I need not instance any more. But this doctrine of a Death-bed repentance is inconsistent with the duties of mortification, with all the vindictive and punitive parts of repentance in exterior instances; with the precepts of wayting, and watchfulnesse, and preparation, and standing in a readinesse against the coming of the Bridegroom, with the patience of well doing, with exemplary living, with the imitation of the life of C H R I S T, and conformities to his passion, with the kingdome, and dominion and growth of grace. And lastly it goes about to defeat one of G O D S great purposes, for G O D therefore concealed the time of our death, that we might always stand upon our guard. The holy J E S U S told us so, *watch, for ye know not what hour the L O R D will come;* but this makes men seem more crafty in their late begun piety, then G O D was provident and mysterious in concealing the time of our dissolution.

And now if it be demanded how long time must our repentance, and holy living take up? what is the last period of commencement of our piety, after which it will be unacceptable or ineffectual? will a moneth or a yeer, or three yeers or seven suffice? For since every man fails of his first condition, and makes violent recessions from the state of his redemption, and his baptismall grace, how long may he lye in that state of recession with hopes of salvation? To this I answer, He cannot lye in sinne a moment without hazarding his eternity, every instant is a danger, and all the parts of its duration do increase it, and there is no answer to be given antecedently, and by way of rule, but all the hopes of our restitution depends upon the event. It is just as if we shoud aske, how long will it be before an Infant comes to the perfect use of reason, or before a fool

Prudens futuri  
temporis exitum  
Caliginosa nocte  
premit Deus.

Horat.

Vita data est ut  
tendit, data est si-  
ne favore nobis  
Mutua, nec certa  
persollienda die,  
Quarisi quod sit  
longissimum vi-  
ta [patium] ? Ul-  
que ad sapientiam  
pervenire.  
Qui ad illam per-  
venir, attingit  
non longissimum  
finem, sed maxi-  
mum, Senec ep.

94.

Male vivunt qui  
semper vivere incipiunt. Non po-  
test stare paratus  
ad mortem qui  
modo incipit vi-  
vere Quidam vi-  
vere tunc incipiunt cum desinen-  
dum est, quidam  
ante vivere desi-  
erunt quaminci-  
perent, Senec.  
ep. 23.

## Part II.

will become wise, or an ignorant person become excellently learned. The answer to such questions must be given according to the capacity of the man, to the industry of his person to his opportunities or hindrances, to his life and health, and to GODS blessing upon him. Only this, every day of deferring it, lessens our hopes and increases the difficulty, and when this increasing, divisible difficulty comes to the last period of impossibility GOD onely knows, because he measures the thoughts of man, and comprehends his powers in a span, and himselfe onely can tell how he will correspond in those assistances, without which we can never be restored.

Nic est locus solvendi  
etis alieni. Seneca.  
Mortem venientem  
nemo hilaris expicit  
nisi qui se ad eam diu  
componerat,  
Idem ep.30.  
--- Qui percatum  
mortiens dimittit, et  
ipia  
In serum tempus di-  
sterr admisia facerit  
Non tam dimittit,  
quam dimittitur ab  
illis. Alelm Avitus.  
Non potest se pa-  
satus ad mortem quod  
modo incipit vivere.  
Id agendum est ut sa-  
tis viximus. Qui-  
dam vivere tunc in-  
cipiunt cum defun-  
dum est, si hoc judi-  
cas mirum, adiiciam  
quod magis admittitur.  
Quidam ante vivere  
defuerit quam inci-  
perit. Seneca ep.23.  
Cras re vixitum, cras  
dicis Posthume semper  
Dic mihi; cras ifud  
Postume quando ventur?  
Cras viues? hodie tam  
vivere Posthume ser-  
um est.  
Illi sapit quisquis  
Posthume vixit hodie.  
Marial. I. 5 ep. 53 & lib.  
2. ep. 90.  
Non bene distuleris  
videtas qua posse ne-  
goti.  
Et solum hoc ducas  
quod fuit esse tuum.  
Non est credi nisi  
sapientis dicere vi-  
tam  
Sera nolnis vita est  
cristiana, vive hodie.  
I. I. ep. 16.

46.

Agree with thy adversary quickly, while thou art in the way : *Quickly.* And therefore Scripture sets down no other time than *to day*, while it is yet called *to day*. But because it will every day be called *to day*, we must remember, that our duty is such as requires a time, a duration, it is a course, a race, *that is set before us*, a duty requiring patience, and longanimity, and preserverance and great care and diligence, *that we faint not*. And supposing we could gather probably by circumstances, when the last period of our hopes begins, yet he that stands out as long as he can, gives probation, that he came not in of good will or choice, that he loves not the present service, that his body is present, but his heart is estranged from the yoke of his present employment; and then all that he can doe is odious to G O D, being a sacrifice without a heart, an offertory of shells and huskes, while the Devill and the mans lusts have devoured the kernells.

So that this question is not to be asked before hand but after a man hath done much of the worke, and in some sense lived holily, then he may enquire into his condition, whether if he persevere in that, he may hope for the mercies of JESUS. But he that enquires before hand, as commonly he meanes ill, so he can be answered by none but GOD, because the satisfaction of such a vain question depends upon future contingencies, and accidents depending upon Gods secret pleasure and predestination. He that repents but to day, repents late enough, that he put it off from yesterday. It may be that some may begin to day, and finde mercy, and to another person it may be too late, but no man is safe or wise that puts it off till to morrow. And that it may appear how necessary it is to begin early, and that the worke is of difficulty and continuance, and that time still encreases the objections, it is certain that all the time, that is lost, must be redeemed, by something in the sequel equivalent, or in some degree commensurate to the duties omitted and the time mispent; And the intention of the following actions, and the frequent repetition must make up the defect in the extension, and coexistence with a longer time. It was an act of an heriocall repentance, and great detestation of the crime, which *Thomas Cantipratanus* relates of a young Gentleman condemned to dye for robberies, who endevouring to testify his repentance, and as farre as was then permitted him to expiate the crime, begged of the Judge that tormentors might be appointed him, that he might be long a dying, and be cut in small pieces, that the severity of the execution might be proportionable to the immensity of his sorrow, and greatness of the iniquity : such great acts doe facilitate our pardon, and hasten the restitution, and in a few dayes comprise the elapsed duty of many moneths; but to rely upon such acts is the last remedy, and like unlikely physicke to a despairing person, if it does well, it is well, if it happen otherwise he must thanke himself, it is but what in reason he could expect.

I conclude this point with the words of S. Paul, GOD will render to every man according to his deeds, To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour, and immortality, [to them] eternall life. But to them, that are contentious, and doe not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousnesse [to them] indignation and wrath, Tribulation and anguish upon every soule of man, that doth evill.

Part II.  
47.  
*Rom. 2. 6.*

Having now discoursed of repentance upon distinct principles I shall not need to consider upon those particulars which are usually reckoned parts or instances of repentance, such as are contrition, confession and satisfaction. Repentance is the fulfilling all righteousness, and includes in it, whatsoever is matter of Christian duty, and is expressly commanded; such as is contrition or godly sorrow, and confession to G OD, both which are declared in scripture to be in order to pardon, and purgation of our sins.

*A contrite and a broken heart, O GOD, thou wilt not despise; and if we confess our sins, G OD is just and righteous to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all iniquity.* To which adde concerning satisfaction, that it is a judging and punishing of our selves; that it also is an instrument of repentance and a fruit of godly sorrow, and of good advantage for obtaining mercy of G OD. For indignation and revenge are reckoned by S. Paul effects of a godly sorrow, and the blessing, which encourages its practise, is instanced by the same Saint, when we are judged we are chastened of the L ORD, but if we Arift. Rhet. 2. would judge our selves we should not be judged: Where he expounds judged by chastened, if we were severer to our selves, G OD would be gentle and remisse. And there are only these two cautions to be annexed, and then the direction is sufficient. 1. That when promise of pardon is annexed to any of these or another grace, or any good action, it is not to be understood, as if alone it were effectuall, either to the abolition or pardon of sins, but the promise is made to it as to a member of the whole body of piety. In the coadunation, and coniunction of parts the title is firme, but not at all in distinction and separation. For it is certain if we faile in one, we are guilty of all, and therefore cannot be repaire by any one grace, or one action, or one habite. And therefore charity hides a multitude of sins with men and G OD too; Almes deliver from death; humility pierceth the clouds and will not depart before its answer be gracious; and hope purifieth, and makes not ashamed; and patience, and faith, and piety to parents and prayer, and the eight beatitudes have promises of this life, and of that, which is to come respectivly, and yet nothing will obtain these promises, but the harmony and uniting of these graces in a holy and habituall confederacion. And when we consider the promise as singularly relating to that one grace, it is to be understood comparatively, that is: such persons are happy if compared with those, who have contrary dispositions. For such a capacity, does its portion of the work towards complete felicity, from which the contrary quality does estrange and disintitle us. 2. The speciall and minute actions and instances of these three preparatives of repentance are not under any command in the particulars, but are to be disposed of by Christian prudence in order to those ends, to which they are most aptly instrumental and designed; such as are fasting, and corporall severities in satisfaction or the punitive parts of repentance, they are either vindictive of what is past, and so are proper acts or effects of contrition & godly sorrow, or else they relate to the present & future estate, & are intended for correction

2. Cor. 7. 10.

1. Cor. 11. 31.

## Part II.

Gal. 6. 1.

or emendation, and so are of good use as they are medicinall, and in that proportion not to be omitted ; And so is confession to a spirituall person, an excellent instrument of Discipline, a bridle of intemperate passions, an opportunity of restitution ; *Ye which are spirituall restore such a person overtaken in a fault* (saith the Apostle) it is the application of a remedy, the consulting with a guide, and the best security to a weak, or a lapsed, or an ignorant person ; in all which cases he is unfit to judge his own questions, and in these he is also committed to the care, and conduct of another. But these speciaill instances of repentance are capable of suppletories, and are like the corporall works of mercy, necessary onely in time and place, and in accidentall obligations. He that relieves the poore, or visits the sick, choosing it for the instance of his charity, though he do not redeeme captives, is charitable, and hath done his almes. And he that cures his sinne by any instruments, by externall, or interiour and spirituall remedies is penitent, though his dyet be not ascetick, and afflictive, or his lodging hard, or his sorrow bursting out into teares, or his expressions passionate and dolorous. I onely adde this, that acts of publike repentance must be by using the instruments of the Church, such as she hath appointed ; of private such as by experiance or by reason, or by the counfell we can get we shall learne to be most effectiue of our penitentiall purposes. And yet it is a great argument, that the exterior expressions of corporall severities are of good benefit, because in all ages wise men, and severe penitents, have chosen them for their instruments.



## The PRAYER.

**O** Eternall GOD, who wert pleased in mercy to look upon us, when we were in our blood ; to reconcile us, when we were enemies ; to forgive us in the midst of our provocations of thy infinite and eternall Majestie, finding out a remedy for us, which mankinde could never ask ; even making an atonement for us by the death of thy Sonne, sanctifying us by the blood of the everlasting Covenant, and thy all-hallowing and Divinest Spirit, let thy graces so perpetually assist and encourage my endeavours, conduct my will, and fortifie my intentions, that I may persevere in that holy condition, which thou hast put me in by the grace of the Covenant, and the mercies of the holy JESU. Oh let me never fall into those sinnes, and retire to that vaine conversation, from which the eternall and mercifull Saviour of the world hath redeemed me ; but let me grow in grace, adding vertue to vertue, reducing my purposes to act, and increasing my acts till they grow into habits, and my habits till they be confirmed, & still confirming them til they be consummated in a blessed and holy perseverance. Let thy preventing grace dash all temptations

in their approach; let thy concomitant grace enable me to resist them in the assault, & overcome them in the fight, that my hopes be never discomposed, nor my faith weakened, nor my confidence made remisse, or my title & portion in the Covenant be lessened; or if thou permittest me at any time to fall (which holy JESU avert for thy mercy and compassion sake) yet let me not sleep in sin, but recall me instantly by the clamours of a nice and tender conscience, and the quickning Sermons of the Spirit, that I may never passe from sin to sin, from one degree to another, lest sin should get the dominion over me, lest thou be angry with me, and reject me from the Covenant, and I perish. Purifie me from all uncleanness, sanctifie my spirit, that I may be holy as thou art, and let me never provoke thy jealousy, nor presume upon thy goodness, nor distrust thy mercies, nor deferre my repentance, nor rely upon vain confidences; but that I may by a constant, sedulous, and timely endeavour make my calling and election sure, living to thee, and dying to thee, that having sowed to the Spirit, I may from thy mercies reap in the Spirit, blisse and eternall sanctity, and everlasting life, through JESUS CHRIST our Saviour, our hope, and our mighty and ever glorious Redeemer. Amen.



### Ad. Sect. 12.

## Upon CHRIST'S Sermon on the Mount, and of the eight Beatitudes.

**H**e holy JESUS being entred upon his Propheticall office in the first Solemne Sermon gave testimony, that he was not onely an Interpreter of Lawes then in being, but also a Law-giver, and an Angel of the new and everlasting Covenant, which because GOD meant to establish with mankind by the mediation of his Son, by his Son also he now began to publish the conditions of it; and that the publication of the Christian Law might retain some proportion at least, and analogy of circumstance with the promulgation of the Law of Moses, C H R I S T went up into a Mountain, and from thence gave the Oracle. And here he taught all the Disciples, for what he was now to speak was to become a Law, a part of the condition, on which he established the Covenant, and founded our hopes of heaven. Our excellent and gracious Law-giver knowing, that the great argument in all practicall disciplines is the proposall of the end, which is their crown and their reward, begins his Sermon, as David began his most divine collection of hymnes, with blessednesse. And having enumerated eight duties, which are the rule of the spirits of Christians, he begins every duty with a Beatitude, and concludes it with a reward, to manifest the reasonableness, and to invite and determine our choice to such graces, which are circumscribed with felicities, which have blessednesse in present possession, and glory in the consequence, which in the midst of the most passive and afflictive of them tells us, that we are blessed, which is indeed a felicity, as a hope is good, or as a rich heir is rich, who in the midst of his Discipline, and the severity of Tutors and Governors knows he is designed, and certain of a great inheritance.

1.



sent condition, which is commonly the object of our wishes being temperate and little, proportionable enough to nature, not wandering beyond the limits of necessity, or a moderate conveniency, or at furthest but to a freer refreshment, and recreation. And the cares of poverty are single, and mean, rather a fit employment to correct our levities, than a businesse to impede our better thoughts; since a little thing supplies the needs of nature, and the earth and the fountain with little trouble minister food to us; and G O D S common providence and daily dispensation, eases the cares and makes them portable. But the cares and busynesses of rich men are violences to our whole man, they are loades of memory, busynesse for the understanding, work for two or three arts and sciences, employment for many servants to assist in; increase the appetite and heighten the thirst, and by making their dropsy bigger, and their capacities large, they destroy all those opportunities and possibilities of charity, in which only riches can be usefull.

But it is not a meere poverty of possession, which intitles us to the blessing, but a poverty of Spirit; that is, a contentednesse in every state, an aptnesse to renounce all, when we are obliged in duty; a refusing to continue a possession, when we for it must quit a virtue or a noble action, a divorce of our affections from those guilded vanities, a generous contempt of the world, and at no hand heaping riches, either with injustice or with avarice, either with wrong or impotency, of action or affection. Not like *Staberius* described by the Poet, who thought nothing so criminall as poverty, and every spending of a festerce was the losse of a morall vertue, and every gaining of a talent was an action glorious and heroicall. But poverty of spirit accounts riches to be the servants of G O D, first, and then of our selves, being sent by GOD, and to return, when he please, and all the while they are with us, to do his busynesse. It is a looking upon riches, and things of the earth, as they do who look upon it from heaven, to whom it appears little and unprofitable. And because the residence of this blessed poverty is in the minde, it followes, that it be here understood, that all that exinanition and renunciation, abjection and humility of minde, which depauperates the spirit, making it lesse worldly, and more spirituall is the duty here enjoyned. For if a man throwes away all his gold, as did *Crates* the Theban, or the proud Philosopher *Diogenes*, and yet leave a spirit high, aery, phantasticall and vain, pleasing himselfe, and with complacency reflecting upon his owne act, poverty is but a circumstance of pride, and the opportunity of an imaginary, and a sacerdotal greatnessse. *Ananias* and *Saphira* renounced the world by selling their possessions, but because they were not poor in Spirit, but still retained the affections to the world, therefore they kept back part of the price, and lost their hopes. The Church of Laodicea was possessed with a spirit of pride, and flattered themselves in imaginary riches, they were not poor in spirit, but they were poor in possession and condition: These wanted humility, the other wanted a generous contempt of worldly things, and both were destitute of this grace.

The acts of this grace are. 1. To cast off all inordinate affection \* to riches. 2. In heart and spirit, that is, preparation of minde to quit the possession of all riches, and actually so to do, when G O D requires it, that is, when the retaining riches looses a virtue. 3. To be well pleased with the whole economy of G O D, his providence, and dispensation of all things.

## Part. II.

*-Satis est flu-*  
*viusque Ceres-*  
*que. Lucan.*  
*Eret n' Aī βε-*  
*ρίτη πάλιον δούρον*  
*μέτρον Δημήτριον*  
*δι' τὸ πόρισμα θεοῦ*  
*τοῦ ἀρχαὶ τοῦ*  
*πάρεγγος τοφυκῆ*  
*καὶ τρέψεων.*  
Eurip.

4.

*Quoadvis-*  
*it, creditit inc-*  
*gens p. uperim*  
*vitiū, & cavit*  
*nil acris, ubi*  
*Forte minus lo-*  
*cuples uno qua-*  
*dante perire*  
*Ipsē videtur his*  
*bi nequior —*  
Horat.

Apocal. 3. 17.

\**Eγώ εἰτ' αἰματ-*  
*Steins Κυδονίου*  
*κίρατος εἴτε με-*  
*ταῖσθαι εἰσερε-*  
*ταῖσθαι λαβο-*  
*στη. Anacreon.*

5.

## Part II.

things, being contented in all estates. 4. To employ that wealth GOD hath given us in actions of justice and religion. 5. To be thankfull to GOD in all temporall losses. 6. Not to distrust GOD, or to be sollicitous and fearefull of want in the future. 7. To put off the spirit of vanity, pride and phantafticke complacency in our selves, thinking lowly or meanly of whatsoever we are or doe. 8. To preferre others before our selves, doing honour, and prelation to them and either contentedly receiving affronts done to us, or modestly undervaluing our selves. 9. Not to praise our selves, but when G O D S glory, and the edification of our neighbour is concerned in it, nor willingly to heare others praise us. 10. To dispoile our selves of all interiour propriety, denying our own will in all instances of subordination to our superiors, and our own judgement in matters of difficulty, and question, to the advice of wiser men, and the decision of those, who are trusted with the cure of our soules. 11. Emptying our selves of our selves, and throwing our selves wholly upon GOD, relying upon his providence, trusting his promises, craving his grace, and depending upon his strength for all our actions, and deliverances, and duties.

6. \*Latius regnet avidum domando  
Spiritum, quam si Lybian remo-  
tis.  
Gadibus jungas et uteqrne Panus  
serviat unj.  
Horat 1.2.  
od.2.carm.  
Serviet eternum qui parvo nescier  
uti.Hor.  
**Matth. I I .5. & 18.4.**

The reward promised is the \*kingdome of heaven. *Feeare not little flocke, it is your Father's pleasure to give you a kingdome.* To be little in our own eyes, is to be great in G O D S, the poverty of the spirit shall be rewarded with the riches of the kingdomes ; of both kingdomes ; that of heaven is expreffed ; poverty is the high way of eternity ; but therefore the kingdome of grace is taken in the way, the way to our Country : and it being the forerunner of glory, and nothing else, but an antededated eternity, is part of the reward, as well as of our duty. And therefore whatsoever is signified by [kingdome] in the appropriate Evangelicall sense, is there intended as a recompence. For the kingome of the Gospel is a congregation, and society of CHRISTS poore, of his *little ones* : they are the communion of Saints, and their present entertainment is, knowledge of the truth, remission of sins, the gift of the holy Ghost, and what else in Scripture is signified to be a part or grace or condition of the kingdome. For to the poore the *Gospell is preached* : that is, to the poore, the kingdom is promised and ministred.

7.  
**Rom. 5.3.**  
Gaudet patientia duris.  
**James. 1.2.**  
2 Cor. 7.9.  
**Jam. 4.9.10.**  
Sicen i n per oculos cum notas turpes trahat Rursus per ipsos lachrymas fundit pias Egressione ut eluat qua in gressu sunt.  
**Dum Dolentes** admissa, admitenda excluimus, et fit quae dampn de condemnatione culpe disciplina innocentia. S. Ambr.

2. *Blessed are they that mourne ; for they shall be comforted.]* This duty of Christian mourning is commanded not for it selfe, but in order to many good ends. It is in order to patience, *Tribulation worketh patience*, and therefore we glory in them (faith Saint Paul,) and Saint James, *My Brethren count it all joy, when ye enter into divers temptations, knowing that the triall of your faith (viz by afflictions) worketh patience.* 2. It is in order to repentance, *Godly sorrow worketh repentance*. and by consequence it is in order to pardon ; for a contrite heart GOD will not reject. And after all this it leads to joy. And therefore Saint James preached a homily of sorrow, *Be afflicted and mourne, and weepe* ; that is, in penitentiall mourning, for he addes, *Humble your selves in the sight of the L O R D, and he shall lift you up.* The acts of this duty are. 1. To bewail our owne sins. 2. To lament our infirmities, as they are principles of sinne, and recessions from our first state. 3. To weepe for our own evills and sad accidents as they are issues of the Divine anger. 4. To be sad for the miseries and calamities of the Church, or of any member of it, and indeed to *weepe with every one that weepes*, that is,

not to rejoice in his evill, but to be compassionate, and pitifull, and apt to beare another's burden. 5. To avoid all loose and immoderate laughter, all dissolution of spirit, and manners, uncomely jealousyng, freer revellings, carnivals and balls, which are the perdition of precious houres (allowed us for repentance and possiblities of heaven) which are the instruments of infinite vanity, idle talking, impertinency and lust, and very much below the severity and retirenedesse of a Christian spirit. Of this CHRIST became to us the great example, for S.Basil reports a tradition of him, that he never laughed, but wept often. And if we mourne with him, we shall also rejoyce in the joyes of eternity.

3. *Blessed are the meeke for they shall posseſſe the earth*] that is, the gentle and softer spirits; persons not turbulent or unquiet, not clamorous or impatient, not overbold or impudent, not querulous or discontented, not brawlers or contentious, not nice or curious, but men who submit to GOD, and know no choyce of fortune or imployment, or successe, but what GOD chooses for them, having peace at home, because nothing from without does discompose their spirit. In summe, meeknesse is an indifference to any exterior accident, a being reconciled to all conditions and instances of providence; a reducing our selves to such an evennesse and interieur satisfaction, that there is the same conformity of spirit and fortune, by complying with my fortune, as if my fortune did comply with my spirit. And therefore in the order of Beatitudes, meeknesse is set betweene mourning and desire, that it might balance and attemper those actions by indifferencie, which by reason of their abode are apt to the transportation of passion. The reward expressed is a possession of the earth, that is, a possession of all which is excellent here below, to consigne him to a future glory, as Canaan was a type of heaven. For meeknesse is the best cement and combining of friendships, it is a great endearement of us to our company. It is an ornament to have a meek and quiet spirit, a \* prevention of quarrells, and pacifyer of wrath; it purchaseth peace, and is it selfe a quietnesse of spirit, it is the greatest affront to all injuries in the world, for it returnes them upon the injurious, and makes them useleſſe, ineſſective, and innocent, and is an antidote against all the evill consequents of anger and adverſity, and tramples upon the usurping passions of the iratible faculty.

*χειροὶ ἀλγεῖσιν εὔστοι. Ηὐτὸν μέλει τῷ πάτερε τῷ οὐρανῷ λεπτόν. Pythag. carm. ant.*  
*Æquammodo rebus in arduis servare mentem: non secus in bonis ab insolenti temperatam Letitiam, Mortuore Deli, Horat. carm. l. 2. Od. 3. Quem res plus nimio delebat eavere secunda Mutatio. quatient, ad Fusc. Arist. 1 Pet. 3. 4. \** Οὐδεὶς φίρει αἵτιον, συμφορεῖ σύμμαχον, βλέπει εἰς τὴν ἀληθινήν, κακούτας ἀνάστασιν, ἢ τὸν θεοῦ αἴρει τὸν θεόν. Aristot.

But the greatest part of this paisage and Landskip is sky; and as a man in all countreys can see more of heaven then of the earth he dwells on: so also he may in this promise. For although the Christian hears the promise of the inheritance of the earth, yet he must place his eye, and fix his heart upon heaven, which by looking downward also upon this promise as in a vespell of limpid water he may see by refelction, without looking upwards by a direct intuition. It is Heaven that is designed by this promise as well.

αρατικοὶ οἱ  
νεαντομένοι τὰ  
δέρη, η ταῦται  
μάρτιος ἀποταμαζ-  
μένοι, οἱ μετε-  
πιατικοὶ ταῦται  
επαλώπινοι ταῦ-  
ται άνθρωποι ταῦ-  
ται, S. Ba-  
sil in Psal.

Mansuetus  
aquis secun-  
dum Aristot.  
est εὐλυχάριο-  
ς, et ἀ-  
τυχός, με-  
τατυχός.  
οὐσια τε δα-  
μονιαστική.

## Part II.

well as by any of the rest ; though this grace takes in also the refreshments of the earth by equivalence and a suppletory designe. But here we have no abiding city , and therefore no inheritance. This is not our Countrey, and therefore here cannot be our portion ; unless we choose as did the *Prodigall* to go into a strange Countrey and spend our portion with riotous and beastly living and forfeit our Fathers blessing. The Devil carrying our blessed Saviour to a high mountain shewed him all the kingdome of the world; but besides that they were offered upon ill conditions, they were not eligible by him upon any. And neither are they to be chosen by us for our inheritance and portion Evangelicall, For the Gosspell is founded upon better promises, and therfore the hopes of a Christian ought not to determine upon any thing less than heaven. Indeed our blessed Saviour chose to describe this beatitude in the words of the Psalmist , so inviting his Disciples to an excellent precept by the insinuation of those scriptures which themselves admitted. But as the Earth which was promised to the meek man in Davids psalm was no other earth but the *terra promissionis* the land of *Canaan*; if we shal remember that this land of promise was but a transition, and an allegory to a greater and more noble, that it was but a type of heaven ; We shall not see cause to wonder why the holy J E S U S intending heaven for the reward of this grace also, together with the rest, did call it the *inheritance of the earth*. For now is revealed to us a new heaven and a new earth , an habitation made without hands , Eternall in the heavens. And he understands nothing of the excellency of Christian religion whose affections dwell below and are satisfied with a portion of dirt and corruption. If we be risen with C H R I S T , let us seek those things that are above, where C H R I S T sitteth at the right hand of GOD. But if a Christian desires to take possession of this earth in his way as his inheritance or portion, he hath reason to fear it will be his All. We have but one inheritance, one countrey , And here we are strangers , and Pilgrims. Abraham told Dives that he had enjoyed his good things here. He had the inheritance of the earth, in the crasse materiall sense ; and therefore he had no other portion but what the Devils have. And when we remember that persecution is the lot of the Church , and that poverty is her portion, and her *quantum* is but food and raiment at the best , and that patience is her support, and hope her refreshment, and self deniali her security , and meeknesse is all her possession and title to a subsistence , it will appear certain , that as Christs kingdom was not of this world, so neither shall his Saints have their portion in that which is not his kingdom. They are miserable if they do not reign with him ; and he never reigned here ; but if we suffer with him we shall also reign with him hereafter. True it is, Christ promised to him that should loose any interest for his sake, the restitution of a hundred fold in this world. But as the sense of that cannot be literall; for he cannot receive a hundred Mothers or a hundred wives : so whatsoever that be, it is to be enjoyed with persecution. And then such a portion of the Earth as Christ hath exprested in figure, and shall by way of recompence restore us , and such a recompence as we can enjoy with persecution, and such an enjoyment as is consistent with our having lost all our temporals, and such an acquist and purchase of it as is not destructive of the grace of meeknesse, all that we may enter into our accounts , as part of our lot, and the emanation from the holy promise. But in the foot of this

this account we shall not finde any great asfluence of temporall accruements. However it be ; although when a meek man hath earthly possesions, by the grace he is taught how to use them, and how to part with them ; yet if he hath them not, by the vertue here commanded he is not sufferer to use any thing violent towards the acquiring them ; not so much as a violent passion, or a stormy imagination ; for then he loses his meeknesse, and what ever he gets, can be none of the reward of this grace. He that fights for temporalls (unless by some other appendant duty hee be obliged) looses his title, by striving incomptently for the reward, hee cuts off that hand by which alone he can receive it. For unless he be indeed meek, he hath no right to what he calls *the inheritance of the earth* ; and he that is not content to want the inheritance of the earth when GOD requires him, is not meek. So that if this beatitude be understood in a temporall sense, it is an offer of a reward, upon a condition we shall be without it, and be content too : For in every sensē of the word, meeknesse implies a just satisfaction of the spirit and acquiescence in every estate or contingency whatsoever, though we have no possessions but of a good conscience, no bread but that of *carefulness*, no support but from the holy Spirit, and a providence ministering to our naturall necessities by an extemporary provision. And certaine it is, the meekest of C H R I S T S servants, the Apostles and the primitive Christians had no other verification of this promise, but this, that *rejoycing in tribulation, and knowing how to want as well as how to abound, through many tribulations they entered into the Kingdome of heaven* ; for that is the Countrey in which they are co-heires with J E S U S. But if wee will certainly understand what this reward is ; we may best know it by understanding the duty ; and this wee may best learne from him that gave it in commandment. *Learne of me for I am meek* ( said the holy J E S U S ) and to him was prounised that *the uttermost ends of the earth* should be his inheritance, and yet he dyed first, and went to heaven before it was verified to him in any sense, but onely of content, and desire, and joy in suffering, and in all variety of accident. And thus also if we be meek we may receive the inheritance of the earth.

The acts of this grace are : 1. To submit to all the instances of Divine providence, not \* repining at any accident which GOD hath chosen for us, and given us as part of our lot, or a punishment of our deserving, or an instrument of vertue, not envying the gifts, graces, or prosperities of our neighbours. 2. To pursue the interest, and imployment of our calling, in which we are placed, not despising the meaneſte of any work, though never so disproportional to our abilities. 3. To correct all malice, wrath, evill speaking, and isoordinations of anger, whether in respect of the object or the degree. 4. At no hand to entertaine any thoughts of revenge, or retaliation of evill. 5. To be affable and courteous in our deportment towards all persons of our society and entercourse. 6. Not to censure or reproach the weakenesse of our neighbour, but support his burden, cover and cure his infirmities. 7. To excuse what may be excused, lessening severity, and being gentle in reprehension. 8. To be patient in afflictions, and thankfull under the Croſſe. 9. To endure reprooche with shame at our ſelves for deserving it, and thankfullneſſe to the charitable Phyſician, that offers

IO.

--Non si male  
nunc & olim  
sic erit.---  
Rebus angulis, i:  
animosus, atque  
Fortis appare : |  
sapienter idem  
Contra hæc vento  
nimium secundo  
Turgida vela.  
Horat, l. 2 Od

10.

απέτον αγδάς 1  
τὸ διατελέσθαι 2  
σύντονος δὲ α-  
γρύνατ, Melis.  
disc. 19.

## Part II.

*Neque ulli pati-  
entius reprehenduntur, quam  
qui maxime lau-  
dari morentur.*

*Plin. l. 9. c. 10.*

*Spraeconseruit ipsi  
et apertis rucis  
incoruscac. Eschy.  
Iustitiae.*

offers the remedy." 10. To be modest and fairely mannered toward our superiors, obeying, reverencing, speaking honourably and doing honour to aged persons and all, whom God hath set over us according to their severall capacities. 11. To be ashamed and very apprehensive of the unworthiness of a crime; at no hand loosing our feare of the invisible GOD and our reverence to visible societys, or single persons. 12. To be humble in our exterior addressees, and behaviour in Churches; and all holy places. 13. To be temperate in government, not imperious, unreasonable, infolent or oppressive, lest we provoke to wrath those, whose interest of person, and of religion we are to defend or promote. 14. To do our endeavour to expiate an injury we did, by confessing the fact, and offering satisfaction, and asking forgiveness.

10.

\* *Salva respetu propter spem sa-  
latis quam pro-  
mictic indoles  
erubescentis.*

*Comad.*

\* *In regnorum a-  
ctuosis pueris  
spiritus iste sic  
autem Baptizans,  
est. ad iste iste  
sunt idem.*

*Theolog.*

4. *Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled.]* This grace is the greatest indication of spirituall health, when our appetite is right, strong, and regular; when we are desirous of spirituall nourishment, when we long for Manna, and follow C H R I S T for loaves, not of a low and terrestriall gust, but of that bread, which came down from heaven. Now there are two sorts of holy repast, which are the proper objects of our desires. The bread of heaven, which is proportioned to our hunger, that is, all those immediate emanations from CHRISTS pardon of our sinnes, and redemption from our former conversation, holy lawes, and commandments. To this food there is also a spirituall bevrage to quench our thirst; and this is the effects of the holy Spirit, who first moved upon the waters of Baptisme, and afterwards became to us the breath of life, giving us holy inspirations, and assistances, refreshing our wearinesses, cooling our feavers, and allaying all our intemperate passions, making us holy, humble, resigned, and pure, according to the patterne in the mount, even as our Father is pure. So that the first redemption and pardon of us by C H R I S T S merits is the bread of life; for which we must hunger; and the refreshments and daily emanations of the spirit, who is the spring of comforts, and purity, is that drink, which we must thirst after, a being first reconciled to G O D by J E S U S, and a being sanctified and preserved in purity by the holy Spirit is the adequate object of our desires. Some to hunger and thirst best fancy the analogy and proportion of the two Sacraments, the waters of baptism, and the food of the Eucharist; some, the bread of the Paten, and the wine of the Chalice. But it is certain they signifie one desire expressed by the most impatient and necessary of our appetites, hungering and thirsting. And the object is, whatsoever is the principle or the effect, the beginning, or the way, or the end of righteousness, that is, the mercies of G O D, the pardon of J E S U S, the graces of the spirit, a holy life, and a holy death, and a blessed Eternity.

11.

The blessing and reward of this grace is fulnesse, or satisfaction, which relates immediately to heaven, because nothing here below can satisfie us; the grace of G O D is our viaticum, and entertains us by the way; its nature is to encrease not to satisfie the appetites; nor because the grace is empty, and unprofitable as are the things of the world; but because it is excellent, but yet in order to a greater perfection; it invites the appetite by its present goodnesse, but it leaves it unsatisfied because it is not yet arrived at glory; and yet the present imperfection in respect of all the good

good of this world's possession is rest and satisfaction, and is imperfect, onely in respect of its owne future complement and perfection, and our hunger continues, and our needs return, because all we have is but an antepast. But the glories of eternity are also the proper object of our desires ; that's the reward of GODS grace, *this is the crown of righteousness*. *As for me, I will behold thy face in righteousness, and when I awake up after thy likeness, I shall be satisfied with it.* The acts of this vertue are multiplied according to its object ; for they are onely, 1. to desire, and 2. pray for, and 3. labour for all that, which is righteousness in any sense ; 1. For the pardon of our sinnes. 2. For the graces and sanctification of the Spirit. 3. For the advancement of C H R I S T S Kingdome. 4. For the reception of the holy Sacrament, and all the instruments, ordinances, and ministeries of grace. 5. For the grace of perseverance. 6. And finally for the crown of righteousness.

5. *Blessed are the mercifull, for they shall obtaine mercy.*] Mercy is the greatest mark, and token of the holy, elect, and predestinate persons, in the world. *Put ye on (my Beloved) as the Elect of GOD the bowels mercy, holy and precious.* For mercy being an attribute, in the manifestation of which, as all our happiness consists, so GOD takes greatest complacency, and delights in it above all his other works. He punishes to the third and fourth generation, but shewes mercy unto thousands. Therefore the Jewes say, that *Michael* flies with one wing, and *Gabriel* with two ; meaning, that the pacifying Angel, the Minister of mercy flies swift, but the exterminating Angel, the Messenger of wrath is slow : And we are called to our approximation to G O D by the practice of this grace : we are made *partakers of the Divine nature*, by being *mercifull as our heavenly Father is mercifull*. This mercy consists in the affections, and in the effect and actions. In both which the excellency of this Christian precept is eminent above the goodness of the morall precept of the old Philosophers, and the piety and charity of the Jewes by vertue of the Mosaick Law. The Stoick Philosophers affirme it to be the duty of a wise man to succour and help the necessities of indigent, and miserable persons ; but at no hand to pity them, or suffer any trouble or compassion in our affections ; for they intended, that a wise person should be dispassionate, unmoved and without disturbance in every accident and object, and concernment. But the blessed JESUS, who came to reconcile us to his Father, and purchase us an intire possession, did intend to redeeme us from sin, and make our passions obedient, and apt to be commanded, even and moderate in temporall affairs, but high and active in some instances of spirituall concernment ; and in all instances, that the affection go along with the grace ; that we must be as mercifull in our compassion, as compassionate in our exterior expressions & actions. The Jewes by the prescript of their Law were to be mercifull to all their nation, and Confederates in religion ; and this their mercy was called justice. *He hath dispersed abroad and given to the poor, his righteousness [or justice] remaneth for ever :* but the mercies of a Christian are to extend to all. *Do good to all men, especially to the household of faith :* and this diffusion of a mercy, not onely to Brethren, but to Aliens, and Enemies is that, which S. Paul calls *goodness*, stil retaining the old appellative for Judaical mercy [*righteousnesse*] for scarcely for a \* righteous man will one die, yet peradventure for a good man some will even dare to die. So that the Christian mercy must be a mercy of

Col. 3. 12.

Neque n. sunt  
i. t. audiendi qui  
virtutem duram  
& quasi ferream  
esse volunt : qua  
quidem est cum  
in multis rebus,  
cum in arcitia  
tenueratque  
tractabilis, ut &  
bonis anici quas  
si diffundantur  
& incommode  
contrahantur.  
Lalius apud M.  
T. Cicero.

Gal. 6. 10:  
Rom. 5. 7.  
\*Syrus interpres  
non legit ipsa  
dixisse sed a-  
duxisse iustiss.

Part II.

the whole man, the heart must be mercifull, and the hand operating in the labour of love; and it must be extended to all persons of all capacities according as their necessity requires, and our ability permits, and our endeavours and other obligations dispose of and determine the order.

¶ 13

The acts of this grace are. 1. To pity the miseries of all persons, and all calamities spirituall or temporall, having a fellow-feeling in their afflictions. 2. To be afflicted and sad in the publike judgments imminent or incumbent upon a Church or state or Family. 3. To pray to God for remedy for all afflicted persons. 4. To doe all acts of bodily assistance to all miserable and distressed people, to relieve the poore, to redeem captives, to forgive debts, to disable persons, to pay debts for them, to lend them money, to feed the hungry, and cloth the naked, to rescue persons from dangers, to defend and relieve the opprested, to comfort widows and fatherless children, to help them to right, that suffer wrong, and in briefe to doe any thing of relief, support, succour, and comfort, 5. To do all acts of spirituall mercy, to counsell the doubtfull to admonish the erring, to strengthen the weake, to resolute the scrupulous, to teach the ignorant, and any thing else, which may be instrumentall to his conversion, perseverance, restitution and salvation, or may rescue him from spirituall dangers, or supply him in any ghostly necessity. The reward of this vertue is symbolicall to the virtue it selfe, the grace and glory differing in nothing, but degrees; and every vertue being a reward to it self. The mercifull shall receive mercy; mercy to help them in time of need; mercy from God, who will not onely give them the great mercies of pardon, and eternity, but also dispose the hearts of others to pity and supply their needs as they have done to others. For the present; there is nothing more noble, then to be beneficall to others, and to lift up the poore out of the mire, and rescue them from misery; It is to doe the work of GOD; and for the future nothing is a greater title to a mercy at the day of judgement, then to have shewed mercy to our necessitous Brother; it being expressed to be the onely rule and instance, in which CHRIST means to judge the world, in their mercy and charity, or their unmercyfullesse respectively. *I was hungry and ye fed me, or ye fed me not, and so we stand or fall in the great and eternall scrutiny.* And it was the prayer of S. Paul. Onesiphorus shewed kindness to the great Apostle; *The Lord shew him a mercy in that day. For a cup of charity, though but full of cold water shall not loose its rewarded.*

¶ 14

Psal. 24. 34.

I Tim. 1. 5.

6. [Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God] This purity of heart includes purity of hands. *Lord who shall dwell in thy tabernacle, even he that is of cleane hands, and a pure heart, that is, he that hath not given his mind unto vanity, nor sworne to deceive his Neighbour.* It signifies justice of action, and candour of spirit, innocence of manners, and sincerity of purpose; It is one of those great circumstances, that consummates charity, for the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good Conscience, and faith unfained; that is a heart] free from all carnall affections, not onely in the matter of naturall impurity, but also spirituall, and immateriall, such as are heresies, (which are therefore impurities, because they mingle secular interest or prejudice with persuasions in religion) seditions, huriſſull and impious stratagems, and all those which S. Paul enumerates to be workes or fruits of the Flesh. A good Conscience,] that's a conscience either innocent or penitent, a state of grace, either a not having prevaricated, or a being restored to our baptis-

Bona comparat  
pretidia misericordia, et habet  
in adversis auxilia qui in secundis commodat.  
Publius.  
Deus est Mortali invare mortalem arque hac  
est ad aeternitatem via. Seneca

mall

mall purity. *Faith unfained* that also is the purity of sincerity, and all these do integrate the whole duty of charity, but *purity*, as it is a speciall grace signifies onely honesty and uprightnesse of soul, without hypocryfe to G O D, and dissimulation towards men; and then a freedome from all carnall Desires, so as not to be governed or lead by them; chastity is the purity of the body, simplicity is the purity of the spirit, both, are the sanctification of the whole man, for the entertainment of the spirit of purity and the spirit of truth.

The acts of this vertue are. 1. To quit all lustfull thoughts, not to take delight in them, not to retaine them, or invite them, but as objects of displeasure to avert them from us. 2. To resist all lustfull desires, and extinguish them by their proper correctories and remedies. 3. To refuse all occasions, opportunities and temptations to impurity, denying to please a wanton eye, or to use a lascivious gesture, or to goe into a danger, or to converse with an improper, unsafe object, hating the garment spotted with the flesh; so S. Jude calls it, and not to looke upon a maid; so Job: not to sit with a woman, that is a singer, so the son of Syrach. 4. To be of a liberal soule, not mingling with affections of money, and inclinations of covetousnesse, not doing any act of violence, rapine or injustice. 5. To be ingenuous in our thoughts, purposes and professions, speaking nothing contrary to our intentions, but being really, what we feeme. 6. To give all our faculties and affections to GOD, without dividing interests between God and his enemies, without entertaining of any one crime in society with our pretences for GOD. 7. Not to lye in sin, but instantly to repent of it and returne, purifying our Conscience from dead workes. 8. Not to dissemble our faith, or believe, when we are required to its confession, pretending a persuasion complying with those, from whom secretly we differ. Lust, Covetousnesse, and hypocryfe are the three great enemies of this Grace, they are the moates of our eyes, and the spots of our soules. The reward of purity is the vision beatificall. *If we are pure, as G O D is pure, we shall also see him as he is. When we awake up after his likenesse we shall behold his presence.* To which in this world we are configned by freedome from the cares of covetousnesse, the shame of lust, the feare of discovery, and the stings of an evill conscience, which are the portion of the severall impurities here forbidden.

7. *Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called the children of GOD.] The wisdome of G O D is first pure and then peaceable,* that's the order of the Beatitudes. As soone as JESUS was borne, the Angels sang a hymne, *Glory be to GOD on high, and on earth peace, good will towards men,* signifying the two great errands, upon which Christ was dispatched in his legation from heaven to earth? He is the Prince of peace. *Follow peace with all men, and holinesse,* without which no man ever shall see God. The acts of this grace are. 1. To mortify our anger, peevishnesse, and fiery dispositions apt to enkindle upon every slight accident, inadvertency, or misfortune of a Friend, or servant. 2. Not to be hasty, rash, provocative, or upbraiding in our language. 3. To live quietly and serenely in our families, and neighbourhoods. 4. Not to backbite, slander, misreport or undervalue any man, carrying tales, or sowing Dissention between Brethren. 5. Not to interest our selves in the quarrels of others, by abetting either part, except where charity calls us to rescue the oppressed; and then also to doe a worke of charity without mixtures of uncharitableness. 6. To avoid all suits of Law as much as is possible without intrenching upon any other collaterall ob-

Platovocat pu-  
ritatem & rore-  
am, xerxes, dñe  
beniam.

Part II.

ligation towards a third interest, or a necessary support for our selves, or great conveniency for our families; or if we be engaged in law, to pursue our just interests with just meanes, and charitable maintenance. 7. To endeavour by all meanes to reconcile disagreeing persons. 8. To endeavour by assability, and faire deportment to win the love of our neighbours. 9. To offer satisfaction to all whom we have wronged, or slandered, and to remitt the offences of others, and in trialls of right to finde out the most charitable expedient to determine it, as by indifferent arbitration, or something like it. 10. To be open, free, and ingenuous, in reprehensions and fair expostulations with persons, whom we conceive to have wronged us, that no seed of malice or rancour may be latent in us, and upon the breath of a new displeasure breake out into a flame. 11. To be modest in our arguings, disputings, and demands; not laying great interest upon trifles. 12. To moderate, balance and temper our zeale by the rules of prudence, and the alloy of charity, that we quarrell not for opinions, nor intitle G O D in our impotent and mistaken fansyes, nor loose charity for a pretence of an article of Faith. 13. To pray heartily for our enemies, reall, or imaginary, alwayes loving and being apt to benefit their persons, and to cure their faults by charitable remedies. 14. To abstaine from doing all affronts, disgraces, slightings, uncomely jeerings, and mockings of our Neighbour, not giving him appellatives of scorne, or irrisio[n]. 15. To submit to all our superiours in all things, either doing what they command, or suffering what they impose, at no hand lifting our heele against those, upon whom the characters of G O D, and the marks of JESUS are imprinted, in signall and eminent authority, such as are principally, the King, and then the Bishops, whom GOD hath hath set to watch over our soules. 16. Not to invade the possessions of our Neighbours, or commence war, but when we are bound by justice and legall trust, to defend the rights of others, or our own in order to our duty. 17. Not to speake evill of dignitie, or undervalue their persons, or publish their faults, or upbraid the levities of our governours, knowing that they also are designed by GOD, to be converted to us for castigation, and amendment of us. 18. Not to be busie in other mens affaires. And then the peace of GOD will rest upon us: The reward is no lesse, then the adoption and inheritance of sons; for he hath given unto us power to be called the sons of G O D; For he is the Father of Peace, and the sonnes of Peace are the sons of GOD, and therefore have a title to the inheritance of sons, to be heires of GOD, and coheires with Christ in the kingdome of peace, and essentiall and never failing charity.

17.

*Blessed are they, which are persecuted for righteousness sake, for theirs is the kingdome of heaven]* This being the hardest comma in the whole Discipline of JESUS is fortified with a double blessednesse, for it followes immediately *Blessed are ye, when men shall revile you, and persecute you,* meaning, that all persecution for a cause of righteousness, though the affliction be instanced onely in reproachfull language, shall be a title to the blessednesse. Any suffering for any good or harmless action is a degree of Martyrdome. It being the greatest testimony in the world of the greatest love to quit that for G O D, which hath possessed our most natural, regular, and orderly affections. It is a preferring Gods cause before our own interest; it is a loving of vertue without secular ends; it

*Phil. 4.9.  
John 3.1.  
Rom.8.17.  
1 Thess.5.23.  
2 Thess.3.16.  
1 Cor.14.33.  
Heb. 13. 20.*

*.....Dulce per-  
sulument  
O Lenas sequi  
Deum  
Cingentes viri-  
dij temporis pam-  
phili. Hor. I. 3.  
od 25.*

is the noblest, the most resigned, ingenuous, valiant act in the world to dye for GOD, whom we never have seen ; it is the crown of faith, the confidence of hope, and our greatest charity. The Primitive Churches living under persecution commençed many pretty opinions concerning the state and speciall dignity of Martyrs, apportioning to them one of the three coronets, which themselves did knit, and supposed as pendants to the great crown of righteounesse. They made it suppletory of baptisme, expiatory of finne, \* satisfactory of publick penances, they placed them in blisse immediately, declared them not to need no after prayers, such as the devotion of these times used to poure upon the graves of the faithfull; with great prudence they did endeavour to alleviate this burden, and sweeten the bitter chalice, and they did it by such doctrines, which did only remonstrate this great truth; That since no love was greater then to lay down our lives, nothing could be so great but GOD would indulge to them; and indeed whatsoever they said in this; had no inconvenience, nor would it now unlesse men should thinke meere suffering to be sufficient to excuse a wicked life, or that they be invited to dishonour an excellent patience with the mixture of an impure action. There are many who would dye for Christ, if they were putto it, and yet will not quitt a lust for him : those are hardly to be esteemed Christs Martyrs; unlesse they be *dead unto finne*, their dying for an article, or a good action will not passe the great scrutiny ; and it may be boldnesse of spirit, or sullennesse, or an honourable gallantry of mind, or something that is excellent in civil and Politicall estimate that moves the person, and indeeres the suffering ; but that *love only*, which keeps the Commandments will teach us to dye for love, and from love to passe to blessednesse, through the red Sea of blood. And indeed it is more easie to dye for chastity, then to live with it. And many women have been found, who suffered Death under the violence of Tyrants for defence of their holy vowes, and purity, who had they long continued amongst pleasures, courtships, curiosities, and importunitiess of men, might perchance have yeilded that to a Lover which they denyed to an executioner. S. Cyprian observes that our blessed L O R D in admitting the innocent babes of Bethlehem first to dye for him, did to all generations of Christendome configne the lesson, that onely persons holy and innocent were fit to be CHRIST'S Martyrs. It is certain, that such dying, or great sufferings are Heroicall actions, and of power to make great compensarions, and redempsons of time, and of omissions and imperfections ; but if the man be unholy, so also are his \* sufferings ; for heretickes have dyed, and vicious persons have suffered in a good cause, and a dogs neck may be cut off in sacrifice, and Swines blood may fill the trench about the Altar : but GOD onely accepts the sacrifice, which is pure and spotlesse, first seasoned with salt, then seasoned with fire. The true Martyr must have all the preceding graces, and then he shall receive all the Beatitudes.

The acts of this duty are. 1. bodily to confess the faith, nobly to exercise publike vertues, not to be ashamed of any thing that is honest, and rather to quit our goods, our liberty, our health, and life it selfe, then to deny what we are bound to affirme, or to omit what we are bound to do, or to pretend contrary to our present presuasion. 2. To rejoice in afflictions :

\* C. Taci.us de  
Judaïs. Animas  
prælio aut sup-  
plicij, perceptos  
rum æternas pu-  
tant. Hinc mori-  
endj contemp-  
tus.

Non est a con-  
sentaneum qui  
metu non frang-  
atur, eum frangit  
cupidate, nec  
quj invictum se a  
labore præliterat  
vincit, volup-  
tate Cicer.de  
offic I.I.  
Tertull.de castis.

\* Athleta non  
vincit statim  
quia eritur, nec  
ideo transnatant  
quia te spoliare.  
Sever.ep 2.

## Part II.

counting it honourable to be conformable to C H R I S T , and to ware the cognisance of Christianity, whose certain lot it is to suffer the hostility, and violence of enemies visible, and invisible. 3. Not to revile our Persecutors, but to bear the crose with evennesse, tranquillity, patience and charity. 4. To offer our sufferings to the glory of G O D , and to joyne them with the passions of C H R I S T , by doing it in love to G O D , and of edience to his sanctions, and testimony of some part of his religion, and designing it as a part of duty. The reward is the *kingdome of heaven*, which can be no other, but eternall salvation, in case the Martyrdome be consummated. If it be lesse it keeps its proportion: all suffering persons are the combination of Saints, they make the Church, they are the people of the kingdome, and heires of the Covenant. For if they be but Confessors, and confess C H R I S T in prison, though they never preach upon the rack, or under the ax, yet C H R I S T will confess them before his heavenly Father.



## The P R A Y E R.

O Blessed J E S U S , who art become to us the Fountain of peace and sanctety, of righteousnesse and charity, of life and perpetuall benediction, imprint in our spirits these glorious characterismes of Christianity, that we by such excellent dispositions may be consigned to the infinity of blessednesse, which thou camest to reveale, and minister, and exhibit to mankinde. Give us great humility of Spirit, and deny us not, when we beg sorrow of thee, the mourning and sadnessse of true penitents, that we may imitate thy excellencies, and conforme to thy sufferings; Make us meek, patient, indifferent, and resigned in all accidents, changes and issues of Divine Providence. Mortifie all inordinate anger in us, all wrath, strife, contention, marmurings, malice and envy, and interrupt and then blot out all peevish dispositions, and morosities, all disturbances and unevennesse of spirit, or of habit, that may hinder us in our duty. Oh teach me so to hunger and thirst after the wayes of righteousness, that it may be meat and drink to me to do thy Fathers will. Raise my affections to heaven and heavenly things, fix my heart there, and prepare a treasure for me, which I may receive in the great diffusion, and communications of thy glory, and in this sad intervall of infirmitie, and temptations, strengthen my hopes, and fortifie my faith, by such emisions of light, and grace from thy spirit that I may relish those blessings, which thou preparest for thy Saints, with so great appetite, that I may despise the world and all its guilded vanities, and may desire nothing but the crown of righteousness, and the paths, that lead hither, the graces  
of

of thy kingdome, and the glories of it, that when I have served thee in holiness and strict obedience; I may reign with thee in the glories of Eternity through JESUS CHRIST, who is our hope, and our life, and glory, our exceeding great reward. Amen.

## 2.

Mercifull JESU, who art infinitely pleased in demonstrations of thy mercy, and didst descend into a state of misery suffering persecution and afflition, that thou mightest give us thy mercy, and reconcile us to thy Father, and make us partaker of thy purities; give unto us tender bowells, that we may suffer together with our calamitous, and necessitous Brethren, that we having a fellowfeeling of their miseries may use all our powers to helpe them, and ease our selves of our common sufferings. But doe thou, O holy JESU take from us also all our great calamities, the carnality of our affections, our sensualities and impurities, that we may first be pure then peaceable, living in peace with all men, and preserving the peace, which thou hadst made for us with our GOD, that we may never commit a sinne, which may interrupt so blessed an atonement. Let neither hope, nor feare, tribulation, nor anguish, pleasure, nor paine make us to relinquish our interest in thee, and our portion of the everlasting Covenant. But give us hearts constant, bold, and valiant, to confess thee before all the world in the midst of all disadvantages, and contradictory circumstances, choosing rather to begg, or to be disgraced, or afflicted, or to dye, then quit a holy Conscience, or renounce an article of Christianity: that we either in aet, when thou shalt call us, or alwayes in preparation of mind, suffering with thee, may also reigne with thee in the Church Triumphant, O holy and most mercifull Saviour JESU. Amen.



## IX.

*A Discourse upon that part of the Decalogue,  
which the holy JESUS adopted into  
the Institution, and obligation of  
Christianity.*

**W**hen the holy JESUS had described the characterismes of Christianity, in these eight graces and Beatitudes, he addes his injunctions, that in these vertues, they shold be eminent and exemplar, that they might adorne the doctrine of GOD; for he intended that the Gospell should be as a leaven in a lump of dough, to season the whole masse, and that Christians should be the instruments of communicating the excellency and reputation of this holy institution to all the world. Therefore Christ calls them *salt*, and *light*, and the

## Part II.

societies of Christians a city set upon a hill, and a light set in a candlestick, whose office and Energy is to illuminate all the voisnage, which is also expressed in these preceptive words. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father, which is in heaven; which I consider, not onely as a Circumstance of other parts but as a precise duty it selfe, and one of the sanctions of Christianity, which hath so confederated the soules of the Disciples of the institution, that it hath in some proportion obliged every man to take care of his Brothers soule. And since reverence to G O D, and charity to our Brother are the two greatest ends, which the best lawes can have, this precept of exemplary living is enjoyned in order to them both, we must shine as lights in the world, that GOD may be glorified and our Brother edified, that the excellency of the act may endeere the reputation of the religion, and invite men to confess GOD according to the sanctions of so holy an institution. And if we be curious, that vanity do not mingle in the intention and that the intention doe not spoile the action, and that we suffer not our lights to shine, that men may magnifie us, and not glorifie GOD, this duty is soone performed by way of adherence to our other actions, and hath no other difficulty in it, but that it will require our prudence, and care to preserve the simplicity of our purposes, and humility of our spirit in the midst of that excellent reputation, which will certainly be consequent to a holy, and exemplary life.

2.

But since the holy J E S U S had set us up to be lights in the world, he tooke care we shoulde not be stars of the least magnitude, but eminent, and such as might by their great emissions of light give evidence of their being immediately derivative from the sun of righteousness. He was now giving his Law, and meant to retaine so much of Moses, as Moses had of naturall, and essentiall justice and charity, and superadde many degrees of his own, that as farre as Moses was exceeded by C H R I S T in the capacity of a Law-giver, so farre Christianity might be more excellent, and holy then the Mosaicall sanctions. And therefore as a Preface to the Christian law the holy J E S U S declares, that *unlesse our righteousness exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees*, that is, of the strictest sects of the Mosaicall institution, *we shall not enter into the kingdome of heaven*. Which not onely relates to the prevaricating practises of the Pharisees, but even to their Doctrines and Commentaries upon the Law of Moses, as appears evidently in the following instances. For if all the excellency of Christianity had consisted in the meere command of sincerity and prohibition of hypocrisy, it had nothing in it proportionable to those excellent promises, and clearest revelations of eternity there expressed, nor of a fit imployment for the designation of a speciall and a new Law-giver, whose lawes were to last for ever, and were established upon foundations stronger then the pillars of heaven and earth.

3.  
Rom. 3.27.

\* Considerat of Christ first preaching. n.3.

But S. Paul calling the Law of Moses, *a law of workes* did well infinuate, what the doctrine of the Jewes was concerning the degrees and obligations of justice, for besides that it was a law of workes in opposition to the law of faith (and so the sense of it is \* formerly explicated) it is also a law of workes in opposition to the law of the spirit, and it is understood to be such a Law which required the exterior obedience, such a Law according to which Saint Paul so lived, that no man could reprove him, that is, the Judges could not taxe him with

with prevarication; such a Law, which being in very many degrees carnall and materiall did not with much severity exact the intention and purposes spirituall. But the Gospel is the *Law of the spirit*. If they failed in the exterior work, it was accounted to them for sinne; but to Christians nothing becomes a sinne but a failing and prevaricating Spirit. For the outward act is such an emanation of the interior, that it enters into the account for the relation sake, and for its parent. When G O D hath put a duty into our hands, if our spirits be right, the work will certainly follow; but the following work receives its acceptation, not from the value the Christian Law hath precisely put upon it, but because the spirit, from whence it came hath observed its rule: the law of charity is acted and expressed in works, but hath its estimate from the Spirit. Which discourse is to be understood in a limited and qualified signification. For then also G O D required the heart, and interdicted the very concupisces of our irregular passions, at least in some instances; but because much of their Law consisted in the exterior, and the Law appointed not, nor yet intimated any penalty to evill thoughts, and because the expiation of such interior irregularities was easie, implicite, and involved in their daily sacrifices without speciall trouble, therefore the old Law was a *Law of works*, that is, especially, and in its first intention. But this being lesse perfect, the holy J E S U S inverted the order. 1. For very little of Christianity stands upon the outward action; ( C H R I S T having appointed but two Sacraments immediately;) and 2. a greater restraint is laid upon the passions, desires, and first motions of the Spirit, then under the severity of *Moses*, and 3. they are threatened with the same curses of a sad Eternity with the acts proceeding from them; and 4. Because the obedience of the Spirit does in many things excuse the want of the outward act, G O D alwayes requiring at our hands, what he hath put in our power, and no more: and 5. Lastly, because the Spirit is the Principle of all actions morall and Spirituall, and certainly productive of them, when they are not impeded from without; therefore the holy J E S U S hath secured the fountain as knowing, that the current must needs be healthfull and pure, if it proceeds through pure chanelz from a lympid and unpolluted principle.

And certainly it is much for the glory of G O D to worship him with a religion, whose very designe looks upon G O D as the searcher of our hearts, and L O R D of our spirits, who judges the purposes as a G O D, and not onely takes his estimate from the outward action as a man. And it is also a great reputation to the institution it selfe, that it purifies the soul, and secures the secrect cogitations of the minde; It punishes covetousnesse as it judges rapine, it condemnes a sacrilegious heart, alsoone as an irreligious hand, it detests hating of our Brother by the same aversation, whiche it expresses against doing him affronts; he that curses in his heart shall die the death of an explicite and bold blasphemer; murmure and repining

*panam non irrogari nisi ob perpetratum facinus, τον γαρ μητερα παινεις το επον βαλευομενον in οι τις  
μεινεις αυτον.*

Josephus repre-  
hendit Polybium  
quod mortem  
Antiochi inflict-  
auit dicit ob co-  
citatum scelus sa-  
crilegij, putans

## Part II.

is against the Lawes of Christianity; but either by the remissesse of Moses Law, or the gentler execution of it, or the innovating or lessening glosses of the Pharisees, he was esteemed innocent, whose actions were according to the letter, not whose spirit was conformed to the intention, and more secret sanctity of the Law. So that our righteousnesse must therefore exceed the Pharisaicall standard, because our spirits must be pure as our hands, and the heart as regular as the action, our purposes must be sanctified, and our thoughts holy; we must love our Neighbour, as well as believe him, and choose justice with adhesion of the minde, as well as carry her upon the palmes of our hands. And therefore the Prophets foretelling the kingdome of the Gospel, and the state of this religion, call it *a writing the Lawes of GOD in our hearts*. And S. Paul distinguishes the Gospel from the Law by this onely measure, *We are all Israelites, of the seed of Abraham, heires of the same inheritance*, onely now we are not to be accounted Jewes for the outward conformity to the Law, but for the inward consent and obedience to those purities, which were secretly signified by the types of Moses. They of the Law were *Jewes outwardly, their circumcision was outward in the flesh, their praise was of men*: We are Jewes inwardly, our *Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, and our praise is of GOD*, that is, we are not judged by the outward act, but by the mind and intention; and though the acts must follow in all instances, where we can, and where they are required, yet it is the lese principall, and rather significative, then by its owne strength, and energie operative, and accepted.

## S.

*Virtus est virtio  
caruisse. —  
Optimus est qui  
minimis urgetur.*

S. Clemens of Alexandria saith, the Pharitees righteousnesse consisted in the not doing evill, and that CHRIST superadded this also, that we must doe the contrary good, and so exceed the Pharisaicall measure. They would not wrong a Jew, nor many times relieve him; they reckoned their innocence by not giving offence, by walking blameleſſe, by not being accused before the Judges sitting in the gates of their cities. But the balance, in which the Judge of quick and dead weighes Christians, is not onely the avoiding evill, but doing good; the *following peace with all men and holiness*; the proceeding from *faith to faith*; the adding vertue to vertue; the persevering in all holy conversation, and godlinesse. And therefore S. Paul commanding the grace of univerſal charity, saies, that *Love worketh no ill to his Neighbour, therefore love is the fulfilling of the Law*: implying, that the prime intention of the Law was, that every mans right be secured, that no man receive wrong. And indeed all the Decalogue consisting of prohibitions, rather then precepts, saving that each Table hath one positive Commandment, does not obscurely verifie the doctrine of S. Clemens interpretation: Now because the Christian charity abstaines from doing all injury, therefore it is the fulfilling of the Law; but because it is alſo patient, and liberall, that it suffers long, and is kinde, therefore the charity commanded in CHRISTS Law exceeds that charity whiche the Scribes and Pharisees reckoned as part of their righteousnesse. But JESUS himself does with great care in the particulars instance in what he would have the Disciples to be eminent above the moſt ſtrict ſect of the Jewish religion: 1. In practising the morall precepts of the Decalogue with a ſtricter interpretation: 2. And in quiting the permissions and licences, which for the hardness of their heart Moses gave them as indulgences to their persons and

## Rom. 13.10.

and securities against the contempt of too severe Lawes.

The severity of exposition was added but to three Commandments, and in three indulgences the permission was taken away. But because our great Lawgiver repeated also other parts of the Decalogue in his \* after sermons, I will represent in this one view all that he made to be Christian by adoption.

The first Commandment CHRIST often repeated, and inforced as being the basis of all religion, and the first endeavouerment of all that relation, whereby we are capable of being the sons of GOD, as being the great commandment of the Law, and comprehensive of all that duty we owe to GOD in the relations of the vertue of religion [ *Heave O Israel, the Lord thy GOD is one LORD. And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength* ] This is the first commandment, that is, this comprehends all that which is morall and eternall in the first table of the Decalogue.

The duties of this Commandment are, [ 1. ] to worship GOD alone with actions proper to him, and, [ 2. ] to love and [ 3. ] obey him with all our faculties. [ 1. ] concerning worship. The actions proper to the honour of GOD are to offer sacrifice, incense and oblations, making vowes to him, swearing by his name, as the instrument of secret testimony, confessing his incomunicable attributes, and praying to him for those graces, which are essentially annexed to his dispensation, as remission of sinnes, gifts of the spirit, and the grace of sanctification, and life eternall. Other acts of religion, such as are uncovering the head, bowing the knee, falling upon our face, stooping to the ground, reciting praises, are by the consent of nations used as testimonies of civill or religious veneration, and doe not always passe for confessions of a Divinity, and therefore may be without sinne used to Angels or Kings, or Governours, or to persons in any sence more excellent then our selves, provided they be intended to expresse an excellency no greater then is proper to their dignities, and persons, nor in any sence given to an idol, or false Gods; but the first sort, are such which all the world hath consented to be actions of Divine and incomunicable adoration, and such which GOD also in severall religions hath reserved as his owne appropriate regalities, and are idolatry, if given to any Angel or man,

The next duties are [ 2. ] Love. [ 3. ] and obedience, but they are unit in the Gospel. *This is love, that we keep his Commandements;* and since we are for GODS sake bound also to love others, this love is appropriate to GOD by the extension of parts, and the intention of degrees. The extension signifies that we must serve GOD with all our faculties; for all division of parts is hypocrisy, and a direct prevarication; our heart must think what our tongue speakes, our hands act what we promise or purpose; and Gods enemies must have no share so much as in appearance or dissimulation. Now no creature can challenge this; and if we doe justice to our neighbours though unwillingly, we have done him no injury; for in that case he onely who sees the irregularity of our thoughts, is the person injured; and when we sweare to him, our heart must sweare as well as our tongue; and our hand must pay, what our lips have promised; or else we provoke him with an imperfect sacrifice: we love him not with all our mind, with all our strength, and all our faculties.

But

---

Part II.

6.

Luk. 18.20.

Mar. 10.19.

Mat. 19. 18.

Rom. 13. 9.

7.

Mat. 22.37.

Mar. 12.30.

Luk. 10. 27.

8.

9.

## Part II.

10.

But the difficulty and question of this Commandment lies in the intention; for it is not enough to serve GOD with every capacity, passion, and faculty; but it must be every degree of every faculty, all the latitude of our will, all the whole intention of our passions, all the possibility, and energy of our senses, and our understanding, which because it is to be understood according to that moderate sentence, and account, which GOD requires of us set in the midst of such a condition so attended, and depressed and prejudiced, the full sense of it I shall expresse in severall propositions.

11.

1. The *intention* of the love to which we are obliged requires not the degree, which is absolutely the greatest, and simply the most perfect. For there are degrees of grace, every one of which is pleasing to GOD, and is a state of reconciliation, and atonement, and he that breaks not the bruised reed, or quenches the smoaking flax, loves to cherish those endeavours, which beginning from small principles passes through the variety of degrees, and gives demonstration, that though it be our duty to contend for the best, yet this contention is with an enemy, and that enemy makes an abatement, and that abatement being an imperfection rather than a finne, is actually consistent with a state of grace, the endeavour being in our power, and not the successe; the perfection is that, which shall be our reward, and therefore is not our present duty. And indeed if to do the best action, and to love GOD as we shall do in heaven, were a present obligation, it would have been clearely taught us, what is simply the best action; whereas now that which is *of it self* better, *in certain circumstances* is leſſe perfect, and sometimes not lawfull, and concerning those circumstances we have no rules, nor any guide but prudence, and probable inducements; so that it is certain in our best endeavours, we shoulde onely increase our scruples instead of doing actions of the highest perfections, we should erect a tyranny over our consciences, and no augmentation of any thing but the trouble. And therefore in the Law of *Moses*, when this Commandment was given in the same words, yet that the sense of it might be clear, the analogy of the law declared, that their duty had a latitude, and that GOD was not so strict a task-master, but that he left many instances of piety to the voluntary devotion of his servants, that they might receive the reward of *free-will offerings*. But if these words had obliged them to the greatest degree, that is, to all the degrees of our capacities in every instance; every act of religion had been duty and necessity. And thus also it was in

12

*2 Cor. 11. 8.*

*Ananias and Saphira* were killed by sentence from heaven for not performing what was in their power at first not to have promised; but because they brought an obligation upon themselves, which God brought not, and then prevaricated, they paid the forfeiture of their lives. *S. Paul* took no wages of the Corinthian Churches, but *wrought night and day with his own hand*, but himself sayes he had power to do otherwise. There was laid upon him a necessity to preach, but no necessity to preach without wages and support. There is a *good* and a *better* in virginity & marriage, and yet there is no command in either, but that we abstain from sin; we are left to our own election for the particular, *having no necessity, but power in our wil*. *David* prayed *seven times a day*, and *Daniel* prayed three times, & both were beloved of God. The Christian masters were not bound to manumit their slaves, and yet were commended if they did so. Sometimes the Christians fled in persecution,

*1 Cor. 7. 37.*

tion S. Paul did so, and S. Peter did so, and S. Cyprian did so, and S. Athanasius and many more. But time was, when some of these also chose to suffer death, rather than to fly. And if to fly be a permission & no duty, there is certainly a difference of degrees in the choice: to fly is not so great a suffering as to dye, and yet a man may innocently choose the easier. And our Blessed L O R D himself who never failed of any degree of his obligations, yet at some time prayed with more zeale and fervour then at other times, as a little before his passion: since then at all times he did not do actions of that degree, which is absolutely the greatest, it is evident that G O D S goodness is so great, as to be content with such a love, which parts no share between him and sinne and leaves all the rest under such a liberty, as is only encouraged by those extraordinary rewards, and crownes proportioned to heroicall endeavours. It was a pretty Question, which was moved in the solitudes of Nitria concerning two religious Brothers; the one gave all his goods to the poore at once, the other kept the inheritance and gave all the revenue. None of all the Fathers knew, which was absolutely the better, at once to renounce all, or by a repetition of charitable acts to divide it into portions: One act of charity in an heroicall degree, or an habituall charity in the degree of vertue. This instance is probation enough, that the opinion of such a necessity of doing the best action simply and indefinitely is impossible to be safely acted, because it is impossible to be understood. Two talents shall be rewarded, and so shall five, both in their proportions; *He that sowes sparingly shall reap sparingly, but he shall reap, every man as he purposes in his heart,* so let him give. The best action shall have the best reward, and though he is happiest, who rises highest, yet he is not safest, that enters into the state of disproportion to his person. I find in the lives of the later reputed saints, that S. Teresa made a vow to do every thing, which she should judge to be the best. I will not judge the person, nor censure the action, because possibly her intention, and desires were of greatest sanctity; but whosoever considers the story of her life, and the strange repugnancies in the life of man to such undertakings must needs feare to imitate an action of such danger, and singularity. The advice which in this case is safest to be followed is, that we employ our grearest industry, that we fall not into sinne, and actions of forbidden nature; and then strive by parts, and steps, and with much wariness, in attempering our zeale, to superadde degrees of eminency, and observation of the more perfect instances of sanctity, that doing some excellencies which G O D hath not commanded, he may be the rather moved to pardon our prevaricating so many parts of our necessary duty. If love transport us, and carry us to actions sublime and heroicall, let us follow so good a guide and passe on with diligence, and zeale, and prudence, as farr as love will carry us; but let us not be carried to actions of great eminency and strictnes and unequall severities by scruple, and pretence of duty, least we charge our miscarriages upon God, and call the yoke of the Gospell insupportable, and Christ a hard Task-master. But we shall passe from vertue to vertue with more safety, if a spirituall guide takes us by the hand; onely remebering, that if the Angels themselves, and the beatified soules doe now and shall hereafter differ in degrees of love and glory, it is impossible, the state of imperfection should be confined to the highest love, & the greatest degree, and such as admits no variety, no increment or difference of parts and stations.

Histor. Languac.

Epistel. c. 75.

εἰς τὸν Σατόν  
καὶ τὸν μῆτραν  
τοῦ πονητοῦ  
Σοφοκλῆς Αἰσαρ.

Part II.

13.

2. Our love to GOD consists not in any one determinate degree, but hath such a latitude, as best agrees with the condition of men, who are of variable natures, different affections and capacities, changeable abilities, and which receive their heightnings and declensions according to a thousand accidents of mortality. For when a law is regularly prescribed to persons, whose varieties, and different constitutions cannot be regular or uniforme, it is certain God gives a great latitude of performance, and bindes not to just atomes and points; the laws of GOD are like universall objects received into the faculty, partly by choice, partly by nature; but the variety of perfection is by the variety of the instruments, and disposition of the recipient, and are excelled by each in severall senses, and by themselves at severall times; and so is the practise of our obedience, and the entertainments of the Divine Commandments: for some are of malleable natures, others are morose, some are of healthfull and temperate constitutions, others are lustfull, full of fancy, full of appetite; some have excellent leisure and opportunities of retirement, others are busie in an active life, and cannot with advantages attend to the choice of the better part; some are peaceable and timorous, and some are in all instances serene, others are of tumultuous, and unquiet spirits, and these become opportunities of temptation on one side, and on the other, occasions of a vertue, but every change of faculty, and variety of circumstance hath influence upon morality, and therefore their duties are personally altered, and increase in obligation, or are slackned by necessities according to the infinite alteration of exterior accidents, & interior possibilities.

14.

3. Our love to God must be totally exclusive of an affection to sin, and ingage us upon a great assiduous, and laborious care to resist all temptations, to subdue sin, to acquire the habites of vertues, and live holily, as it is already expressed in the discourse of Repentance. We must preferre GOD as the object of our hopes, we must choose to obey him rather then man, to please him rather then satisfie our selves, and we must do violence to our strongest passions, when they once contest against a Divine Commandment. If our passions are thus regulated, let them be fix'd upon any lawful object whatsoever, if at the same time we preferre heaven, and heavenly things; that is, would rather choose to loose our temporall love, then our eternall hopes (which we can best discerne, by our refusing to sin upon the sollicitation or engagement of the temporall object) then although we feel the transportation of a sensual love towards a Wife or childe, or Friend, actually more pungent and sensible, then passions of religion are; they are lesse perfect, but they are not criminall. Our love to God requires, that we do his commandments, and that we do not sin, but in other things we are permitted in the condition of our nature to be more sensitively mov'd by visiblie then by invisible and spiritual objects. Only this, we must ever have a disposition, and a minde prepared to quit our sensitive and pleasant objects, rather then quit a grace, or commit a sinne. Every act of sinne is against the love of God, and every man does many single actions of hostility, and provocation against him; but the state of the love of God is that, which we actually call the state of grace. When Christ reigns in us, and sin does not reign, but the spirit is quickned, and the lusts are mortified; when we are habitually vertuous, and do acts of piety, temperance and justice, frequently, easilly, cheerfully, and with a successive, constant, morall and humane industry according to the talent which God hath intrusted to us in the banks of nature and grace. Then we are in the love of God: then we love

*love him with all our heart.* But if sin growes upon us, and is committed more frequently, or gets a victory with lesse difficulty, or is obeyed more readily, or enteratained with a freer complacency, then we love not God, as he requires; we divide between him and sin; and God is not the Lord of all our faculties. But the instances of Scripture are the best exposition of this Commandment: For David followed God with all his heart to do that which was right in his eyes; and Josiah turned to the Lord with all his heart, and with all his soule, and with all his might. Both these kings did it, and yet there was some imperfection in David, and more violent recessions; for so saith the Scripture of Josiah, like unto him was there no King before him; from which, these two corollaries are certainly deducible, that to love GOD with all our heart admits variety of degrees, and the lower degree is yet, a love with all our heart, & yet to love God requires a holy life, a diligent walking in the Commandments, either according to the sense of innocence, or of penitence, either by first or second counsels; by the spirit of regeneration, or the spirit of renovation and restitution: The sum is this; the sense of this precept is such as may be reconciled with the infirmities of our nature, but not with a vice in our manners, with the recession of single acts, seldom done, and alwayes disputed against, and long fought with, but not with an habituall aversation or a ready obedience to sin, or an easie victory.

This Commandment being the sum of the first Table, had in Moses Law particular instances, which CHRIST did not insert into his institution, and he added no other particular, but that which we call the third Commandment concerning veneration and reverence to the Name of G O D. The other two, viz. concerning Images and the Sabbath have some speciall

15.

16.

*οὐσοῖς τὰς δικαίους οὐ γλαυ-*

The Jewes received daily offence against the Catechismes of some Churches, who in the recitation of the Decalogue omit the second Commandment, as supposing it to be a part of the first according as we account them; and their offence rises higher, because they observe, that in the New Testa- ment, where the Decalogue is six times repeated in speciall recitation, and in summaries, there is no word prohibiting the making, retaining, or respect of images. Concerning which things Christians consider, that GOD forbade Gigant. Vide Exod. 34. 13. only of the true GOD, or of false and imaginary deities, but of visible creatures; which because it was but of temporary reason, and relative considera- 7. c. v. 10. tion of their aptnesse to superstition \* and their convering with idolatrous Numb. 32. 52. nations, was a command proper to the nation, part of their Covenant, not of \* *Imo et eccles. essentiall, indispensable and eternall reason, nor of that, which we usually sta 8. Novemb. call the law of nature.* Of which also GOD gave testimony, because himself celebrat Mar. commanded the signes and reprentement of Seraphim, to be set upon the tyrium Claudiis Mercy-seat, toward which the Priest and the people made their addresses in Nicostrati & their religious adorations; and of the brasen Serpent, to which they lookt, *sociorum, qui cum peritissimi* when they called to God for help against the sting of the venomous snakes. These instances tell us, that to make pictures or statues of creatures is not fuerant statu- against a naturall reason, and that they may have uses, which are profitable, as *arii mortem* well as he abused to danger, &c superstition. Now although the nature of that potius ferre, people was apt to the abuse, and their entercourse with the nations in their quam Gentili- confines was too great an invitation to entertain the danger, yet Christianity bus simulachra hath so farre removed that danger, by the analogy and designe of the reli- facere maluer- gion runt.

## Part II.

gion, by clear doctrines, revelations, and infinite treasures of wisdom, and demonstrations of the spirit, that our blessed Law-giver thought it not necessary to remove us from superstition by a prohibition of the use of images, and pictures. And therefore left us to the sense of the great commandment, and the dictates of right reason, to take care, that we do not dishonour the invisible G O D with visible representations of what we never saw, nor cannot understand; nor yet convey any of G O D S incommunicable worship in the forenamed instances to any thing but himself. And for the matter of images we have no other rule left us in the new testament; the rules of reason and nature, and the other parts of the institution are abundantly sufficient for our security. And possibly Saint Paul might relate to this, when he affirmed concerning the fift, that *it was the first Commandment with promise*. For in the second Commandment to the Jews, as there was a great threatening, so also a greater promise of shewing mercy to a thousand generations. But because the body of this Commandment was not transcribed into the Christian Law, the fift of the Decalogue, which we retain, and in which a promise is inserted, is the fift Commandent. And therefore the wisdome of the Church was remarkeable in the variety of sentences concerning the permission of images. At first, when they were blended in the danger, and impure mixtures of Gentilisme, and men were newly recovered from the snare, and had the reliques of a long custome to superstitious and false worshippings, they endured no images, but neerly civill; but as the danger ceased, and Christianity prevailed, they found, that pictures had a naturall use of good concernment, to move lese knowing people by the representement and declaration of a story; and then they knowing themselves permitted to the liberties of Christianity and the restraints of nature and reason, and not being still weak under prejudice, and childish dangers; but fortified by the excellency of a wise religion, took them into lawfull uses; doing honour to Saints, as unto the absent Emperours according to the custome of the Empire; they erected statues to their honour, and transcribed a history, and sometimes a precept into a table, by figures making more lasting impressions, then by words and sentences; while the Church stood within these limits she had naturall reason for her warrant, and the custome of the severall countreyes, and no precept of C H R I S T to countermand it; They, who went further were unreasonabile, and according to the degree of that excelle were superstitious.

37.

*τοις ἀσεβοῖς οὐ κανόμενοῖς οὐ διωρθώσασιν οὐ τελον. Philo de legatione. Prioribus 170 annis templis*

*quidem adscibabant [Romani] simulachrum vero nullum effigiatum faciebant, perinde atque nefas esset meliora per deteriorum similitudines exprimere, Plutarch. Numa. Ταῦτα οὐ τούτοις, μόνον Διοτί απόκρινοι οὐδέ πατεράς οὐ γλωσσά οὐ διάλογος οὐ καλλίμουσος οὐ κόσμος οὐ τέλος τούτων φυγον. τέτοιο τούτῳ εἰς τὸν αἰδητόν Σαφοῖς τὸν ἔχον, ιδεισι τὸν ταῦτα οὐδὲν; αὐτοὶ διαι ταῦτα γνωστούσιν, πηγαὶ θεοῖς προσείσθαι οὐ συνει. οὐδέποτε τετέλει οὐδεὶς καθεῖ. Strabo. l. 16.*

superstitions

shippings to no GOD, but the GOD of the Christians, that is, of all the world; and not to do this in, or before an image of him, because he cannot be represented. For the images of CHRIST and his Saints, they come not into either of the two considerations, and we are to understand our duty by the proportions of our reverence to G O D, expressed in the great Commandment. Our Fathers in Christianity, as I obserued now, made no scruple of using the images and pictures of their Princes, and learned men; which the Jewes understood to be forbidden to them in the Commandment; Then they admitted even in the utensils of the Church some calctures and engravings. Such was that *Tertullian* speaks of, *The good Shepherd in the chalice*; afterwards they admitted pictures, but not before the time of *Constantine*, for in the Councell of *Eliberis*, they were forbidden; and in succession of time the scruples lessened with the danger, and all the way they signified their belief to be, that this Commandment was onely so farre retained by CHRIST, as it relied upon naturall reason, or was a particular instance of the great Commandment, that is, images were forbidden, where they did dishonour GOD, or lessen his reputation, or estrange our duties, or became Idols, or the direct matter of superstitions observances, charmes, or senselesse confidences; but they were permitted to represent the humanity of Christ, to remember Saints and Martyrs, to recount a story, to imprint a memory, to doe honour and reputation to absent persons, and to be the instruments of a relative civility and esteem. But in this particular, infinite care is to be taken of scandall, and danger, of a forward and zealous ignorance; or of a mistaking and peevish confidence; and where a societie hath such persons in it, the little good of images must not be violently retained with the greater danger and certain offence of such persons, of whom consideration is to be had in the cure of soules. I only adde this, that the first Christians made no scruple of saluting the statues of their Princes, and were confident, it made no intrenchment upon the naturall prohibition contained in this Commandment; because they had observed, that exterior inclinations, and addresses of the body, though in the lowest manner, were not proper to God but in Scripture found also to be communicated to Creatures, to Kings, to Prophets, to parents, to religious persons; and because they found it to be death to do affront to the pictures and statues of their Emperors, they concluded in reason (which they also saw verified by the practise and opinion of all the world) that the respect they did at the Emperours statue was accepted as a veneration to his person; but these things are but sparingly to be drawne into religion, because the customes of this world are altered, and their opinions new; and many who have not weak understandings, have weak consciences; and the necessity for the entertainment of them is not so great, as the offence is or may be.

*Thou shalt not take the Name of the Lord thy God in vain.]* This our blessed Saviour repeating expresses it thus, It hath been said to them of old time, *Thou shalt not forswear thy self;* to which CHRIST addes out of Numb. 30. 2. *But thou shalt perform thy oaths unto the Lord.* The meaning of the one we are taught by the other. We must not invocate the Name of GOD in any promise in vain, that is, with a lye, which happens either out of levity, that we change our purpose, which at first we really intended; or when our intention at that instant was fallacious, and contradictory to the undertaking. This is to take the Name of G O D, that is, to use it, to take it into our mouths

Gen. 48. 12.  
Gen. 23. 12.  
G 27. 29.  
G 42. 6.  
I Sam. 20. 41.  
I King. 1. 16.

18.

3. Commandm.

## Part II.

*Psal. 12. 2.**Psal. 24. 4.*

Ἐκ ἔλεψεν τὸν  
μαρτυρὸν τῷ  
Ἀγγέλῳ αὐτοῦ·  
μαρτυρεῖ δὲ καὶ  
λαῖς θεοὺς φεύ-  
γειν τὸν ἀνθρώ-  
πον· *Philo.*

*Psal. 63. 11.**1 Sam. 20. 17.**Isai. 19. 18.**ἀπλάσας ἐστι**τὸς ἀνθρώπου**ἐπι. Eschyl.**ἐπλαστήρες.**Mart. L. 11. ep.**95.**Ecce negas jus-**ta. q. e. nisi per**Te ipsa Tonans-**is,**Non credo,**jura. Verpe per**Anchialum, id**est, per Elohim**Hebraorum. v. 12**de Harmenopu-**lum in Flin. l. 5.**c. 27. & Scalig.**de epend. tem. in**append. libro-**rum.**Μὴ περιττῶς**κατατείχης**τοι. iquarum,**ανατείχης τοι.**περιττωρυγαν-**τοι. Interp. in**Homer.**Euseb. lib. 6.**bift. cap. 4.**19.**Vide Ecclius.**23. 9. 11. 13.*

mouthes for vanity ; that is , according to the perpetuall style of Scripture , for a lye. Every one hath spoken vanity to his neighbour , that is , he hath lyed unto him : for so it followes , with flattering lips , and with a double heart ; and swearing deceitfully is by the Psalmist called lifting up his soul unto vanity. And Philo the Jew , who well understood the Law , and the language of his nation , renders the sense of this Commandment to be to call GOD to witnesse to a lye , and this is to be understood onely in promises ; for so CHRIST explains it by the appendix out of the Law , thou shalt performe thy Oaths : For , lying in judgement , which is also with an oath , or taking GODS name for witnesse , is forbidden in the ninth Commandment. To this , CHRIST added a further restraint ; for whereas by the naturall law it was not unlawfull to swear by any oath that implied not idolatry , or the belief of a false GOD , ( I say ) any grave and prudent oath , when they spake a grave truth : and whereas it was lawfull for the Jewes in ordinary enercourse to swear by GOD , so they did not swear to a lye ( to which also swearing to an impertinency might be reduced by a proportion of reason ; ) For they , that swear by him , shall be commended , said the Psalmist ; and , swearing to the LORD of Hosts , is called , speaking the language of Canaan : Molt of this was rescinded ; CHRIST forbad all swearing , not onely swearing to a lye , but also swearing to a truth in common affairs , not onely swearing commonly by the Name of GOD ; but swearing commonly by heaven , and by the earth , by our head , or by any other oath ; onely let our speech be yea , or nay , that is plainly affirming or denying. In these , I say , CHRIST corrected the licence , and vanities of the Jews and Gentiles. The Jews accounted it religion to name GOD , and therefore would not swear by him , but in more solemne occasions ; but in trifles , and ordinary occurrences , they would swear by their Fathers , or the light of heaven , or the ground they trod on. And the Greekes were also carefull not to swear by the gods lightly , much lesse fallacionly ; but they would swear by any thing about them , or neere them , upon an occasion as vain as their Oath. But because these oaths are either indirectly to be referred to GOD , ( and CHRIST instances in divers ) or else they are but a vain testimony : or else they give a Divine honour to a Creature by making it a Judge of truth , and discerner of spirits , therefore CHRIST seems to forbid all formes of swearing whatsoeuer : In pursuance of which law , Basilius being converted at the prayers of Potamiana a Virgin Martyr , and required by his fellow souldiers to swear upon some occasion then happening , answered , it was not lawfull for him to swear , for he was a Christian , and many of the Fathers have followed the wordsof CHRIST in so severe a sene , that their words seeme to admit no exception .

But here a grain of salt must be taken least the letter destroy the spirit. First it is certain the holy J E S U S forbade a custome of swearing ; it being great irreligion to despise and lessen the Name of GOD , which is the instrument and conveyance of our adorations to him , so as to make it common and applicable to trifles , and ordinary accidents of our life. He that swears often , many times swears false , and however layes by , that reverence , which being due to GOD , the Scripture determines it to be due at his Name : his Name is to be loved and feared. And therefore CHRIST commands that our communication

be

be yea, yea, or nay, i. ay, that is our ordinary discourses should be simply affirmative or negative. 2. Not only customary swearing is forbidden, but all swearing upon a slight cause. S. Basil upbraides some Christians his contemporaries with example of *Clinias* the Pythagorean, who, rather than he would sweare, suffered a mulct of three talents. And all the followers of Pythagoras admitted no oath, unlesse the matter were grave, necessary, and charitable ; and the wisest and gravest persons among the Heathens were very severe in their Counsels concerning oaths. 3. But there are some cases in which the interest of Kingdomes and bodies politick, peace and confederacies require the sanction of promissory oaths, and they whom we are bound to obey, and who may kill us if we doe not, require that their interests be secured by an oath ; and that in this case, and all that are equal, our blessed Saviour did not forbid oaths, is certain, not only by the example of Christians, but of all the world before and since this prohibition, understanding it to be of the nature of such naturall bands and securities, without which Common-wealths in some cases are not easily combined, and therfore to be a thing necessary & therefore not to be forbidden. Now what is by Christians to be esteemed a slight cause, we may determine by the account, we take of other things. The glory of GOD is certainly no light matter, and therefore when that is evidently and certainly concerned, not phantaftically, and by vain and imaginary consequences, but by prudent, and true estimation, then that we may lawfully sweare, we have S. Paul's example, who well understood the precept of his Master, and is not to be supposed, easily to have done any violence to it ; but yet we finde religious affirmations, and God invoked for witness, *as a record upon his soul*, in his Epistles to the Romans, Galatians, and Corinthians. But these oaths were only assertory. Tertullian affirmeth, that Christians refused to swear by the Genius of the Prince, because it was a Daemon ; but they sware by his health, and their solemne oath was by GOD and CHRIST, and the Holy Spirit, and the Majesty of the Emperour. The Fathers of the Ephesin Councell made Nestorius and Victor sweare, and the Bishops at Chalcedon swore by the health of their Princes. But as S. Paul did it, when the glory of GOD was concerned in it, and the interest of soules ; so the Christians used to swear in a cause of piety, and religion, in obedience, and upon publick command, or for the ends of charity and justice ; but this they never did in the causes of justice or charity, but when they were before a Magistrate : Or if it were in a cause of Religion, and in matters of promise, they did it not, but to or in communities and societies, obliging themselves by oath not to commit wickednesse, robberies, sacrilege, not to deceive their trust, not to detain the pledge, which rather was an act of direct entercourse with GOD, then a solemne or religious obligation to man ; which very thing Pliny also reports of the Christians.

The summe is this, since the whole subject matter of this precept is oaths promissory or vowes ; all promises with oaths are regularly forbidden to Christians, unlesse they be made to GOD, or GOVS the Vicegerent in a matter not trifling. For in the first case a promise made to GOD, and a swearing by GOD to performe the promise, to him is *μηροί τέτοιε* all one ; For the Name of GOD being the instrument and determination of *μηροί πονηροί* all our addressees, we cannot be supposed to speak to God without using of his *κατηπτόντος*. Name explicitely or by implication ; and therefore he that promises to God, S. Basil. I. de. H h 2 makes Spir. S.;

Rom. I. 9.

2 Cor. II. 31.

Gal. I. 20.

20.

Tὸν μὲν καὶ τὸν εὐ<sup>ναθεῖσαν θεόν</sup>,  
αλλ' οὐτε τῷ  
κατίσιον τὸν  
αἰγαῖον οὐ καν-

θεῖα, οὐτε τὸν  
οχατὸν οὐδὲ τὸν  
την τοντούσιαν τό-

τοντούσιαν τόντοντον  
τοντούσιαν τόντοντον  
τοντούσιαν τόντοντον

## Part II.

*Necessitas magnum humanæ imbecillitatis præsidium; quicquid cogit excusat.* Senec.

makes a promise and uses GODS name in the promise ; the promise it self being in the nature of prayer or *solemne invocation* of G O D. In the second case, when the publike necessity requires it, of which we are not Judges, but are under authority, we finde the lawfullnesse by being bound to believe, or not to contradict the pretence of its necessity ; onely care is to be taken, that the matter be grave or religious, that is, it is to be esteemed, and presumed so by us, if the oath be imposed by our lawfull superiors, and to be cared for by them ; or else it is so to be provided for by our selves, when our entercourse is with G O D, as in vowed and promises passed to GOD ; being carefull, that we doe not offer to G O D Goats haire, or the fumes of Mushromes, or the blood of Swine, that is, things either impious or vain. But in our communication, that is, in our ordinary entercourse with men, we must promise by simple testimony, not by religious adjurations, though a creature be the instrument of the oath.

21.

Neb. 6. 16.

But this forbids not asserty Oaths at all, or depositing in judgement, for this CHRIST speaks not here, it being the proper matter of another Commandment ; and since (as S. Paul affirms) *an oath is the end of all controvrsie*, and that the necessity of Common-wealts requires that a period should be fixed to questions, and a rule for the neerest certainty for judgement, whatsoever is necessary is not unlawfull, and CHRIST, who came to knit the bonds of government faster by the stricture of more religious tyes, cannot be understood to have given precepts to dissolve the instruments of judicature, and prudent government. But concerning asserty Oaths, although they are not forbidden, but supposed in the 9. Commandment to be done before our Judges in the cause of our Neighbour ; yet because they are onely so supposed, and no way else mentioned by permission, or intimation ; therefore they are to be estimated by the proportions of this precept concerning Promissory oaths, they may be taken in judgement and righteousness ; but never lightly, never extrajudicially ; only a lese cause, so it be judiciall may authorize an asserty, then a promissory Oath. Because many cases occurr, in which Peace and Justice may be concerned, which without an Oath are indeterminable. But there are but few necessities to confirm a Promise by an Oath : And therefore the reverence of the Name of GOD ought not to be intreached upon in accidents of little or no necessity ; GOD not having made many necessities in this case, would not in the matter of Promise give leave to use his name, but when an extraordinary case happens. An Oath in Promises is of no use for ending questions, and giving judiciall sentences. And the faith of a Christian, and the word of a just person will doe most of the work of promises ; And it is very much to the disreputation of our religion, or our selves if we fall into hypocrisy and deceit, or if a Christian asseveration were not of value equall with an Oath. And therefore C H R I S T forbidding Promissory Oaths, and commanding so great simplicity of spirit and honesty, did consonantly to the designe, and Perfection of his Institution, \* intending to make us

\* Μὴ ἐμπιπτεῖς  
δοῦλος τοχῆσθαι  
αὐτὸν δοῦλον  
ζητῶντος παρί-

Hierocl. vide Marc. Anton. in descriptione viri boni. l. 3. μὴ δοῦλον παρί-  
ταξεῖται, οὐτε εστις ; triplex est: ita Scil. ut facta dictis respondere iustorum sit. Καὶ οὐτοι-  
λέγοντος ἡ "ερμηνεία λόγου" φύσει τὸ ἀντίστοιχον "τοις αἰνθένεσιν" οὐκ ἔχει  
ἔργον εἶναι τομήσασθαι. Philo. Verbum Sacerdotis ] apud Christianæ Ecclesiæ ministros etiam hodie  
manet loco juramenti. Ad eundem sensum apud antiquos fuerunt verba illa pratoris ex dicto perpetuo.  
[ Sacerdotem vestalem, & Flaminem Dialem in omni mea jurisdictione jurare non cogam ] A. Gell.  
l. 10. c. 15.

so just and sincere, that our religion being infinite obligation to us, our own promises should passe for bond enough to others, and the Religion receive great honour by being esteemed a sufficient security and instrument of publick entercourse. But I have a caution to insert for each, which I propound as an humble advice to persons eminent, and publikely interested.

1. That Princes, and such as have power of decreeing the injunction of promissory Oaths, be very curius and reserved, not lightly enjoying such Promises ; neither in respect of the matter trivial, nor yet frequently, nor without great reason enforcing. The matter of such promises must be onely what is already matter of duty, or Religion ; for else the matter is not grave enough for the calling of GOD to testimony ; but when it is a matter of duty, then the oath is no other then a vow or promise made to GOD in the presence of men. And because Christians are otherwise very much obliged to do all which is their duty, in matters both civill and religious, of obedience and piety, therefore it must be an instant necessity, and a great cause to superinduce such a confirmation, as derives from the so sacredly invoking the Name of GOD ; it must be when there is great necessity that the duty be actually performed, and when the supreme power either hath not power sufficient to punish the delinquent, or may misse to have notice of the delict : For in these cases it is reasonable to bind the faith of the obliged persons by the feare of GOD after a more especiall manner ; but else there is no reason sufficient to demand of the subject any further security, then their own faith and contract. The reasons of this advice relies upon the strictnesse of the words of this Precept against promissory oaths, and the reverence we owe to the name of GOD. Oathes of Allegiance are fit to be imposed in a troubled state, or to a mutinous people : But it is not so fit to tye the people by Oath to abstain from transports of Metall, or grain, or leather, from which by penalties they are with as much security, and lesse suspition of iniquity restrained.

2 Concerning afftertory oaths, and depositions in judgement, although a greater liberty may be taken in the subject matter of the oath, and we may being required to it, sweare in judgement, though the cause be a question of money, or our interest, or the rights of a society, And S. Athanasius purged himself by oath before the Emperour Constantius : yet it were a great pursuance and security of this part of Christian Religion, if in no case contrary oaths might be admitted, in which it is certain one part is perjured to the ruine of their soules, to the intricating of the judgement, to the dishonour of Religion ; but that such rules of prudence and reasonable presumption be established, that upon the oath of that party, which the Law shall choose, and upon probable grounds shall presume for, the sentence may be established. For by a small probability there may a surer judgement be given, then upon the confidence of contradictory oaths, and after the sin the Judge is left to the uncertainty of conjectures as much as if but one part had sworne, and to much more, because such an oath is by the consent of all men accepted as a rule to determine in judgement. By these discourses we understand the intention of our blessed Master in this precept ; and I wish by this or any thing else men would be restrained from that low, cheap, unreasonable and unexcusable vice of customary swearing, to which we have nothing to invite us, that may lessen the iniquity ; for which we cannot pretend temptation, nor alledge infirmity, but it begins by wretchednesse.

Part II.

nesse, and a malicious carelesnesse, and is continued by the strength of habit, and the greatest immeasurly of folly. And I consider, that Christian Religion being so holy an institution, to which we are invited by so great promises, in which we are instructed by so clear revelations, and to the performance of our duties compelled by the threatnings of a sad and insupportable eternity, should more then sufficiently endeare the performance of this duty to us. The name of a Christian is a high and potent antidote against all sin, if we considered aright the honour of the name, the undertaking of our Covenant, and the reward of our duty. The Jewes eate no swines flesh, because they are of *Moses*, and the Turkes drink no wine, because they are Mahumetans, and yet we sweare for all we are Christians, then which there is not in the world a greater conviction of our basenesse and irreligion. Is the authority of holy JESUS so despicable, are his Lawes so unreasonable, his rewards so little, his threatnings so small, that we must needs in contempt of all this, prophane the great Name of G O D, and trample under foot the Lawes of JESUS, and cast away the hopes of heaven, and enter into security to be possessed by hell torments for swearing, that is, for speaking like a foole, without reason, without pleasure, without reputation, much to our disesteem, much to the trouble of civil and wise persons, with whom we joyne in society and entercourse? Certainly hell will be heat seven times hotter for a customary swearer, and every degree of his unreasonableness will give him a new degree of torment, when he shall finde himself in flames for being a stupid, an Atheistical, an irreligious fool. This onely I desire should be observed, that our blessed Master forbids not onely swearing by GOD, but by any creature; for every oath by a creature does involve and tacitely relate to GOD. And therefore, saith

*'Omnis dicitur  
eius dicitur omnis  
enim deus.'*

*Sophoc. Menal.*

*Qui per salu-*

*rem suam jurat,*

*Deum jurare*

*videtur: re-*

*spectu enim di-*

*vini nominis*

*jurat, Ulpian*

*J. C.*

*Concil. Chalc.*

*e. 25.*

*2 King. 2.2.*

*1 Cor. 15.31.*

*Vide supra,*

*num. 19.*

*Per tua jura-*

*ressacra, tu-*

*unque caput,*

*Mart.*

CHRIST, *Sweare not by heaven*, for it is the throne of GOD; and he that sweareth by the throne of G O D, sweareth by it, and by him that sitteth thereon. So that it is not a leſſe matter to swear by a creature, then to swear by GOD, for a creature cannot be the instrument of testimony, but as it is a relative to God, and it by implication calls the God of that creature to witness. So that although in such cases, in which it is permitted to swear by God, we may in those cases exprefse our oath in the forme of advocating and calling the creature [as did the primitive Christians swearing by the health of their Emperour, and as Joseph swearing by the life of Pharaoh, and as Eliſha swearing by the life of Elias, and as did S. Paul, protesting by the rejoicing he had in JESUS CHRIST, and as we in our formes of swearing in Courts of judicature touch the Gospels, saying, So help me GOD, and the contents of this Book; And in a few ages lately past, Bishops and Priests sometime swore upon the Croſſe, ſometimes upon the Altar, ſometimes by their Holy Order] yet we muſt remember that this in other words and ceremonies is but a calling GOD for witness. And he that ſweares by the Croſſe, ſweares by the Holy Crucifix, that is, JESUS crucified thereon, and therefore theſe and the like formes are therefore not be uſed in ordinary communication because they relate to GOD, they are as obligatory as the immediate invocation of his holineſſe and Majestie; and it was a Judaicall vanity to think ſwearing by Creatures was leſſe obliging: they are just with the ſame reſtraints made to be Religious as the moſt ſolemne invocation of the Holy and reverend Name of G O D; lawfull or unlawfull as the other; unleſſe the ſwearing by a Creature come to be ſpoiled.

spoiled by some other intervening circumstance, that is, with a denying it to relate to GOD; for then it becomes superstition, as well as profanation, and it gives to a creature, what is proper to GOD, or when the Creature is contemptible, or lesse then the gravity of the matter, as if a man should swear by a fly, or the shadow of a tree; or when there is an indecorum in the thing, or somthing that does at too great distance relate to God: for that which with greatest vicinity referres to God in severall religions is the best instrument of an oath, and nearest to Gods honour, as in Christianity are the holy Sacrament, the Crosse, the Altar, and the Gospells, and therefore too great a distance may be an indecency next to a disparagement. This onely may be added to this consideration, that although an oath, which is properly calling God or GODs relative into testimony is to be understood according to the former Discourse, yet there may be great affirmations or negations respectively, and confirmed by formes of vehement asseveration, such as the customes of a nation, or consent shall agree upon, and those do in some cases promote our belief, or confirme our pretensions better then a plain yea, or no: because by such consent the person renders himselfe infamous if he breaks his word or trust; and although this will not come under the restraint of CHRISTS words, because they are not properly oaths, but circumstances of earnest affirmation or negation, yet these are humane attestations, introduced by custome or consent, and as they come not under the notion of swearing, so they are formes of testimony, and collaterall engagement of a more strict truth.

The H. JESUS having specified the great commandment of loving GOD with all our heart, in this one instance of hallowing, and keeping his name sacred, that is, from prophane and common talk, and lesse prudent, and unnecessary entercourses, instanced in no other commandment of Moses; but Ignat. ep. ad Magnes. having frequent occasion to speake of the sabbath, for ever expresses his owne dominion over the Day, and that he had dissolved the bands of Moses καὶ μετὰ τὸν in this instance; that now we were no more obliged to that rest, which the οὐαβάσιον ἦσθι, Jewes religiously observed by prescript of the Law; & by divers acts against ταῦτα μᾶς οἱ securities of the then received practices did defecrate the day, making it a οἰδόχησις τὸ τε broken yoke, and the first great instance of Christian liberty. And when the κυριακῶν. <sup>23.</sup> Apostle gave instructions that no man should judge his Brother in a holy day or διαζωτος πάντων New moones or the sabbath dayes he declared all the Judaicall feasts to be obliterated by the spunge, which Jesus tasted on the Crosse; it was within γενή. Diog. the Manuscript of ordinances, and there it was cancelled. And there was Clem. Apost. nothing morall in it, but that we do honour to God for the creation, and Constit. I. 7. c. to that and all other purposes of religion, separate & hallow some portion of 24. & lib. 8. our time. The Primitive Church kept both \* the sabbath and the Lords day Tertul. Monog. till the time of the Laodicean Council, about 300 years after Christs nativity, & almost in every thing made them equal, and therfore did not esteem Canon. Apost. the Lords day to be substituted in the place of the obliterated sabbath, but 65. Et Zonar. in eund. a feast celebrated by great reason, and perpetual consent without precept or Vide etiam Sy- necessary Divine injunction. But the liberty of the Church was great; they nod. Laodic. found themselves disobligered from that strict and necessary rest, which was one great part of the Sabbatick rites, only they were glad of the occasion to meet often for offices of Religion, and the day served well for the gaining and facilitating the conversion of the Jewes, and for the honourable sepulture of Synagogue, it being kept so long, like the fourty dayes mourning

## Part II.

24.

of Israel for the death of their Father Jacob; but their liberty they improved not to license but as an occasion of more frequent assemblies. And there is something in its for us to imitate, even to sanctify the name of God in the great worke of the Creation, reading his praises in the booke of his Creature, and taking all occasions of religious acts and offices though in none of the Jewish circumstances.

Concerning the observation of the L O R D S Day which now the Church observes and ever did in remembrance of the resurrection because it is a day of positive and Ecclesiastical institution, it is fit that the Church, who instituted the day shold determine the manner of its observation. It was set apart in honour of the resurrection, and it were not ill if all Churches, would into the weekly offices put some, memoriall of that mystery that the reason of the festivall might be remembred with the day, and G O D thanked with the renning of the Offices. But because religion was the designe of the feast, and leisure was necessary for religion, therefore to abstaine from \* suits of Law and servile workes but such works

\* Ferijs iurgia amovento, easq[ue] in famulis operibus patratis habento. Cicer. de leg.l.2.

<sup>2</sup> Quippe etiam festis quadam exercere diebus Fas et jura si-nunt, ritus de-ducente nulla Religio vetuit, segetj præten-dere sepem, Insidias avibus moliri, incende-re vepres, Balantumq[ue] gem fluvo mersare salubrij virgil.apud Macrob.

De ferociâ Ti-berij dedit testimonium Tacitus.l. 3. Annal. his verbis. Quem ne diem vacuum parâ? ubi inter sacra et vota, quo tempore uerbis etiam profanis abstinerj mos esset, vincula et laqueus inducantur. οὐδὲν ἡδὺ πλάσιον ἢ τὸ τεῖχον τοῦ τείχους. Thucyd.l. 1. S. Ignat. ep. ad Magnes. Εἰς τὸν εὐθύνατον πρωγόλικον, μετὰ τιμῆς γέλων, καὶ σωματικῶν αἵτησι, διμερεῖα δὲς Σαββάτου, ἐχ' εἰσαὶ τὸν, γνωστὴν πίνακα τοῦ μεταφυσικοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ ἵζεται ἡ κράτος νοῦς τοῦ ἴχνους χαρπα.

Honour thy Father, and thy Mother] This Commandment Christ made

De ferociâ Ti-berij dedit testimonium Tacitus.l. 3. Annal. his verbis. Quem ne diem vacuum parâ? ubi inter sacra et vota, quo tempore uerbis etiam profanis abstinerj mos esset, vincula et laqueus inducantur. οὐδὲν ἡδὺ πλάσιον ἢ τὸ τεῖχον τοῦ τείχους. Thucyd.l. 1. S. Ignat. ep. ad Magnes. Εἰς τὸν εὐθύνατον πρωγόλικον, μετὰ τιμῆς γέλων, καὶ σωματικῶν αἵτησι, διμερεῖα δὲς Σαββάτου, ἐχ' εἰσαὶ τὸν, γνωστὴν πίνακα τοῦ μεταφυσικοῦ θεοῦ, καὶ ἵζεται ἡ κράτος νοῦς τοῦ ἴχνους χαρπα.

S. Aug. tract.4.in Johan.

Judei serviliter observant diem sabbathi, ad luxuriam, ad ebrietatem. Quanto melius farnice egrum lanam facerent quam illo die in Menianis saltarent? Et in Psal. 92. idem fere.

also to be Christian by his frequent repetition and mention of it in his Sermons and lawes , and so ordered it, that it should be the band of civil government , and society. In the Decalogue G O D sets this Precept immediately after the duties that concern himself, our duty to Parents being in the confines with our duty to GOD, the parents being in order of nature next to God, the cause of our being and production, & the great Almoners of eternity, conveying to us the essences of reasonable Creatures , and the charities of heaven. And when our blessed Saviour in a Sermon to the Pharisees spake of duty to Parents, he rescued it from the impediments of a vain tradition, and secured this Duty, though against a pretence of religion towards God, telling us that God would not himselfe accept a gift , which we tooke from our Parents needles. This duty to parents is the very firmament and band of common wealths. He that honours his Parents will also love his Brethren \* derived from the same loins , he will dearely account of all his relatives, and persons of the same cognition, and so families are vntited, and of them cities and societies are framed. And because Parents and Patriarks of families, and of nations had regall power, they who by any change succeeded in the care and government of cities and kingdoms, succeeded in the power and authority of Fathers, and became so in estimate of Law, and true Divinity, to all their people. So that the Duty here commanded is due to all our Fathers in the sense of Scripture and Lawes, not onely to our naturall but to our civill Fathers, that is, to Kings, and Governours. And the Scripture addes, Mothers, for they also being instruments of the blessing are the objects of the Duty. The duty is, Honour, that is, Reverence, and support , if they shall need it. And that which our blessed Saviour calls, not honouring our Parents in S. Mathew, is called in S. Marke, doing nothing for them; & [ Honour ] is expounded by S. \* Paul to be maintenance as well as reverence. Then we honour our Parents, if with great readinesse we minister to their necessities, and communicate our estate, and attend them in sicknesses, and supply their wants, and as much as lyes in us, give them support , who gave us being.

VI. Command. Thou shalt doe no murder ] so it was said to them of old time. οὐαὶ βαστάζεις  
He that kills shalbe guilty of judgement, that is, he is, to dye by the sentence οὐαὶ θέντος  
of the Judge. To this Christ makes an appendix, but I say unto you, he that is *peculiar*, οὐαὶ χρηστὸς  
*angry with his Brother* [ without a cause ] shalbe in danger of the judgement; This *in* *χρηστοῖς*  
addition of our blessed Saviour, as all the other , which are severer explications of the Law than the Jewes admitted , was directed against the vaine *in* *μείζων*  
and imperfect opinion of the Lawyers, who thought to be justified by their *συνεδρίῳ*. *Hieroc.*  
external works, supposing, if they were innocent in matter of fact, God would *26.*  
require no more of them than Man did , and what by custome or silence of *Levit. 24.21.*  
the lawes was not punishable by the Judge, was harmlesse before GOD; and *Levit. 24.21.*  
this made them to trust in the letter, to neglect the duties of repentance, to *Num. 35. 16.*  
omitt asking pardon for their secret irregularities, and the obliquities and *17.*  
versations of their spirits; and this S. Paul also complaines of, that neglecting *Rom. 10.3.*  
the righteousness of GOD, they sought to establish their own, that is, according to Mans judgement. But our blessed Saviour tells them, that such an innocence is not enough ; G O D requires more then conformity, and observation of the fact , and exterior piety , placing justice not in legall innocency, or not being condemned in judgement of the Law, and humane judicature , but in the righteousness of the spirit also; for the first acquits us before man, but by this we shall be held upright in judgement before

Ο λαύρων τοι  
πατέρων τοι εἰσήγει,  
μεταβοτικών τοι  
τὰ διαφορικά,  
Menand.

Εὐαγγελίον Τιον  
μητρίου τοι εἰσήγει,  
γεννητον εἰ τη  
ζωτικότερον.

De parentibus  
dixit Philo ad  
Decal.

I. i. extento  
Froculejus ζενον  
Notus in fratres  
animi paterni.  
Illum ager pen-  
nus meruente Sol-  
vi fama super-  
stes. Horat. carm.  
1.2. od. 2.

Necessaria præsi-  
dia vita deben-  
tur his maxime.  
Cicer. offic. 7.

Math. 15.6.  
Mar. 7.12.

\* 1 Tim. 5.18.  
γρεῖς πεπονισμένοις

## Part II.

fore the Judge of all the world. And therefore besides abstinence from murder, or actuall wounds, C H R I S T forbids all anger [without cause] against our Brother, that is, against any man.

27.

*S. Hieron. epist. ad Demetriad. Senecalib. 2. de ira. c. 4.*

By which note the first motions are forbidden, the twinklings of the eye as the Philosophers call them, the pro-passions, and sudden and irresistible alterations; for it is impossible to prevent them, unless we could give our selves a new nature, any more then we can refuse to winke with our eye, when a sudden blow is offered at it, or refuse to yawn when I see a yawning sleepy person, but by frequent and habituall mortification, and by continual watchfulness, and standing in readinesse against all inadvertencies, we shall lessen the inclination, and account fewer sudden irreptions. A wise and meek person shoud not kindle at all, but after violent and great collission; and then, if like a flint he sends a sparke out, it must as soon be extinguished as it shewes, and cool as soon as sparkle. But however, the sinne is not in the naturall disposition. But when we entertain it, though it be, as *Seneca* expresses it, *cum voluntate non contumaci*, without a determination of revenge, then it begins to be a sinne. Every indignation against the person of the Man, in us is pride and self-love, and towards others ungentleness, and an immorigerous spirit. Which is to be understood, when the caule is not sufficient, or when the anger continueth longer, or be excessive in the degrees of its proportion.

28.

The caules of allowable anger are, when we see G O D dishonoured, or a sinne committed. In such cases we may be angry. But then we may also sinne, if we exceed in time, or measure of degree.

29.

*Leontius Cypro-*  
*rnum Episc. in vi-*  
*tat ipsius. c. 14.*

The proportion of time Saint *Paul* expresses, by not letting the sunne set upon our anger. *Leontius Patricius* was one day extremely and unreasonably angry with *John* the Patriarch of Alexandria; at Evening the Patriarch sent a servant to him with this message, *Sir, the Sunne is set*: upon which Patricius reflecting, and the grace of G O D making the impression deepe, visible, and permanent, he threw away his anger, and became wholly subject to the counsell and ghostly aides of the Patriarch. The meaning is, that it be no more but a transient Passion, not permanent at all, but that the anger against the man passe into indignation against the crime, and pity of the person, till the pity growes up into endeavours to help him. For an angry violent and disturbed man is like that white bramble of Judea, of which *Josephus* reports, that it is set on fire by impetuoues windes, and consumes it self, and burns the neighbour plants; and the evill effects of a violent, and passionate anger, are so great, so dangerous, so known to all the world, that the very consideration of them is the best argument in the world to dispute against it, families and kingdomes have suffered horrid calamities, and whatsoever is violent in art or nature, hath been made the instrument of sadness in the hands of anger.

30.

*Irr. Thyesten extio gravi stra-*  
*vere : & altis ur-*  
*bibus ultimæ ste-*  
*tere causæ cur-*  
*perirent Fundi-*  
*us, imprimere-*  
*que maris Hosti-*  
*le aratrium exer-*  
*citus insolens.*  
*Horat. l. 1. od 16.*

The measure of the degree is to be estimated by humane prudence, that it exceed not the value of the cause, nor the proportion of other circumstances, and that it cause no eruption into indiscretions or undecencies: For therefore *Moses* anger, though for G O D and religion, was reproved, because it went forth into a violent and troubled expression, and shewed the degree to be inordinate.

31.

The vulgar Latine Bible, in this precept of our blessed Saviour readeſ not the appendix [*without a cause*] but indefinitely, *he that is angry with his Brother,*

*Brother, and S. Hierom affirms, that the clause of [without a cause] is not to be found in true Greek copies; upon supposition of which, because it is not to be imagined, that all anger in all causes, and in all degrees is simply unlawfull, and S. Paul distinguishes being angry, from committing a sin, [Be angry but sin not] these words are left to signifie such an anger, as is the crime of homicide in the heart; like the secret lusting called by CHRIST, adultery in the heart and so here is forbidden, not onely the outward act, but the inward inclinations to murder, that is, an anger with deliberation, and purpose \* of revenge, this being explicative and additionall*

\* *Kai meon ioyūn  
πεντετη τινα ιδο-*  
*have intended by threatening the same penalty to this anger or spirituall* *ιλιο της θνητού*  
*homicide, which the Law inflicted upon the actuall and externall,* *της ιλιτιδος της*  
*that is judgement or condemnation. And because this prohibition of anger* *πυρφορατου*  
*is an explication, and more severe commentary upon the sixt Com-*  
*mandment, it is more then probable, that this anger, to which condemnation*  
*is threatened is such an anger as hath entertained someting of mischiefe*  
*in the spirit. And this agrees well enough with the former interpretation,*  
*savie that it affirms no degree of anger to be criminal, as to the height of*  
*condemnation, unlesse it be with a thought of violence or desires of re-*  
*venge; the other degrees receiving their heighthnings, and declensions, as*  
*they keepe their distance or approach to this. And besides; it permits*  
*other causes of anger to be innocent besides those spirituall, and morall, of*  
*the interests of GODS glory and religion. For the irascible faculty having*  
*in nature an object proper to its constitution, and naturall design, if our*  
*anger be commenced upon an object naturally troublefome, the*  
*anger is very naturall, and no where said to be irregular. And he who is*  
*angry with a servants vnwariness, or inadvertency or the remissenesse of a*  
*childs spirit, and application to his stndies, or any sudden displeasure,*  
*is not in any fene guilty of prevaricating the sixt Commandment, unlesse*  
*besides the object he addes an inequality of degree, or unhandsome circumstance, or adjunct. And possibly it is not in the nature of man to be strict*  
*in discipline, if the prohibitory of anger be confined onely to causes of*  
*religion; and it were hard, that such an anger, which is innocent in all*  
*effects, and a good instrument of government should become criminal,*  
*and damnable; because some instances of displeasure are in actions not*  
*certainly and apparently sinfull. So that our blessed Saviour forbidding us*  
*to be angry without a cause meanes such causes, which are not onely irregularities in religion, but deflexions in manners; and an anger may be re-*  
*ligious, and politicall, and Oeconomical according as it meets with ob-*  
*jects proper to it in severall kindes. But if that prohibition be indefinite,*  
*then it is certaine the analogy of the Commandement, of which this is an*  
*explication, referres it to revenge, or malice; it is an anger, that is wrath,*  
*an anger of revenge or injury, which is here prohibited. And I adde this*  
*consideration, that since it is certain, that CHRIST intended this for an*  
*explication of the prohibition of homicide, the clause of [without cause]*  
*seemes lesse naturall and proper. For it would intimate, that though an-*  
*ger of revenge is forbidden, when it is rash and unreasonable; yet that*  
*there might be a cause of being angry with a purpose of revenge and re-*  
*compence, and that in such a case it is permitted to them, towmou in all o-*  
*ther it is denied, that is, to private persons, which is against the meekenesse*

Arift. 2. Rhetor

Si iranon fuerit,  
nec doctrinapro-  
ficit, nec judicia-  
stant nec cria ma-  
competentur. S.  
Chrysoft.

Si nulla ira ex  
virtute surgeret,  
Divinae animad-  
versionis impe-  
tum per gladium  
Phineas non  
placasset. S. Cre-  
gor. l. 5. v. oral.

μεταδιατατη γη  
ιστο της φυγης  
η ει τωις  
παδισι ειπ  
η κυριαιει δι κυ-  
ριαζουσις η  
χαλεπαις οι ιδιοβ-  
υσιοις αι θειανα-  
τα Arift. Poe-  
tic.

## Part II.

32.

and charity of the Gospell. More reasonable it is, that as no man might kill his Brother in Moses law by his own private authority, so an anger is here forbidden, such an anger, which no qualification can permit to private persons, that is, an anger with purposes of revenge.

But C H R I S T addes, that a further degree of this sinne is, when our anger breaks out in contumelies, and ill language, and receives its increment according to the degree and injury of the reproach. There is a homicide in the tongue as well as in the heart, and he that kills a mans reputation by calumnies or slander, or open reviling, hath broken this Commandment.

—*Insuevit Pater Optimus hoc me ut fugerem, exemplis vicio- sum quaque no- tando. Quam me hortaretur par- ce, frugaliter at que Viverem uici contentus eo quod mihi par- asset. Nonne vi- des Albi ut male vivat filius! ut que Barus incops — a turpi me- retricis amore Cum deterreteret, Sectani dissimi- lis; Ne seque- ter Machas — Deprensi- non bella est fa- ma Treboni Aie- bat. Horat. Sat.*

4. I. 1.

33.

But this is not to be understood so, but that persons in authority, or friends may reprehend a vicious person in language proper to his crime, or expressive of his malice or iniquity. (C H R I S T called *Herod Fox*, and although Saint *Michael* brought not a rayling accusation against Satan, yet the Scripture calls him an accuser, and C H R I S T calls him the *Father of lies*, and Saint *Peter*, a *Devourer*, and a *roaring lyon*. And Saint *John* calls *Diotrephes*, a lover of *praheminence*, or ambitious: but that, which is here forbidden is not a representing the crimes of the man for his emendation, or any other charitable, or religious end, but a reviling him to do him mischief, to murder his reputation, which also shewes, that whatever is here forbidden, is in some sense or other accounted homicide; the anger in order to reproach, and both in order to murder, subject to the same punishment, because forbidden in the same period of the Law; save onely that according to the degrees of the sinne C H R I S T proportions severall degrees of punishment in the other world, which he apportions to the degrees of death, which had ever ben among the Jewes, vizt. the sword, and stoning to death, which were punishments legall and judicall, and the burning infants in the valley of Hin-nom, which was a barbarous and superstitious custome, used formerly by their Fathers in imitation of the Phoenician accursed rites.

The remedies against anger, which are prescribed by Masters of spirituall life are partly taken from rules of prudence, partly from piety, and more precise rules of religion. In Prudence. 1. Do not easily entertain or at all encourage, or willingly hear or promptly believe tale-bearers, and reporters of other mens faults: for oftentimes we are set on fire by an *ignis fatuus*, a false flame, and an empty story. 2. Live with peaceable people, if thou canst. 3. Be not inquisitive into the misdemeanours of others, or the reports, which are made of you. 4. Finde out reasons of excuse to alleviate and lessen the ignorances of a Friend, or carelessnesses of a servant. 5. Observe, what object is aptest to inflame thee, and by speciaill arts of fortification stop up the avenues to that part. If losses, if contempt, if incivilities, if slander, stil make it the greatest part of your employment to subdue the impotency of that passion, that is more apt to raise tempests. 6. Exirpate perty curiosities of apparell, lodging, diet, and learne to be indifferent in circumstances, and if you be apt to be transported with such little things, do some great thing, that shall cut off their frequent intervening. 7. Do not multiply secular cares, and troublesome negotiations which have variety of conversation with severall humours of men, and accidents of things; but frame to thy selfe a life simple as thou canst, and free from all affectations. 8. Sweeten thy temper and allay the violence of thy spirit with some convenient, naturall temperate, and medicinall solaces;

se'aces; for some dispositions we have seen inflamed into anger, and often assulted by peevishnesse through immoderate fasting, and inconvenient austeries. 9. A gentle answer is an excellent Remora to the Progresses of anger, whether in thy selfe or others. For anger is like the waves of a troubled sea, when it is corrected with a soft reply, as with a little strand it retires and leaves nothing behinde it, but froth and shells, no permanent mischiefe. 10. <sup>a</sup> Silence is an excellent art, and that was the advice which Saint Isaac an old religious person in the Primirive Church is reported to have followed, to supprese his anger within his brest, and use what meanes he could there to strangle it; but never permitting it to go forth in language; anger and lust being like fire, which if you enclole, sufflring it to have no emision, it perishes and dies, but give it the smallent vent, and it rages to a consumption of all it reaches. And this advice is coincident with the generall rule, which is prescribed in all temptations, that anger be suppressed in its cradle and first <sup>b</sup> assaults. 11. Lastly, let every man be carefull, that in his repentece or in his zeale, or his religion, he be as dispassionate, and free from anger as is possible; least anger passe upon upon him in a reflexe act, which was rejected in the direct. Some mortifiers in their contestation against anger, or any evill or troublesome principle are like cryers of affizes, who calling for silence make the greatest noise; they are extremely angry when they are fighting against the habite or violent inclinations to anger.

But in the way of more strict religion it is advised that he, who would cure his anger, should pray often. It is Saint Austines counsell to the Bishop Auxilius, that like the Apostles in a storme, we should awaken C H R I S T and call to him for aide, least we shipwrack in so violent passions, and imperious disturbances. 2. Propound to thy selfe example of meek and patient persons, remembiring alwayes, that there is a family of meeke Saints, of which Moses is the President, a family of patient Saints under the conduct of Job, every one in the mountain of the L O R D shall be gathered to his own tribe, to his own family in the great day of Jubilee, and the angry shall perish with the effects of anger; and peevish persons shall be vexed with the disquietnesse of an eternall worme and sting of a vexatious Conscience, if they suffer here the transportations and saddest effects of an unmortified, habituall and prevailing anger. 3. Above all things endeavour to be humble, to thinke of thy self as thou deservest, that is, meanly and un-worthily, and in reason it is to be presumed, thou wilt be more patient of wrong, quiet under affronts and injuries, suscepitive of inconveniences, and apt to entertain all adversities, as instruments of humiliation, deleteries of vice, corrections of undecent passions, and instruments of virtue.

*Thou shalt not commit adultery*] These two Commandments are immediate to each other, and of the greatest cognition; for anger and lust work upon one subject; and the same fervours of blood, which make men revengefull will also make men unchast. But the prohibition is repeated in the words of the old Commandment: So it was said to them of old; which was not only a prohibition of the violation of the rights of marriage, but was even among the Jews extended to signifie all mixture of sexes not matrimoniall. For adul'tery in scripture is sometimes used to signifie fornication, and fornication for adultery: as it is expressed in the permissions of divorce, in the case of fornication; and by Moyses Law fornication also was forbidden, and it was

Terminus erian  
Marinis fluctibus  
Fabricator de-  
scripli; arena  
maris exigua se-  
pe inter duas as-  
cies intercapedo  
est: si reprimere  
iram non potes,  
memento qui i  
indigabundum  
mare nil ultra  
spuman & flu-  
tuationem ef-  
fet. si vocata.  
a Ex quo factus  
sum Monachus  
statui apud mentem  
iracundia extra  
guttur neumannus  
precederet.)  
Dixit S. Isaac  
Heremita.

## 34.

<sup>b</sup> Melius n. est  
negare primum  
ira introitum e-  
tiam de causa  
probabilis facis &  
gloriola, quam  
admissam ejcere  
S. Aug. ad Pro-  
futurum.

## Origen.

Ubi furoris infes-  
derit virus, libi-  
dinis quoque in-  
cendum est pe-  
nitrare. Cashan.

## Dent. 32.

## 35.

7. Command.

## Part II.

was hated also and reprobred in the naturall. But it is very probable, that this precept was restrained only to the instance of adultery in the proper sense, that is, violation of marriage; for Moses did in other annexes of the Law forbid fornication; And as a blow or wound was not esteemed in Moses law a breach of the fixt Commandment; So neither was any thing but adultery esteemed a violation of the seventh by very many of their own Doctors, of which I reckon this a sufficient probation, because they permitted stranger virgins, and captives to fornicate; only they believed it sinfull in the Hebrew maidens. And when two Harlots pleaded before Solomon for the bastard child, he gave sentence of their Question, but nothing of their crime. \*Strangers] with the Hebrews signified manytimes harlots, because they were permitted to be such and were entertained to such purposes. But these were the licences of a looser interpretation; GOD having to all nations given sufficient testimony of his detestation of all concubinate not hallowed by marriage; of which among the nations there was abundant testimony, in that the harlots were not permitted to abide in the cities, and wore vailes in testimony of their shame and habituall undecencies, which we observe in the story of Thamar, and also in Chrysippus. And although it passed without punishment, yet never without shame, and a note of turpitude; and the abstinenſe from fornication was one of the precepts of Noah to which the Jewes obliged the stranger Proselytes, who were onely Proselytes of the house; and the Apostles inforce it upon the Gentiles in their first Decree at Jerusalem, as renewing an old stock of precepts and obligations, in which all the converted and religious Gentiles did communicate with the Jewes.

36.

*Nihil refert quibus membris adulteraveris.*  
*Dixit Archeslaus philos.apud Plutarch.*

*εργα οι επωθιαις. Plato.*

*Ut jam servaris bene corpus adultera mens est*

*Omnibus exclusis intus adulterer. Ovid.*

*Incessu est etiam sine stupro qua stuprum querit. Seneca.*

*ποδεν μη επαγγελματων, τον, in u. idem. Iesu dicit per iudeos. περιστοις.*

*Cleanthes.*

To this Christ added, that the eyes must not be adulterous; His disciples must not onely abstaine from the act of unlawfull concubinate, but from the impurer intuition of a wife of another man: so according to the design of his whole Sermon opposing the righteousness of the spirit, to that of the Law, or of works, in which the Jewes confided. Christians must have chaste desires, not indulging to themselves a liberty of looser thoughts; keeping the threshold of their temples pure, that the H. Ghost may observe nothing unclean in the entry of his habitation. For he that lusts after a woman wants nothing to the consummation of the act, but some convenient circumstances, which because they are not in our power, the act is impeded, but nothing of the malice abated. But so severe in this was our blessed Master, that he commanded us rather to put our eyes out, then to suffer them to become an offence to us; that is, an inlet of sin, or an invitation or transmission of impurity: by putting our eye out meaning the extinction of all incentives of lust, the rejection of all opportunities, & occasions, the quitting all conditions of advantage, which ministers fuel to this hell fire. And by this severity we must understand all beginnings, temptations, likenesses, and insinuations, and minutes of lust, and impurity to be forbidden to Christians; such as are all morose delectations in vanity, wanton words, gestures, balls, revellings, wanton diett, garish and lascivious dressings, and trimmings of the body, looser banquettings, all making provisions for the flesh to fullfill the lusts of it, al lust of concupiscence, and all lust of the eye, & all lust of the hand, unclean contacts are to be rescinded, all lust of the tongue and palate, al surfeiting, & drunkennes, for it is impossible to keep the spirit pure, if it be exposed to all the entertainment of enemies; and if Christ forbade the wanton eye, and placed it under the prohibition of adultery, it is certaine, whatsoever ministers to that vice, and invites to it, is within the same restraint; it is the eye or the hand,

or the foot, that is to be cut off. To this commandment fastings<sup>3</sup> and severe abstinences are apt to be reduced, as being the proper abscission of the instruments and temptations of lust, to which Christ invites by the mixt proposition of threatening and reward; for better it is to goe to heaven with but one eye, or one foot, that is, with a body halfe nourished then with full meales and an active lust to enter into hell. And in this our B. Lord is a Physician rather then a Lawgiver, for abstinence from all impure concubinate, and morose delectations so much as in thought, being the commandment of GOD, that CHRIST bids us retrench the occasions and insinuations of lust, it is a facilitating the duty, not a new severity, but a security and caution of prudence.

*Thou shalt not steale*] To this precept Christ added nothing; because God had already in the Decalogue fortified this precept with a restraint upon the \* desires. For the tenth Commandment forbids all coveting of our Neighbours goods; for the wife there reckoned, and forbidden to be desired from another man, is not a restraint of libidinous appetite, but of the covetous; it being accounted part of wealth to have a numerous family, many wives and many servants; and this also God by the Prophet Nathan upbraided to David, as instance of Davids wealth and Gods liberality. But yet this Commandment Christ adopted into his law, it being prohibited by the naturall Law, or the Law of right reason, commonwealths not being able to subsist without distinction of Dominion, nor industry to be encouraged, but by propriety, nor families to be maintaine'd, but by defence of just rights and truely purchased Possessions. And this Prohibition extends to all injustice, whether done by Force, or Fraud; whether it be by ablation or prevention, or detaining of rights; any thing, in which injury is done directly or obliquely to our Neighbours fortune.

*Thou shalt not bear false witness*] that is, thou shalt not answer in judgement against thy Neighbour falsely: which testimony in the Law was given solemnly and by oath, invoking the name of God. *I adjure thee by God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ,* said the High Priest to the B. Jesus, that is, speake upon thy oath; and then he told them fully, though they made it the pretence of murdering him, and he knew they would doe so. Confessing and witnessing truth is giving glory to God; but false witness is high injustice, it is inhumanity and treason against the quietnesse, or life or possession of a just person; it is in it selfe irregular, and unreasonale, and therefore is so forbidden to Christians, not onely as it is unjust, but as it is false; for a lye in communication, and private converse is also forbidden as, well as unjust testimony, *let every man speake truth with his Neighbour*, that is in private society; and whether a lye be in iest \* or earnest, when the purpose is to deceive and abuse, though in the smallest instance, it is in that degree criminal, as it is injurious; I find not the same affirmed in every deception of our Neighbours, wherein no man is injured, and some are benefited, the errore of the affirmation being nothing, but a naturall irregularity, nothing malicious, but very charitable; I finde no severity superadded to Christ to this commandment prohibiting such discourse, which without injury to any man deceives man into piety or safety. But this is to be extended no further; In all things else we must be severe in our discourses, and neither lye in a great matter, nor a small, for the custome thereof is not good, saith the son of Simeon. I could adde concerning this precept, That Christ having left it in that condition he found it in the Decalogue without any change or alteration of circumstance

Paulus I C. I. I.  
D. de fortis, Ul-  
pianus I. pro-  
brum, D. de Ver-  
borum significa-  
tione.

38.  
9. Command.

Ephes. 4. 25.  
Epistola ad Corin-  
thios. ne loco quidecum  
mentium suis  
narrant fidei  
scriptores. Pro-  
bus. 10cm de  
aristotele referat  
Plutarchus.

37.  
8. Command.  
\* Crescit indul-  
gens sibi dirus  
hydras, nec si-  
cum pellit niti-  
caula morti. Fu-  
gerit venis, et a-  
quosus albo  
Corpo languor  
Horat.

## Part II.

cumstance, we are commanded to give true testimony in Judgement, which because it was under an Oath, there lyes upon us no prohibition, but a severity of injunction to sweare truth in judgement, when we are required. The securing of testimonies was by the sanctity of an oath, and this remaines unaltered in Christianity.

*Thou shalt not covet* ] This Commandment we find no where repeated in the Gospell by our blessed Saviour; but it is inserted in the repetition of the second Table, which Saint Paul mentioned to the Romans; for it was so abundantly exprested in the inclosures of other precepts, and the whole designe of Christ's doctrine, that it was lesse needfull specially to expresse that, which is every where affixed to many precepts Evangelicall. Particularly, it is inherent in the first beatitude: *Blessed are the poore in spirit*; and it meanes, that we should not wish our Neighbours goods with a deliberate entertained desire; but that upon the commencement of the motion, it be disbanded instantly; for he that does not at the first ad-dresse and incitement of the passion suppress it, he hath given it that entertainment, which in every period of staying is a degree of morose delectation in the appetite. And to this I find not, Christ added any thing, for the Law it selfe forbidding to entertaine the desire, hath commanded the instant and present suppression, they are the same thing, and cannot reasonably be distinguisched. Now that CHRIST in the instance of adultery hath commanded to abstain also from occasions and accesses toward the lust, in this hath not the same severity: because the vice of covetousnesse is not such a wild fire as lust is, not inflamed by contact, and neighbourhood of all things in the world: every thing may be instrumentall to libidinous desires, but to covetous appetites there are not temptations of so different natures.

40. Concerning the order of these Commandments it is not unusefully obserued, that if we account from the first to the last, they are of greatest perfection, which are last described; and he who is arrived to that severity and dominion of himselfe as not to desire his neighbours goods, is very from actuall injury; and so in proportion; it being the least degree of religion to confess but one G O D; but therefore vices are to take their estimate in the contrary order; he that prevaricates the first commandment is the greatest sinner in the world; and the least is, he that onely covets without any actuall injustice. And there is no variety or objection in this, unlesse it be altered by the accidentall difference of degrees: but in the kinds of sinne the rule is true: this onely. The sixt and seventh are otherwise in the Hebrew bibles then ours; and in the Greek otherwise in Exodus then in Deuteronomy; and by this rule it is a greater sinne to commit adultery then to kill; concerning which we have no certainty save that S. Paul in one respect makes the sin of uncleannessesse the greatest of any sin, whose scene lyes in the body. *Every sin is without the body, but he that committeth fornication sins against his own body.*

## THE PRAYER.

O Eternall JESUS, wisdome of the Father, thou light of Jewes and Gentiles, and the great Master of the world, who by thy Holy sermons and clearest revelations of the mysteries of thy Fathers kingdomes didst invite all the world to great degrees of justice, purity and sanctity, and instruct us all in a holy institution, give us understanding of thy lawes that the light of thy celestiall doctrine illuminating our darkeneses, and making bright all the receffes of our spirits and understanding, we may direct our feet, all the lower man, the affections of the inferiour appetite to walke in the paths of thy commandments; Dearest GOD make us to live a life of religion and justice, of love and duty, that we may adore thy Majesty and reverence thy name, and love thy mercy, and admire thy infinite glories and perfections, and obey thy precepts; make us to love thee for thy selfe, and our neighbours for thee; make us to be all love and all duty, that we may adorn the Gospell of thee our LORD, walking worthy of our vocation, that as thou hast called us to be thy Disciples, so we may walke therein, doing the worke of faithfull servants, and may receive the adoption of sonnes, and the gift of eternall glory, which thou hast reserved for all the Disciples of thy holy Institution. Make all the world obey thee as a Prophet, that being redeemed and purified by thee our High Priest, all may reign with thee our King in thy eternall kingdome, O Eternall J E S U S, wisdome of thy Father, Amen.



Of the three additionall Precepts which  
CHRIST superinduced, and made parts  
of the Christian Law.

### Discourse. X.

*Of Charity with its parts, forgiving, Giving,  
not Judging.*

Of Forgivenesse. Part.I.

**T**He holy JESUS coming to reconcile all the world to GOD, would reconcile all the parts of the world one with another, that they may rejoice in their common band, and their common salvation: the first instance of charity, forbade to Christians all revenge of injuries, which was a perfecion, and endeavrement of duty beyond what either

## Part II.

*Justitiae primus  
munus est ut u-  
ci noceat nisi  
lascivus injuria  
Cicer: de offic.  
Exod: 21. 2.  
I levit: 24. 20.  
Deut: 19. 21.  
Idcirco Iudicio-  
ru n. vis. r. a iq  
publici tutula  
videtur in medic  
constituta ne  
quisquam sibi  
ipsi permittere  
valeat ultio[n]em.  
Honor et The.  
od: in Cod:  
Theodos:*

*2  
Rom: 12. 19.*

*Nisi armis luctare tu  
temp[or]is.  
Sumitur sensu  
generali pro  
omni retaliatio[n]e.*

*Rom: 12. 17.*

either most of the old Philosophers or the lawes of the Nations, or of Moses ever practised or enjoyed. For revenge was esteemed to unhallooned, unchristian natures as sweet as life, a satisfaction of injuries, and the onely cure of maladies and afforts. Onely, lawes of the wiest Commonwealths commanded that revenge should be taken by the Judge; a few cases being excepted, in which by sentence of the Law; the injured person or his neerest relative might be the executioner of the vengeance, as among the Jewes in the case of murder, among the Romans in the case of an Adulteresse or a ravished daughter, the Father might kill the Adulteresse or the ravisher; In other things the Judge onely was to be the Avenger. But Christ commanded his Disciples rather then to take revenge to expouse themselves to a second injury, rather offer the other cheeke, then be avenged for a blow on this; for vengeance belongs to God, and he will retaliate; and to that wrath we must give place, saith S. Paul, that is in well doing and evill suffering commit our selves to his righteous judgement, leaving roome for his execution, who will certainly doe it, if we snatch not the sword from his arme.

But some observe, that our B. Saviour instanced but in smaller injuries; he that had us suffer a blow on the cheeke did not oblige us tamely to be sacrificed; he that enjoyed us to put up the losse of our coat and cloake, did not signify his pleasure to be that we should suffer our family to be turned out of doors, and our whole estate aliened and cancelled, especially we being otherwise obliged to provide for them under the pain of the curse of Infidelity. And indeed there is much reason our defences may be extended when the injuries are too great for our sufferance, or that our defence bring no greater damage to the other then we divert from our selves. But our blessed Saviours prohibition is instanced in such small particulars, which are no limitations of the generall precept, but particulars of common consideration. *But I say unto you resist not evill.]* So our English Testament reades it, but the word signifies avenge not evill, and it bindes us to this onely, that we be not avengers of the wrong, but rather suffer twice theno nce to be avenged. He that is struck on the face may run away, or may divert the blow, or bind the hand of his enemy; and he whose coat is snatched away may take it againe, if without injury to the other, he may doe it. We are sometimes bound to resist evill; every clearing of our innocence, refuting of calumnies, quitting our selves of reproach is a resisting evill; but such which is hallowed to us by the example of our Lord himself, and his Apostles. But this precept is cleerely expounded by S. Paul, *Render not evill for evill,* that is, be not revenged; you may either secure or restore your selves to the condition of your own possessions or fame, or preferre your life, provided that no evill be returned to him that offers the injury. For so sacred are the lawes of Christ, so holy and great is his example, so much hath he endeavoured vs who were his enemies, and so frequently, and severely hath he preached and enjoyed forgiuenesse, that he who knowes not to forgive, knowes not to be like a Christian, and a Disciple of so gentle a Master.

So that the smallnesse or greatnessse of the instance alters not the case in this duty: In the greatest matters we are permitted onely to an innocent defence; in the smallesst we may do so too; I may as well hold my coat fast as my gold, and I may as well hide my goods as run away, and that's a defence; and if my life be in danger, I must do no more but defend my self. Save onely that defence in case of life is of a larger signification.

cation then in case of goods. I may wound my enemy, if I cannot else be safe; I may detain him, or in any sense disable him, and this is extended even to a liberty to kill him, if my defence necessarily stands upon so hard conditions; for although I must not give him a wound for a wound, because that cannot cure me, but is certainly revenge, yet when my life cannot be otherwise safe, then by killing him, I have used that liberty, which nature hath permitted me and Christ hath not forbidden, who onely interdicted revenge, and forbade no defence, which is charitable and necessary, and not blended with malice and anger. And it is as much charity to preserve my selfe as him when I feare to dye.

But although we find this no where forbidden, yet it is very consonant to the excellent mercy of the Gospell, and greatly laudable, if we choose rather to loose our life in imitation of Christ, than save it by the losse of anothers in pursuance of the permissions of nature; When nature onely gives leave, and no law-giver gives command to defend our lives, and the excellency of Christianity highly commends dying for our enemies, and propounds to our imitation the greatest example that ever could be in the world, It is a very great imperfection, if we choose not rather to obey an insinuation of the H. JESUS, then with greedinesse and appetite pursue the bare permissions of nature. But in this we have no necessity. Onely this is to be read with two cautions. 1. So long as the assaulted person is in actuall danger he must use all arts, and subterfuges, which his wit or danger can supply him with, as passive defence, flight, arts of diversion, intreaties, soft and gentle answers, or whatsoever is in its kind innocent, to prevent his sin and my danger, that when he is forced to his last defence, it may be certain he hath nothing of revenge mingled in so sad a remedy. 2. That this be not understood to be a permission to defend our lives against an angry and unjust Prince; for if my lawfull Prince should attempt my life with rage, or with the abused solemnities of law, in the first case the sacrednesse of his Person, in the second, the reverence, and religion of authority are his defensatives, and immure him, and bind my hands, that I must not lift them up, but to heaven for my own defence and his pardon.

But the vain pretences of vainer persons have here made a Question, where there is no scruple, and if I may defend my life with the sword, or with any thing which nature and the lawes forbid not, why not also mine honour, which is as deere as life, which makes my life without contempt, usefull to my friend, and comfortable to my selfe; for to be reputed a coward, a baffled person, and one that will take affronts, is to be miserable and scorned, and to invite all insolent persons to do me injuries. May it not be permitted to fight for mine honour, and to wipe off the staines of my reputation? Honour is as deere as life, and sometimes dearer. To this I have many things to say. For that which men in this Question call honour is nothing but a reputation amongst persons vaine, unchristian in their deportment, empty and ignorant soules, who count, that the standart of honour, which is the instrument of reprobation, as if to be a gentleman were to be no Christian. They that have built their reputation upon such societies must take new estimates of it, according as the wine, or fancy, or custome, or some great fighting perfon shall determine it; and whatsoever invites a quarrell is a rule of honour. But then it is a sad consideration to remember, that it is accounted honour not to recede from any thing we have said

Succorram peri-  
turo, sed ut ipse  
non peream, nisi  
si futurus ero  
magni hominis,  
aut magnæ rej-  
merces. Seneca.

Privatas inimi-  
citas, non prin-  
cipis ulciscar.  
dixit Tiberius  
Tact 13. Annal

5.

## Part II.

Or done, It is honour not to take the lye , in the meane time it is not dishonourable to lye indeed , but to be told so , and not to kill him that sayes it , and venture my life and his too,that is a forfeiture of reputation. A mistresse favour , an idle discourse, a jest,a jealousy,a health,a gayety, any thing must ingage two lives in hazard , and two soules in ruine,or else they are dishonoured. As if a life which is so deare to a mans selfe, which ought to be deare to others , which all lawes and wife Princes, and states have secured by the circunvallation of lawes, and penalties, which nothing but heaven can recompence for the losse of, which is the breath of GOD, which to preserve Christ dyed, The Son of GOD dyed, as if this were so contemptible a thing , that it must be ventured for satisfaction of a vicious person , or a vaine custome , or such a folly , which a wise, and a severe person had rather dye then be guilty of. Honour is from him that honours ; now certainly GOD , and the King are the fountains of honour : Right reason , and religion, the Scripture, and the lawes, are the best rules of estimating honour;and if we offer to account our honours bythe senselesse and illiterate discourses of vaine and vicious persons our honour can be no greater then the fountain from whence it is derivative ; and at this rate, *Harpaste Senecas* wives foole might have declared *Thersites* an honourable person, and every bold gladiatour in a Roman theatre , or a fighting rebell among the slaves of *Sparta*, or a trooper of *Spartacus* his guard might have stood upon their honour upon equall, and as faire a challenge.Certainly there is no greater honour then to be like the holy JESUS , and he is delectable in the eyes of GOD , and so are all his relatives and followers, by participation of his honour , and nothing can be more honourable then to do wise and excellent actions according to the account of Divine and humane Laws; and if either GOD or the King can derive honour upon their subjects; then whatsoever is contrary to that which they honour, must needs be base, dishonourable and inglorious.

But if we be troubled for feare of new and succeeding injuries, and will needs fight , and as much as lies in us kill out Brother to prevent an injury, nothing can be more unworthy of a Christian, nothing can be more inhumane. *Cato* pleading in the Roman Senate in behalfe of the *Rhodian* Embassadors who came to begg peace of the Commonwealth which had entertained an anger , and some thoughts of warre against them,upon pretence, that the Rhodians would warre with them, when they durst , discoursed severely and prudently against such unreasonable purpos. And the life of

*Euripid.*  
Eis ydp et iusit. et  
aet cu pns ultimis  
xrois et agt y ob  
mitem, et xpi  
v. et raptu dñ-  
in Euripid.  
quis hoc statuit  
unquam, aut cui  
concedi bne  
summo omnium  
periculo potet,  
ut eu n jure Pu-  
tuerit occidere a  
quo metuile te  
dicat ne ipse po-  
terius occidere.  
Cicero.

to conquer, if they strike first, to dye,if they be prevented ; Mans life is not establisched upon so unequall, and unreasonal necessities, that either we must first doe an injury,or else it is certain we must receive a mischiefe, GODS providence and care in his government of the world is more vigilant and mercifull , and he protects persons innocent , and just,in all cases, except when he meanes to make an injury the instrument of a grace or a violent death to be the gate of glory. It was not ill answered of *Merope* to King *Polyphontes*, who therefore killed his Brother, becaufe he had entertained a purpose to have killed him ; you should onely have done the same injury to him , which he did to you ; you should still have had a purpose to kill him , for his unjustice went no further, and it is hard to requite ill and uncertaine purposes with actuall murder, especially.

especially when we are as much secured by the power of lawes, as the whole common wealth is in all its greatest interests. And therefore for Christians to kill a man, to prevent being baffled or despised is to use an extreme desperate remedy, infinitely painfull and deadly, to prevent a little griping in the belly foreseen as possible to happen it may be three years after. But besides ; this objection supposes a disease almost as earnestly to be cured as this of the maine Question ; for it represents a man keeping company with lewd and debauched persons, spending his time in vanity, drunken societies, or engaged in lust, or placing his scene amongst persons apt to doe affronts and unworthy misdemeanours ; and indeed an affront, an injury, a blow, or a loud disgrace is not the consequent of not fighting, but a punishment for engaging in loose, baser and vicious company. If the gallants of the age would finde an honest, and a noble imployment, or would be delicate in the choice of their friends and company, or would be severe in taking accounts of themselves, and of their time, would live as becomes persons wise and innocent, that is, like Christians, they would soon perceive themselves removed farre from injuries, and yet further from trouble, when such levities of mischance, or folly should intervene. But suppose a man affronted or disgraced, it is considerable whether the man deserved it, or no : If he did, let him entertain it for his punishment, and use it for an instrument of correction, and humility ; If he did not, as an instance of fortitude and despite of lower things. But to venture lives to abolish a past-act is madnesse, unlesse in both those lives there was not good enough to be esteemed greater and of better value, then the light affront had in it of misery and trouble. Certainly those persons are very unfortunate in whose lives much more pleasure is not, then there is mischiefe in a light blow, or a lighter affront, from a vain or an angry person. But suppose there were not ; yet how can fighting or killing my Adversary wipe off my asperion, or take off my blow, or prove that I did not lye ; for it is but an ill argument to say, if I dare kill him, then I did not lye : Or if I dare fight, then he strooke me not ; or if I dare venture damnation, then I am an honourable person, and yet farther ; who gave me power over my own life, or over the life of another, that I shall venture my own, and ofter to take his. G O D and G O D S vicegerent onely are the LORDS of lives, who made us judges, and Princes, or Gods, and if we be not such, we are murderers and villaines. When Moses would have parted the Duellists, that fought in Egypt, the injurious peron asked him ; *who made thee a judge or ruler over us ? Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday ?* meaning he had no power to kill, none to judge of life and death unlesse he had been made a ruler. Yea but flesh and blood cannot endure a blow or a disgrace, Grant that too, but take this into the account, *flesh and blood shall not inherit the kingdom of GOD.* And yet besides this, those persons have but a tender stock of reason, and wisdome, and patience, who Menand... have not discourse enough to make them beare an injury, which the Philosophy of the Gentiles without the light of Christianity taught them to tolerate with so much equanimity, and dispassionate entertainment. That person is not a man, who knowes not how to suffer the inconvenience of an accident, and indiscretion of light persons ; or if he could not, yet certainly that is a mad impatience, when a man to remedy the paine of a drop of scalding water shal drench himselfe in the liquid flames of pitch, and a bituminous bath.

Truth is, to fight a duell is a thing, that all kingomes are bound to re-

## Part II.

straine with highest severity , it is a confection of many the worst acts, that a person ordinarily can be guilty of, It is want of charity , or justice , of humility , of trust in GODS providence ; it is therefore pride and murder and injustice , and infinite unreasonableness , and nothing of a Christian, nothing of excuse, nothing of honour in it , if G O D and wise men be admitted Judges of the Lists . And it would be considered, that every one, that fights a duell must reckon himselfe as dead or dying (for however any man flatters himselfe by saying he will not kill, if he could avoid it, yet rather then be killed he will , and to the danger of being killed his own act exposes him) now is it a good posture for a man to dye with a sword in his hand thrust at his Brothers brest with a purpose either explicite or implicite to have killed him? Can a man dye twice , that in case he miscarries, and is damned for the first ill dying, he may mend his fault and dye better the next time ? Can his vaine imaginary and Phantastick shadow of reputation make him recompence for the disgrace , and confusione of face , and paines, and horrors of eternity? Is there no such thing as forgiving injuries, nothing of the Discipline of J E S U S in our spirits , are we called by the name of CHRIST , and have nothing in us but the spirit of Cain and Nimrod, and Joab ? If neither reason nor religion can rule us, neither interest nor safety can determine us, neither life nor eternity can move us, neither GOD , nor wise men be sufficient judges of honour to us , then our damnation is just, but it is heavy : our fall is certain, but it is cheape, base and inglorious. And let not the vanities, or the gallants of the world slight this friendly monition, rejecting it with a scorne , because it is talking like a Divine ; it were no disparagement if they would doe so too , and believe accordingly ; and they would finde a better returne of honour in the crownes of eternity, by talking like a Divine , then by dying like a foole ; by living in imitation and obedience to the lawes of holy JESUS, then by perishing or committing murder, or by attempting it, or by venturing it, like a weake impotent, passionate, and brutish person. Upon this Chapter it is sometime asked , whether a Virgin may not kill a Ravisher to defend her chastity ? Concerning which as we have no speciall and distinct warrant, so there is in reason , and analogy of the Gospell much for the Negative; For since his act alone cannot make her criminall , and is no more then a wound in my body, or a civill or a naturall inconvenience , it is unequall to take a life in exchange for a lesser injury , and it is worse that I take it my selfe. Some great examples we find in story and their names are remembred in honour, but we can make no judgement of them, but that their zeale was reprooveable for its in temperance , though it had excellency in the matter of the Passion.

8.

\* Σχέτισον αἱ-  
Σπουδαὶ...  
Πόλεων εἰς τὴν εpi-  
δεινὴν ἀναγκαῖην  
Χρήσην πολιτικῶν  
Ἄνθρωπον, μεγάλην  
ἔθεσσαν εὐεργετοῦ  
δουλοῦ. *Timon*  
*Philius.*

But if we may not secure our honour , or be revenged for injuries by the sword, may we not crave the justice of the law, and implore the vengeance of the Judge, who is appointed for vengeance against evil doers;& the Judge being the Kings officer,& the King Gods Vicegerent, it is no more then imploring Gods hand:and that is giving place to wrath,which S. Paul speakes of, that is permitting all to the Divine justice ? To this I answer, that it is not lawfull to go to law for every occasion or slighter injury ; because it is very distant from the mercies, forgivenesse and gentlenesse of a Christian to contest for trifles,\*& it is certain,that the injuries,or evill,or charges of trouble and expence wil be more vexatious & afflictive to the person contested,then a small

a small instance of wrong is to the person injured. And it is a great intemperance of anger, and impotence of spirit, a covetousnesse and impatience to appeal to the Judge for determination, concerning a lock of Camels hair, or a goats beard, I meane any thing, that is leſſe, then the gravity of laws, or the solemnity of a Court, and that does not outweigh the inconveniences of a suit. But this we are to consider in the expression of our B. S A V I O U R, *If a man will sue thee at the Law, and take thy cloake, let him have thy coat also*: which words are a particular instance in pursuit of the generall Precept, *Resist not, or avenge not evill*: The primitive Christians, (as it happens in the first fervours of a Discipline) were sometimes severe in observation of the letter, not subtely distinguishing Counsels from Precepts, but swallowing all the words of C H R I S T without chewing, or discrimination. They abstained from tribunals unlesſe they were forced thither by persecutors, but went not thither to repeat their goods. And if we confider fuits of law, as they are wrap'd in circumstances of action and practise, with how many subtilties and arts they are manag'd, how pleadings are made mercenary, and that it will be hard to finde right counsell that shall advise you to desist, if your cause be wrong (and there- fore there is great reason to distrust every Question, since if it be never so jus & sanguin- wrong, we shall meet advocates to encourage us and plead for it) what danger of miscarriages, of uncharitableness, anger and animosities, what desires to prevale, what care and fearfulness of the event, what innumerable temptations do intervene, how many sins are secretly insinuated in our hearts and actions, if a suit were of it ſelſe never so lawfull it would concerne the duty of a Christian to avoid it, as he prayes against temptations, and cuts off the opportunities of fin. It is not lawfull for a Christian to sue his Brother at the law, unlesſe he can be patient if he looses, and charitable if he be wrong'd, and can prosecute his end without any mixture of covetousnesse, or desires to prevale without envy, or can believe himſelfe wrong when his Judge ſayes he is, or can ſubmit to peace when his just cause is oppressed, and rejected and condemned; and without pain or regret can ſit down by the loſſe of his right, and of his paines and his mo- ney. And if he can do all this, what need he go to law? he may with leſſe trouble, and leſſe danger take the loſſe ſingly, and expect GODS providence for reparation; then diſentile himſelfe to that by his own frowardnesse, and take the loſſe, when it comes loaden with many circumſtances of trouble.

But however by accident it may become unlawfull to go to law in a just caufe, or in any, yet by this precept we are not forbidden. To go to law for revenge, we are ſimply forbidden, that is, to returne evill for evill; and therefore all thoſe ſuits, which are for vindictive ſentences, not for reparative, are directly\* criminall. To follow a theif to death for ſpoiling my goods is extremely unreasonable and uncharitable; for as there is no proportion be- tween my goods and his life, (and therefore I demand it to his evil and injury) ſo the putting him to death repairs not my estate; the firſt makes it in me to be unjust, the latter declares me malicious and revengefull. If I de- mand an eye for an eye, his eye extinguiſhed will not enlighten mine, and therefore to proſecute him to ſuch purpoſes is to reſiſt or render evill with evill, directly againſt Chrifis ſermon. But if the poſtulation of ſentence be in order onely to reſtore my ſelſe, we finde it permitted by S. Paul, who when for the ſeandal fake he forbade going to law before unbelievers, and for the den-

Matth. 5.40.

*εἰδοὺς τοὺς ἀπόλλετον.*  
Athenag.

Nam lucrosē hu-  
manis eloquien-  
tiae uias, recens &  
& malis moribus  
natus, atque in  
locum teli reperi-  
tus. Quintil : de  
orator :

His qui benefa-  
cta canerent, non  
qui male admissa  
defenderent au-  
gultior honor  
apud eos, Idem

\* Novi lex non  
ſe vindicat ulteri-  
ne gladii. L. feſ-  
tū, illi et pīvī  
cū Chriſtianus  
vindicta, pīvī  
quāli pītē.

## Part II.

I. Cor. 6. print.  
cōp.

ger and temptations sake, and the latent irregularity, which is certainly appendant to ordinary litigations, he is angry indefinitely with them that go to law; yet he advises, that Christian arbitrators be appointed for decision of emergent Questions; and therefore when the supreme authority hath appointed, and regularly established an arbitrator, the permission is the same. S. Paul is angry, that among Christians there should be suites, but it is therefore he is chiefly angry, because Christians do wrong; they who should rather suffer wrong, yet that they should do it and defraud their Brother, which in some sense enforces suites, that's it he highly blames. But when injustice is done, and a man is in a considerable degree defrauded, then it is permitted to him to repeat his own before Christian arbitrators, whether chosen by private consent or publick authority, for that circumstance makes no essentiaall alteration in the Question; but then this must be done with as much simplicity and unmixed designe as is possible, without any desire of rendring evill to the person of the offendour, without arts of heightning the charge, without prolongation, devices, and arts of vexation, without anger and animosities, and then although accidentally there is some appendant charge to the offending person, that is not accounted upon the stocke of revenge, because it was not designed, and is not desired, and is cared for to prevent it as much as may be, and therefore offer was made of private and unchargeable arbitrators; and this being refused, the charge and accidentall evill, if it be lese then the losse of my sufferance and injury, must be reckoned to the necessities of affaires, and put upon the stocke of his injustice, and will not affixe a guilt upon the actour. I say this is true, when the actor hath used all means to accord it without charge, and when he is refused, manages it with as little as he can, and when it is nothing of his desire, but something of his trouble, that he cannot have his own without the lesser accidentall evill to the offendour, and that the Question is great and weighty in his proportion, then a suit of law is of it selfe lawfull. But then let it be remembred, how many wayes afterwards it may become uplawfull, and I have no more to adde in this article, but the saying of the sonne of Sirach; *he that loves danger shall perish in it.* And certainly he had need be an Angel that manages a suit innocently; and he that hath so excellent aspirit as with innocence to runne through the infinite temptations of a law-suit, in all probability hath so much holiness as to suffer the injury, and so much prudence as to avoid the danger; and therefore nothing but a very great defalcation, or ruine of a mans estate will from the beginning to the end justifie such a controversie, when the man is put to it so, that he cannot do some other duty without venturing in this; then the grace of G O D is sufficient for him; but he that enters lightly, shall walk dangerously, and a thousand to one but he will fall foulely. *It is utterly a fault among you,* said Saint Paul, *because ye go to law one with another.* It is not alwayes a crime, but ever a fault, and an irregularity, a recession from Christian perfection, and an entertaining of a danger, which though we escape through, yet it was a fault to have entred into it, when we might have avoided it. And even then, when it is lawfull for us, it is not expedient; For so the Apostle summes up his reprehension concerning Christians going to Law. *Wee must rather take wrong rather suffer our selves to be defrauded,* and when wee cannot beare the burden of the losse, then indeed we are permitted to appeale to Christian

¶ Πίστην σὸν  
ταῦτα τις εἰ  
χεῖτο δυνατόν.  
Μήδος ὁ λεπρός  
κοράζει θάνατον  
ἔργος δύνατον είναι  
Βενείς οντισθέντος  
τοι, αὔξενος ιππα-  
νταδόντος,  
Ωραὶ γὰρ τὸ δίδυμον  
τρίπολις φειδιατῶν  
απορεῖται  
Ωνταί τοι εἴ τι  
τρέπεται οὐτε  
αγνοεῖται  
Οὐαῖος —  
Hesiod. οὐτε  
δύναται.

I. Cor. 12. 7.  
"Oīces ἡ ἀπόστολος,  
not παρεγγέλλω.  
Verse 12.  
Verse 4.

ian Judges, but then there are so many cautions to be observed, that it may be, the remedy is worse then the disease. I onely observe this one thing, that S. Paul permits it only in the instance of defraudation, or matter of interest; such as are defending of widdowes and orphans, and Churches, which in estimation of Law are by way of fiction reckoned to be in pupillage and minority; adde also, repeating our own interests, when our necessities, or the support of our family, and relatives requires it; for all these are cases of charity or duty respectively; but besides the matter of defraudation, we finde no instance exprefed, nor any equality and paralell of reason to permit to Christians in any case to go to law; because in other things the sentence is but vindictive, and cannot repaire us; and therefore demanding justice is a rendring evill in the proper matter of revenge. Concerning which, I know no scruple, but in an action of scandal, and ill report; but because an innocent and an holy life will force light out of darknesse, & humility, and patience, and waiting upon God wil bring glory out of shame, I suppose, he who goes to law to regain his credit, attempts the cure by incompetent remedies; if the accusation be publike, the Law will call him to an account, and then he is upon his defence, and must acquit himself with meeknesse and sincerity; but this al-lowes not him to be the actor, for then it is rather a designe of revenge then a proper deletery of his disgrace, and purgative of the calumny. For if the accusation can be proved, it was no calumny; if it be not proved, the per-son is not alwayes innocent, and to have been accused, leaves something foule in his reputation; and therefore he that by law makes it more pub-like, propagates his owne disgrace, and sends his shame further then his innocence; and the crime will goe, whither his absolution shall not arrive.

If it be yet further questioned, whether it be lawfull to pray for a revenge, or a punishment upon the offender (I reckon them all one; he that prayes for punishment of him, that did him personall injury, cannot easily be supposed to separate the punishment from his own revenge) I an-swer, that although God be the avenger of all our wrongs, yet it were fit for us to have the affections of brethren, not the designs and purpose of a jndge, but leave them to him, to whom they are proper. When in the bitternesse of soule, an oppressed person curses sadly, and prayes for vengeance, the calamity of the man and the violence of his enemy haften a curse, and ascer-tain it. But whatever excuses the greatness of the oppression may make I know not; but the bitternesse of the spiriit, besides that it is pityable, as it is a passion, yet it is violent, and leſſe Christian, as it is active and sends forth prayers. *Woe is pronounced to them, by whom the offence cometh;* yet we must beware of offences, because by them we are engaged in a sin, and he that prayes for a revenge hath a revengefull spirit, how ever it be restrained by lawes, and exterior tendernes from acting such dire purposes. And he that prayes for revenge may indeed procure a justice to be done upon the injurious person; but oftentimes it happens then to fall on him, when we least wish it; when we also have a conjunct interest in the others pre-servation, and escape; so G O D punishing the first wrong, that we also may smart for our uncharitable wishes. For the ground of all this Dis-course is, that it is part of Christian charity to forgive \* injuries, which forgiuenesse of the injury, although it may reasonably enough stand with

\* *Injuriam que  
tulit obliviſci  
potest; qui fe-  
cit nunquam  
Tacit.*

## Part II.

with my faire, and innocent requiring of my owne, which goes no further than a faire repetition ; yet in no case can it stand with the acting, and desiring revenge , which also in the formality of revenge can have no pretence of charity, because it is ineffectiue to my restitution. This Discourse concernes private persons , whether it concerne the Question of Warre , and how farre , is not proper for this Consideration.



## Of ALMES.

1.

*Matt. 5. 42.*

6. 3.

*Luk. 12. 33.*

**B**ut Christian charity hath its effect also in benefits as well as gentlenesse and innocence ; *Give to him that asketh, and from him, that would borrow of thee, turne not thou away.* But when thou doſt thine almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth. These are the Precepts of the Lord, for the ſubſtance and the manner of Almes, for the quantity and freeneſſe of the donatiue, and the ſimplicity of him that gives, to which adde those other words of his ; *Sell your poſſeſſions and give almes.* This Precept with its circumſtances, was intended as a defenſatiue againſt covetouneſſe and prodiſtiue, and a ſuppletory to make up the wants, and to make even the breaches of mankinde : In which we ſhall beſt understand our obligation, iſ we conſider in what proportion we muſt give almes ; and to what perſons, and in what manner.

2.

*1 Tim. 6. 8. 9.*

For the quantity we ſhall beſt take an eſtimate of it, iſ we remember the portion, which GOD allowes to Chriſtians, *having food and raiment, let us be content with it ;* and our bleſſed Saviour at the latter end of this Sermon ſirres us up to confidence in GOD, and not to doubt our proviſions by telling that GOD feeds the Raſvens, and clothes the Lillies, and he will much rather do it to us, he will cloth us and feed us ; no more is in the promiſe, no more is in our need ; and therefore whatſoever is beside our needs naturall and perſonall, that is, proportioning our needs to the condition of our life, and exigence of our calling, and quality of our perſon, all that can be ſpared from what we modeſtly and tempeſtarely ſpend in our ſupport, and the ſupply of our families, and other neceſſary incidents, all that is to be ſpent in charity or religion ; he defrauds the poor of their right, who deſtaines from them beyond his owne neceſſary, prudent, and convenient ſupplies, ſaith S. Hierome ; and this is intended to be a retrenchment of all vaine expences, costly feaſts, rich clothes, pompoſous retine, and ſuch excreſcencies of expence, which of themſelves ſerve no end of piety, or juſt policie, but by wife and temperate perſons are eſteemed unneceſſary, and without which the dignity and juſt value of the perſon may ſtill bee retained. Whatſoever is vaineſily ſpent was the portion.

*Aliena rapere  
convincitur qui  
ultra ſibi neceſſaria  
retinere probatur. apud  
Gratian. diſt.*

42.

*Cum eget indigens quisquam  
te dñeſit?*

*Hort. l. 2. Sat. 2.*

portion of the poore, whatsoever we loose in idle gaming, revelling, and wantonnesse of prodigallie was designed by CHRIST to refresh his own bowells, to fill the bellies of the poore; whatsoever lyes in our repository uselesse and superfluous, all that is the poor mans inheritance; and certainly there is not any greater basenesse then to suffer a man to perish or be in extreme want of that, which GOD gave me for him, and beyond my own needs. It is unthankfullnesse to GOD, it is unmercifulnesse to the poor, it is \* improvidence to our selves, it is unfaithfullnesse in the dispensation of the money, of which GOD made him but the steward, and his cheft the Bank for the exchange and issuing it to the indigent. And he that is unmerciful and uniusc is extremely unlike GOD. But in taking this estimate concerning our excrescencies we are to proceed according to the rules of prudence, not making determinations in graines and Scruples, but in the greater actions and accountable proportions of our estate. And if any man seeing great necessities of indigent, and calamitous persons shall give beyond his ability he had the Philippians for his precedent, and he hath GOD engaged for his payment, and a greater share in heaven for his reward. Only this, as we are to provide for our selves, so also for our family and the relatives of our charge, and neerer indeerments, not only with a provision of the present dayes entertainment, but also for all neerer, probable, foreseen and expected events, such as are portions for our children, dowries for daughters; but this must not be extended to care and reservations for all possible, and far distant events; but so much is to be permitted to the divixe providence, as our present duty gives leave. In which although a prudent guide, and a sober reaon are to make application to practise, yet the rule in generall is, that by so much we are to relieve the poor, as we can deduct from such a portion of good things as GOD permits us to use for our own support and reasonable, and temporall conveniences of our person and condition; Ever remembering, that if we increase in our estate we also should increase in charity, that in this also may be verified what is written, *he that had much had nothing over, and he that had little had no lacke.* There is in the quantity of these Donatives some latitude, but if we sow sparingly, or if welcatter plentifully, so we shall reap; Only we must be carefull, that no extreme necessity, or biting want lyes upon any poor man, whom we can relieve, without bringing such a want upon our selves, which is lesse then the permissions of fortune, which the mercies of GOD have permittted to us, that is, food and raiment proper for us. Under food and raiment all the necessaries of our life are to be understood; Whatsoever is more then this, is counsel and perfection; for which a proportionable reward is deposited in the treasures of eter-

3.

If Question be made concerning the persons, who are to be the obiect of our almes, our rule is plain and easy; for nothing is required in the person suscipient, and capable of alms, but that he be in misery and want, and unable to relieve himself. This last clause I insert in pursuance of that caution given to the Church of Thessalonica by S. Paul, if any one will not work neither let him eat; for we must be carefull that our charity, which is intended to minister to poor mens needs do not minister to idlenesse and the love of beggery and a wandring, uselesse, unprofitable life. But abating this there is no other consideration, that can exempt any needy person

Callidus effra-  
cta nummos for  
auferre arca quas  
dederis dolas  
semper habebis  
opes. Martial.

Hoc n. est max-  
imum incentio-  
rum misericors  
dia ut Compaci-  
amur alienis  
calamitatibus  
quantum posse-  
mus, imo inter-  
dum plus quam  
postulumus. S.  
Ambr: l. 2. de  
offic:

## Part II.

\* person from participation of your charity, not though he be your Enemy (For that is it which our B. Saviour meanes in the appendix of this Precept, *love your Enemies, that is according to the exposition of the Apostle, if thine Enemy hunger feed him, if he thirst give him drink*) not though he be an unbeliever, not though he be a vicious <sup>a</sup> person; provided one-  
 ly that the vice be such, to which your reliefe ministers no fuell and  
 addes no flame; and if the meere necessities of his nature be supplied  
 it will be a faire security against the danger; but if the vice be in the  
 scene of, the body, all freer comforts are to be denied him, because they  
 are but incentives of sinne, and Angels of darknesse. This I the rather  
 insert, that the pride and supercilious austerities of some persons become  
 not to them an instrument of excuse from ministring to needy persons  
 Epist. c. 39.

<sup>a</sup> Herodes Atticus vir Contula-  
 ris, quum Pallia-  
 tis quidam specie  
 Philosophi sti-  
 pem exandicass-  
 et. respondit,  
 Demus hinc ali-  
 quod eris qui  
 cung, sit, tan-  
 quam homines,  
 non tamquam  
 hominj. A. Gell:  
 1. 9. c. 2.

though the causes of our calamities are many times great secrets of pro-  
 vidence, yet suppose the poverty of the man was the effect of his Pro-  
 digality, or other basenesse, it matters not as to our duty, how he came  
 into it; but where he is; least we also be denied a visit in our sicknesses  
 and a comfort in our sorrow, or a counsel in our doubts, or aid in any  
 distresse upon pretence, that such sadnesse was procured by our sinne;  
 and ten to one but it was so. *Doe good to all*, saith the Apostle, *but especially*  
*to the family of faith*; for to them our charity is most proper and propor-  
 tioned, to all viz. who are in need, and cannot relieve themselves, in  
 which number persons that can worke are not to be accounted. So that if  
 it be necessary to obserue an order in our charity, that is, when we can-  
 not supply and suffice for all our opportunities of mercy, then *let not the*

mune  
 sportula primo  
 Linea parva  
 dei turbapien.  
 da togata Ille  
 tamen faciem  
 prius impicit,  
 et trepidat ne  
 Suppositus vias,  
 et fallo nomine  
 polcas.  
 Juven: satyr. 1.

*Brethren of our LORD goe away ashamed;* and in other things observe  
 order and propriety of your own relations, and where there is otherwise  
 no difference, the degree of the necessity is first to be considered. This also;  
 if the necessity be finall and extreme, whatever the man be, he is first to  
 be relieved before the lesser necessities of the best persons, or most holy  
 poore. But the proper obiects of our charity are old persons, sick or impo-  
 ressed or persecuted for the caule of rightousnesse, distressed strangers,  
 captives, and abused slaves, prisoners of debt. To these we must be liber-  
 al, whether they be holy or unholy, remebering that we are sons of that  
 Father, who makes the dew of heaven to drop upon the dwellings of the  
 righteous, and the fields of sinners.

4. The manner of giving almes is an office of Christian prudence, for in  
 what instances we are to exemplify our charity we must be determined  
 by our own powers, and others needs. The scripture reckons entertaining  
 strangers, visiting the sick, going to prisons, feeding and clothing the hungry  
 and naked; to which by the exigence of the poor, and the analogy of  
 charity many other are to be added; The holy JESUS in the very precept  
 instanced in lending money to them, that need to borrow; and he addes  
 looking for nothing again, that is, if they be unable to pay it. Forgiving  
 debts is a great instance of mercy, and a particular of excellent relief:  
 but to imprison men for debt, when it is certain they are not able to pay  
 it, and by that prison will be farre more disabled, is an uncharitablenesse  
 next to the cruelties of salvages, and at infinite distance from the mercies  
 of the H. JESUS.

[not to judge our brother] and this is a charity so cheap, and so reasonable, that it requires nothing of us, but silence in our spirits. We may performe this duty at the charge of a negative ; if we meddle not with other mens affaires, we shall do them no wrong, and purchase to our selves a peace, and be secured the rather from the unerring sentence of a severer Judge. But this interdict forbids onely such judging, as is ungente and uncharitable; in criminall causes, let us finde all the wayes to alleviate the burden of the man by just excuses, by minorating accidents, by abatement of incident circumstances, by gentle sentences, and whatsoever can doe reliefe to the person, that his spirit be not exasperated, that the crime be not the parent of impudence, that he be not insulted on, that he be invited to repentance, and by such sweetneses he be led to his restitution. This also in questions of doubts obliges us to determine to the more favourable fense ; and we also do need the same mercies, and therefore should do well by our owne rigour not to disentitle \* our selves to such possibilities and reserves of charity. But it is foule and base by detraction and iniquity to blast the reputation of an honourable action, and the faire name of vertue with a calumny. But this duty is also a part of the grace of Justice, and of humility, and by its relation and kindred to so many vertues, is furnished with so many arguments of amability and indeerement.

\* Qui ne tuberibus propriis offendit amicum  
Postulat, ignoscat verrucis illius : &

quam est Peccatis veniam poscentem reddere rursus. Horat. l.1. sat. 3. Ne Judices proximum donec ad ejus locum pertingas. Prov. Iudaeor. — ehen Quam temere in nosmet legem sancimus iniquam, Nam viuis nemo sine nascitur, optimus ille est Qui minimis urgetur.  
— Horat. ibid.



## The PRAYER.

Holy and mercifull JESUS, who art the great principle, and the instrument of conveying to us the charity and mercies of eternity, who didst love us, when we were enemies, forgive us when we were debtors, recover us when we were dead ; ransome us, when were slaves ; relieve us, when we were poore, and naked, and wandring, and full of sadnesse and necessities ; Give us the grace of charity, that we may be pitifull and compassionate of the needs of our necessitous Brethren, that we may be apt to relieve them, and that according to our duty and possibilities, we may rescue them from their calamities. Give us courteous, affable, and liberall soules ; let us by thy example forgive our debtors, and love our enemies, and doe to them offices of civility and tenderneſſe, and relieve ; alwayes propounding thee for our pattern, and thy mercies for our precedent, and thy precepts for our rule, and thy Spirit for our guide, that we shewing mercy here, may receive the mercies of eternity by thy merits, and by thy charities, and dispensation, O holy and mercifull JESUS. Amen.



## Discourse XI.

### *Of the second additionall Precept of CHRIST. (Viz.)*

#### Of PRAYER.

I Cor. 3.9.



H E soule of a Christian is the house of GOD, *Te are Gods building* ( saith S. Paul ; ) but the house of GOD is the house of Prayer, and therefore prayer is the work of the soule, whose organs are intended for instruments of the divine praises ; and when every stop and pause of those instruments is but the conclusion of a collect, and every breathing is a prayer, then the body becomes a Temple, and the soule is the sanctuary and more private recess, and place of entercourse. Prayer is the great duty, and the greatest privilege of a Christian ; it is his entercourse with GOD, his sanctuary in troubles, his remedy for sins, his cure of grieves, and as S. Gregory calls it, *it is the principall instrument, whereby we minister to GOD in execution of the decrees of eternall predestination* ; and those things which GOD intends for us, we bring to our selves by the mediation of holy prayers. *Prayer is the ascent of the mind to GOD, and a petitioning for such things, as we need for our support, and duty.* It is an abstract and summary of Christian Religion ; prayer is an act of Religion and divine \* worship, confessing his power and his mercy, it celebrates his attributes, and confesses his glories, and reveres his person, and implores his aide, and gives thanks for his blessings, it is an act of humility, condescension, and dependance expressed in the prostration of our bodies, and humiliation of our spirits ; it is an act of charity, for it prayes for others ; it is an act of repentance, when it confesses and begs pardon for our sins, and exercises every grace according to the design of the man, and the matter of the prayer. So that there will be lesse need to amasse arguments to invite us to this duty ; every part is an excellency, and every end of it is a blessing, and every designe is a motive, and every need is an impulsive to this holy office. Let us but remember how many needs we have, at how cheap a rate we may obtaine their remedies, and yet how honourable the imployment is to go to GOD with confidence, and to fetch our supplies with easinesse and joy ; and then without further preface we may addresse our selves to the understanding of that duty, by which we imitate the imployment of Angels and beatified spirits, by which we ascend to GOD in spirit, while we remaine on earth, and GOD descends on earth, while he yet resides in heaven, sitting there in the Throne of his Kingdom.

Ayðβασις ἐν  
τῷ προσώπῳ τοῦ  
δικτύου τοῦ  
εργονομίτου  
τοῦ Θεοῦ.  
Damasc. l. 3.  
Orthodox. fid.  
  
\* Qui fingit sa-  
cros auro vel  
marmore vultus  
Non facit ille  
Deos: qui ro-  
get ille facit.

Our first enquiry must be concerning the matter of our prayers; for our desires are not to be the rule of our prayers, unless reason and religion be the rule of our desires. The old Heathens prayed to their God for such things, which they were ashamed to name publikely before men, and these were their *private prayers*, which indeed they durst not for their undecency or iniquity make publike. And indeed sometimes the best men ask of G O D things not unlawfull in themselves, yet very hurtfull to them: and therefore as by the spirit of G O D and right reason we are taught in generall, what is lawfull to be asked, so it is still to be submitted to G O D, when we have asked lawfull things to grant to us in kindnesse, or to deny us in \* mercy: after all the rules that can be given us, we not being able in many instances to judge for our selves, unless also we could certainly pronounce concerning future contingencies. But the holy Ghost being now sent upon the Church, and the rule of C H R I S T bring left to his Church together with his form of prayer, taught, and prescribed to his Disciples, we have sufficient instruction for the matter of our prayers so farre as concernes the lawfulness or unlawfulness. And the rule is easie and of no variety. 1. For we are bound to pray for all things, that concerne our duty, all that we are bound to labour for; such as are glory and grace, necessary assistances of the spirit, and rewards spirituall, heaven and heavenly things. 2 Concerning those things, which we may with safety hope for, but are not matter of duty to us, we may lawfully testifie our hope and expresse our desires by petition: but if in their particulars they are under no expresse promise, but onely conveniences of our life and person, it is onely lawfull to pray for them under condition, that they may conforme to GODS will, and our duty, as they are good and placed in the best order of eternity. Therefore for spirituall blessings let our prayers be particularly importunate, perpetuall and persevering: for temporall blessings let them be generall \* short, conditionall, and modest: and whatsoever things are of mixt nature, more spirituall then riches, and lesse necessary then graces, such as are gifts and exterior aides, we may pray for them, as we may defre them, and as we may expect them, that is, with more confidence, and lesse restraint then in the matter of temporall requests, but — *Si tacito* with more reservednesse, and lesse boldnesse of petition, then when we *mala vota* spray for the graces of sanctification. In the first case we are bound to *surro Concipi* pray; In the second it is onely lawfull under certain conditions: *mus* — In the third it becomes to us as an act of zeal, noblenesse and Christian *Pulchra* prudence. But the matter of our prayers is best taught us in the forme *Laverna* our L O R D taught his disciples, <sup>a</sup> which because it is short, mysterious, *Da mihi falle-* and like the treasures of the spirit, full of wisdom and latent senses, *re, da justum* it is not improper to draw forth those excellencies, which are intended and *sanc*tumque* vi-* signified by every petition, that by so excellent an authority, we may know *deri,* what it is lawfull to begge of G O D.

*bus obijce nubem* \* — *Si consilium vis, permittes ipsis expendere Numinibus, quid Convenias nobis, rebusque sit uile nostris, Nam pro iucundis aptissima quoque dabunt Di. Juvenal. Exoravit in perniciem roganum sexu benignitas est.* — \* multa penitentibus Desunt multa. Bene est, cui Deus obtulit parca, quod satis est manu. Hor. l. 3. od. 16. <sup>a</sup> *Oratio hec quantum substringitur verbis, tantum diffunditur sensibus. Tertull. Evangelij breviarium. Idem. l. de orat. c. 1. Si tamen recte & congruerint oramus nihil aliud dicere possumus quamquod in oratione Domini- ea continetur. S. Aug. ad fratn in Erem.*

No*tem pecca-*  
-*tis, & fraudi-*  
-*bus obijce nubem* \* — *Si consilium vis, permittes ipsis expendere Numinibus, quid Convenias nobis, rebusque sit uile nostris, Nam pro iucundis aptissima quoque dabunt Di. Juvenal. Exoravit in perniciem roganum sexu benignitas est.* — \* multa penitentibus Desunt multa. Bene est, cui Deus obtulit parca, quod satis est manu. Hor. l. 3. od. 16. <sup>a</sup> *Oratio hec quantum substringitur verbis, tantum diffunditur sensibus. Tertull. Evangelij breviarium. Idem. l. de orat. c. 1. Si tamen recte & congruerint oramus nihil aliud dicere possumus quamquod in oratione Domini- ea continetur. S. Aug. ad fratn in Erem.*

*Cujusmodi*  
*ridet Lucianus*  
*in Icaro Me-*  
*nippo. Ω γε*  
*περιστασην*  
*μη γνωτον α*  
*εστι τα χρησιμα*  
*μη ποτε κα τι*  
*οντεσσον. ο γε*  
*τοις πατερεσσι μη*  
*πεχθεσσι ποτε*  
*νει: ο δη τις αρ*  
*ραιν. Επει την*  
*εργασιαν ει*  
*της γυναικος θε*  
*λαζιδους θηβε-*  
*λευκας τηι ειδε-*  
*σεο γνωτον μη*  
*πινθανει τηι δι-*  
*και, σερβωνε*  
*τηι οδηγητα.*  
*τοις πατερεσσι ο*  
*μη βοσκειν*  
*χειρο διαπλωσαι,*  
*γενετην ειπειν.*  
*τοις πατερεσσι ο*  
*μη βοσκειν*  
*χειρο διαπλωσαι,*  
*γενετην ειπειν.*

## Part II.

3.  
*Vir bonus vera  
Dei progenies  
Senec. de pro-  
vident.  
Kai τε μηδε  
νος ισχιν, Me-  
nand.  
Hoc donum ex-  
cedit omne do-  
num ut Deus ho-  
minem vocet fi-  
lium. Leo serm.  
de Nativ.*

4.  
*Matth. 23.8.  
Ephes. 4. 6.  
Nil nisi nos dele-  
ctet in infinitis,  
qui Patrem ha-  
bemus in cœlis.  
Leo serm. de ac-  
cess.*

## 5.

*Our Father, which art in heaven.]* The addresse remyndes us of many parts of our duty. If G O D be our Father, where is his fear and reverence, and obedience. If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the workes of Abraham; and ye are of your father the Devill, for his workes ye do. Let us not dare to call him Father if we be rebells and enemies; but if we be obedient, then we know he is our Father, and will give us a childes portion, and the inheritance of sonnes. But it is obserueable, that CHRIST here speaking concerning private prayer, does describe it in a forme of plurall signification, to tell us, that we are to draw into the communication of our prayers all those, who are confederated in the common relation of sonnes to the same Father. *Which art in heaven ]* tells us, where our hopes and our hearts must be fixed, whither our desires, and our prayers must tend. *Sursum corda ; where our treasure is there must our hearts be also.*

*Hallowed be thy Name ]* That is, let thy Name, thy essence, and glorious attributes be honoured, and adored in all the world, believed by faith, loved by charity, celebrated with praises, thank'd with Eucharist, and let thy Name be hallowed in us, as it is in it selfe. Thy Name being called upon us, let us walk worthy of that calling, and that our light may shine before men, that they seeing our good workes may gloriſe thee our Father, *which art in heaven.* In order also to the sanctification of thy Name grant that all our praises, hymnes, Encharisticall remembrances and representments of thy glories may be usefull, blessed and effectuall for the dispersing thy fame, and advancing thy honour over all the world. This is a direct and formall act of worshipping and adoration. The Name of G O D is representative of G O D himfelfe, and it signifies, be thou worshipped and adored, be thou thanked and celebrated with honour and Eucharist.

*Thy kingdom come ]* that is, as thou hast caused to be preached and published the coming of thy kingdom, the peace, and truth, the revelation and glories of the Gospell, so let it come verily and effectually to us, and all the world; that thou mayest truely reigne in our spirits, exercising absolute dominion, subduing all thine Enemies, ruling in our faculties, in the understanding by faith, in the will by charity, in the passions by mortification, in the members, by a chaste and right use of the parts. And as it was more particularly, and in the letter proper at the beginning of C H R I S T S preaching, when he also taught the prayer, that G O D would hasten the coming of the Gospell to all the world; so now also and ever it will be in its proportion necessary and pious to pray, that it may come still, making greater progresse in the world, extending it selfe, where yet it is not, and intending it where it is already, that the kingdom of C H R I S T may not onely be in us in name and forme, and honourable appellatives, but in effect and power. This petition in the first ages of Christianity was not expounded to signifie a prayer, for C H R I S T S second coming; because the Gospell not being preached to all the world, they prayed for the delay of the day of judgement, that C H R I S T S kingdom upon earth might have its proper increment: but since then, every age as it is more forward in time, so it is more earnest in desire to accomplish the intermedial prophesies that the Kingdom of G O D the Father might come in glories infinite. And indeed the kingdom of grace being in order to the kingdom of glory, this as it is principally to be desired,

desired, so may possibly be intended chiefly; which also is the more probable, because the addresse of this Prayer being to God the Father, it is proper to observe, that the kingdome of greace, or of the Gosspell, is called the kingdome of the \* son, and that of glory in the stile of the scripture is the kingdome of the Father. S. German Patriarch of Constantinople expoundes it with some little difference, but not ill; *thy kingdome come*, that is, let thy H. spirit come into us; for the *kingdome of heaven is with us*, saith the H. scripture; and so it intimates our desires, that the promise of the Father, and the Prophecies of old, and the H. Ghost the Comforter may come upon us; let that *anointing from above* descend upon us; whereby we may be anointed Kings and Priests in a spirituall kingdome and priesthood by a holy Chrisme.

*Thy will be done in Earth, as it is in heaven.]* That is, the whole Oeconomy and dispensation of thy Providence be the guide of the world, and the measure of our desire; that we be patient in all accidents, conformable to Gods will both in doing and in suffering; submitting to changes and even to persecutions; and doing all Gods will, which because without Gods aid we cannot doe, therefore we beg it of him by prayer, but by his aid we are confident we may doe it in the manner of Angelicall obedience, that is, *promptly, readily, cheerfully, and with all our faculties*. Or thus; as the Angels in heaven serve thee with harmony, concord, and peace, so let us all joyne in the service of thy Maiestie with peace and purity, and love unfained; that, as all the Angels are in peace, and amongst them there is no persecutour, and none persecuted, there is none afflicting, or afflicted, none assaulting, or assaul ted, but all in sweetnesse and peaceable serenity glorifying thee, so let thy will be done on earth by all the world, in peace and unity, in charity and tranquillity, that with one heart and one voice we may glorify thee our universall Father, having in us nothing, that may displease thee, having quited all our own desires and pretensions, living in Angelicke conformity, our soules subiect to thee, and our Passions to our soules, that in earth also thy will may be done, as in the spirit and soule, which is a portion of the heavenly substance. These three petitions are addressed to God by way of adoration. In the first the soule putteth on the *affection of a child*, and devesth it selfe of its owne interest, offering it self up wholly to the designes, and glorifications of God. In the second it putteth on the relation and *duty of a subiect* to her legitimate Prince, seeking the promotion of his regall interest. In the third, she putteth on the *affection of a spouse*, loving the same love, and choosing the same obiect, and delighting in unions and conformities. The next part descends lower, and makes addresses to God, in relation to our own necessities.

*Give us this day our daily bread]* that is, give unto us all that is necessary for the support of our lives, the bread of our necessity, so the Syriack interpreter readeis it; This day give us the portion of bread which is day by day necessary, Give us the bread or support, which we shall need all our lives, only this day minister our present part. For we pray for the necessary bread or maintenance, which Gods knowes we shall need all our dayes; but that we be not carefull for to morrow, we are taught to pray not that it be all at once represented, or deposited, but, that God would minister it, as we need it, how he pleases; but our needs are to be the measure of our desires, our desires must not make our needs, that we may be confident of the Divine providence and not at all covetous; for therefore God feeds his people with extemporey provisions, that by needing allwayes they may learne

\* Coloss: 1.13.

Revel: 1.9.

Matth: 13.41

Luke: 6.32.

Matth: 16.27.

6

\* Embodi ab  
miser quod  
diem posterum  
significat. Na  
zarenorum E  
vangelium  
(referente S.  
Hieronymo)

legit [ panem  
craſtinum.] S.  
Lucas [ panem  
diurnum ] ſive,  
indies necessari  
um. τὸ καθ ὥρ  
εα.

πάσι ζητεῖ  
κλήσις εὐηγγελίου  
Vicitur parvo  
bene cui pater  
num Splendet  
in mensa tenue  
Salinum, Nec  
leves somnos  
timor, aut cupido  
folidus aufert  
Horat

## Part II.

Fructibus Agris-  
pe Siculis, quos  
coligit Icco Si-  
reste frui is, non  
estut copia ma-  
jor Ab Jove de-  
nari positi tibi.  
tolle querelas:  
Pauper enim non  
est cui terum sup-  
petit uis, si uen-  
tri bene, si lateri  
est, pedibique  
tuis, Nil Dicitur  
poterunt regales  
addre majus.  
Horat ad Iccis-  
um.  
Mi plor tu quo  
ex a i te d  
Dionysius alio  
tempore dicitur  
Plutarch.  
• Locus in pre-  
sens animus,  
quod ultra est,  
oderit curare: &  
anara lento  
Tempore risu

— Hor. 1.2 od  
15.

8.

— quid aeternis  
minorem  
Consiliis ani-  
mum fatigas?  
Horat 1.2. od. 11  
Vita summa lie-  
vis spem nos ve-  
tar inchoare  
longam.  
Jan te premet  
nox, fabulaque  
manes & domus  
exilis Plutonia  
Hor. 1. I. od. 3  
'Ara, cuius res ipsa  
i postmodum Conc.  
Nican.

to pray to him, and by being still supplyed, may learn to trust him for the future, and thank him for that is past, and rejoice in the present. So God reigned down Manna, giving them their daily portion; and so all Fathers and Masters minister to their children, and servants, giving them their proportion, as they eat it, not the meat of a year at once; & yet no childe or servant fears want, if his Parent or Lord were good and wise, and rich. And it is necessary for all \* to pray this Prayer; the poor because they want the bread, and have it not deposited but in the hands of God, *mercy plowing the fields of heaven*, (as Jobs expression is) brings them corn; and the cattell upon a thousand hills are Gods, and they finde the poor man meat; the rich also needs this prayer, because although they have the bread, yet they need the blessing; & what they have now, may perish or be taken from them; & as preservation is a perpetual creation, so the continuing to rich men, what God hath already bestowed is a continual giving it. Young men must pray, because their needs are like to be the longer, and old men, because they are present, but all these are to pray but for the \* present, that which in estimation of law is to be reckoned, as eminent upon the present, and part of this state and condition. But it is great improvidence, and an unchristian spirit for old men to heap up provisions, and load their sumptures stil the more by how much their way is shorter. But there is also a bread which came down from heaven, a Diviner nutriment of our souls, the food, and *wine of Angels*; Christ himself as he communicates himselfe in the expresses of his word and sacraments; and if we be destitute of this bread, we are miserable and perishing people; we must pray that souls also may feed upon those celestial viands prepared for us in the antepasts of the Gospel, til the great and fuller meal of the supper of the Lamb shall answer all our prayers, and satisfie every desire.

*Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.* ] Not only those sinnes of infirmity, invasion, and sudden surprise, which like excrescencies of luxuriant trees adhere to many actions by inadvertency, and either naturall weakness or accidentall prejudice; but also all those great sinnes, which were walsied off from our souls, and the staine taken away in baptisme; or when by choice, and after the use of reason we gave up our names to CHRIST, when we first received the adoption of sons; for even those things were so pardoned, that we must for ever confess, and glory in the Divine mercy, and still ascertain it by performing what we then promised, and which were the conditions of our covenant. For although CHRIST hath taken off the guilt, yet still there remains the disreputation; and S. Paul calls himselfe the *chiefest of sinners*, not referring to his present condition, but to his former persecuting the Church of GOD, which is one of the greatest crimes in the world, and for ever he askd pardon for its; and so must we, knowing that they may returne; if we shake off the yoke of CHRIST, and break his cords from us, the bands of the covenant Evangelicall, the sinnes will returne so as to undoe us. And this we pray with a tacite obligation to forgive; for so onely, and upon that condition we begge pardon to be given or continued respectively; that is, as we from our hearts forgive them that did us injury in any kinde, never entertaining so much as a thought of revenge, but contrariwise loving them, that did us wrong; for so we beg that God should do to us; and therefore it is but a lesser revenge to say, I will forgive, but I will never have to do with him. For if he become an object of charity we must have to do with him to relieve him; because he needs pray-  
ers, we must have to do with him and pray for him, and to refuse his society, when

when it is reasonably and innocently offered is to deny that to him, which Christians have only bin taught to deny to persons excommunicate, to persons under punishment; i.e. to persons not yet forgiven; & we shal have but an evil portion, if God shuld forgive our sins, & should not also love us, & do us grace and bestow benefits upon us. So we must forgive others; so GOD forgives us.

*And lead us not into temptation*] S. Cyprian out of an old Latin copy reads it, \* suffer us not to be lead into temptation, that is, suffer us not to be overcome by temptation; and therefore we are bound to prevent our access to such temptation, whose very approximation is dangerous, and the contact is irregular and evill; such as are temptations of the flesh; yet in other temptations the assault sometimes makes confident, and hardens a resolution. For some spirits who are softned by fair usages are steeled and emboldned by a persecution. But of what nature soever the temptations be, whether they be such, whose approach a Christian is bound to fear, or such which are the certain lot of Christians (such are troubles & persecutions, into which when we enter we must count it joy) yet we are to pray that we enter not into the possession of the temptation, that we be not overcome by it.

*But deliver us from evill*] From the assaults or violence of evill, from the wicked one, who not onely presents us with objects, but heightens our concupiscence, and makes us imaginative, phantafticall and passionate, setting on the temptation, making the lust active, and the man full of appetite, and the appetite full of energy and power: therefore deliver us from the evill one, who is interested as an enemy in every hostility, and in every danger. Let not Satan have any power or advantage over us, and let not evill men prevale upon us in our danger, much lesse to our ruine. Make us safe under the covering of thy wings against all fraud and every violence, that no temptation destroy our hopes, or break our strength, or alter our state, or overthrow our glories; In these last petitions, which concerne our selves, the soule hath affections proper to her own needs, as in the former proportion to GODS glory. In the first of these, the affection of a poor indigent, and necessitous begger, in the second of a delinquent and penitent servant, in the last of a person in affliction, or danger. And after all this the reason of our confidence is derived from GOD.

*For thine is the kingdom, the Power, and the Glory, for ever*] That is, these which we beg are for the honor of thy kingdom, for the manifestation of thy power, and the glory of thy name & mercies; and it is an expresse Doxology or adoration, which is apt and fit to conclude all our prayers, and addresses to GOD.

These are the generalls and great Treasures of matter, to which all our present or sudden needs are reducible, and when we make our prayers more minute and particular, if the instance be in matter of duty, and meerly spirituall, there is no danger; but when our needs are temporall, or we are transported with secular desires, all descending to particulars is a confining of the Divine Providence, a judging for our selves, a begging a temptation oftentimes, sometimes a mischief; and to beg beyond the necessities of our life, is a mutiny against that providence, which affignes to Christians no more but food and rayment for their own use; all other excrescencies of possessions being entrusted to the rich mans dispensation, only as to a steward: and he shall be accountable for the coat, that lyes by him, as the portion of moths; and for the shooes, which are the spoiles of mouldiness, and the contumy of plenty.\* *Grant me, O Lord, not what I desire, but what is profitable for me.* For sometimes we desire that, which in the succeeding event of things wil undo us.

Parum est nobis non puniri,  
nisi mere amur  
et dilig. Hugo  
de S. Victor.

1.2. allegat : in  
Math.

\* Ti 3d, 9d.  
Hoc dicitur ad do-  
ctorum inue-  
tior; ut p. 210.  
et 3d. 210.  
Tib. 210.  
2d. 210.  
naturae et  
autem, in rebus  
moralibus aut  
intrepidois ma-  
iorum iustis mel-  
ioribus. S.  
German. Patr.  
C. P. c. 210.  
Ispv.

— Pro jucun-  
dis apifissima  
quaque dabunt  
Diz.

Carior est illis  
homo quam sibi  
nos animorum  
Impulsu, & ca-  
ca magnaque  
Cupidine dulcie  
Conjugium pe-  
tinimus, partum-  
que uxoris, &  
illis

Notum qui pne-  
ri, qualisque,  
futura sit uxori.

Juvenal.

\* Mi sui si-  
nos & leonos  
am' e ouphi-

Part II.

13.

This rule is in all things, that concerne our selves. There is some little difference in the affaires and necessities of other men; for provided we submit to the divine providence, and pray for good things for others only with a tacit condition, so far as they are good and profitable in order to the best ends, yet if we be particular, there is no covetousnes in it; there may be indiscretion in the particular, but in the generall no fault, because it is a prayer & a design of ch.ity. *For kings and all that are in authority we may yet enlarge & pray for peaceable reign, true lieges, strong armies, victory & fair successe in their just wars, health, long life, and riches, because they have a capacity, which private persons have not, and whatsoever is good for single persons, & whatsoever is apt for their uses as publike persons, all that we may, and we must pray for; either particularly, for so we may; or in general significations, for so we must at least; that we may lead a godly, peaceable, and quiet life, in all godlines and honesty, that is S. Pauls rule, and the prescribed measure and purpose of such prayers.* And in this instance of kings, we may pray for defeating all the Kings enemies, such as are truly such, and we have no other restraint upon us in this, but that we keep our desires confined within the limits of the end we are commanded; that is, so far to confound the kings enemies, that he may do his duty, and we do ours, and receive the blessing, ever as much as we can to distinguish the malice from the person. But if the enemies themselves will not also seperate, what our intentions distinguish, that is, if they will not return to their duty, then let the prayers operate as GOD pleases, we must be zealous for the end of the kings authority, and peaceable government. By enemies I mean rebels or invaders, tyrants and usurpers; for in other wars there are many other considerations not proper for this place.

14.

1 Job. 3. 21.

Jam. 5. 16:

Ioh. 9. 31.

Psal. 66. 18.

Psal. 34. 16.

Ijay. 1. 15.

Ijay. 58. 7.

Mal. 3. 10.

1 Tim. 2. 8.

*Cann. n. is qui  
displacet ad in-  
tercedendum  
mittitur, ira i-  
animus ad de-  
teriora provo-  
catur. Gregor.  
Pastor.*

\* *Innumis a-  
ram si tetigit  
manus.*

*Non sumptuosa  
blandior hostia  
Mollibit aver-  
sus penates  
Fare pio &  
faliencemica.*

The next consideration wil be concerning the manner, I mean both the manner of our persons, and the manner of our prayers, that is, with what conditions we ought to approach to God, and with what circumstances the prayers may, or ought to be performed. The conditions to make our prayers holy, & certain to prevail are, 1. That we live good lives endeavoring to conform by helly obedience to all the divine Commandments. The condition is exprely recorded by S. John, Beloved, if our hearts condemn us not, then have we confidence towards G O D, and whatsoeuer wee aske of him wee shall obtaine; and Saint James affirms, that the effectuall fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much; and our blessed Saviour limiting the confidence of our prayers for forgiveness, to our charity, and forgiving others, plainly tells us, that the uncharitable and unrighteous person shall not be heard. And the blind man in the Gospel understood well what he said, *Now we know that God heareth not sinners, but if any man be a worshipper, and doth his will, him he heareth.* And it was so decreed and resolved a point in the doctrine of their religion, that it was a proverbiaill saying, & although this discourse of the blind man was of a restrained occasion, and signified, if Christ had been a false Prophet God would not have attested his sermons with the power of miracles, yet in general also he had been taught by David: *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear my prayer.* And therefore when men pray in every place (for so they are commanded) *let them lift up pure hands, without anger and contention.* And indeed although every sinne \* entertained with a free chooice & a full understanding is an obstruction to our prayers; yet the speciall sin of uncharitableness makes the biggest cloud and is in the proper matter of it an indisposition for us to receive mercy; for he who is softned with apprehension

of his owne needs of mercy, will be tender-hearted towards his brother, and therefore he that hath no bowels here, can have no aptnesse there to receive or heartily to hope for mercy. But this rule is to be understood of persons, who persevere in the habit and remanent affections of sin; so long as they entertain sin with love, complacency and joy, they are in a state of enmity with God, & therefore in no fit disposition to receive pardon & the entertainment of friends; but penitent sinners, and returning soules, loaden and grieved with their heavy pressures, are next to holy innocents, the aptest persons 5.

in the world to be heard in their prayers for pardon; but they are in no further disposition to large favours, and more eminent charities. A sinner in the beginning of his penance will be heard for himselfe, and yet also he needs the prayers of holy persons more signally then others; for he hath but some very few degrees or dispositions to reconciliation; but in prayers of intercession or mediation for others, onely holy, and very pious persons are fit to be interested. All men as matter of duty must pray for all men; but in the great necessities of a Prince, of a Church, or kingdome, or of a family, or of a great danger and calamity to a single person, onely a Noah, a David, a Daniel, a Jeremy, an Enoch or Job are fit and proportioned advocates. GOD so requires holinesse in us, that our prayers may be accepted, that he entertaines them in severall degrees according to the degrees of our sanctity, to fewer or more purposcs, according as we are little or great in the kingdome of heaven. As for those irregular donations of good things, which wicked persons aske for and have, they are either no mercies, but instruments of cursing and crime, or else they are designes of grace, intended to convince them of their unworthiness, and so if they become not instruments of their conversion, they are aggravations of their ruin.

2. The second condition I have already explained in the description of the matter of our prayers; for although we may lawfully ask for whatsoever we need, and this leave is configned to us in those words of our blessed Saviour: *Your heavenly Father knoweth what you have need of:* yet because Gods providence walks in the great deep, that is, his footsteps are in the water, and leave no impression, no former act of grace becomes a precedent that he will give us that in kind, which then he saw convenient, and therefore gave us; and now he sees to be inconvenient, and therefore does deny: therefore in all things but what are matter of necessary and unmingled duty we must send up our prayers; but humility, mortification and conformity to the divine will must attend for an answer, and bring back not what the publick Embassy pretends, but what they have in private instructions to desire, accounting that for the best satisfaction, what GOD pleases, not what I have either unnecessarily, or vainly, or sinfully desired.

3. When our persons are disposed by sanctity, and the matter of our prayers is hallowed by prudence, and religious intendments, then we are bound to entertaine a full perswasion and confident hope, that GOD will heare us. *What thing soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall obtaine them,* said our blessed Saviour; and S. James taught from that Oracle, *If any of you lack wisdome let him ask it of GOD, but let him aske in faith nothing wavering;* for hee that wavereth is like a wave of the Sea, driven with the wind and tossed to and fro: Meaning, that when there is no fault in the matter of our prayers, but that wee aske things pleasing to GOD, and there is no indisposition and hostility in

Eugenio Simoni  
in avibus Sicis.

36.

Mar. II. 24.

Jam. 5.6,7.

## Part II.

*Cry antio Tere  
us in autem  
hunc versiculum  
occinuit,  
"Orne dominum im-  
peratores reges et  
imperatorem.  
Eunapius in vita  
Maximi.  
tignum futura  
impetrationis est  
quando spiritus  
sanctus moveret ad  
petendum cum  
fiducia, et quasi  
securitate imp-  
terandi Castiani:  
Collat: 9. c 32.  
Eccl. 35.  
17. psal: 102. 17.  
Non in pluribus  
sunt actus tui.  
Eccl. 1. c. 15. impar  
quisit; inventur  
ad singula, dum  
confusa mente  
dividitur ad  
multa. S. Greg.  
Psa. I p.c. 4.  
Magnam rem pu-  
ta hominem  
unum agere, pra-  
ter sapientem  
nemo unum agit  
ceteri  
multiformes su-  
mus. Seneca.  
Mentem tanta  
rei intentam va-  
care omnibus  
aliis etiam culpa  
carentibus virtutis  
opores quinque:  
2 Inveni i le-  
gum meum in  
lectulo, i.e. in qui-  
ete, quia quæ cu-  
ra implicat, quies-  
explicat. s Pers-  
nar serm: I, in  
Cane:*

17

in our persons, and manners between God and us, then to doubt, were to distrust God; for all being right on our parts, if we doubt the issue, the defiance must be on that part, which to suspect were infinite impiety. But if ever we have done all we can, if out of humility, and feare we are not truly dispos'd, we doubt of the issue, it is a modesty which will not at all discommend our persons, nor impede the event; provided we at no hand suspect either Gods power, or veracity. Putting trust in God is an excellent advantage to our prayers, *I will deliver him* (saith God,) because he hath put his trust in me. And yet distrusting our selves, and suspecting our own dispositions, as it puts us back in our actuall confidence of the event, so because it abates nothing of our confidence in God, it prepares us to receive the reward of humility, \* and not to loose the praise of a holy trusting in the Almighty.

These conditions are essential: some other there are which are incidents and accessories, but at no hand to be neglected. And the first is, *aetwall* or *habitual* attention to our prayers, which we are to procure with morall and severe endeavours, that we desire not God to heare us, when we doe not heare our selves. To which purpose we must avoid, as much as our duty will permit us, multiplicity of cares, and exterior imployments; for a river cut into many rivulets divides also its strength, and growes contemptible, and apt to be foarded by a lamb, and drunk up by a summer sun: so is the spirit of man busie in variety and divided in its selfe; it abates its fervour, cooles into indifference, and becomes trifling by its dispersion and inadvertency. Aquinas was once asked with what compendium a man might best become learned; he answered by reading of one book: meaning, that an understanding entertained with severall obiects is *intent* upon neither, and profits not. And so it is when we pray to God; if the cares of the world intervene, they choake our desire into an indifference, and suppress the flame into a smoke, and strangle the spirit. But this being an habitual carelessness and intemperance of spirit, is an Enemy to an habituall attention, and therefore is highly criminal, and makes our prayers to be but the labour of the lips, because our desires are lessened by the remenant affections of the world. But besides an habituall attention in our prayers, that is, a desire in generall of all, that our prayers pretend to in particular, there is also for the accommodation, and to facilitate the accessse of our prayers required that we attend actually to the words or sense of every collect or petition. To this we must contend with prayer, with actuall dereliction & seposition of all our other affaires, though innocent and good in other kinds, by a present spirit. And the use of it is, that such attention is an actuall convering with God; it occasions the exercise of many acts of vertu, it increases zeale and fervency, and by reflexion enkindles loue and holy desires: and although there is no rule to determine the degree of our actuall attention, and it is ordinarily impossible never to wander with a thought, or to be interrupted with a sudden immision into his spirit in the the midst of prayers; yet our duty is by mortification of our secular desires, by suppression of all our irregular passions, by reducing them to indifference, by severity of spirit, by enkindling our holy appetites and desires of holy things, by silence, and meditation, & repose, to get as forward in this excellency as we can; to which also we may be very much helped by iaculatory prayers, and short breathings, in which as by reason of their short abode upon the spirit there is lesse feare of diversion; so also they may so often be renewed, that nothing of the Devotion may be unspent, or expire for want of oyle to feed and entertain the flame. But the deter-

determination of the case of conscience is this. Habituall attention is absolutely necessary in our prayers, that is, it is altogether our duty to desire of GOD all, that we pray for; though our mind be not actually attending to the forme of words, and therefore all worldly desires, that are inordinate, must be rescinded, that we more earnestly attend on GOD then on the world. He that prayes to GOD to give him the gift of chasity, and yet secretly wishes rather for an opportunity of lust, and desires God would not heare him (as S. Austin confesses of himself in his youth) that man sins, for want of holy and habituall desires; he prayes onely with his lips, what he in no sense attests in his heart. 2 Actuall attention to our prayers is also necessary, not ever to avoid a finne, but that the present prayer become effectuall. He that meanes to feast, and to get thankes of GOD must invite the poor; and yet he that invites the rich, in that, he sins not, though he hath no reward of God for that; So, that prayer perishes, to which the man gives no degree of actuall attention, for the prayer is, as if it were not, it is no more then a dreame, or an act of custome, and order, nothing of devotion, and so accidentally becomes a sin by taking Gods name in vain. 3. It is not necessary to the prevalency of the prayer, that the spirit actually accompanies every clause or word; if it sayes a hearty Amen, or in any part of it attests the whole, it is such an attention, which the present condition of most men will permit. 4. A wandering of the spirit thorough carelessness, or any vice, or inordinate passion is in that degree criminall, as is the cause, and it is heightned by the greatnesse of the interruption. 5. It is onely excused by our endeavours to cure it, and by our after acts either of sorrow or repetition of the prayer, and reinforcing the intention. And certainly if we repeate our prayer, in which we have observed our spirits too much to wander, and resolve still to repeat it (as our opportunities permit) it may in a good degree defeat the purpose of the Enemy, when his own arts shall returne upon his head, and the wandering of our spirits be made the occasion of a prayer, and the parent of a new devotion. 6. Lastly, according to the degrees of our actuall attention, so our prayers are more or lesse perfect, a present spirit being a great instrument, and testimony of wisdom, and apt to many great purposes; and our continuall abode with God, being a great indeerment of our persons by encreasing the affections.

2. The second accessory is *intension* of spirit or fervency, such as was that of our B. saviour. who prayed to his Father with strong cryes, and loud petitions, not clamorous in language, but strong in spirit. S. Paul also when he was pressed with a strong temptation, he prayed thrice, that is, earnestly; & S. James affirms this to be of great value, & efficacy to the obtaining blessings. the effectuall fervent prayer of a just person availes much; And Elias, though a man of like passions yet by earnest prayer he obtained raine, or drought according as he desired. Now this is properly produced by the greatnesse of our desire of heavenly things, our true value and estimate of religion, our sense of present pressures, our feares, and it hath some accidental increases by the disposition of our body, the strength of fancy, and the tenderesse of spirit, and assiduity of the dropping of religious discourses; and in all men is necessary to be so great, as that we preferre heaven and religion before the world, and desire them rather, with the choice of our wills and understanding, though there cannot alwaies be that degree of sensuall, pungent or delectable affections, towards religion, as towards the desires

Onis locus inge  
nionis cuiuscumque  
carmine solo  
vox autem —  
Fectora vestra  
duas non admittantia curas.  
Magna mentis  
opus, nec de lo-  
dice paranda  
Atrooice —  
Ilyenala.

To 3  
Metaphor ex-  
tricatus in T  
quibus  
Sophocli Oedip.

## Part II.

of nature and sense; yet ever we must prefer celestiall objects, restraining the appetites of the world, lest they be immoderate, and heightning the desires of grace and glory, lest they become indifferent. But the greater zeal and fervour of desire we have in our prayers, the sooner and the greater will the return of the prayer be, if the prayer be for spirituall objects. For other things our desires must be according to our needs, not by a value derived from the nature of the thing, but the usefulness, it is to us, in order to our greater and better purposes.

19.

*In regeūx  
et ceteris,  
Rom. 12.12.  
Quod olim erat  
Levitarum &  
Sacerdotum  
proprium.*

3. Of the same consideration it is, that we *persevere and be importunate in* our prayers by repetition of our desires, and not remitting either our afflictions or our offices, till GOD, overcome by our importunity give a gracious answer. Jacob wrestled with the Angel all night, and would not dismiss him, til he had given him a blessing; *Let me alone, saith God, as if he felt a pressure & burden lying upon him by our prayers, or could not quit himself, nor depart unless we give him leave; and since God is detained by our prayers, & we may keep him as long as we please, and that he will not go away, til we leave speaking to him; he that wil dismiss him, till he hath his blessing, knows not the value of his benediction, or understands not the energy, and power of a persevering prayer.* And to this purpose Christ speaks a Parable, that *men ought alwayes to pray, and not to faint; praying without ceasing.* S. Paul calls it, that is, with continual addresses, frequent interpellations, never ceasing renewing the request, till I obtaine my desire. For it is not enough to recommend our desires to GOD with one hearty prayer, and then forget to ask him any more; but so long as our needs continue, so long in all times, and upon all occasions to renew and repeat our desires; and this is *praying continually;* just as the widow did to the unjust Judge, she never left going to him, she troubled him every day with her clamorous suit; so must we *pray alwayes,* that is, every day, and many times every day, according to our occasions and necessities, or our devotion and zeale, or as we are determined by the customes and lawes of a Church; Never giving over through weariness or distrust; often renewing our desires by a continual succession of devotions, returning at certaine and determinate periods. For Gods blessings though they come infallibly, yet not alwayes speedily, saving only that it is a blessing to be delayed, that we may increase our desire, and renew our prayers, and doe acts of confidence and patience, and *ascertaine* and encrease the blessing when it comes. For we doe not more desire to be blessed, then GOD does to hear us importunate for blessing, and he weighs every figh, and bottles up every teare, and records every prayer, and looks through the cloud with delight to see us upon our knees, and when he sees his time, his light breaks through it, and shines upon us. Only we must not make our accounts for GOD, according to the course of the Sun, but the measures of eternity. He measures us by our needs, and wee must not measure him by our impatience. *God is not slack, as some men count slacknesse,* saith the Apostle, and we find it so, when we have waited long. All the elapsed time is no part of the tediousnesse; the trouble of it is passed with it selfe, and for the future we know not how little it may be; for ought we know we are already entred into the cloud, that brings the blessing. However pray, till it comes; for we shal never mise to receive our desires, if it be holy, or innocent, and safe; or else we are sure of a great reward of our prayers.

20.

And in this so determined, there is no danger of blasphemy or vaine repetitions:

petitions : For those repetitions are vaine, which repeate the words, not the devotion , which renew the expression and not the desire ; and he that may pray the same prayer to morrow which he said to day, may pray the same at night, which he said in the morning, and the same at noon, which he said at night, and so in all the houres of prayer, and in all the opportunity of devotion. Christ in his agony *went thrice and said the same words*, but he had intervals for repetition; and his need and his devotion pressed him forward; and when ever our needs do so, it is all one, if we say the same words, or others, so we expresse our desire, and tell our needs, and beg the remedy. In the same office and the same houre of prayer to repeat the same things often hath but few excuses to make it reasonable, and fewer to make it pious; But to thinke, that the prayer is better for such repetition is the fault , which the H. JESUS condemned in the \* Gentiles who in their hymnes would say a name over a hundred times. But in this we have no rule to determine us in numbers and proportion, but right reason. GOD loves not any words the more for being said often; and those repetitions, which are unreasonable in prudent estimation cannot in any account be esteemed pious. But where a reasonable cause allowes the repetition, the same cause, that makes it reasonable, makes it also proper for devotion. He that speakes his needs, and expresses nothing but his fervour and greatnessse of desire, cannot be vaine or long in his prayers; He that speaks impertinently, that is unreasonably and without desires, is long though he speake but two syllables; He that thinkes for speaking much to be heard the sooner, thinkes G O D is delighted in the labour of the lips ; but when reason is the guide, and piety is the rule, and necessity is the measure, and desire gives the proportion, let the prayer be very long, he that shall blamie it for its length must proclaim his disrelish both of reason and religion, his despite of necessity, and contempt of zeale.

As a part and instance of our opportunity in prayer is it usually reckoned and advised, that in cases of great, sudden and violent need \*we corroborate our prayers, with a vow of doing something holy and religious is an uncommanded instance, something to which God had not formerly bound our duty, though fairely invited our will; or else if we chuse a duty, in which we were obliged, then to vow the doing of it in a more excellent manner, with a greater inclination of the wil, with a more fervent repetition of the act, with some more noble circumstance, with a fuller assent of the understanding, or else adding a new promise to our old duty, to make it become more necessary to us, and to secure our duty; In this case, as it requires great prudence and caution in the sunction, least what we piously intend, obtaine a present blessing, and lay a fasting snare; so if it be prudent in the manner, holy in the matter, usefull in the consequence, and safe in all the circumstances of the person it is an endeering us, and our prayer to God by the encrease of duty and charity, and therefore a more probable way of making our prayers gracious, and acceptable. And the religion of vowed was not only hallowed by the example of Jacob at Bethel , of Hannah praying for a child, and God hearing her, of David vowed a temple to God; and made regular and safe by the rules and cautions in Moses law but left by our blessed Saviour in the same constitution he found it, he having innovated nothing in the matter of oves ; and it was practised accordingly in the instance of Saint Paul at Cenchrea, of Ananias and Saphira, who vowed their possessions to the use of the Church, and of the Widowes

\* Ohe iam define Deo.  
Vox gratulando obsec-  
rare  
Tuani esse inventam  
estimantur nati illos tuo ex  
ingenio judicas  
Ut mihi credas intelligere  
miti idem dictum est omni-  
ties Comodo.

Δαλεῖς ἀειστοῖς;  
αὐτὸν οὐδέποτε λε-  
γεῖσθαι τοῖς λά-  
ρει Αἴα ἡ τε  
Οὐαὶς εἰπεῖς  
μακεῖν. Phile-  
mon.

Ζωὴς τοῦ εἰτε  
πολλὰ, γλαυκία.  
Sophocli. Oedip.

In te respici Tullus Ho-  
dudicem sive  
Salios, Fanum, Pallon et  
Pexon, Luvius.  
Ego me magno religione  
quaqueque fide ult-  
ro ad omnifidum pati-  
Greci ad Atticum  
Solestant aetiam et vota  
votis gratiositas indicia,  
Votorum dulces epulantes  
alibus Libero caprini  
prape fumos et Arboris  
iugis, ruris, aedis.  
Non est impudens  
ad miseros precies  
Decurrit et votis pacis  
Ne Cyprina, Tytiaque  
nieres  
Addit ut avato divinitas  
mar. Id.  
Et Iacchus quidem in pre-  
dictis votis, sed etiam lepro-  
aci Diomoni gratiam re-  
fendit, unde fiti facio-  
rum inter ambova cultu-  
per proposita obligatae  
tun. Tacito. Iacobus.

21.

Ananias et Saphira ideo  
concedunt quia post  
votum ablutum quia  
Iustus Hieron. ep. 9. ad  
Dometianum.

Part II.

Widowes in the Apostolical age, who therefore vowed to remain in the state of widowhood, because concerning them, who married after the entry into religion S. Paul sayes, *they have broken their first faith*; and such were they of whom our blessed Saviour affirms, *that some make themselves Eunuchs for the kingdome of heaven*, that is, such who promise to G O D a life of chasity. And concerning the successe of prayer, so seconded with a

*Quid n. est si-  
demprimam ir-  
ritan fecerunt?  
voverunt& non  
reddilarent. S. Penda the Dane after his earnest prayer, and an appendant vow; And Cead-  
August. In vita  
n. eterna est  
quedam egre-  
gia gloria non  
omnibus in &  
ternum vicituris  
sed quibusdam  
ibi tribuenda,  
cui consequenda  
parum est libe-  
ratum esse a  
peccatis, nisi a-  
liquid liberato-  
rii vocatione,  
quod non sit cri-  
minis non vo-  
tus sed voul-  
fit laudis. Idem  
de S Virgin. c.  
14. Eccles. 5. v. 4. 5  
Psal. 132. 1. 2  
Deuter. 23. 21  
Aet. 18. 18.  
b Oswi votit  
filiam in ser-  
vitutem religi-  
onis & vitam  
calibem, simul-  
que duodecim  
possessiones ad  
confriendas ades sacras.*

prudent and religious vow, besides the instances of Scripture we have the perpetuall experience and witnesse of all Christendome, and in particular, our Saxon Kings have been remarked for this part of importunity, in their own Chronicles. \* Oswi got a great victory with unlikely forces against the Danes after his earnest prayer, and an appendant vow; And Ceadwalla obtained of GOD power to recover the Isle of Wight from the hands of Infidels after he had prayed, and promised to return the fourth part of it to be employed in the proper services of G O D, and of religion. This can have no objection, or suspicion in it among wife and disabused persons; for it can be nothing but an encreasing and a renewed act of duty, or devotion, or zeal, or charity, and the importunity of prayer acted in a more, vi-

tall and reall expression.

1. All else, that is to be considered concerning prayer is extrinsecall, and accidental to it; prayer is publike or private, in the communion or society of Saints, or in our Closets; these prayers have lesse temptation to vanity, the other have more advantages of charity, example, fervour, and energy. In publike offices we avoid singularity, in the private we avoid hypocrisy; Those are of more edification, these of greater retirednesse, and silence of spirit; those serve the needs of all the world in the first intention, and our own by consequence; these serve our own needs first, and the publike onely by a secondary intention; these have more pleasure, they more duty; these are the best instruments of repentance, where our confessio may be more par-

se ac reddidisse ticular, and our shame lesse scandalous; the other are better for Eucharist and instruction, for edification of the Church, and glorification of GOD.

2. The posture of our bodies in prayer had as great varietie, as the ceremonies and civilities of severall nations came to. The Jewes most commonly prayed \* standing: so did the Pharisees, and the Publican in the Temple. Psal. 132. 1. 2. So did the Primitive Christians in all their greater festivalls, and intervalls Deuter. 23. 21. of jubilee; in their penances they kneeled. The Monkes in Cassian, late, Aet. 18. 18. b when they sang the Psalter. And in every countrey, whatsoever by the custome of the Nation was a symbol of reverence, and humility, of silence and attention, of gravity and modesty, that posture they translated to their prayers. But in all nations bowing the head, that is, a laying down our glory at the feet of GOD was the manner of worshippers; and this was alwayes the more humble, and the lower, as their devotion was higher; and was very often expressed by prostration b or lying flat upon the ground; and this

Reddere victimas. *A*demque votivam memento Nos humilem feriemus agnam. Hor. l. 2. od. 17. a Nehen. 9. 5. Mark. 11. 25. Luk. 18. 11. b Adoraturi sedent, dixit Numa Pomplius apud Plutarch. id est, sicut sedato animo. *G*radus & possumonteras dictum proverbialiter ad eundem sensum. Vide S. Aug. l. 3. c. 5. de cura pro mortuis. \* Depositisque suis ornamentis pretiosissimis & tenuis fructu velutina vestis Inter sacros noctis venerabilis hymnos Intrans nudatus templi sacra limina plantis & prono sacram vultu prostratus ad aram Corpus figurata sociavit nobile terra. S. Rosweid de Henr. Imper. de Othon. ann. regnorum & reg. ann.

all nations did, and all religions. Our deportment ought to be grave, decent, humble, apt for adoration, apt to edifie, and when we addresse our selves to prayer, not instantly leap into the office, as the Judges of the Areopage into their sentence without *Preface*, or preparatory affections; but considering in what presence we speake, and to what purposes, let us ballance our fervour with reverentiall feare: and when we have done, not rise from the ground, as if we vaulted, or were glad we had done; but as we begin with desires of assistance, so end with desires of pardon and acceptance, concluding your longer offices with a shorter mentall prayer of more private reflexion, and reference, designing to mend what we have done amisse, or to give thankes and proceed if we did well, and according to our powers.

24.

3. In private prayers it is permitted to every man to speake his prayers, or onely to thinke them, which is a speaking to God: vocall or mentall prayer is all one to GOD, but in order to us they have their severall advantages, The sacrifice of the heart, and the calves of the lips make up a holocaust to God; but words are the arrest of the desires, and keep the spirit fixt, and in lesse permissions to wander from fancy to fancy; and mentall prayer is apt to make the greater fervour, if it wander not: our office is more determined by words; but we then actually thinke of God, when our spirits only speake. Mentall prayer, when our spirits wander, is like a watch standing still, because the spring is downe, wind it up againe, and it goes on regularly: but in vocall prayer, if the words run on, and the spirit wanders, the clocke strikes false, the hand points not to the right houre, because something is in disorder: and the stroking is nothing but noyse. In mentall prayer we confesse Gods omniscience; In vocall Prayer we call the Angels to witnessse. In the first our spirits rejoice in God, in the second the Angels rejoice in us. Mentall prayer is the best remedy against lightnesse, and indifferency of affections, but vocall prayer is the aptest instrument of communion. That is more Angelicall, but yet fitter for the state of separation, and glory; this is but humane, but it is apter for our present constitution. They have their distinct proprieties, and many be used according to severall accidents, occasions, or dispositions.



### THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy, and eternall GOD, who hast commanded us to pray unto thee in all our necessities, and to give thankes unto thee for alloan instances of joy and blessing; and to adore thee in all thy attributes, and communications, thy own glories, and thy eternall mercies, give unto me thy servant the spirit of prayer and supplication, that I may understand what is good for me, that I may desire regularly, and choose the best things; that I may conforme to thy will, and submit to thy disposing, relinquishing my own affections, and imperfect choice. Sanctify my heart and spirit, that I may sanctify thy name, and that I may be gratioues and accepted in thine eyes; give me the humility and obedience of a servant, that I may also have the hope and confidence of a son, making humble and confident addresses to the throne of grace, that in all my necessities I may come to thee for aides, and may trust in thee for a gracious answer, and may receive satisfaction, and supply. Give me a sober diligent and recollect

## Part II.

*E*ted spirit in my prayers, neither choked with cares, nor scattered by levity, nor discomposed by passion, nor estranged from thee by inadvertency, but fixe it fast to thee by the indissoluble bands of a great love, and a pregnant devotion: And let the beams of thy holy Spirit descending from above enlighten, and enkindle it with great fervours and holy importunity, and unwearied industry, that I may serve thee, and obtain thy blessing by the assiduity, and zeal of perpetuall religious offices. Let my prayers come before thy presence, and the lifting up of my hands be a daily sacrifice, and let the fires of zeal not go out by night or day; but unite my prayers to the intercession of the holy J E S U S, and to a communion of these offices, which Angels and beatified souls do pay before the throne of the Lamb, and at the celestiall altar; that my prayers being hallowed by the merits of C H R I S T, and being presented in the phial of the Saints may ascend thither, where thy glory dwells, and from whence mercy, and eternall benediction descends upon thy Church. L O R D change my sinnes into penitentiall sorrow, my sorrow to petition, my petition to Eucharist, that my prayers may be consummate in the adorations of eternity, and the glorious participation of the end of our hopes and prayers, the fulnesse of never failing charity, and fruition of thee O holy and eternall G O D, Blessed Trinity, and mysterious Vnity, to whom all honour, and worship and thanks, and confession, and glory be ascribed for ever and ever. Amen.



## Discourse. XII.

## Of the third additionall Precept of C H R I S T. Of F A S T I N G.

## I.

Per universum  
orbem mos iste  
observatur ut in  
honorem tantum  
Sacramenti in os  
Christiani prius  
Dominicam cor-  
pus intraret  
quam ceteri ci-  
bi. S. Aug. ep. i 8  
Plebs a. non a-  
ficiet horum  
orationibus, &  
procul dubio ex-  
orta fuisse sedi-  
tio nisi concie-  
sem soli, islet  
sextahora super-  
veniens que no-  
stris ad prandi-  
um vocare solet  
sabbatis. Ioseph.  
in vita sua.



He duty of Fasting, being enjoyned in order to other ends, as for mortifying the body, taking away that fuel which ministers to the flame of lust, or else relating to what is past, when it becomes an instrument of repentance, and a part of that revenge, which S. Paul affirmes to be the effect of godly sorrow, is to take its estimate for value, and its rules for practise by analogy and proportion to those ends, to which it does cooperate. Fasting before the H. Sacrament is a custome of the Christian Church, and deriv'd to us from great antiquity; and the use of it is, that we might expresse honour to the mystery by suffering nothing to enter into our mouths before the symbols; Fasting to this purpose is not an act of mortification; but of reverence and venerable esteem of the instruments of religion, and so is to be understood. And thus also, not to eat or drink before we have said our morning devotions is esteemed to be a religious decency, and preference of prayer, and G O D S honour before our temporall satisfaction, a symbollicall attestation that we esteeme the words of Gods mouth more then our necessary food. It is like the zeal of Abrahams servant, who would not eat, nor drink till he had done his errand; and in pursuance of this act of religion,

by

by the tradition of their Fathers it grew to be a custome of the Jewish nation; that they should not eat bread upon their solemine festivalls before the sixt hour, that they might first celebrate the rites of their religious solemnities, before they gave satisfaction to the lesser desires of nature. And therefore it was a reasonable satisfaction of the objection made by the assembly against the inspired Apostles in Pentecost; *these are not drunk as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day:* meaning that the day being festivall, they knew it was not lawfull for any of the nation to break their fast before the sixt hour; for else they might easily have been drunk by the third hour, if they had taken their mornings drink in a freer proportion. And true it is, that religion snatches even at little things, and as it teaches us to observe all the great Commandments, and significations of duty, so it is not willing to pretermitt any thing, which although by its greatness it cannot of it selfe be considerable, yet by its smallnesse it may become a testimony of the greatnessse of the affection, which would not omit the least minutes of love and duty. And therefore when the Jewes were scandalized at the Disciples of our L O R D for rubbing the ears of corn on the Sabbath-day, they walking through the fields early in the morning, they intended their reproof not for breaking the rest of the day, but the solemnity; for eating before the publike devotions were finished, CHRIST excused it by the necessity and charity of the act; they were hungry, and therefore having so great need, they might lawfully do it: meaning, that such particles and circumstances of religion are not to be neglected, unlesse where greater cause of charity, or necessity does supervene.

But when fasting is in order to greater, and more concerning purposes, it puts on more religion, and becomes a duty, according as it is necessary, or highly conducing to such ends, to the promoting of which we are bound to contribute all our skill and faculties. Fasting is principally operative to mortification of carnall appetites, to which feasting and full tables do minister aptnesse, and power, and inclinations. *When I fed them to the full, then they committed adultery, and assembled by troops in the Harlots houses.* And if we observe all our own vanities, we shall finde upon every sudden joy, or a prosperous accident, or an opulent fortune, or a pampered body, and highly spiritued and inflamed, we are apt to rashnesse, levities, inconsiderate expressions, scorne, and pride, idlenesse, wantonnesse, curiosity, nicenesse, and impatience. But \* fasting is one of those afflictions, which reduces our body to want, our spirits to sobernesse, our condition to sufferance, our desires to abstinence and customes of denyall, and so by taking off the inundations of sensuality leaves the enenies within, in a condition of being easier subdued. Fasting directly advances towards chastity, and by consequence and indirect powers to patience, and humility, and indifferency. But then it is not the fast of a day, that can do this, it is not an act but a state of fasting, that operates to mortification. A perpetuall temperance, and frequent abstinence may abate such proportions of strength and nutrient, as to procure a body mortified and lessened in desires. And thus S. Paul kept his body under, using severities to it for the taming its rebellions & distempers. And S. Hier. reports of S. Hilarion, that when he had fasted much & used course diet, & found his lust too strong for such austuries, he resolv'd to encrease it to the degree of Maturity, lessening his diet, & encreasing his hardship, till he should rather thinke of food then wantonnesse. And many times the fastings of some men are ineffectuall,

*Ex Tg. xviij  
yasei my' na-  
ñor spes in ist.  
sermon i xii-  
te et mead.*

*Achaeus apud  
Athenaum.*

*Jer. 5. 7.  
extraordinari-  
os motus in cip-  
po claudit sepe  
natur. 9. Cypre.  
I. Junia. n. nos  
contra peccata  
faciens fortiores,  
concupiscentias  
vincere, tentatio-  
nes repellere,  
superbiam inclina-  
re, iram aiti-  
gant, & omnes  
bonae voluntatis  
affectiones adtra-  
nit. Et totius  
victoriis exauer-  
unt. S. Leo. serm.  
4 de j. jun xi.  
mentis. Saginata  
tur pugiles qui  
Xerophagiis in-  
valescunt. Fer-  
tuil. de j. jun.*

*S. Hieron. vi-  
tiis. S. Hilarion.*

## Part I I.

effectuall, because they promise themselves cure too soon, or make too gentle applications, or put lesse proportions into their antidote. I have read of a maiden, that seeing a young man much transported with her love and that he ceased not to importune her with all the violent pursuits that passion could suggest, told him she had made a vow to fast fourty dayes with bread and water, of which she must discharge her selfe before she could thinke of corresponding to any other desire; and desired of him as a testimony of his love, that he also would be a party in the same vow. The young man undertooke it, that he might give probation of his love, but because he had been used to a delicate and nice kind of life, in twenty dayes he was so weakened, that he thought more of death then love, and so got a cure for his intemperance, and was wittily cosened into remedy. But S. Hieromes counsell in this Question is most reasonable, not allowing violent, and long fasts, and then returnes to an ordinary course; for these are too great changes of diett to consist with health, and too sudden and transient to obtaine a permanent & naturall effect, but a belly alwayes hungry, a table never full, a meale little and necessary, no extravagances, no freer repast, this is a state of fasting which wilbe found to be of best availe to suppresse pungent lusts, and rebellious desires. And it were well to helpe this exercize with the assistances of such austeries,

*Parcus cibus et  
venter semper  
esuriens triduana  
feiunia superant.*

S. Hieron ep. 8.  
ad Demetriad:

*Coloss. 2.23.*

*Ἄγριος οὐπίας.*

\* *Ei nō imōros-*

*τος Ἐγκ. Ιησοῦς οὐ*

*επιθάν, οὐ οὖτε δι-*

*διωκοντα εἰσελέ-*

*πειραντα βεβαυ-*

*πειραντα, οὐ θεο-*

*διάστα οὐ καθα-*

*ρεπειν. Can. A-*

*post. 50.*

*a Serm. 5. de*

*jejun.*

*b jejunium ani-*

*ma nostra ali-*

*mentum, leves*

*eipennas produ-*

*cens. S. Bern.*

*Serm. in vigil. S.*

*Andrea.*

*\* Αρειδίας ιστιντα*

*μεντοντα, οὐ φλε-*

*γώντα ηλεύθερα*

*χωρα dixit S.*

*Chrysost.*

*Fejunijs preces*

*alere, lachryma-*

*rjet magire*

*wolles diesq; ad*

*Dominum. Ter-*

*tull.*

*Act. 13.1.2.*

*3.*

3. As fasting hath respect to the future, so also to the present. And so it operates in giving assistance to prayer. There is a kinde of Divell, that is not to be ejected but by prayer and fasting, that is, prayer elevated and made intense by a defecate, and pure spirit, not loaden with the burden of meat and vapours. S. a Basil affirms, that there are certaine Angels deputed by God to minister, and to describe all such in every church, who mortify themselves by fasting; as if palenes, and a meare visage were that marke in the forehead, which the Angel observed, when he signed the Saints in Jerusalem to escape the Judgement; prayer is the wings of the soule, and fasting is the wings of prayer. b Tertullian calls it the nourishment of prayer. But this is a Discourse of Christian philosophy, and he that chooses to do any act of spirit or understanding, or attention after a full meale, will then perceive that abstinence had been the better disposition to any intellectuall, and spirituall action. And therefore the Church of GOD ever joynd fasting to their more solemne offices of prayer. The Apostles fasted and prayed, when they layd hands, and invoked the holy Ghost upon Saul and Barnabas. And these also, when they had

had prayed with fasting ordained elders in the Churches of Lystra, and Iconium. And the Vigils of every Holyday tell us, that the devotion of the Festivall is promoted by the fast of the Vigils.

But when fasting relates to what is past, it becomes an instrument of a re-pentance, it is a punitive, and an afflictive action, an effect of godly sorrow, a testimony of contrition, a judging of our selves, and chastening our bodies, that Basil. *we be not judged of the LORD.* The Fast of the Ninevites, and the fast of the Prophet Joel, calls for, and the Discipline of the <sup>+</sup> Jewes in the rites of expiation proclaimie this usefullnes of fasting in order to b repentance. And indeed it were a strane repenteance, that had no sorrow in it, and a stranger sorrow, that had no affliction; but it were the strangest scene of affliction in the world, when the sad and afflicted person shall eat freely, and delight himselfe, and to the banquets of a full table serve up the chalice of teares and sorrow, & no bread of affliction. Certainly he that makes much of himself hath no great indignation against the sinner, when himselfe is the man. And it is *ipso quoq; habi-*  
*but a gentle revenge, and an easy judgement, when the sad sinner shall do penance in good meales and expiate his sin with sensuall satisfaction.* So that fasting relates to religion in all variety and difference of time, it is an anti-dote against the poyson of sensuall temptations, an advantage to prayer, & corpus sordibus an instrument of extinguishing the guilt and the affections of sin by judging *obscurare, ani-*  
*our selves, and representing in a judicatory of our own, even our selves mun morib'us being Judges, that sinne deserves condemnation, and the sinner merits deicere, atque a high calamity.* Which excellencies I repeat in the words of Baruch the illa qua paccascribe, he that was Amanguensis to the Prophet Jeremy, *The soul that is greatly vitrifi transfixed, which goeth stooping and feeble, and the eyes that faile, and the hungry soule tione mutare.*  
*will give thee praise and righteousness O Lord.*

But now as Fasting hath divers ends, so also it hath divers lawes. If fasting be intended as an instrument of Prayer, it is sufficient, that it be of that quality and degree, that the spirit be cleere, and the head undisturbed: an ordinary act of fast, an abstinence from a meale, or a deferring it, or a lessening it when it comes, & the same abstinenre repeated according to the solemnity, and intendment of the offices. And this is evident in reason, and the former instances and the practise of the Church dissolving some of her fasts, which were in order onely to prayer, by noone, and as soone as the great and first solemnity of the day is over. But if fasting be intended as a punitive act, & an instrument of repentance it must be greater. S.Paul at his conversion continued three dayes without eating or drinking; It must have in it so much affliction as to expresse the indignation, and to condemne the sin, and to judge the person. And although the measure of this cannot be exactly determined, yet the generall proportion is certain; for a greater sin there must be a greater sorrow, and a greater sorrow must be attested with a greater penalty. And Ezra declares his purpose thus: *I proclaimed a fast, that we might afflict our selves before GOD.* Now this is no further required, nor is it in this sense farther usefull, but that it be a trouble to the body, an act of judging and severity, and this is to be judged by proportion to the sorrow & indignations as the sorrow is to the crime. But this affliction needs not to leave any remenant effect upon the body; but such transient sorrow which is consequent to the abstinenre of certain times design'd for the solemnity, is sufficient as to this purpose. Only it is to be renewed often, as our repentance must be habituall, and lasting; but it may be commuted with other actions of severity and

## Part II.

and discipline according to the Customes of a Church; or the capacity of the persons, or the opportunity of circumstances. But if the fasting be intended for mortification, then it is fit to be more severe, and medicinall by continuance, & quantity, & quality. To repentance, to all abstinentes without interruption, that is, during the solemnity, short and sharpe are most apt; but towards the mortifying a lust those sharp and short fasts are not reasonable; but a diett of fasting, and habituall subtraction of nutriment from the body, a long and lasting austerity, encreasing in degrees, but not violent in any. And in this sort of fasting we must be highly carefull, we do not violate a duty, by fondnes of an instrument, and because we intend fasting, as a help to mortifie the lust, let it not destroy the body, or retard the spirit, or violate our health, or impede us in any part of our necessary duty. As we must be carefull, that our fast be reasonable, serious and apt to the end of our desigines, so we must be curious, that by helping one duty uncertainly, it doe not certainly destroy another. Let us doe it like honest persons and just, without artifices and hypocriey; but let us also doe it like wise persons, that it be neither in it selfe unreasonable, nor by accident become criminall.

6.

In the pursuance of this Discipline of Fasting, the Doctors of the Church, and guides of soules, have not unusefully prescribed other annexes and circumstances; as that all the other acts of deportment be symbolicall to our fasting. If we fast for mortification, let us entertaine nothing of temptation or semblance to invite a lust; no sensuall delight, no freer entertainments of our body to countenance or corroborate a passion. If we fast, *that we may pray the better*, let us remove all secular thoughts for that time; for it is vaine to alleviate our spirits of the burden of meat and drink, and to deprese them with the loads of care. If for repentance we fast, let us be most curious, that we do nothing contrary to the designe of repentance, knowing that a sinne is more contrary to repentance, then fasting, is to sinne; and it is the greatest stupidity in the world to doe that thing, which I am now mourning for, and for which I doe judgement upon my selfe. And let all our actions also pursue the same designe, helping one instrument with another, and being so zealous for the grace, that we take in all the aides we can to secure the duty. For to fast from flesh, and to eate delicate fish; not to eate meate, but to drinke rich wines freely; to be sensuall in the objects of our other appetites, and restrained onely in one: to have no dinner, and that day to run on hunting, or to play at cards, are not handsome instances of sorrow, or devotion, or selfe denyall. It is best to accompany our fasting with the retirements of religion, and the enlargements of charity, giving to others, what we deny to our selves. These are proper actions, and although not in every instance necessary to be done at the same time (for a man may give his almes in other circumstances, and not amisse) yet as they are very convenient, and proper to be joyned in that society: so to doe any thing contrary to religion or to charity, to justice or to piety, to the designe of the person or the designe of the solemnity is to make that become a sin, which of it selfe was no vertue; but was capable of being hallowed, by the end and the manner of its execution.

7.

This Discourse hath hitherto related to private fasts, or else to fasts indefinitely. For what rules soever every man is bound to observe in private for fasting piously, the sames rules the Governours of a Church are to intend in their publike prescriptions. And when once authority hath interned, and proclaimed a fast, there is no new duty incumbent upon the private,

vate, but that we obey the circumstances, letting them to choose the time, and the end for us; and though we must prevaricate neither, yet we may improve both, we must not goe lese, but we may enlarge, and when Fasting is command ed onely for repentance, we may also use it to prayers, and to mortification. And we must be curious, that we doe not obey the letter of the prescription, and violate the intention, but observe all that care in publike fasts, which we doe in private: knowing that our private ends are included in the publike, as our persons are in the communion of Saints, and our hopes in the common inheritance of Sons: and see that we doe not fast in order to a purpose and yet use it so, as that it shall be to no purpose. Who soever so fasts as that it be not effectuall in some degree towards the end, or so fasts that it be accounted of it selfe a duty, and an act of religion without order to its proper end, makes his act vaine, because it is reasonable, or vaine, because it is superstitious.

## THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy and Eternall JESU, who didst for our sake fast fourty dayes, and fourty nights, and hast left to us thy example, and thy predicion, that in the dayes of thy absence from us, we thy servants and children of thy Bridechamber should fast: teach us to doe this act of discipline so, that it may become an act of religion. Let us never be like Esau, valuing a dish of meat above a blessing, but let us deny our appetites of meat and drinke, and accustome our selves to the yoke, and subtract the fuell of our lusts, and the incentives of all our unworthy desires, that our bodies being free from the intemperances of nutriment, and our spirits from the load and pressure of appetite, we may have no desires but of thee, that our outward man daily decaying by the violence of time, and mortified by the abatements of its too free and unnecessary support, it may by degrees resigne to the intire dominion of the soul, and may passe from vanity to piety; from weakenesse to ghostly strength: from darkenesse and mixtures of impurity to great transparencies and clarity in the society of a beatified soule, reigning with thee in the glories of eternity, O Holy and eternall JESU, Amen.

## Discourse. XIII.

*Of the Miracles which JE S U S wrought for confirmation of his Doctrine, during the whole time of his preaching.*

When JESU had ended his Sermon on the Mount, he descended into the valleys to configne his doctrine by the excellency of a rare example; that he might not lay a yoke upon us, which himselfe also would not beare. But as he became the author, so also the finisher of our faith; what he designed in proposition, he represented in his own

## Part II.

*\* Nec monstravit tantum, sed etiam praecepsit, ne quis difficultatis gratia iter virtutis korreret. Lactant.*

*\* Amatus ieu's: nō p̄d̄s̄is̄ s̄p̄p̄i: avol̄d̄ d̄ḡafl̄s̄ - εἰς τὸν θεόν πάντας.*

own practise, and by these acts made a new Sernion, teaching all Prelates, and spiritual persons to descend from their eminency of contemplation, and the authority and businesse of their discourses to apply themselves to do more materiall, and corporall mercies to afflicted persons, and to preach by example, as well as by their homilies. For he that teaches others well, and practises contrary, is like a faire candlesticke bearing a goodly, and bright taper, which sends forth light to all the house, but round about it selfe there is a shadow, and circumstant darknesse. The Prelate should be the light consuming and spending it selfe to enlighten others, scattering his rayes round about from the angles of contemplation, and from the corners of practise, but himselfe alwayes tending upwards, till at last he expires into the element of Love, and coelestiall fruition.

*Menand.*

*Emnodius in vita Epiphanij Pingebat actibus suis paginam quam legisset, et quod liber docuerat vita signabat.*

2.

*\* Acts. 10.38.*

But the miracles, which JESUS did, were next to infinite; and every circumstance of action, that passed from him as it was intended for mercy, so also for Doctrine, and the impotent or diseased persons were not more cured then we instructed. But because there was nothing in the actions, but what was a pursuance of the doctrines delivered in his Sermons, in the Sermon we must looke after our duty, and looke upon his practise as a verification of his doctrine, and instrumentall also to other purposes. Therefore in generall if we consider his miracles, we shall see that he did designe them to be a compendium of faith and charity. For he chose to instance his miracles in actions of mercy, \*that all his powers might determine upon bounty and charity, and yet his acts of charity were so miraculous, that they became an argument of the Divinity of his person, and doctrine. Once he turned water into wine, which was a mutation by a supernaturall power in a naturall subuent, where a perfon was not the subject, but an Element, and yet this was done to rescue the poore bridegrome from affront and trouble, and to doe honour to the holy rite of marriage; All the rest, during his naturall life, were actions of relief, and mercy according to the designe of GOD, manifesting his power most cheifely in shewing mercy.

3.

*Joh. 20.31.10.  
38.5.36.*

The great design of miracles was to prove his mission from GOD, to convince the world of sin, to demonstrate his power of forgiving sins, to indeare his precepts, and that his Disciples might believe in him, and that believing they might have life through his name. For he, to whom GOD by doing miracles gave testimony from heaven, must needs, be sent from GOD, and he who had received power to restore nature and to create new Organs, and to extract from incapacities, and from privations to reduce habites, was Lord of nature, and therefore of all the world. And this could not but create great confidences in his Disciples, that himself would verify those great promises, upon which he established his Law. But that the argument of miracles might be infallible, and not apt to be reproved, we may observe its eminency by divers circumstances of probability heightned up to the degree of mortall demonstration.

4.

*John. 15. 24.*

1. The holy JESUS did miracles, which no man (before him or at that time) ever did; *Moses smote the rocke, and water gushed out, but he could not turne that water into wine; Moses cured no diseases by the Empire of his will, or the word of his mouth, but J E S U S healed all infirmities. Elisha raised a dead child to life, but J E S U S raised one, who had been dead four dayes, and buried and corrupted. Elias, and Samuel, and all the Prophets, and the succession of the High Priests in both the temples, put*

all

all together never did so many or so great miracles, as JESUS did. He cured leprous persons by his touch, he restored sight to the blind, who were such not by any intervening accident hindring the act of the Organ, but by nature, *who were borne blind,* & whose eyes had not any natural possibility to receive sight, who could never see without creating of new eyes for them, or some integral part cooperating to vision; he made crooked limmes become straight, and the lame to walke; and habituall diseases and inverteate, of 18. yeares continuance (and once of 38) did disappeare at his speaking, like darknesse at the presence of the Sun; he cast out Devills, who by the Majesty of his person were forced to confess and worship him, and yet by his humility and restraints were commanded silence, or to go whither he pleased, and without his leave all the powers of hell were as infirme and impotent, as a withered member, and were not able to stirre. He raised three dead persons to life, he fed thousands of people with two small fishes, and five little barley cakes; and as a consummation of all power, and all miracles, he foretold and verified it that himselfe would rise from the dead after three dayes sepulture. But when himselfe had told them, [he did miracles, which no man else ever did,] they were not able to reprove his saying with one single instance; but the poore blind man found him out one instance to verifie his assertion. *It was yet never heard, that any man opened the eyes of one, that was borne blind.*

2. The scene of his preaching and miracles was *Judea*, which was the pale of the Church, and Gods incloed portion, *of whom were the Oracles and the Fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh, Christ was to come,* and to whom he was promised. Now since these miracles were for verification of his being the Christ, the promised Messias, they were then to be esteemed a convincing argument, when all things else concurring, as the prediction of the Prophets, the synchronismes and the capacity of his person, he brought miracles to attest himselfe to be the person so declared and signified; God would not suffer his people to be abused by miracles, nor from heaven would speake so loud in testimony of any thing contrary to his own will and purposes. They to whom he gave the oracles, and the law, and the predictions of the Messias, and declared before hand, that at the comming of the Messias, *the lame should walke, the deafe should heare, the lepers should be cleansed, and to the poore the Gospell should be preached,* could not expect a greater conviction for acceptation of a person, then when that happened, which God himselfe by his Prophets had configned as his future testimony; and if there could have been deception in this, it must needs have been inculpable in the deceived person, to whose error a Divine prophecy had been both nurse and parent. So that taking the miracles Jesus did in that conjunction of circumstances, done to that people, to whom al their oracles were transmitted by miraculous verifications, miracles so many, so great, so accidentally & yet so regularly to all comers and necessitous persons that prayed it, after such predictions and clearest prophecies, and these prophesyes own'd by himselfe, and sent by way of symbol, and mysterious answer to *John the Baptist*, to whom he described his office by recounting his miracles in the words of the prediction, there cannot be any fallibility, or weakenes pretended to this instrument of probation applyed in such circumstances, to such a people, who being deare to GOD would be preserved from invincible deceptions, and being commanded by him to expect the Messias in such an Equipeage of power and demonstration.

## Part II.

moustration of miracles, were therefore not deceived, nor could not, because they were bound to accept it.

6. So that now we must not look upon these miracles, as an argument primarily intended to convince the Gentiles, but the Jewes. It was a high probability to them also, and so it was designed also in a secondary intention. But it could not be an argument to them so certain, because it was destitute of two great supporters: For they neither believed the Prophets foretelling the Meßias to be such, nor yet saw the miracles done; So that they had no testimony of G O D before hand, and were to rely upon humane testimony for the matter of fact, which because it was fallible could not inferre a necessary conclusion alone, and of it selfe; but it put on degrees of perswasion as the testimony had degrees of certainty or universality; that they also, *which see not and yet have believed*, might *be blessed*. And therefore C H R I S T sent his Apostles to convert the Gentiles, and supplied in their case, what in his own could not be applicable, or so concerning them. For he sent them to do miracles in the fight of the nations, that they might not doubt the matter of fact, and prepared them also with a prophecy, foretelling that they shoulde do the same, and greater miracles then he did; they had greater prejudices to contest against, and a more un-equal distance from belief, and aptnesse to credit such things; therefore it was necessary, that the Apostles shoulde do greater miracles to remove the greater mountains of objection; And they did so, and by doing it in pursuance and testimony of the ends of Christ and Christianity, verified the fame and celebrity of their Masters miracles, and represented to all the world his power, and his veracity, and his Divinity.

7. For when the holy J E S U S appeared upon the stage of Palestine, all things were quiet and at rest from prodigy and wonder; nay, *John the Baptist*, who by his excellent sanctity and austerties, had got great reputation to his person and doctrines, yet did no miracle; and no man else did any save some few Exorcists among the Jewes, cur'd some Daemoniacks, and distracted people. So that in this silence a Prophet appearing with signes and wonders had nothing to lessen the arguments, no opposite of like power, or appearances of a contradictory design. And therefore it perwaded infinitely, and was certainly operative upon all persons, whose interest and love of the world did not destroy the piety of their wills, and put their understanding into fetters. And *Nicodemus Doctor of the Law* being convinced, said; *We know, that thou art a Doctor sent from GOD, for no man can do those things, which thou doest, unless G O D be with him*. But when the Devil saw what great affections, and confidences these miracles of Christ had produc'd in all persons, he too late strives to lessen the argument, by playing an after-game; and weakly endeavours to abuse vicious persons (whose love to their sensual pleasures was of power to make them take any thing for argument to retaine them) by such low, few, inconsiderable, uncertain, and suspicious instances, that it grew to be the greatest confirmation, and extrinsecall argument in behalfe of religion, that either freind or foe upon his own industry could have represented. Such as were the making an image speak, or fetching fire from the clouds, and that the images of *Diana Cyndias* and *Vesta* among the *Jasseans* would admit no rain to wet them, or cloud to darken them, and that the bodies of them, who entred into the Temple of *Jupiter* in *Arcadia*, would cast no shadow; which

*John 3.2.*

*Lib. 16. histoy.*

which things *Polybius* himselfe one of their owne superstition laughs at as impostures, and sayes they were no way to be excused, unlesse the pious purpose of the inventors did take off from the malice of the lye. But the *E. quoniam au-*  
*tior ἐδιανοεῖται οὐρανοῖς*  
*miraculæ τοῦ Χριστοῦ καὶ τοφλαῖς ἀπολέγο-*  
*τὸν δὲ πόλεμον; Dixit*  
*Celsus apud*  
*Origen.*

But further yet, themselves gave it out, that one *Caius* was cured of his blindnesse by *Aesculapius*, and so was *Valerius Aper*; and at *Alexandria*, *Ve-*  
*spasian* cured a man of the gout by treading upon his toes, and a blind man  
 with spittle. And when *Hadrian* the Emperour was sick of a feaver, and  
 would have killed himselfe, it is said, two blind persons were cured by  
 touching him, whereof one of them told him, that he also shoulde recover: But although *Vespasian* by the help of *Apollonius Tyaneus*, who was his familiar, who also had the Devil to be his, might doe any thing within the power of nature, or by permission might do much more, yet besides that this was of an uncertain, and lesse credible report; if it had been true, yet it was infinitely short of what CHRIST did, and was a weak, silly imitation, and usurping of the argument, which had already prevailed upon the perswasions of men beyond all possibility of consultation. And for that of *Hadrian*, to have reported it, is enough to make it ridiculous, and it had been a strange power to have cured two blind persons, and yet be so disable to help himself, as to attempt to kill himselfe by reason of anguish, impatience and disaire.

5. When the Jewes and Pharisees beleeved not CHRIST for his miracles, and yet perpetually called for a signe, he refused to give them a signe, which might be lesse then their prejudice, or the perswasions of their interest; but gave them one, which alone is greater then all the miracles which ever were done, or said to be done by any Antichrist, or the enemies of the Religion, put all together: a miracle, which could have no suspicion of imposture, a miracle without instance, or precedent, or imitation; and that is, JESUS lying in the grave three dayes, and three nights, and then rising again and appearing to many, and conversing for fourty dayes together, giving probation of his rising, of the verity of his body, making a glorious promise, which at Pentecost was verisified, and speaking such things, which became precepts and parts of the Law for ever after.

6. I adde two things more to this consideration. First, that the Apostles did such miracles, which were infinitely greater then the pretensions of any adversary, and inimitable by all the powers of man or darknesse. They raised the dead, they cured all diseases by their very shadow passing by, and by the touch of garments; they converted nations, they foretold future events, they themselvs spake with tongues, and they gave the H. Ghost by imposition of hands, which enabled others to speak languages, which immedately before they understood not, and to cure diseases, and to eject Devils. Now supposing miracles to be done by Gentile Philosophers and Magicians after, yet when they fall short of these in power, and yet teach a contrary doctrine, it is a demonstration, that it is a lesser power, and therefore the doctrine not of divine authority and sanction. And it is remarkable, that among all the Gentiles none ever reasonably pretended to a power of casting out Devils. For the Devils could not get so much by it.

Part II.

b Eἰ μὲ τὰς  
 ἁγίας ταῦτα  
 ἐγένετο, τὰς  
 σπάσας, τὰς  
 μαρτυρήσας  
 ἴσοπο-  
 κίζειν ταῦτα μ-  
 γιστραῖς τοῖς  
 δύο. verba Ju-  
 liani apud Cy-  
 rill. l. 6.

8.

Spartianus in  
 Adriano; qui  
 addit Marium  
 Maximum di-  
 xisse hac facta  
 fuisse per simu-  
 lationem.

9.

10.

## Part II.

as things then stood : And besides, in whose name should they do it, who worshipped none but Devils and false gods ; which is too violent presumption, that the Devil was the Architect in all such buildings. And when the seven sons of *Sceva*, who was a Jew (amongst whom it was sometimes granted to cure Demoniacs) offered to exercize a possessed person, the Devil would by no meanes endure it, but beat them for their paines. And yet because it might have been for his purpose to have enuerated the reputation of *S. Paul*, and by a voluntary cession equalled *S. Pauls* enemies to him, either the Devil could not go out but at the command of a Christian : or else to have gone out would have been a disservice and ruine to his kingdome ; either of which declares, that the power of casting out Devils is a testimony of GOD, and a probation of the Divinity of a Doctrine, and a proper argument of Christianity.

## II.

7. But besides this I consider, that the holy JESUS having first possessed upon just title all the reasonableness of humane understanding by his demonstration of a miraculous power, in his infinite wisdom knew, that the Devil would attempt to gain a party by the same instrument, and therefore so ordered it, that the miracles should be done or pretended to by the Devil, or any of the enemies of the Crosse of CHRIST should be a confirmation of Christianity, not do it disservice; for he foretold, that *Antichrist*, and other enemies *should come in prodigies, and lying wonders and signs*. Concerning which although it may be disputed, whether they were truly miracles, or meer deceptions and magical pretences; yet because they were such which the people could not discern from miracles really such, therefore it is all one, and in this consideration are to be supposed such; but certainly he that could foretell such a future contingencie, or such a secret of predestination, was able also to know from what principle it came ; and we have the same reason to believe, that *Antichrist* shall do miracles to evill purposes, as that he shall do any at all ; He that foretold us of the man, foretold us also of the imposture, and commanded us not to trust him. And it had been more likely for *Antichrist* to prevale upon Christians by doing no miracles, then by doing any : For if he had done none, he might have escaped without discovery ; but by doing miracles, as he verified the wisdom and prescience of JESUS, so he declared to all the Church, that he was the enemy of their Lord, and therefore lesse likely to deceive : For which reason it is said, that *he shall deceive, if it were possible, the very elect* ; that is therefore not possible, because by what he insinuates himself to others, is by the elect, the Church and chosen of GOD understood to be his sign and mark of discovery and a warning. And therefore as the Prophesies of JESUS were an infinite verification of his miracles, so also this Prophesie of CHRIST concerning *Antichrist* disgraces the reputation and faith of the miracles he shall act : The old Prophets foretold of the Messias, and of his miracles of power and mercy, to prepare for his reception and entertrainment ; CHRIST alone and his Apostles from him foretold of *Antichrist*, and that he should come in all miracles of deception and lying, that is, with true or false miracles to perswade a lye, and this was to prejudice his being accepted, according to the Law of *Moses* ; so that as all that spake of CHRIST, bade us beleieve him for the miracle, so all that foretold of *Antichrist* bade us disbelieve him the rather for his ; and the reason of both is the same, because the mighty and *sure* word of prophesie (as *S. Peter* calls it) being the greatest testimony in the world of

of a<sup>d</sup> Divine principle gives authority ; or reprobates with the same power. They who are the prædestinate of G O D and they that are the *prosciti* the foreknown and marked people must needs stand or fall to the Divine sentence; and such must this be acknowledged, for no enemy of the Crosse, not the Devill himselfe ever foretold such a contingency, or so rare, so personall, so voluntary, so unnaturall an event, as this of the great Antichrist.

And thus the holy J E S U S having shewed forth the treasures of his Fathers wisedome in revelations and holy precepts , and upon the stock of his Fathers greatnesse having dispensed , and demonstrated great power in miracles, and these being instanced in acts of mercy, he mingled the glories of heaven to transmit them to earth, to raise us up to the participations of heaven ; he was pleased by healing the bodies of infirme persons to invite their spirits to his Discipline, and by his power to convey healing , and by that mercy to lead us into the treasures of revelation , that both bodies and souls , our wills and understandings, by Divine instruments might be brought to Divine perfections in the participations of the Divine nature. It was a miraculous mercy, that GOD should look upon us in our blood, and a miraculous condescension that his Son should take our nature , and even this favour we could not believe without many miracles ; and so contrary was our condition to all possibilities of happiness, that if saluation had not marched to us all the way in miracle, we had perished in the ruines of a sad eternity. And now it would be but reasonable, that since GOD for our sakes hath rescinded so many laws of naturall establishment, we also for his, and for our own, would be content to do violence to those naturall inclinations, which are also criminall, when they derive into action. Every man living in the state of grace is a perpetuall miracle and his passions are made reasonable, as his reason is turned to faith, and his soul to spirit , and his body to a temple, and earth to heaven , and lesse then this will not dispose us to such glories, which being the portion of Saints and Angels , and the nearest communications with G O D , are infinitely above what we see , or hear, or understand.

12.

Part. IL



## The P R A Y E R.

O Eternall J E S U S, who didst receive great power, that by it thou mightest convey thy Fathers mercies to us impotent and wretched people, give me grace to believe that heavenly doctrine, which thou didst ratifie with arguments from above, that I may fully assent to all those mysterious truths, which integrate that doctrine and discipline, in which the obligations of my duty, and the hopes of my felicity are deposited. And to all those glorious verifications of thy goodnessse and thy power, adde also this miracle, that I who am stained with leprosie of sinne may be cleansed, my eyes may be opened, that I may see the wondrous things of thy Law ; and raise thou me up from the death of sinne to the life of righteousness, that I may for ever walk in the land of the living, abhorring the works of death and darknesse ; that as I am by thy miraculous mercy partaker of the first, so also I may be accounted worthy of the second resurrection ; and as

by

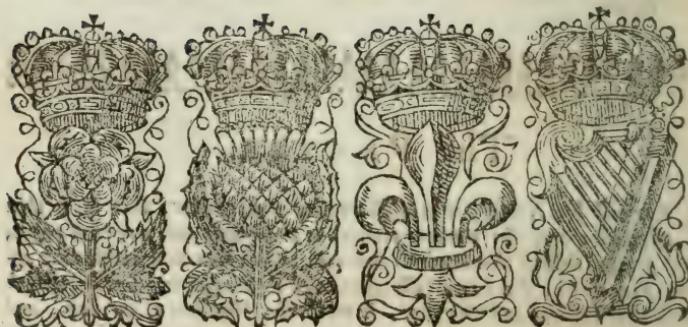
## Part II.

by Faith, Hope, Charity, and obedience I receive the fruit of thy miracles in this life, so in the other I may partake of thy glories, which is a mercy above all miracles. Lord if thou wilt thou canst make me cleane. Lord, I beleeve, help mine unbelieve, and grant; that no indisposition or incapacity of mine may hinder the wonderfull operations of thy grace; but let it be thy first miracle to turn my water into wine, my barrennesse into fruitfulnesse, my aversations from thee into unions and intimate adhesions to thy infinitie, which is the fountaine of mercy and power. Grant this for thy mercies sake, and for the honour of those glorious attributes, in which thou hast revealed thy selfe and thy Fathers excellencies to the world, O holy and eternall JESU. Amen.

The end of the second Part.

ΑΓΙΟΣ ΙΣΚΥΡΟΣ.

FINIS.



THE  
THIRD PART  
OF  
THE HISTORY OF  
The LIFE and DEATH  
of the Holy  
IESVS.

B E G I N N I N G

At the second yeer of his Preaching un-  
till his Ascension.

With Considerations and Discourses upon the  
severall parts of the Story, and Prayers fitted  
to the severall Mysteries.

---

Seneca apud Laftant. lib. 6. institut. c. 17.

*Hic est ille homo, qui sive toto corpore tormenta patienda sunt, sive flammae  
recipienda est, sive extendenda per patibulum manus, non querit quid  
patiatur sed quam bene.*

---



---

L O N D O N ,

Printed by R. N. 1649.

СИЛЯЧИНА  
СОЛОДОСТЬ ИМПЕРИИ  
САДЫБЫ ИМПЕРИИ  
СОЛНЦЕ ИМПЕРИИ  
СВЕТИ

Уже вчера я был в Париже  
и видел там

один из самых привлекательных  
и красивых зданий в Европе.  
Это здание было построено

из красного гранита и  
имело множество колонн и  
столбов.

Здание было построено  
из красного гранита и  
имело множество колонн и  
столбов.

Здание было построено  
из красного гранита и  
имело множество колонн и  
столбов.

Здание было построено  
из красного гранита и  
имело множество колонн и  
столбов.



To the Right Honourable and Vertuous  
Lady, the Lady FRANCES Countesse  
of Carbery.

Madam,

**S**Ince the Divine providence hath been pleased to bind up the great breaches of my little fortune by your charity and Noblenesse of a religious tendernes, I account it an excellent Circumstance and handsonnesse of condition that I have the fortune of S. Athanasius to have my persecution releived and comforted by an Honourable and excellent Lady; and I have nothing to return for this honour done to me, but to do as the poor paralyticks and infirme people in the Gospell did when our B. Saviour cured them, they went and told it to all the Country, and made the voisnage full of the report, as themselves were of health and joy. And although I know the modesty of your person and religion, had rather do favours then own them, yet give me leave to draw aside the curtain and retirement of your charity; for I had rather your vertue shoulde blush, then my unthankfulness make me ashamed. Madam, I intended by this addresse not onely to return you spirituals for your temporals, but to make your noble usages of me and mine, to become like your other charities, productive of advantages to the standers by. For although the beams of the sun reflected from a marble, return not home to the body and fountain of light, yet they that walk below feel the benefit of a doubled heat: so whatever reflexions or returns of your favours I can make, although they fall short of what your worth

## The Epistle dedicatory

worth does most reasonably challenge, and can proceed but towards you with forward desires and distant approaches, yet I am desirous to believe that those who walk between us may receive assistances from this enter course, and the following papers may be Auxiliary to the enkindling of their piety, as to the confirming and establishing yours. For although the great prudence of your most noble Lord, and the modesties of your own temperate and sweeter dispositions become the great endearments of vertue to you, yet because it is necessary that you make Religion the businesse of your life, I thought it not an impertinent application, to expresse my thankfulnessesse to your Honour by that which may best become my duty and my gratitude, because it may do you the greatest service. Madam I must beg your pardon, that I have opened the sanctuary of your retir'd vertues; but I was obliged to publish the endearments and favours of your Noble Lord and your self towards me and my relatives: For as your hands are so clasp'd that one ring is the ligature of them both, so I have found emanations from that conjuncture of hands with a consent so forward and apt, that nothing can satisfie for my obligations but by being in the greatest eminency of thankfulnessesse and humility of person,

Madam,

Your Honours most

obliged, and most

humble Servant

TAYLOR

## Sect. 13.

Of the seconde yeer of the preaching  
of J E S U S .

**V**hen the first yeare of JESUS, the yeare of peace, and undisturbed preaching was expired there was a Feast of the Jewes, and JESUS went up to Jerusalem. This Feast was the second Pasleover he kept after he began to preach: not the Feast of Pentecost or Tabernacles, both which were passed before JESUS came last from Judea; whither when he was now come, he finds an impotent person lying at the poole of Bethesda, waiting till the Angel should moue the waters, after which whosoever first sttep'd in was cured of his infirmitie. The poore man had waited thirty eight years, and still was prevented by some other of the Hospital, that needed a Physician. But JESUS seeing him, had pity on him, cured him, and bid him take up his bed and walk. This cure hapned to be wrought upon the sabbath, for which the Jewes were so moved with indignation, that they thought to slay him: And their anger was enraged by his *calling himself the son of GOD, and making himself equall with GOD*

Vpon occasion of this offence, which they snatched at, before it was ministred, JESUS discourses upon his mission, and derivation of his authority from the Father, of the union between them, and the excellent communications of power, participation of dignity, delegation of judicature, reciprocations and reflexions of honour from the Father to the son, and backe again to the Father. He preaches of life and salvation to them that believe in him, prophecies of the resurrection of the dead by the efficacy of the voice of the son of GOD, speaks of the day of judgement, the differing conditions after, of salvation and damnation respectively; confirmes his words and mission by the testimony of John the Baptist, of Moses and the other scriptures, and of GOD himself; And still the scandal rises higher; for *in the second sabbath after the first*, that is, in the first day of unleavened bread, which hapned the next day after the weekly sabbath, the Disciples of JESUS pull ripe eares of corn, rub them in their hand, and eat them to satify their hunger; For which he offered satisfaction to their scruples, convincing them, that works of necessity are to be permitted even to the breach of a positive temporary constitution, and that works of mercy are the best serving of GOD upon any day whatsoever, or any part of the day, that is vacant to other offices, and proper for a religious festivall.

But when neither reaon, nor religion would give them satisfaction, but that they went about to kill him, he withdrew himself from Jerusalem, and returned to Galilee; whither the scribes and Pharisees followed him, observing his actions, and whether or no, he would prosecute that, which they called, prophanation of their sabbath, by doing acts of mercy upon that day;

*Iren. l.2.c.10.*2.  
*John. 5.**\* Suidas V.  
oratior.*

3:

## Part III.

*Evangel. Naz.  
quod S. Hiero-  
zon. ex Hebr.  
in Gracum  
translit.*

He still did so. For entring into one of the synagogues of Galilee upon the Sabbath, JESUS saw a man, ( whom S. \* Hierom reports to have been a Mason ) coming to Tyre, and complaining that his hand was withered, and desirring help of him, that he might again be restored to the use of his hands, least he should be compelled with misery and shame to beg his bread. JESUS restored his hand as whole as the other in the midst of all those spies and Enemies. Upon which act being confirmed in their malice the Pharisees went forth, and joyned with the Herodians ( a sect of people who said Herod was the *Messias*, because by the decree of the Roman Senate when the scepter departed from Judah, he was declared King ) and both together took Counsell, how they might kill him.

JESUS therefore departed again to the sea coast, and his companies increased as his fame, for he was now followed by new multitudes from Galilee, from Iudea, from Jerusalem, from Idumea, from beyond Jordan, from about Tyre and Sydon; who hearing the report of his miraculous power to cure all diseases by the word of his mouth, or the touch of his hand, or the handing his garment, came with their ambulatory hospitall of sick, and their possest, and they pressed on him, but to touch him, and were all immediately cured. The Devils confessing publikely, that he was the Son of GOD, till they were upon all such occasions restrained, and compelled to silence.

But now JESUS having commanded a ship to be in readinesse against any inconvenience or troublesome pressures of the multitude, *went up into a mountain to pray, and continued in prayer all night*, intending to make the first ordination of Apostles; which the next day he did, chooising out of the number of his Disciples these a twelve to be Apostles; Simon Peter, and Andrew, James, and John the sons of thunder, Philip, and Bartholomew, Matthew, and Thomas, James the son of Alpheus, and Simon the Zelot, Judas the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot. With these descending from the mountain to the plain he repeated the same sermon, or much of it, which he had before preached in the first beginning of his prophesyings, that he might publish his gospel to these new Auditors, and also more particularly inform his Apostles in the doctrine of the kingdom; for now because he saw Israel scattered like sheep having no Shepherd, he did purpose to send these twelve abroad to preach repentance and the approximation of the Kingdom; and therefore first instructed them in the mysterious parts of his holy Doctrine, and gave them also particular instructions together with their temporary commission for that journey.

For JESUS sent them out by two and two, giving them power over unclean spirits, and to heal all manner of sicknesse and diseases, telling they were the light, and the eyes and the salt of the world, so intimating their duties of diligence, holiness, and incorruption; giving them in charge to preach the Gospel, to dispence their power and miracles freely, as they had received it, to anoint sick persons with oil, not to enter into any Samaritan town, but to go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel, to provide no viaticum for their journeys, but to put themselves upon the religion and piety of their Profelytes: he arms them against persecutions, gives them leave to fly the storm from city to city, promises them the assistance of his Spirit, encourages them by his own example of long sufferance, and by instances of Divine providence expressed even to creatures of small value, and by promise of great rewards to the confident confession of his

*a Sic & apostoli-  
ci semper duo.  
denuis honoris  
Fulget apex, na-  
mene mensis in-  
stitutus & horas  
Omnibus ut re-  
bus semper tibi  
militet annus,  
Sedul.*

his name ; and furnishes them with some propositions, which are like so many bills of exchange, upon the trust of which they might take up necessaries, promising great retributions not onely to them, who quit any thing of value for the sake of JESUS, but to them that offer a cup of water to a thirsty Disciple ; and with these instructions they departed to preach in the cities.

And JESUS returning to Capernaum received the addresse of a faithful Centurion of the Legion called the Iron legion (which usually quartered in Judea ) in behalfe of his servant, whom he loved, and who was grievously afflicted with the palsey, and healed him as a reward and honour to his faith. And from thence going to the city Naim he raised to life the onely son of a widow whom the mourners followed in the street, bearing the corps sadly to his funeral. Upon the fame of these and diuers other miracles John the Baptist who was still in prison (for he was not put to death till the latter end of this yeare) sent two of his Disciples to him by divine providence, or else by Johns designation to minister occasion of his greater publication, enquiring if he was the Messias. To whom JESUS returned no answer, but a Demonstration taken from the nature of the thing, and the glory of the miracles, saying, Return to John, and tell him, what ye see; for the deafe hear, the blind see, the lame walke, the dead are raised, and the lepers are cleansed, and to the poor the Gospell is preached; which were the Characteristike notes of the Messias *Isai. 35. 5, 6.*

When Johns Disciples were gone with this answer, JESUS began to speake concerning John, of the austerity and holinesse of his person, the greatnessse of his function, the Divinity of his commission, saying that he was greater then a Prophet, a burning, and shining light, the Elias, that was to come, and the consummation, or ending of the old Prophets; Adding withall, that the perversenesse of that age was most notorious in the entertainment of himself and the Baptist: For neither could the Baptist, who came neither eating nor drinking (that by his austerity and mortified deportment he might invade the judgement and affections of the people,) nor JESUS, who came both eating and drinking, (that by a moderate and an affable life framed to the compliance, and common use of men he might sweetly insinuate into the affections of the multitude) could obtain beliefe amongst them. They could object against every thing, but nothing could please them. But wisdom, and righteousness had a theatre in its own family, and is justified of all her children, Then he proceedes to a more applied reprehension of Capernaum and Chorazin and Bethsaida for being pertinacious in their sins and infidelity, in defiance and reprove of all the mighty works, which had been wrought in them, But these things were not revealed to all dispositions, the wise and the mighty of the world were not subjects prepared for the simplicity and foster impreies of the Gospell, and the down right severity of its sanctions. And therefore JESUS glorified GOD for the magnifying of his mercy, in that these things which were hid from the great ones were revealed to babes ; and concludes this sermon with an invitation of all wearied, and disconsolate persons loaded with sin and misery, to come to him promising ease to their burdens, and refreshment to their weariness and to exchange their heavy pressures into an easy yoke, and a light burden.

When JESUS had ended this sermon, one of the Pharisees named Simon invited him to eat with him, into whose house, when he was entred, a

*Dio hist. Rom.*  
*lib. 55.*

8.

## Part III.

certain woman that was a sinner, abiding there in the city heard of it, her name was *Mary*: she had been married to a noble personage a native of the Town and Castle of Magdal, from whence she had her name of Magdalen, though she her self was born in Bethany; A widow she was, and prompted by her wealth, liberty and youth to an intemperate life, and too free entertainments. She came to JESUS into the Pharisees house; not ( as did the staring multitude ) to glut her eyes with the sight of a miraculous and glorious person; nor ( as did the Centurion, or the Syrophoenician, or the ruler of the synagogue ) for cure of her sicknesse, or in behalf of her Friend, or childe or servant, but ( the onely example of so coning ) she came in remorse and regret for her sins, she came to JESUS to lay her burden at his feet, and to present him with a broken heart, and a weeping eye, and great affection, and a box of Nard Pistick salutary and precious. For she came trembling, and fell down before him, weeping bitterly for her sins, powring out a flood great enough to wash the feet of the blessed JESUS, and wiping them with the hairs of her head; after which she brake the box and anointed his feet with ointment; which expression was so great an extasy of love, sorrow, and adoration, that to anoint the feet even of the greatest Monarch was long unknown, and in all the pomps and greatnesses of the Roman prodigality it was not used till *Otho* taught it to *Nero*; in whose instance it was by *Pliny* reckoned for a prodigy of unnecessary profusion, and in it self without the circumstance of so free a dispensation, it was a present for a Prince, and an alabaster box of Nard Pistick was sent as a present from *Cambyses* to the King of Ethiopia.

*Flin. natur. hist.*  
lib. 13. c. 3.  
vide Athene.  
*Deipnosoph.*  
l. 12. c. 30.  
*Herodotus in Thalia:*

10.

When *Simon* observed this sinner so busie in the expressses of her religion and veneration to JESUS, he thought with himself that this was no prophet, that did not know her to be a sinner, or no just person that would suffer her to touch him. For although the Jews religion did permit harlots of their own nation to live, and enjoy the priviledges of the nation save that their oblations were refused: yet the Pharisees who pretended to a greater degree of sanctity then others, would not admit them to civil usages, or the benefits of ordinary society; and thought religion it self, and the honour of a Prophet was concerned in the interests of the same superciliousnesse, and therefore made an objection within himself; which JESUS knowing ( for he understood his thoughts as well as his words) made her Apology and his own, in a civil Question expressed in a Parable of two Debtors, to whom a greater and a leſſe debt respectively was forgiven; both of them concluding, that they would love their merciful Creditor in proportion for his mercy and donative; and this was the case of *Mary Magdalen*, to whom because much was forgiven she loved much, and expressed it in characters so large, that the Pharisee might read his own incivilities, and inhospitable entertainment of the Master, when it stood confronted with the magnificency of *Mary Magdalens* penance and charity.

When JESUS had dined he was presented with the sad sight of a poor Demoniac possessed with a blinde and a dumb Devil, in whose behalf his friends intreated J E S U S, that he would cast the Devil out, which he did immediately, and the blinde man saw, and the dumb spake, so much to the amazement of the people, that they ran in so prodigious companies after him, and so scandalized the Pharisees, who thought that by means of this Prophet their reputation would be lessened, and their schools empty, that first a rumour was scattered up and down from an uncertain principle, but com-

communicated with tumult and apparent noises, that J E S U S was beside himself. Upon which rumour his friends and kinred came together to see, and to make provissons accordingly, and the holy Virgin-Mother came her self, but without any apprehentions of any such horrid accident. The words and things she had from the beginning laid up in her heart would furnish her with principles exclusive of all apparitions of such fancies ; but she came to see what that persecution was, which under that colour it was likely the Pharisees might commence.

When the Mother of J E S U S , and his kinred came, they found him in a house, encircled with people, full of wonder and admiration : And there the holy Virgin-Mother might hear part of her own Prophecy verified, that the generations of the earth should call her blessed : For a woman worshipping J E S U S , cryed out, *Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps that gave thee suck.* To this, JESUS replyed, not denying her to be highly blessed, who had received the honour of being the Mother of the *Messias*, but advancing the dignities of spirituall excellencies far above this greatest temporall honour in the world, *yea rather blessed are they, that hear the word of G O D and do it.* For in respect of the issues of spirituall perfections and their proportionable benedictions, all immunitiess and temporall honours are empty and hollow blessings ; and all relations of kinred disband and empty themselves into the greater chanels, and floods of divinity.

For when JESUS being in the house, they told him his Mother and his Brethren staid for him without, he told them those relations were leſſe then the ties of duty and religion ; for thoſe deer names of Mother and Brethren, which are hallow'd by the laws of GOD, and the endeemers of nature are made far more sacred, when a spirituall cognition does supervene, when the relations are ſubjected in persons religious, and holy : but if they be abstract and ſeparate, the conjunction of perſons in ſpiritual bands, in the ſame faith, and the ſame hope, and the union of them in the ſame myſtically head, is an adoration neerer to identity then thoſe diſtances between parents and chil- dren, which are onely cemented by the actions of nature as it is of diſtinct conſideration from the ſpirit : For JESUS pointing to his diſciples ſaid, *Be- hold my Mother, and my brethren ; for whoſever doth the will of my Father, which is in heaven, he is my Brother and Sister and Mother.*

But the Pharisees upon the occaſion of the miracles renewed the old quar- rell, *he cast out Devils by Beelzebub :* which ſenſelefſe and illiterate objeſtion CHRIST having confuted, charged them highly upon the guilt of an unpardonable crime, telling them, that the ſo charging thoſe actions of his, done in the vertue of the Divine Spirit, is a ſin againſt the holy Ghost ; and how- ever they might be bold with the Son of Man ; and prevarications againſt his words or injuries to his perſon might upon repenſance and Baptiſme finde a pardon; yet it was a matter of greater conſideration to ſin againſt the holy Ghost ; that would finde no pardon here nor hereafter. But taking occaſion upon this diſcourse, he by an ingeniuouſ and mysteriouſ parable gives the world great caution of recidivation and backſliding after repenſance. *For if the Devil returns into a house once ſwept and garniſhed, he bringeth ſeven ſpirits more impure then himſelf, and the laſt eſtate of that man is worse then the firſt.*

After this, JESUS went from the house of the Pharifee, and coming to the ſea of Tiberias or Genefareth (for it was called Tiberias from a town on the banks of the lake ) taught the people upon the ſhore, himſelf ſitting in the

## Part. III.

ship, but he taught them by parables, under which were hid mysterious senses, which shined through their veil like a bright sun through an eye closed with a thin eye-lid: it being light enough to shew their infidelity, but not to dispell those thick Egyptian darknesse, which they had contracted by their habituall indispositions, and pertinacious aversations. By the parable of the sower scattering his seed by the way side, and some on stony, some on thorny, some on good ground, he intimated the several capacities or indispositions of mens hearts, the carelesnesse of some, the frowardnesse and levity of others, the easinesse and softnesse of a third, and how they are spoiled with worldliness and cares, and how many wayes there are to miscarry, and that but one sort of men receive the word, and bring forth the fruits of a holy life. By the parable of tares permitted to grow amongst the wheat he intimate the tolleration of dissenting opinions, not destructive of piety or civil societies. By the three parables of the seed growing insensibly, of the grain of mustard seed swelling up to a tree, of a little leaven qualifying the whole lump, he signified the increment of the Gospel, and the blessings upon the Apostolical sermons.

16.

Chap. 61. I.

Which Parables when he had privately to his Apostles rendred into their proper senses, he added to them two parables concerning the dignity of the Gospel, comparing it to treasure hid in a field, and a Jewel of great price, for the purchase of which every good merchant must quit all that he hath rather then misse it: telling them withall, that however purity and spiritual perfections were intended by the Gospel, yet it would not be acquired by every person; but the publike Professors of Christianity should be a mixt multitude, like a net enclosing fishes good and bad. After which discourses he retired from the sea side, and went to his own city of Nazareth, where he preached so excellently upon certain words of the Prophet\* *Isaiak*, that all the people wondred at the wisdom, which he exprefed in his Divine discourses. But the men of Nazareth did not do honour to the Prophet, that was their Countryman, because they knew him in all the disadvantages of youth, and kindred, and trade, and poverty, still retaining in their minds the infirmities and humilieties of his first years, and keeping the same apprehensions of him a man and a glorious Prophet, which they had to him a childe in the shop of a Carpenter. But when JESUS in his sermon had reproved their infidelity, at which he wondred and therefore did but few miracles there in respect of what he had done at Capernaum, and intimated the prelation of that city before Nazareth, they thrust him out of the city, and lead him to the brow of the hill, on which the city was built, intending to throw him down headlong. But his work was not yet finished therefore he passing through the midst of them went his way.

17.

JESUS therefore departing from Nazareth went up and down to all the towns and castles of Galilee, attended by his Disciples and certain women, out of whom he had cast unclean spirits, such as were *Mary Magdalen*, *Johanna* wife to *Chuza Herods* Steward, *Susanna* and some others, who did for him offices of provision, and ministr'd to him out of their own substance, and became parts of that holy Colledge, which about this time began to be full; because now the Apostles were returned from their preaching, full of joy, that the Devils were made subiect to the word of their mouth, and the empire of their prayers, and invocation of the H. Name of JESUS. But their Master gave them a lenitive to asswage the tumour and excrescency, intimating that

that such priviledges are not solid foundations of a holy joy ; but so far as they cooperate toward the great end of GODS glory, and their own salvation, to which when they are consign'd, and their names written in Heaven in the book of Election, and Registers of Predestination, then their joy is reasonable, holy, true, and perpetuall.

But when *Herod* had heard these things of JESUS, presently his apprehensions were such as derived from his guilt , he thought it was *John* the Baptist , who was risen from the dead, and that these mighty works were demonstrations of his power, increased by the superadditions of immortality and diviner influences made proportionable to the honour of a Martyr, and the state of separation. For a little before this time *Herod* had sent to the Castle of *Macheruns*, where *John* was prisoner , and caused him to be beheaded. His head *Herodias* buried in her own Palace, thinking to secure it against a reunion, lest it should again disturb her unlawful lusts , and disquiet *Herods* conscience. But the body, the Disciples of *John* gathered up, and carried it with honour and sorrow, and buried it in *Sebaste* in the confines of Samaria , making his grave between the bodies of *Elizeus* and *Abdias* the Prophets. And about this time was the Passeover of the Jews.

## Part III.

Vide discourse  
of certainty of  
salvation. Part

3.

18.

Virtutem inco-  
lamem oculis  
Sublatam ex o-  
culi, quas inus  
invidi.

Hoc,



## Discourse 14.

*Of the excellency, ease, reasonableness, and advantages of bearing CHRISTs yoke, and living according to his institution.*



He holy J E S U S came to break from off our necks two great yokes : the one of sin, by which we were fetter'd and imprisoned in the condition of slaves and miserable persons ; the other of *Moses* Law , by which we were kept in pupillage and minority, and a state of imperfection , and affterred us into the glorious liberty of the sons of GOD. *The first* was a Despotick Empire, and the government of a Tyrant. *The second* was of a Schoolmaster,severe, absolute and im perious, but it was in order to a further good , yet nothing pleasant in the sufferance and load. And now CHRIST having taken off these two, hath put on a third. He quits us of our *burden*, but not of our *duty*, and hath changed the former tyranny , and the lesse perfect discipline, into the sweetnesse of paternal regiment, and the excellency of such an institution whose every precept carries part of its reward in hand , and assurances of after glories. *Moses* Law was like sharp and unpleasant physick,certainly painful, but uncertainly healthful. For it was not then communicated to them by promise and universal revelations, that the end of their obedience shoulde be life eternal: But they were full of hopes it might be so

## Part III.

as we are of health, when we have a learned and wise Physician. But as yet the reward was in a cloud, and the hopes in fetters and confinement. But the Law of Christ is like Christs healing of diseases, he does it easily, and he does it infallibly. The event is certainly consequent, and the manner of cure is by a touch of his hand, or a word of his mouth or an approximation to the hem of his garment, without pain and vexatious instruments. My meaning is that Christianity is by the assistance of Christs spirit, which he promised us and gave us in the Gospel, made very easie to us: And yet a reward so great is promised, as were enough to make a lame man to walk, and a broken arm endure the burden; a reward great enough to make us willing to do violence to all our inclinations, passions, and desires. A hundred weight to a gyant is a light burden, because his strength is disproportionately great, and makes it as easie to him, as an ounce is to a child. And yet if we had not the strength of gyants, if the hundred weight were of gold, or Jewels, a weaker person would think it no trouble to bear that burden, if it were the reward of his portage and the hire of his labours. *The spirit is given to us to enable us, and heaven is promised to encourage us, the first makes us able, and the second makes us willing, & when we have power & affections, we cannot complain of pressure.*

*Math. xi. 30.* And this is that meaning of our B. Saviours invitation; *Come to me, for my burden is light, my yoke is easie,* which S. John also observed. *For this is the love of God, that we keep his Commandments; and his commandments are not grievous. For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the world; and this is the victory, that overcometh; even our Faith:* that is, our belief of Gods promises, the promise of the spirit for present aid, and of heaven for the future reward is strength enough to overcome all the world.

But besides that God hath made his yoke easie by exteriour supports more then ever was in any other religion, Christianity is of it self according to humane estimate, a religion more easie and desireable by our naturall and reasonable appetites, then sin in the midst of all its pleasures and imaginary felicities. Virtue hath more pleasure in it then sin, and hath all satisfactions to every desire of man in order to humane and prudent ends, which I shall represent in the confederate of these particulars. To live according to the laws of J E S U S is in some things most naturall and proportionate to the desires and first intentions of nature. 2. There is in it lesse trouble then in sin. 3. It conduces infinitely to the content of our lives, and naturall and politicall satisfactions. 4. It is a means to preserve our temporall lives long and healthy. 5. It is most reasonable and he onely is prudent, that does so, and he a fool, that does not; and all this besides the considerations of a glrious and happy eternity.

Concerning the first, I consider, that we do very ill when in stead of making our Naturall infirmitie an instrument of humility, and of recourse to the grace of God, we pretend the sin of Adam to countenance our actual sins, naturall infirmitie to excuse our malice, either laying Adam in fault for deriving the disability upon us, or God, for putting us into the necessity. But the evils that we feel in this are from the rebellion of the inferiour appetite against reason, or against any religion, that puts restraint upon our first desires. And therefore in carnall and sensuall instances, accidentally we find the more naturall aversenesse, because Gods laws have put our irascible and concupiscent faculties in fetters and restraints, yet in matters of duty whiche,

which are of immateriall and spirituall concernment, all our naturall reason is a perfect enemy and contradiction to, and a law against vice. It is natural for us to love our parents, and they who do not, are unnatural; they do violence to those dispositions, which GOD gave us to the constitution of our nature, and for the designes of vertue; and all those tenderneses of affection, those bowels and relenting dispositions, which are the endearments of parents, and children, are also the bands of duty. Every degree of love makes duty delectable, and therefore either by nature we are inclined to hate our Parents, which is against all reason & experience, or else we are by nature inclined to do to them all that which is the effect of love to such Superiours and principles of being and dependency; and every prevarication from the rule, effects, and expresses of love is a contradiction to nature, and a mortification; to which we cannot be invited by any thing from within, but by something from without, that is violent and preternatural. There are also many other virtues even in the matter of sensual appetite which none can lose, but by altering in some degree the natural disposition. And I instance in the matter of carnality and uncleanness, to which possibly some natures may think themselves apt and dispos'd: but yet GOD hath put into our mouths a bridle to curbe the licentiousnesse of our speedy appetite, putting into our very natures a principle as strong to restrain it, as there is in us a disposition apt to invite us, and this is also in persons, who are most apt to the vice, *women and young persons*, to whom GOD hath given a modesty and shame of nature, that the entertainments of lusts may become contradictions to our retreating and backward modesty, more then they are satisfactions to our too forward appetites. It is as great a mortification and violence to nature to blith, as to lose a desire; and we finde it true, when persons are invited to confess their sins, or to ask forgivenesse publickly; a secret smart is not so violent as a publick shame: and therefore to do an action which brings shame all along, and opens the Sanctuaries of nature, and makes all her retirements publick, and dismantles her inclosure as lust does, and the shame of carnality, hath in it more asperity and abuse to nature, then the short pleasure, to which we are invited can repay. There are unnatural lusts, lusts which are such in their very condition & constitution, that a Man must turn a Woman, and a Woman become a beast in acting them; and all lusts, that are not unnatural in their own complexion, are unnaturall by a consequent and accidental violence. And if lust hath in it dissonancies to nature, there are but few apologies left to excuse our sins upon natures stock: and all that systeme of principles, and reasonable inducements to vertue, which we call the law of nature, is nothing else but that firm ligature and incorporation of vertue to our natural principles, and dispositions, which who so prevaricates does more against nature then he that restrains his appetite. And besides these particulars there is not in our natural discourse any inclination directly, and by intention of it self contrary to the love of GOD, \* because by [G O D,] we understand that Fountain of being, which is infinitely perfect in it self, and of great good \* to us; and whatsoever is so apprehended, it is as natural for us to love, as to love any thing in the world; for we can love nothing, but what we believe to be good in it self, or good to us. And beyond this, there are in nature many principles and reasons to make an aptnesse to acknowledge and confess God, and by the consent of nations, which they also have learned from the dictates of their nature, all Men in some

\* Γειτονία της φύσεως  
επί της πολικής λογικῆς  
γένεται επιστολή  
νόος ὅρκος ἔχεσθαι  
τὸ πάθος δυνατόν  
ἡ πονησίς, η γένη  
παρεργασία μηδενί<sup>της</sup>  
τούς τούς κατ' αὐτήν  
ιερεῖς σπορεῖσθαι  
τελέσεις. Hiero-  
rocl.

\* Εγώ δὲ οὐδὲ  
ἄλλο τινί δεῖ εἰ  
πεῖ εἰπομένη,  
την αἴσιας της  
μαρτυρίας εἰνί,  
ηγενέτης τοι  
της ἐξοτειας την διεύ<sup>τη</sup>  
της ἔχει. λεγόντω  
την αἴσιας μηδενί<sup>της</sup>  
τοι, την διεύτη  
οὐδεὶς την εἰπειν τη<sup>της</sup>  
ιστάτω. Pro-  
cop. Gothic. I.

## Part III.

Siquidem Leoni-  
des Alexandri  
pedagogus qui-  
buldan eum vi-  
tiis imbuīt, qua  
robustum quo-  
q; & jum naxi-  
num Regem ab  
illa institutione  
puerili sunt pro-  
fecta Quintil  
l. I. c. x.

Wisd. 6. 12, 13,  
14.

4.

some manner or other worship GOD. And therefore when this our nature is determined in its own indefinite principle to the manner of worship : all acts against the love, the obedience, and the worship of GOD are also against nature, and offer it some rudeness and violence. And I shall observe this, and refer it to every Mans reason and experience, that the great difficulties of Virtue commonly apprehended commence not so much upon the stock of nature, as of education, and evil habits. Our vertues are difficult, because we at first get ill habits, and these habits must be unrooted, before we do well, and that's our trouble. But if by the strictnesse of discipline, and wholesome education we begin at first in our duty, and the practice of vertuous principles, we shall finde vertue made as natural to us, while it is customary and habitual, as we pretend infirmity to be and propensity to vicious practices. And this we are taught by that excellent Hebrew who said, *Wisdom is easily seen of them that love her, and found of such as seek her, she preventeth them that desire her in making her self first known unto them. Who so seeketh her early shall have no great travel, for he shall finde her sitting at his doors.*

2. In the strict observances of the Law of Christianity there is lesse trouble then in the habitual courses of sin. For if we consider the general designe of Christianity, it propounds to us in this world nothing that is of difficult purchase, nothing beyond what GOD allots us by the ordinary and common providence, such things which we are to receive without care and solicitous vexations. So that the ends are not big, and the way is easie, and this walk'd over with much simplicity and sweetnesse, and those obtain'd without difficulty. He that propounds to himself to live low, pious, humble, and retir'd, his main imployment is nothing but sitting quiet, and undisturb'd with variety of impertinent affairs. But he that loves the World and its acquisitions, entertains a thousand businesse, and every businesse hath a world of imployment, and every imployment is multiplied and made intricate by circumstances ; and every circumstance is to be disputed ; and he that disputes, ever hath two sides in enmity and opposition, and by this time there is a genealogy, a long descent and cognation of troubles, branched into so many particulars, that it is troublesome to understand them, and much more to run through them. The wayes of vertue are very much upon the defensive, and the work one, uniform, and little ; they are like war within a strong Castle, if they stand upon their guard, they seldom need to strike a stroke. But a vice is like storming of a Fort, full of noise, trouble, labour, danger, and disease. How easie a thing is it to restore the pledge ? but if a Man means to defeat him that trusted him, what a world of arts must he use to make pretences ? to delay first, then to excuse, then to object, then to intricate the businesse ; next, to quarrel, then to forswear it ; and all the way to palliate his crime, and represent himself honest. And if an oppressing and greedy person have a designe to cozen a young Heir, or to get his Neighbours land, the cares of every day, and the interruptions of every nights sleep are more then the purchase is worth, since he might buy vertue at half that watching, and the lesse painful care of a fewer number of dayes. A plain story is foonest told, and best confutes an intricate lye. And when a person is examined in judgement, one false answer asks more wit for its support and maintenance, then a History of truth. And such persons are put to so many shameful retreats, false colours, Fucus's and dawbings with untempered morter to avoid contradiction or discovery, that the

Nam statim cu-  
jusq; ad securi-  
tatem melius in-  
nocentia tuer,  
quam eloquen-  
tia. Quintil. dial.  
de orat.

the labour of a false story seems in the order of things to be designed the beginning of its punishment. And if we consider how great a part of our religion consists in prayer, and how easie a thing God requires of us , when he commands us to pray for blessings, the duty of a Christian cannot seem very troublesome.

And indeed I can hardly instance in any vice but there is visibly more pain in the order of acting, and observing it then in the acquire or promotion of vertue. I have seen drunken persons in their seas of \*drink and talk, dread every cup as a blow, and have used devices and private arts to escape the punishment of a full draught , and the poor wretch being condemned by the laws of drinking to his measure was forced and haled to execution, and he suffered it, and thought himself engaged to that person , who with much kindnesse and importunity invited him to a feaver ; but certainly there was more pain in it , then in the strictnesse of holy and severe temperance. And he that shall compare the troubles, and dangers of an ambitious war with the gentlenesse, and easines of peace, will soon perceive, that every tyrant , and usurping Prince, that snatches at his Neighbours rights, hath two armes, one of men, and the other of cares. Peace sheds no blood but of the pruned vine and hath no businesse but modest and quiet enter-tainments of the time , opportune for piety, and circled with reward. But God often punishes ambition and pride with lust ; and he sent a thorne in the flesh as a corrective to the elevations and *grandezza* of S. Paul, growing up from the multitude of his revelations ; and it is not likely the punishment should have leſſe trouble then the crime , whose pleasures and obli-quity this was designed to punish. And indeed every experience can verifie, that an adulterer hath in him the impatience of desires, the burnings of lust, the fear of shame, the apprehensions of a jealous, abused, and an enraged Husband. He endures affronts, mistimings, tedious waytings , the dulness of delay , the regret of interruption, the confusion and amazements of dis-covery, the scorn of a reproached vice, the debasings of contempt upon it, unless the man growes impudent, and then he is more miserable upon another stock. But David was so put to it to attempt, to obtain, to enjoy Bath-sheba, and to prevent the shame of it, that the difficulty was greater then all his wit and power, and it drove him into base and unworthy arts , which discovered him the more and multiplied his crime. But while he enjoyed the innocent pleasures of his lawfull bed, he had no more trouble in it, then there was in inclining his head upon his pillow. *The wayes of sin are crooked,* *desert, rocky and uneven*, they are broad indeed and there is variety of ruins, and allurements to entice fools , and a large theatre to act the bloody tra-gedies of souls upon : but they are nothing smooth, or safe , or delicate. *The wayes of vertue are streight but not crooked;* narrow, but not unpleasent. There are two vices for one vertue , and therefore the way to hell must needs be of greater extent latitude and dissemination : But because vertue is but one way , therefore it is easie, regular , and apt to walk in without errour or diversions. *Narrow is the gate , and streight is the way.* It is true, considering our evil customs , and depraved natures , by which we have made it so to us. But God hath made it more passable by his grace and present aides, and S. John Baptist receiving his Commission to preach repen-tance, it was expressed in these words [make plain the paths of the Lord.] Indeed Repentance is a rough and a sharp vertue , and like a mattock and spade breaks

\* quid namque a nobis exigit religio? quid praestari sibi a nobis iubet, nisi solam tantum modo fidem, castitatem, humilitatem, sobrietatem, misericordiam, sanctitatem, quæ utiq; omnia non one-rant nos sed or-ant? Salvian.

S.

*H*εράπεια, φυλαξία  
τοις μη ή πει των  
μερέσθεος εἰληφά-  
ται αἱ γαλαῖοι εἴησαι  
δικῆς, μελίσσης ἡ-  
δύσος, οὐκ εἴησαι  
λογικῶν συνεργε-  
εν. Philo.

*Δυσονολάτερον η*  
*νεανία τὸ δειπνό.*

S. Chrysost.

\* *O ποναματιώ-*  
*νική εἰσηγαγεῖται.*

-Et Cecropie  
domus  
Æternum op-  
ribrium quod  
male barbaras  
Regum est ultra-  
libidines.

Hor.

*Διοδώσιος ἐπίθεσε*  
*λέατρος. Wisd. 5.*

7.

## Part III.

breaks away all the roughnesses of the passage, and hinderances of sin: but when we enter into the dispositions, which Christ hath designed to us, the way is more plain and easie, then the wayes of Death and Hell. Labour it hath in it, just as all things that are excellent, but no confusions, no distractions of thought, no amazements, no labyrinths, and intricacy of counsels: But it is like the labours of Agriculture, full of health and simplicity, plain and profitable, requiring diligence, but such in which crafts and painfull stratagemes are uselesse, and impertinent. But vice hath oftentimes so troublesome a retinue and so many objections in the event of things, is so entangled in difficult, and contradictory circumstances, hath in it, parts so opposite to each other, and so inconsistent with the present condition of the man, or some secret design of his, that thofe little pleasures, which are its fucus and pretence, are leſſe perceived and least enjoyed, while they begin in phantasticke semblances, and rise up in smoak, vain, and hurtfull, and end in dissatisfaction.

6.

But it is considerable, that God and the sinner and the Devil, all joyn in encreasing the difficulty, and trouble of sin, upon contrary desigues indeed, but all cooperate to the verification of this discourse. For God by his restraining grace and the checks of a tender conscience, and the bands of publike honesty, and the ſense of honour, and reputation, and the cuſtomes of nations, and the severities of laws makes, that in moft men the choice of vice is imperfect, dubious and troublesome, and the pleafures abated, and the apprehenſions various and in diſtinguishing degrees: and men act their crimes, while they are diſputing againſt them, and the ba lance is caſt by a few grains: and ſcruples vex and diſquiet the poſſeſſion; and the diſference is perceived to be ſo little, that incoſideration and inadverſency is the greateſt means to determine many men to the entertainment of a ſin. And thicke God does with a deſigne to leſſen our choice, and to diſabuse our perſuasions from arguments and weak pretenſes of vice, and to invite us to the triaſ of vertue, when we ſee its enemy giving us ſo ill conditions. And yet the ſinner himſelf makes the buiſineſſe of ſin greater, for its nature is ſo loathſome, and its pleasure ſo little, and its promises ſo unperformed, that when it lies open, eaſie and apt to be diſcerned, there is no argument in it ready to invite us, And men hate a vice, which is every day offered and proſtitute, and when they ſeek for pleaſure, unleſſe difficulty preſents it, as there is nothing in it reaſon to perſuade a choice, ſo there is nothing ſtrong, or witty enough to abyde a man. And to this purpoſe (amongſt ſome others, which are malicioſe and crafty) the Devil gives affiſtance, knowing that men diſpife what is cheap and common, and ſuſpeſt a latent excellency to be in difficult, and forbidden objeſts; and therefore the Devil ſometimes crosses an opportunity of ſin, knowing that the deſire is the iniquity, and does his work sufficientl, and yet the croſſing the deſire by impediſing the act heightens the appetiſe, and makes it more violent and impatient; but by all theſe means, ſin is made more troublousome then the pleaſures of the temptation can account for, and it will be a ſtrange imprudence to leave vertue upon pretenſe of its difficulty, when for that very reaſon we the rather entertain the iſtances of ſin, diſpifing a cheap ſinne and a costly vertue; chooſing to walk through the brambles of a deſert, rather then to climb the fruit trees of Paradise.

3. Virtue conduces infinitely to the content of our lives, to secular ~~we~~<sup>we</sup> licities, and Politicall satisfactions, and vice does the quite contrary. For the blessings of this life are these that make it happy, peace and quietnesse, content and satisfaction of desires, riches, love of friends and Neighbours, honour and reputation abroad, a healthfull body, and a long life. This last is a distinct consideration, but the other are proper to this title. For the first it is certain, *Peace* was so designed by the Holy J E S U S, that he framed all his laws in complyance to that design. He that returns good for evil, a soft answer to the asperity of his Enemy, kindness to injuries, lessens the contention alwaies, and sometimes gets a friend, and when he does not, he shames his Enemy. Every little accident in a family to peevish and angry persons is the matter of a quarrell, and every quarrell discomposes the peace of the house, and sets it on fire, and no man can tell how far that may burn, it may be to a dissolution of the whole fabrick. But whosoever obeys the laws of J E S U S, bears with the infirmities of his relatives and society, seeks with sweetnesse to remedy what is ill, and to prevent what it may produce, and throwes water upon a spark, and lives sweetly with his wife, affectionately with his children, providently and discreetly with his servants, and they all love the *Major domo*, and look upon him as their *Parent*, their *Guardian*, their *Friend*, their *Patron*, their *Proveditore*. But look upon a person angry, peacelesse, and disturbed, when he enters upon his threshold, it gives an alarm to his house, and puts them to flight, or upon their defence; and the wife reckons the joy of her day is done, when he returns, and the children enquire into their Fathers age, and thinke his life tedious, and the servants curse privately, and do their service as slaves do, onely when they dare not do otherwise; and they serve him, as they serve a Lyon, they obey his strength, and fear his cruelty, and despise his manners, and hate his person. No man enjoys content in his family, but he that is peacefull and charitable, just and loving, forbearing and forgiving, carefull and provident. He that is not so, his house may be his castle, but it is manned by Enemies, *his house is built not upon the sand*, but upon the waves, and upon a tempest: the foundation is uncertain, but his ruin is not so.

And if we extend the relations of the man beyond his own walls, he that does his duty to his Neighbour, that is, all offices of kindnesse, gentlenesse, and humanity, nothing of injury and affront; is certain never to meet with a wrong so great as is the inconvenience of a Law-suit, or the contention of neighbours, and all the consequent dangers and inconvenience. Kindnesse will create, and invite kindnesse; an injury provokes an injury and since the love of Neighbours is one of those beauties, which Solomon did admire, and that this beauty is within the combination of precious things, which adorn, and reward a peaceable, charitable disposition; He that is in love with spirituall excellencies, with intellectuall rectitudes, with peace and with blessings of society, knows they grow amongst the rosebulbes of vertue, and holy obedience to the laws of J E S U S. And for a good man some will even dare to die, *καὶ αὐτοῖς θελοῦσιν*, and a sweet and charitable disposition is received with fondnesse, and *καὶ πᾶς φιλοῖς* all the endearmes of the Neighbourhood. He that observes how many families are ruind by contention, \* and how many spirits are broken by the

Malignum hunc  
esse hominem  
forsan credas  
Ego esse mi erum  
credo cui placet  
Nemo Mart. ep.

8.

\* Οὐτε γένεται  
λαοῖς τοῖς διδόνει,  
καὶ αὐτοῖς θελοῦσιν  
καὶ πᾶς φιλοῖς

3.16.

## Part III.

the care, and contumely, and fear, and spite, which are entertained as advocates to promote a suit of Law, will soon confess, that a great losse, and peaceable quitting of a considerable interest is a purchase and a gain, in respect of a long suit, and a vexatious quarrell. And still if the proportion rises higher, the reasoun swells and growes more necessary and determinate. For if we would live according to the Discipline of Christian religion, one of the great plagues, which vex the world, would be no more. That there should be no wars was one of the designes of Christianity; and the living according to that institution, which is able to prevent all wars, and to establish an universall, and eternall peace, when it is obeyed, is the using an infallible instrument toward that part of our Politicall happinesse, which consists in peace. *This world would be an image of heaven, if all men were charitable, peaceable, just, and loving.* To this excellency all those precepts of Christ, which consist in forbearance, and forgivenesse do cooperate.

## 8.

*Nec mala vel bona qua vulgus putat: multis qui confundunt aduersis videantur, beatos ac plerosque quanquam magnas per opes miserrimos, si illi gravem fortunam constanter tolerent, hi prospera inconsulte utantur.* Tacit. an. 1. 6.

*Si celeres (Fortuna) quacit Pennas, regno quædedit, et mea virtute me involvo: probamq; Pauperiem sine dote quaero.* Hor. l. 3 od. 29.  
*Kāmētū est tēstī- diu meonērāy. Adīgoj j̄ ḡlō d̄- v̄s̄t̄. I. f̄. d̄. ēt̄o p̄t̄s̄t̄. N̄f̄- d̄s̄ d̄. ēt̄o n̄d̄. īp̄p̄. Sophoc. Creusa.*

\**Non enīrgaz, neq; consularis Surmovet lictor miseris tumultus Menti, et curas laqueata cīcūn Tēcta volantes.* Hor. l. 2 od. 16.  
*Quācumq; for- te r̄ videris, mi- c̄rum neges.* Senec, trag.

But the next instance of the reward of holy obedience and conformity to Christs laws is it self a duty and need's no more but a meer repetition of it. We must be content in every state, and because Christianity teaches us this lesson, it teaches us to be happy; for nothing from without can make us miserable, unless we joyn our own consents to it, and apprehend it such, and entertain it in our sad and melancholy retirements. A prison is but a retirement, and opportunity of serious thoughts to a person, who's spirit is confined, and apt to sit still, and desires no enlargement beyond the cancels of the body, till the state of separation calls it forth into a fair liberty. But every retirement is a prison to a loose and wandring fanzie, for whose wildnesse no precepts are restraint, no band of duty is confinemen:, who when he hath broken the first hedge of duty, can never after endure any enclosure so much as in a Symbol. But this precept is so necessary, that it is not more a duty, then a rule of prudence, and in many accidents of our lives it is the onely cure of sadness; for it is certain that no providence lesse then divine can prevent evil and croſe accidents; but that is an excellent remedy to the evil that receives the accident within its power, and takes out the sting, paring the nailes, and drawing the teeth of the wild beast that it may be tame, or harmless and meek: cinall. For all content consists in the proportion of the object to the appetite, and because externall accidents are not in our power, and it were nothing excellent, that things happened to us according to our first desires; God hath by his grace put it into our own power to make the happinesse by making our desires descend to the event, and comply with the chance, and combine with all the issues of Divine providence. And then we are noble persons, when we borrow not our content from things below us, but make our satisfactions from \* within. And it may be considered, that every little care may disquiet us, and may encrease it self by reflexion upon its own acts, and every discontent may discompose our spirits, and put an edge, and make afflictions poynant, but cannot take off one from us, but makes everyone to be two. But content removes not the accident, but complies with it, it takes away the sharpnesse, and displeasure of it, and by stooping down makes the highest equal, proportionable, and commensurate. Impatience makes an ague to be a Feaver, and every Feaver to be a Calenture, and that Calenture may expire

expire in madnesse : But a quiet spirit is a great disposition to health, and for the present does alleviate the licknesse. And this also is notorious in the instance of covetousnesse. *The love of money is the root of all evil, which while some have coveted after, they have pierced themselves with many sorrows.* Vice makes poor, and does ill endure it.

For he that in the School of CHRIST hath learn'd to determine his de-sires, when his needs are served, and to judge of his needs by the proportions of nature, hath nothing wanting towards riches. Virtue makes poverty to become rich, and no riches can satisfie a covetous minde, or rescue him from the affliction of the worst kinde of poverty. *He only wants that is not satisfied.* And there is great infelicity in a Family, where poverty dwells with discontent ; there the Husband and Wife quarrel for want of a full table, and a rich wardrobe : and their love, that was built upon false arches sinks, when such temporary supporters are removed ; they are like two Millstones which set the Mill on fire, when they want corn ; and then their combinations and society were unions of lust, or not supported with religious love. But we may easily suppose S. Ioseph, and the holy Virgin Mother in Egypt poor as hunger, forsaken as banishment, disconsolate as strangers ; and yet their present lot gave them no affliction, because the Angel fed them with a necessary hospitality, and their desres were no lager then their tables, and their eyes looke only upwards, and they were careless of the future, and careful of their duty, and so made their life pleasent by the measures and discourses of Divine Philosophy. When Elyja stretched himself upon the body of the childe, and laid hands to hands, and applied mouth to mouth, and so shrunk himself into the posture of commensuration with the childe, he brought life into the dead trunk : and so may we by applying our spirits to the proportions of a narrow fortune bring life and vivacity into our dead and lost condition, and make it live till it grows bigger, or else returns to health, and salutary uses.

And besides this Philosophical extraction of gold from stones, and riches from the dungeon of poverty, a holy life does most probably procure such a proportion of riches, which can be useful to us, or consistent with our felicity. For besides that the holy JESUS hath promised all things, which our heavenly Father knowes we need (provided we do our duty) and that we finde great securities and rest from care, when we have once cast our cares upon GOD, and placed our hopes in his bosom, besides all this) the temperance, sobriety, and prudence of a Christian is a great income, and by not despising it, a small revenue, combines its parts till it grows to a heap big enough for the emissions of charity, and all the offices of justice, and the supplies of all necessities : Whileft vice is unwary, prodigal, and indiscreet, throwing away great revenues as tributes to intemperance and vanity, and suffering dissolution and forfeiture of estates as a punishment and curse. Some sins are direct improvidence, and ill husbandry ; I reckon in this number intemperance, lust, litigiousnesse, ambition, bribery, prodigality, \* gaming, pride, sacrilege, which is the greatest spender of them all, and makes a fair estate evaporate like Camphire turning it into nothing, no Man knowes which way. But what the Roman gave as an estimate of a rich Man, saying, *He that can maintain an army is rich,* was but a short account ; for he that can maintain an Army, may be begger'd by one vice, and it is a vast revenue, that will pay the debt-books of intemperance or lust.

Theology pro res  
res ser ver sus mod ius.  
Sophoc. Tereus  
Mit org on du gan  
tra con tra propri ata.  
Zoroast.

I. Iim. 6. 10.  
Cum peritura Pa-  
tris fides Confor-  
tem Socium fal-  
lat & hospitem  
Indignos; pecu-  
niam Heredita pro-  
prietate, scilicet im-  
probe Crescunt  
divitiae, tam en-  
cuntur escio quid  
temper abest rei.  
Hor 1. 3. od. 2. 1.  
— vel dic quid  
referat intra Na-  
ture & fines viven-  
ti jugera centum,  
an Mille aret —

Ver ter it si fit opus  
liquidu non am-  
plius urna vel  
cyatho, & dicas  
in agno de flu-  
mine mallem,  
quam ex fonticu-  
lo tantundensu-  
meret ; eo fit Ple-  
nior ut si quis  
delectet copiaiu-  
flo Cum ripa si-  
rul avulso ferat  
Avidus acer.

At qui tantuli es-  
get quod anto est os-  
pus, sineq; limo  
Turbatam hanc et  
aquam, neq; via-  
tan amittit in  
undis. Hor. Serm.

1. Sat.  
— de genit. & de-  
cide patre ipso  
Xpos a la leis domi -  
nifor, & se ver oci -  
\* Soph. Elekt.  
\* Alea exerce. e  
tanta lucrandi  
perdendice temes-  
ritate, ut cum om-  
nia defecerunt,  
novissim o*factu*  
de libertate, & de  
corporis contem-  
plicant Tacit. de  
To mor. Cern.

## Part III.

II.

\* *Virtus repul-  
sa neficia sordida  
Intaminatis ful-  
get honoribus :  
Ne sumit aut.  
ponit securis  
Arbitrio popula-  
ris auræ.  
Hor. l. 3. od. 2.  
\* *Virtus lauda-  
tur, & alget.  
2. Præcipuum  
Imperioria Ma-  
jestatis curam esse  
prospicimas, reli-  
gionis indagi-  
nem, cuius li-  
cetum retinere po-  
uerimus, iter  
prosperitatis, hu-  
manis aperitur  
incipitis, Theod.  
& Valent. in Cod.  
Theod.  
Dedit n. provi-  
dentia homini-  
bus munus, ut  
honesta magis  
juvarent. quintil.  
l. 1. o. 12.**

To these if we adde that *virtue is \* honourable*, and a great advantage to a fair reputation, that it is praised by them, that \* love it not, that it is honoured by the followers and family of vice, that it forces glory out of shame, honour from contempt; that it reconciles men to the fountain of honour, the Almighty God, who will honour them, that honour him; there are but a few more excellencies in the world to make up the rosary of temporal felicity. And it is so certain, that Religion serves even our temporal ends, that no great end of state \* can well be served without it; not ambition, not desires of wealth, not any great design, but Religion must be made its huisher or support. If a new opinion be commended, and the Author would make a Sect, and draw Disciples after him; at least he must be thought to be religious, which is a demonstration, how great an instrument of reputation Piety and Religion is; and if the pretence will do us good offices amongst Men, the reality will do the same, besides the advantages, which we shall receive from the Divine Benediction. The power of godliness will certainly do more then the form alone. And it is most notorious in the affairs of the Clergy, whose lot it hath been to fall from great riches to poverty, when their wealth made them lesse curious of their duty; but when humility, and chastity, and exemplary sanctity have been the enamel of their holy Order, the people like the Galathians would pull out their own eyes to do them benefit. And indeed God hath singularly blessed such instruments to the being the onely remedies to repaire the breaches made by sacrilege and irreligion. But certain it is, no Man was ever honoured for that, which they esteemed virtuous. Vice hath got money, and a curse many times, and vice hath adhered to the instruments and purchases of honour. But among all Nations whatsoever they called honourable put on the face and pretence of Virtue. But I choose to instance in the proper cognisance of a Christian, [Humility] which seems contradictory to the purposes and reception of honour; and yet in the World nothing is a more certain means to purchase it. Do not all the World hate a proud Man? And therefore what is contrary to humility is also contradictory to honour and reputation. And when the Apostles had given command, that in giving honour we should one go before another, he laid the foundation of praises, and Panegyrics, and Triumphs. And as Humanity is secure against affronts, and tempests of despight, because it is below them: So when by imployment, or any other issue of Divine Providence its drawn from its sheath and secrecy, it shines clear and bright as the purest and most polished metals. Humility is like a tree, whose roor, when it sets deepest in the earth rises higher, and spreads fairer, and stands surer and lasts longer; every step of its descent is like a rib of iron combining its parts in vnions indissoluble, and placing it in the chambers of security. No wise Man ever lost any thing by cession; but he receives the hostility of violent persons into his imbraces, like a stome into a lap of wool, it rests and sets down soft and innocently; but a stome falling upon a stome makes a collision, and extracts fire, and findes no rest; and just so are two proud persons, despised by each other, contened by all, living in perpetual disfonancies, always fighting against affronts, jealous of every person, disturbed by every accident, a perpetual storm within, and daily hisstings from without.

4. Holiness and Obedience is an excellent preservative of life, and makes it long and healthful. In order to which discourse, because it is new, material

trial, and argumentative, apt to perswade Men, who prefer life before all their other interests, I consider many things. 1. In the old Testament a long and a prosperous life were the great promises of the Covenant, their hopes were built upon it, and that was made the support of all their duty. *If thou wilt diligently hearken unto the voice of the LORD thy GOD, I will put none of the diseases upon thee, which I brought upon the Egyptians; for I am the Lord that healeth thee:* and more particularly yet, that we may not think piety to be security onely against the plagues of Egypt; GOD makes his promise more indefinite, and unconfin'd, *Ye shall serve the LORD your GOD, and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee, and will fulfil the number of thy dayes,* that is, the period of nature shall be the period of thy person, thou shalt live long, and dye in a seasonable and ripe age. And this promise was so verified by a long experience, that by David's time it grew up to a rule, *What Man is he, that defreath life, and loveth many dayes that he may see good? Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips, that they speak no guile.* And the same argument was pressed by Solomon, who was an excellent Philosopher, and well skilid in the natural and accidental means of preservation of our lives. *Fear the Lord Prov. 3.8. and depart from evil, and it shal be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones.* *Length of dayes is in the right hand of wisdom, for she is a tree of life to them that lay hold upon her.* Meaning that the tree of Life and immortality, which GOD had planted in Paradise, and which, if Man had stood, he should have tasted, and have lived for ever, the fruit of that Tree is offered upon the same conditions, if we will keep the Commandments of GOD, our obedience like the tree of Life shall confign us to immortality hereafter by a long and a healthful life here. And therefore although in Moses time the dayes of Man had been shortned, till they came to three score yeers and ten, or four score yeers, and then their strength is but labour and sorrow (for Moses was Author of that Psalm;) yet to shew the great priviledge of those persons, whose piety was great, Moses himself attained to one hundred and twenty yeers, which was almost double to the ordinary and determined period. But Enoch and Elias never died, and became great examples to us, that a spotlesse and holy life might possibly have been immortal.

I shall adde no more examples, but one great conjugation of precedent observed by the Jewish Writers: who tell us that in the second Temple there were 300 High Priests (I suppose they set down a certain number for an uncertain, and by 300 they mean very many) and yet that Temple lasted but 420 years; the reason of this so rapid and violent abscission of their Priests, being their great and scandalous impieties: and yet in the first Temple, whose abode was within ten years as long as the second there was a succession but of 18 High Priests; for they being generally very pious, and the preservers of their rites and Religion against the Schism of Jeroboam, and the defection of Israel, and the idolatry and irreligion of many of the Kings of Judah, GOD took delight to reward it with a long and honourable old age. And Balaam knew well enough, what he said, when in his extasie and prophetick rapture he made his prayer to GOD; *Let my soul dye the death of the righteous.* It was not a prayer, that his soul might be saved, or that he might repent at last, for *repentance and immortality* were revelations of a later date; but he in his prophetick extasie seeing what GOD had purposed to the Moabites, and what blessings he had reserved for Israel, prayes that he might not dye,

## Part. III.

as the Moabites were like to die with an untimely death, by the sword of their Enemies, dispossessed of their countrey, spoiled of their goods, in the period and last hour of their nation ; but let my soul dye the death of the just, the death design'd for the faithful Israelites ; such a death, which GOD promised to *Abraham*, that he should return to his Fathers in peace, and in a good oldage. For the death of the righteous is like the descending of ripe and wholesome fruits from a pleasant and florid tree ; our sensies intire, our limbs unbroken, without horrid tortures, after provision made for our children, with a blessing entail'd upon posterity, in the presence of our Friends, our dearest relative closing up our eyes, and binding our feet, leaving a good name behinde us. O let my soul dye such a death ; for this, in whole or in part, according as GOD sees it good, is the manner that the righteous dye. And this was *Balaams* prayer. And this was the state and condition in the old Testament.

T4

In the Gospel the case is nothing altered. For besides that those austeries, rigours and mortifications, which are in the Gospel advised, or commanded respectively, are more salutary, or of lesse corporal inconvenience then a vicious life of intemperance or lust, or carefulnesse, or tyrant covetousnesse, there is no accident or change, to the sufferance of which the Gospel hath engaged us, but in the very thing our life is carefully provided for, either in kinde, or by a gainful exchange : *He that loseth his life for my sake shall finde it, and he that will save his life shall lose it.* And although GOD, who promised long life to them that obey, did not promise that himself would never call for our life, borrowing it of us, and repaying it in a glorious and advantagious exchange, yet this very promise of giving us a better life in exchange for this, when we exposed it in Martyrdom, does confirm our title to this, this being the instrument of permutation with the other ; for GOD obliging himself to give us another in exchange for this, when in cases extraordinary he calls for this, says plainly, that this is our present right by grace and the title of the Divine promises. But the promises are clear. For S. Paul calls children to the observation of the fifth Commandement by the same argument, which GOD used in the first promulgation of it. *Honour thy Father and thy Mother, which is the first Commandement with promise, that it may be well with thee, and that thou mayest live long upon the earth.* For although the Gospel be built upon better promises then the Law, yet it hath the same too, not as its foundation, but as appendancies and adjuncts of grace, and supplies of need. *Godliness hath the promise of this life as well as of the life that is to come.* That is plain. And although CHRIST revealed his Fathers mercies to us in new expresses, and great abundance ; yet he took nothing from the World, which ever did in any sence invite piety, or indeed obedience, or cooperate towards felicity. And therefore the promises, which were made of old are also presupposed in the new, and mentioned by intimation, and implication within the greater. When our blessed S A V I O U R in seven of the eight beatitudes had instanced in new promises and rewards, as *Heaven, seeing of GOD, life eternal, in \* one of them, to which Heaven is as certainly consequent as to any of the rest, he did choose to instance in a temporal blessing,* and in the very words of the old \* Testament, to shew, that that part of the old Covenant, which concerns morality, and the rewards of obedience, remains firm and included within the conditions of the Gospel.

*Ephes. 6.2,3.*

*— Ηγούμενοι την επιδιόντας την φιλίαν, καὶ στρατεύονται, σε αποδέουσαν. So-phoc. Philo Et.*  
3 Tim.4.8.

*Mat. 5.3. &c.*\* *V.5.**\* Psal. 37.11.*

To this purpose is that saying of our B. SAUIOVR ; *Man liveth not by bread alone, but by every word, that proceedeth out of the mouth of God* ; meaning that besides naturall means ordained for the preservation of our lives, there are means supernaturall and divine. Gods blessing does as much as bread : nay it is, *Every word proceeding out of the mouth of God*, that is, every precept and commandment of God is so for our good, that it is intended as food and physick to us, a means to make us live long. And therefore God hath done in this as in other graces, and issues Evangelicall, which he purposed to continue in his Church for ever. He first gave it in miraculous and extraordinary manner ; and then gave it by way of perpetuall ministry : the holy Ghost appeared at first like a prodigy, and with miracle. He descended in visible representents, expressing himself in revelations, and powers extraordinary : but it being a promise intended to descend upon all ages of the Church, there was appointed a perpetuall ministry for its conveyance; and still though without a sign or miraculous representent it is ministred in confirmation by imposition of the Bishops hands. And thus also, health and long life, which by way of ordinary benediction is consequent to piety, faith and obedience Evangelicall, was at first given in a miraculous manner, that so the ordinary effects being at first confirmed by miraculous and extraordinary instances, and manners of operation might for ever after be confidently expected without any dubitation, since it was in the same manner configned, by which all the whole religion was, by a voice from heauen, and a verification of miracles, and extraordinary supernaturall effects. That the gift of healing and preservation, and restitution of life was at first miraculous, needs no particular probation. All the story of the Gospel is one entire argument to prove it ; and amongst the fruits of the spirit Saint Paul reckons gifts of healing and government, and helps, or exteriour assistances and advantages; to represent that it was intended the life of Christian people should be happy and healthfull for ever. Now that this grace also descended afterwards in an ordinary ministry is recorded by Saint James : *Is any man sick amongst you let him call for the elders of the Church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oyl in the name of the Lord*; that was then the ceremony, and the blessing and effect is still ; for the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up. For it is obserueable, that the blessing of healing, and recovery is not appendant to the anealing, but to the prayer of the Church, to manifest that the ceremony went with the first miraculous and extraordinary manner; yet that there was an ordinary ministry appointed for the daily conveyance of the blessing : the faithfull prayers and ofices of holy Priests shall obtain life and health to such persons, who are receptive of it, and in spirituall and apt dispositions. And when we see by a continual flux of extraordinary benediction, that even some Christian Princes are instruments of the spirit, not only in the government but in the gifts of healing too, as a reward for their promoting the iust interests of Christianity, we may acknowledge our selves convinced, that a holy life in the faith and obedience of JESUS CHRIST may be of great advantage for our health and life, by that instance to entertain our present desires and to establish our hopes of life \* eternal.

For I consider that the fear of God is therefore the best antidote  
B b b 2 in

*James 5.14. 1  
15.*

\* *Futura nobis  
resurrectionis  
virorum in te  
Dominus ostendit ut peccati  
sciamus esse  
quod ceteri ad-  
huc viventes  
prænoruntur in  
carne : justitia  
quod tu adoles-  
centiam in aliis  
na ætate mentis  
ris Dixit S. Hiero-  
n. Paulio Con-  
cordensi vegeta  
& pio cent. l. 1.  
c. 8.*

## Part III.

in the World against sicknesse and death, because it is the direct enemy to sin, which brought in sicknesse and death; and besides this, that GOD by spiritual means should produce alterations natural is not hard to be understood by a Christian Philosopher, take him in either of the two capacities. 2. For there is a rule of proportion, and analogy of effects, that if sin destroyes not onely the soul but the body also, then may piety preserve both, and that much rather; for if sin, that is, the effects and consequents of sin, hath abounded, then shall grace superabound, that is, C H R I S T hath done us more benefit, than the fall of Adam hath done us injury, and therefore the effects of sin are not greater upon the body, then either are to be restored or prevented by a pious life. 3. There is so neer a conjunction between soul and body, that it is no wonder if G O D meaning to glorifie both by the means of a spiritual life suffers spirit and matter to communicate in effects and mutual impresses. Thus the waters of Baptism purifie the soul; and the holy Eucharist, not the synbolical, but the mysterious and spiritual part of it makes the body also partaker of the death of C H R I S T and a holy union. The flames of Hell whatsoever they are, torment accursed soules, and the stings of Conscience vex and disquiet the body. 4. And if we consider that in the glories of Heaven, when we shall live a life purely spiritual, our bodies also are so clarified and made spiritual, that they also become immortal; that state of glory being nothing else but a perfection of this state of grace, it is not unimaginable, but that the soul may have some proportion of the same operation upon the body as to conduce to its prolongation, as to an antepast of immortality. 5. For since the body hath all its life from its conjunction with the soul, why not also the perfection of life according to its present capacity, that is, health and duration from the perfection of the soul, I mean from the ornaments of grace. And as the blessednesse of the soul (saith the Philosopher) consists in the speculation of honest and just things, so the perfection of the body, and of the whole Man consists in the practick, the exercise and operations of vertue.

37.

But this Probleme in Christian Philosophy is yet more intelligible, and will be reduced to certain experience, if we consider good life in union & concretion with particular, material, and circumstantiate actions of piety. For these have great powers and influences even in Nature to restore health and preserve our lives. Witnesse the sweet sleepes of temperate persons, and their constant appetite which Timotheus the son of Conon observed, when he dieted in Platos Academy, with severe and moderated diet; They that Sup with Plato are well the next day. Witnesse the symmetry of passions in meek Men, their freedom from the violence of enraged and passionate indispositions, the admirable harmony and sweetnesse of content, which dwels in the retirements of a holy conscience, to which if we adde those joyes, which they onely understand truly, who feel them inwardly, the joyes of the holy Ghost; the content and joyes which are attending upon the lives of holy persons are most likely to make them long and healthful. For now we live (saith Saint Paul) if ye stand fast in the L O R D. It would prolong Saint Paal's life to see his ghostly children persevere in holinesse; and if we understood the joyes of it, it would doe much greater advantage to our selves.

*On εις ταύτην  
πλάνων δέρνεται  
οὐδεὶς, οὐ τοι εἰ  
τερπίσαντας γέ  
βοτταρεῖ.*

¶ Thess. 3.8.

But if we consider a spiritual life abstractedly, and in it self, piety produces our life, not by a natural efficiency, but by Divine Benediction. GOD gives a healthy and a long life as a reward and blessing to crown our piety even before the sons of Men, for such as be blessed of him shall inherit the earth, but they that be cursed of him shall be cut off. So that this whole matter is principally to be referred to the act of GOD, either by wayes of nature, or by instruments of special providence, rewarding piety with a long life. And we shall more fully apprehend this, if upon the grounds of Scripture, reason, and experience we weigh the contrary. Wickednesse is the way to shorten our dayes.

Part III.

Psal. 37. 22.

Prov. 10. 27.

18.

Sin brought Death in first, and yet Man lived almost a thousand years. But he sinned more, and then Death came nearer to him; for when all the World was first drownd in wickednesse, and then in water, GOD cut him shorter by one half, and five hundred years was his ordinary period. And Man sinned still, and had strange imaginations, and built towers in the air, and then about Peleg's time GOD cut him shorter by one half yet, two hundred and odd yeers was his determination. And yet the generations of the World returned not unanimously to GOD, and GOD cut him off another half yet, and reduced him to one hundred twenty years. And by Moses time, one half of the final remanent portion was par'd away, reducing him to threescore yeers and ten. So that unless it be by special dispensation, Men live not beyond that term, or thereabout, but if GOD had gone on still in the same method, and shortened our dayes as we multiplied our sins, we should have been but as an Ephemeron, Man should have lived the life of a Fly, or a Gourd, the morning should have seen his birth, his life have been the term of a day, and the evening must have provided him of a shroud. But GOD seeing Mans thoughts were only evil continually, he was resolved no longer so to strive with him, nor destroy the kinde, but punish individuals only and single persons, and if they sinned, or if they did obey, regularly their life should be proportionable. This GOD set down for his rule, *Evil shall slay the wicked person. And he that keepeth the Commandements keepeth his own soul, but he that despiseth his own wayes shall dye.*

Psal. 34. 20.  
Prov. 19. 16.

But that we may speak more exactly in this Probleme, we must observe, that in Scripture three general causes of natural death are assign'd, *Nature, Providence, and Chance.* By these three I only mean the several manners of Divine influence, and operation. For GOD only pre-determines, and what is changed in the following events by Divine permission, to this GOD and Man in their several manner do cooperate. The saying of David concerning Saul with admirable philosophy describes the three wayes of ending Mans life. David said furthermore, *As the LORD liveth, the LORD shall smite him, or his day shall come to die, or he shall descend into battel and perish.* The first is special providence. The second, means the term of Nature. The third is that which in our want of words we call Chance or accident, but is in effect nothing else but another manner of the Divine Providence: That in all these, sin does interrupt and retrench our lives is the undertaking of the following periods.

I Sam. 26. 10.  
Audax omnia  
perpeti  
Gens humana  
ruit per vetitum  
nefas  
Post ignem at-  
thera domo  
Subducum,  
macies & nova  
febris  
Terris incubuit  
cohors:  
Semitiq; prius  
tarda nece/sitas  
Lethi corripuit  
gradum.  
Horat. l. i.  
our carm. Od. 3.

i. In Nature sin is a cause of dyserasies and distempers, making

## Part III.

our bodies healthlesse, and our dayes few. For although GOD hath prefixed a period to nature by an universal and antecedent determination, and that naturally every Man that lives temperately, and by no supervening accident is interrupted, shall arive thither; yet because the greatest part of our lives is governed by will and understanding, and there are temptations to intemperance, and to violations of our health, the period of Nature is so distinct a thing from the period of our person, that few Men attain thither, which GOD had fixed by his first law and preceding purpose, but end their dayes with folly, and in a period which GOD appointed them with anger, and a determination seconday, consequent, and accidental. And therefore sayes David, *Health is far from the ungodly, for they regard not thy statutes.*

*In Exod.23.*  
Qui ouinq; unitur  
Deo, ipli corroboratur calidum  
& humidum per  
viam ani a, &  
hunc vivit homo  
ultra limitacion  
tempus.  
*Bubulus apud*  
*Athenaeum l. v.*  
*c. I. introducit*  
*Bacchum lo-*  
*quentem in hunc*  
*modum. Tres*  
*tantum sanis ego*  
*crateras misceo:*  
*unum valetudi-*  
*nis, & hunc pri-*  
*mum Oedipum;*  
*secundum amo-*  
*ris, & soperis*  
*tertium, quo qui*  
*sapere solent,*  
*eunt hausto do-*  
*num. Quartus*  
*est haud amplius*  
*crater mens, sed*  
*contumelia, ve-*  
*lut huic proxim-*  
*mus clamoris,*  
*&c. Nam pluri-*  
*mentum vini in-*  
*ditum in vas*  
*parvulum, sternit*  
*fine omni, quem*  
*repler, negotio.*  
*¶ Prov.23.29.*

21.

*Psal.102.25.*  
*Isay 57.1.*

And to this purpose is that saying of *Abenezra*. ‘ He that is united to GOD, the Fountain of Life, his soul being improved by grace communicates to the body an establishment of its radical moisture, and natural heat, to make it more healthful, that so it may be more instrumental to the spiritual operations and productions of the soul, and it selfe be prefered in perfect constitution. Now how this blessing is contradicted by the impious life of a wicked person is easie to be understood, if we consider that from drunken Surfets come dissolution of members, Headaches, Apoplexies, dangerous fals, fracture of bones, drenchings, and dilution of the brain, inflammation of the liver, crudities of the stomack, and thousands more, which *Solomon* sums up in general terms. \* Who hath wo, who hath sorrow, who hath rednesse of eyes? They that tarry long at the wine. I shall not need to instance in the sad and uncleanly consequents of lust, the wounds and accidental deaths, which are occasioned by jealousies, by vanity, by peeishnesse, vain reputation, and animosities, by melancholy and the despair of evil consciences; and yet these are abundant argument, that when GOD so permits a Man to run his course of nature, that himself does not intervene by an extraordinary influence, or any special acts of providence, but onely gives his ordinary assistance to naturall causes, a very great part of men make their naturall period shorter, and by sin make their dayes miserable and few.

2. Oftentimes Providence intervenes, and makes the way shorter: God for the iniquity of man not suffering nature to take her course, but stopping her in the midst of her journey. Against this David prayed: *O my God, cut me not off in the midst of my dayes.* But in this there is some variety. For GOD does it sometimes in mercy, sometimes in judgement. *The righteous dye, and no man regardeth, not considering that they are taken away from the evil to come.* GOD takes the righteous Man hastily to his crown, lest temptation snatch it from him by interrupting his hopes, and sanctity. And this was the case of the old World. For from *Adam* to the flood by the Patriarchs were eleven generations, but by *Cains* line there were but eight, so that *Cains* posterity were longer liv'd: Because GOD intending to bring the flood upon the World, took delight to rescue his elect from the dangers of the present impurity, and the future deluge. *Abraham* lived five years lesse then his son *Isaac*, it being (say the Doctors of the Jews) intended for mercy to him, that he might not see the iniquity of his Grandchild *Esau*. And this the Church for many ages hath beleaved in the case of baptiz'd Infants dying before the use of reason. For besides other causes in the order of Divine Providence,

dence, one kinde of mercy is done to them too ; for although their condition be of a lower form, yet it is secured by that timely (shall I call it ?) or untimely death. But these are cases extraregular; ordinarily and by rule, GOD hath revealed his purposes of interruption of the lives of sinners to be in anger and judgement ; for when Men commit any signal and grand impiety GOD suffers not nature to take her course, but strikes a stroke with his own hand. And when ever such intercison of a life happens to a vicious person, let all the World acknowledge it for a judgement; and when any Man is guilty of evil habits or unrepented sins he may therefore expect it, because it is threatened and design'd for the lot and curse of such persons. This is threatened to covetousnesse, injustice, and oppression. *As a Partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not, so he that getteth riches and not by right shall leave them in the midst of his dayes, and at his end shall be a Fool.* *Jer. 17.11.* The same is threatened to voluptuous persons in the highest caresses of delight ; and CHRIST told a Parable with the same designe. The rich Man said, *Soul take thine ease ;* but GOD answered, *O Fool this night shall thy soul be required of thee.* Zimri and Cozbi were slain in the trophies of their lust ; and it was a sad story, which was told by *Thomas Cantipratus :* Two religious persons tempted by each other in the vigour of their youth, in their very first pleasures and opportunities of sin were both struck dead in their embraces and posture of entertainment. GOD smote Jeroboam for his usurpation and tyranny, and he died. Saul died for disobedience against GOD, and asking counsel of a Pythonisse. GOD smote Uzziah with a leprosie for his prophannesse, and distressed Ahaz forely for his sacrilege, and sent a horrid disease upon Jehoram for his idolatry. These instances represent voluptuousnesse and covetousnesse, rapine and injustice, idolatry and lust, prophannesse and sacrilege as remarked by the signature of exemplary judgements to be the means of shortning the dayes of Man ; GOD himself proving the executioner of his own fierce wrath. I instance no more, but in the singular case of Hananiah the false Prophet, *Thus saith the L O R D , Behold I will cut thee from off the face of the earth. This year thou shalt dye, because thou hast taught rebellion against the L O R D .* That is the curse and portion of a false Prophet, a short life, and a sudden death, of GODS own particular and more immediate infliction.

And thus also the sentence of the Divine anger went forth upon criminal persons in the New Testament : Witness the disease of Herod, Judas hanging himself, the blindnesse of Elymas, the sudden death of Ananias and Saphira, the buffetings with which Satan afflicted the bodies of persons excommunicate. Yea, the blessed Sacrament of CHRISTS body and blood, which is intended for our spiritual life, if it be unworthily received, proves the cause of a natural death. *For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many are fallen asleep,* saith S. Paul to the Corinthian Church.

3. But there is yet another manner of ending Mans life, by way of chance or contingency ; meaning thereby the manner of GODS providence, and event of things which is not produc'd by the disposition of natural causes, nor yet by any particular and special act of GOD ; but the event, which depends upon accidental causes, not so certain and regular as nature, not so conclusive and determined as the acts of decretory Providence, but

- 2.Chr.13.20.
- 1.Chr.10.13.
- 2.Chr.21.18.
- 2.Chr.26.1.
- 2.King.15.11.

*Jer. 28.16.*

22.

*1.Cor. 11.30.*

23.

## Part III.

comes by disposition of causes irregular to events rare & accidental. This David expresses by *entr'ing into battell*; and in this as in the other, we must separate cases extraordinary, and rare from the ordinary and common. Extraregularly and upon extraordinary reasons, and permissions we finde, that holy persons have miscarried in battle. So the Israelites fell before Benjamin, and Jonathan and Vriah, and many of the Lords champions fighting against the Philistines; but in these deaths as God served other ends of providence, so he kept to the good men that fell, all the mercies of the promise by giving them a greater blessing of event and compensation. In the more ordinary course of divine dispensation, they, that prevaricate the Laws of God, are put out of protection; God withdraws his speciall providence, or their tutelar Angel, and leaves them exposed to the influences of heaven, to the power of a constellation, to the accidents of humanity, to the chances of a battle, which are so many and various, that it is ten thousand to one, a man in that case never escapes; and in such variety of contingencies there is no probable way to assure our safety, but by a holy life to endeere the providence of God to be our Guardian. It was a remarkable saying of Deborah. *The stars fought in their courses, or in their orbits against Sisera.* Sisera fought when there was an evill aspect, or malignant influence of heaven upon him. For even the smallest thing, that is in opposition to us is enough to turn the chance of a battle; that although it be necessary for defence of the godly, that a speciall providence should intervere, yet to confound the impious, no speciall act is requisite. If God exposes them to the ill aspect of a Planet, or any other casualty, their dayes are interrupted, and they die. And this is the meaning of the Prophet Jeremy: *Be not ye dismayed at the signs of heaven, for the Heathen are dismayed at them;* meaning, that God will overrule all inferiour causes for the safety of his servants; But the wicked shall be exposed to chance and humane accidents; and the signes of heaven, which of themselves do but signifie, or at most but dispose, and incline towards events shall be enough to actuate, and consummate their ruin. And this is the meaning of that proverb of the Jews: \* *Israel hath no planet;* which they expounded to mean; if they observe the Law the Planets shall not hurt them, God will overrule all their influences: But if they prevaricate, and rebell, the least star in the firmament of heaven shall bid them battle, and overthrow them: A stone shall lie in a wicked mans way, and God shall so expose him him to it, leaving him so unguarded and defencelesse, that he shall stumble at it and fall, and break a bone, and that shall produce a feaver and the feaver shall end his dayes. For not onely every creature, when it is set on by God, can prove a ruin, but if we be not by the providence of God defended against it we cannot behold the least atome in the Sun without danger of loosing an eye, nor eat a grape without fear of choaking, nor sneeze without breaking of a vein. And Arius

*Judg. 5.20.  
Jere. 10.2.*

\* *Gentes signa  
dierum, & nu-  
merum mensis  
aut hebdomade  
cum metu su-  
perstitioso ob-  
servarunt.*

*Quarta luna  
infausta reputa-  
batur, unde  
proverbiū  
επειδή γέγονε  
μάλα.*

*Huiusmodi  
dies Graci  
επορεύεται  
vocant; Latini  
nefastos. Hesio-  
dus quintas  
omnino suspe-  
ctas habet,  
πίπτεις δὲ οὐκά-  
πεται, επειδή  
τοτετηρεῖ δέσμην  
επειδή γέφεται  
εγίνεται αμφιπ-  
τεύεται.*

\* *Non est pla-  
netā Iraeli.*

*Μίχ φυλακὴν περίθεται οὐπέτεις γράπεις σεμνῶν καὶ Θεοῦ, εἰπειρωτικοῦ κατεῖται. Θεοὶ γὰρ ποτε τὸν πεπτόν εἰποι θεοὺς τὸ γῆς εἰ, καὶ μόνον ἡ εἰπειρώποιον εἰπαδοῖς εἰπεῖται. apud Lattan.*

going

going to the ground, he purged his entrails forth, and fell down unto the earth and died. Such and so miserable is the great insecurity of a sinner. And of this Job had an excellent meditation. *How often is the candle of the wicked put out ! And how oft cometh their destruction upon them ! God distributeth sorrows in his anger. For what pleasure hath he in his house after him, when the number of his months is cut off in the midst ? This is he that dieth in his full strength being wholly at ease and quiet.*

24.

I sum up this discourse with an observation, that is made concerning the family of Eli, upon which for the remissenesse of discipline on the Fathers part, and for the impurity and prophaneness of his Sons, God sent this curse ; *all the increase of their house shall die in the flour of their age.* According to that sad malediction it hapned for many generations ; The heir of the family died as soon as he begate a Son to succeed him ; till the family being wearied by so long a curse, by the counsell of Rabbi Johanan Benzachay betook themselves universally to a sedulous, and most devout meditation of the Law, that is, to an exemplar devotion, and strict religion ; but then the curse was turned into a blessing and the line masculine lived to an honourable old age. For the Doctors of the Jews said, that God often changes his purpos(es) concerning the death of man, when the sick person is *liberall in alms, or fervent in prayer, or changes his name,* that is, gives up his name to God, by the serious purpos(es) and religious vows of holy obedience. *He that followeth after righteousness [alms] it is in the vulgar Latine)* and mercy findeth life, that verifies the first, and the fervent prayer of Hezekiah is a great instance of the second ; and all the precedent discourse was intended for probation of the third, and proves that no disease is so deadly as a deadly sin ; And the wayes of righteousness are therefore advantages of health, and preservatives of life (when health and life are good for us) because they are certain title to all GOD S promises and blessings.

25.

Upon supposition of these premises I consider, there is no cause to wonder, that tender persons, and the softest women endure the violences of art and Physick, sharp pains of causticks and cupping glasses, the abscission of the most sensible part for preservation of a mutilous and imperfect body ; but it is a wonder, that when GOD hath appointed a remedy in grace, apt to preserve nature, and that a dying unto sin should prolong our natural life, yet few men are willing to try the experiment ; they will buy their life upon any conditions in the world, but those, which are the best and easiest : any thing but religion and sanctity, although for so doing they are promised, that immortality shall be added to the end of a long life, to make the life of a mortall partake of the eternall duration of an Angell, or of GOD himself.

5. The last testimony of the excellency and gentleness of CHRIST'S yoke, the fair load of Christianity, is the reasonableness of it, and the Laetant unreasonableness of its contrary. For whatsoever the wisest men in the world in all nations, and religions did agree upon as most excellent in it self, and of greatest power to make politicall, or future and Eschy. Prometh. *Religio sapi- entiam adauget & sapientia religionem.*

idem.

## Part III.

immateriall felicities, all that and much more the Holy JESUS adopted into his Law ; for they receiving sparks , or single irradiations from the regions of light, or else having fair tapers, shining indeed excellently in representations and expresses of morality, were all involved and swallowed up into the body of light, the sun of righteousness. Christs discipline was the breviary of all the wisdom of the best men, and a fair copy and transcript of his Fathers wisdom ; and there is nothing in the laws of our religion , but what is perfecte of our spirits, excellent rules of religion, and rare expedients of obeying God by the neerest wayes of imitation , and such duties which are the proper wayes of doing benefits to all capacities and orders of men. But I remember my designe now is not to represent Christianity to be a better religion then any other: for I speak to Christians, amongst whom we presuppose that ; but I designe to invite all Christians in name, to be such as they are called, upon the interest of such arguments, which represent the advantages of obedience to our religion, as it is commanded us by God. And this I shall do yet further by considering , that thofe Christian names who apprehend religion as the fashion of their Country , and know no other use of a Church but customary , or secular and prophane, that supposing Christian religion to have come from God, as we all professe to believe, there are no greater fools in the world then such, whose life conforms not to the pretence of their baptisme and institution. They have all the signes and characters of fools , and undiscreet, unwary persons.

27.

I. Wicked persons, like children, and fools, choose the present whatsoever it is , and neglect the infinite treasures of the future. They that have no faith, nor forelight have an excuse for snatching at what is now represented, because it is that *all*, which can move them ; but then such persons are infinitely distant from wisdom, whose understanding neither reason nor revelation hath carried further then the preuent adherencies ; not onely because they are narrow soules who cannot look forward, and have nothing to distinguish them from beasts who enjoy the present , being carelesse of what is to come ; but also because whatsoever is present is not fit satisfaction to the spirit ; nothing but gluttings of the fence, and fottish appetites. Moses was a wise person, and so esteemed, and reported by the spirit of God , because he despised the pleasures of Pharaohs court having an eye to the recompence of reward : that is, because he despised all the present arguments of delight, and preferred those excellencies which he knew should be infinitely greater, as well as he knew that they should be at all. He that would have rather chosen to stay in the theatre, and see the sports out, then quit the present spectacle upon assurance to be adopted into Cesars family, had an offer made him too great for a fool, and yet his misfortune was not big enough for pity, because he understood nothing of his felicity , and rejected what he understood not. But he that prefers moments before eternity, and despises the infinite successions of eternall ages, that he may enjoy the present, not daring to trust God for what he sees not, and having no objects of his affections but those which are the objects of his eyes, hath the impatience of a childe, and the indiscretion of a fool, and the faithlessness of an unbeliever. The *faith* and *hope* of a Christian are the graces and portions of spirituall wisdom, which Christ designed as an antidote against this folly.

*Επειγόν περι-  
τοῦ πατερὸς οὐ-  
δείσχεται, οὐ μὲν  
ιδοὺ τερπλεῖ,  
τούτο μάκρων μέντι.  
Hierocl.*

2. Children and fools choose to please their senses, rather then their reason, because they still dwell within the regions of sense, and have but little residence amongst intellectual essences. And because the needs of nature first employ our sensual appetites, these being first in possession would also fain retain it, and therefore for ever continue their title, and perpetually fight for it; but because the inferior faculty fighting against the superior is no better then a rebell, and that it takes reason for its Enemy, it shews such actions, which please the sense and do not please the reason, to be unnatural, monstrous, and unreasonable. And it is a great disreputation to the understanding of a man to be so cozened and deceived as to choose money before a morall vertue, to please that which is common to him and beasts, rather then that part which is a communication of the Divine nature, to see him run after a bubble, which himself hath made, and the sun hath particoloured, and to despise a treasure, which is offered to him to call him off from pursuing that emptiness and nothing. But so does every vicious person, feed upon husks and loaths manna, worships cats and omions, the beggerly and basest of Egyptian Deities, and neglects to adore and honour the eternall God; he prefers the society of drunkards before the communion of Saints; or the fellowship of harlots before a quire of pure, chaste, and inimateriall Angels; the sicknesse and filth of luxury before the health and purities of chastity and temperance; a dish of red lentill porridge before a benison: drinke before immortality, money before mercy, wantonnesse before the severe precepts of Christian Philosophy, Earth before heaven, and folly before the crowns, and scepters and glories of a kingdom. Against this folly Christian religion opposes contempt of things below, and setting our affections upon things above.

3. Children and fools propound to themselves ends silly, low and cheap, the getting of a nutshel, or a bag of cherrystones, a gaude to entertain the fanzie of a few minutes, & in order to such ends direct their counsels and designes. And indeed in this they are innocent; but persons not living according to the discipline of Christianity are as foolish in the designation of their ends, choosing things as unprofitable & vain to themselves, & yet with many mixtures of malice and injuriousnesse both to themselves and others. His end is to cozen his Brother of a piece of land, or to disgrace him by telling of a lie, to supplant his fortune, to make him miserable: Ends which wise men and good men look upon as miseries and persecutions, instruments of afflictions and regret. Because every man is member of a society, and hath some common terms of union and conjuncture, which make all the body susceptive of all accidents to any part. And it is a great folly for pleasing of the eye to snatch a knife which cuts our fingers; to bring affliction upon my brother or relative, which either must affect me, or else I am an uselesse, a base or dead person. The ends of vice are ignoble and dishonorable; to discompose the quiet of a family, or to create jealousies or to raise wars, or to make a man lesse happy, or apparantly miserable, or to fish for the Devil, and gain souls to our Enemy, or to please a passion that undoes us, or to get something that cannot satisfie us; this is the chain of counsels, and the great aims of unchristian livers, they are all of them extreme great miseries. And it is a great undecency for a man to propound an end, lesse, and more imperfect then our present condition; as if we went about to unravell our present composure, and to untie every degree of essence and capacity, and

## Part III.

to retire back to our first matter, and unshapen state ; hoping to get to our journeys end by going backwards. Against this folly the holy J E S U S oppofed the fourth beatitude, or precept of *hungring and thirfting after righteousneſſe*.

30.

But children and fooles, whatever their end be, they pursue them with as much weakenesse and folly, as they firſt chose them with indiscretion; running to broken cifternes or to puddles to quench their thirft. When they are hungry they make phantaſticke banquets or put Colliquintida into their porrage, that they may be furnished with pot hearbes : or like the aſſe that desired to flatter his Maſter, and therefore fawned upon him like a ſpaniel, and bruised his ſhoulders. Such undecencies of means and prosecutions of intereſts we find in unchristian courses. It may be they propound to themſelves riches for their ends, and they uſe covetouſneſſe for their meaneſs, and that brings nought home ; or else they ſteal to get it, and they are apprehended, and made to reſtore fourfold. Like moths gnawing a garment they devoure their own house, and by greedineſſe of deſire they deſtroy their content,\* making impatieneſſe the parent and instrument of all their felicity : Or they are ſo greedy and imaginative, and have raiſed their expeſtation by an over valuing eſteeme of temporary felicitieſ, that when they come, they fall ſhort of their promiſes, and are indeed leſſe then they would have been by being before hand apprehended greater then they could be. If their deſign be to repreſent themſelves innocent and guiltleſſe of a ſuſpicioſ or a fault, they deny the fact and double it. When they would repair their loſſes they fall to gaming, and beſides that they are infinitely full of fears, paſſions, wrath, and violent diſturbances in the various chances of their game, that which they uſe to reſtore their fortune, ruines even the little remnant, and condemns them to beggery, or what is worse. Thus evil men ſeek for content out of things that cannot ſatisfie ; and take care to get that content; that is, they raiſe war to enjoy preſent peace, and renounce all content to get it. They ſtrive to depreſſe their Neighboors, that they may be their equals, to diſgrace them to get reputation to themſelves; (which arts being ignoble do them the moſt diſparagement) and reſolve never to enter into the felicitieſ of G O D by content taken in the proſperities of man, which is a making our ſelvies wretched by being wicked ; malice and envy is indeed a mighty curse : and the Devil can ſhew us nothing more fooliſh and unreasonable then envy, which is in its very formality a curse, an eating of coales and vipers, because my neigbours table is full, and his cup is crowned with health and plenty. The Christian religion, as it chooſes excellent ends, ſo it uſes proportionate and apt means ; The moſt contradictory accident in the world when it becomes hallowed by a pious and Christian deſigne become a certain meaneſs of felicitie and content ; to quit our lands for C H R I S T S fake will certainly make us rich. To depart from our friends will increase our relations, and beneficiaries : but the ſtriving to ſecure our temporall intereſts by any other means then obedient actions, or obedient ſufferings, is declared by the hoſty J E S U S to be the greateſt improvidence, and ill husbandry in the world. Even in this world Christ will repay us a hundred fold for all our loſſes, which we ſuffer for the intereſts of Christianity. In the ſame proportion we find, that all graces do the work of humane felicitieſ with a more certain power, and infallible effect then their contraries. Gratitude endeeſes be-

T & A. 172. xipd.  
moris ipd. ety.  
Sophocl. Antig.  
• Bos felicitas  
ingrata ſuperflu-  
it, ut ſemper ple-  
ni ſpei, vacat  
commodorum,  
prefelicibus ca-  
reant, dum futu-  
ra prospicant.  
Panegyr. ad  
Constant filium

neſſes

nefits, and procures more friendships. Confession gets a pardon. Impudence and lying doubles the fault, and exasperates the offended person. Innocence is bold, and rocks a man asleep, but an evil Conscience is a continuall alarm. Against this folly of using disproportionate means in order to their ends, the holy JESUS hath opposed the eight Beatitudes, which by contradictions of nature, and improbable causes, according to humane and erring estimate bring our best and wilest ends to passe infallibly, and divinely.

5. But this is too large a field to walk in; for it representeth all the flatteries of sin to be a meer coozenage and deception of the understanding, and we finde by this scrutiny that evil and unchristian persons are infinitely unwise, because they neglect the counsell of their Superiors, and their guides; They dote passionately upon trifles, they relie upon false foundations, and deceiving principles; they are most confident, when they are most abused; they are like steeled fish singeing loudest, when their house is on fire about their ears, and being merriest, when they are most miserable, and perishing; when they have the option of two things they ever choose the worst; they are not masters of their own actions, but break all purposes at first temptation; they take more pains to do themselves a mischief then would secure heaven, that is, they are rude, ignorant, foolish, unwary, and undiscerning people in all sensess and to all purposess; and are incurable but by their obedience, and conformity to the holy JESUS, the eternall wisdom of the Father.

Vpon the strength of these premises the yoke of Christianity must needs be apprehended light, though it had in it more pressure, then it hath; because lightnesse or heaviness being relative termes are to be esteemed by comparison to others. Christianity is far easier then the yoke of Moses law, not onely because it consists of fewer rites, but also because those perfecting and excellent graces, which integrate the body of our religion are made easie by Gods affliting, and the gifts of the holy Ghost; And we may yet make it easier by love, and by fear, which are the proper products of the Evangelicall promises and threatenings. For I have seen, persons in affliction have carried burdens and leaped ditches, and climbed walls, which their naturall power could never have done. And if we understood the sadnesses of a cursed eternity, from which we are commanded to fly, and yet knew how neer we are to it, and how likely to fall into it, it would create fears greater then a suddain fire, or a midnight alarm. And those unhappy souls who come to feel this truth, when their condition is without remedy, are made the more miserable by the apprehension of their stupid folly. For certainly the accursed spirits feel the smart of hell once doubled upon them by considering by what vain unsatisfying trifles they lost their happiness, with what paines they perished, and with how great ease they might have been beatified. And certain it is, Christian religion hath so furnished us with assistances, both exteriour and interiour, both of persualion and advantages, that whatsoever Christ hath doubled upon us in perfection he hath alleviated in aides.

And then if we compare the state of Christianity with *sin*, all the preceding discourses were intended to represent how much easier it is to be a Christian then a vile and wicked person. And he that remembers, that whatever fair allurements may be pretended as invitations to a sin, are such false and unsatisfying pretences, that they drive a man to repent him of his folly,

## Part III.

folly, and like a great laughter end in a sigh, and expire in wearinesse and indignation, must needs confess himself a fool for doing that which he knows will make him repent, that he ever did it. A sin makes a man afraid, when it thunders, and in all dangers the sin detracts the visour, and affrights him, and visits him, when he comes to die, upbraiding him with guilt and threatening misery. So that Christianity is the easiest Law, and the easiest state, it is more perfect and lesse troublefome: it bring us to felicity by wayes proportionable, landing us in rest by easie and unperplexed journeys. This discourse I therefore thought necessary, because it reconciles our religion with those passions and desires, which are commonly made the instruments and arguments of sin. For we rarely meet with such spirits, which love vertue so metaphysically as to abstract her from all sensible and delicious compositions, and love the purity of the *Idea*. S. Lewis the King sent Ivo Bishop of Chartres on an Embassie, and he told, that he met a grave matron on the way with fire in one hand, and water in the other; and observing her to have a melancholy, religious and phantastick deportment, and look, asked her what those symbols meant, and what she meant to do with her fire and water? She answered, my purpose is with the fire to burn Paradise, and with my water to quench the flames of hell, that men may serve GOD without the incentives of hope and fear, and purely for the love of GOD. Whether the woman were onely imaginative and sad, or also zealous

Quis enim virtutem amplectitur  
ipsum  
Præmia si tollas? Hor.  
Sublatius studio-  
rum preciis, eti-  
am studia peri-  
tura, ut minus  
decora. Tacit,  
lib. annal.  
*Vide Ciceron.*  
*Tuscul. 2. Laet.*  
lib. 3. c. 27.  
*Instit.*  
Virtus per se ipsam non beata est, quoniam in perferendis, ut dixi, malis tota vis eius est.  
*Idem. c. 12.*  
*Aug. ep. 12.*

I know not. But GOD knowes he would have few Disciples, if the arguments of invitation were not of greater promise, then the labours of virtue are of trouble. And therfore the spirit of God knowing to what we are inflexible, and by what we are made most ductile, and malleable, hath propounded vertue clothed and dressed with such advantages as may entertain even our sensitive part, and first desires, that those also may be invited to vertue, who understand not what is just and reasonable, but what is profitable, who are more moved with advantage then justice. And because emolument is more felt then innocence, and a man may be poor for all his gift of chastity, the holy JESUS to endear the practises of religion hath represented godlinesse unto us under the notion of gain; and sin as unfruitfull; and yet besides all the naturall and reasonable advantages, every vertue hath a supernaturall reward, a gracious promise attending, and every vice is not onely naturally deformed, but is made more ugly by a threatening, and horrid by an appendant curse. Henceforth therefore let no man complain, that the Commandments of GOD are impossible; for they are not onely possible but easie, and they that say otherwise and do accordingly, take more pains to carry the instruments of their own death, then would serve to ascertain them of life. And if we would do as much for CHRIST, as we have done for sin we should finde the pains lesse, and the pleasure more. And therefore such complainers are without excuse, for certain it is, they that can go in foul wayes, must not say they cannot walk in fair. They that march over rocks in despight of so many impediments, can travail the even wayes of religion and peace, when the holy JESUS is their guide, and the spirit is their Guardian, and infinite felicities are at their journeys end, and all the reason of the world, politicall, oeconomicall, and personall, do entertain and support us in the travell of the passage.



## The P R A Y E R.

O Eternall Jesus, who gavest lawes unto the world, that mankind being united to thee by the bands of obedience might partake of all thy glories and felicities; open our understanding, give us the spirit of discerning, and just apprehension of all the beauties, with which thou hast enamelled vertue to represent it beauteous, and amiable in our eyes; that by the allurements of exterior decencies and appendant blessings our present desires may be entertained, our hopes promoted our affections satisfied, and love entring in by these doores may dwell in the interior regions of the will. O make us to love thee for thy selfe, and religion for thee, and all the instruments of religion in order to thy glory, and our own felicities. Pull off the vizour of sin, and discover its deformities by the lanterne of thy word and the light of the Spirit, that I may never be bewitched with fottiſh appetites; be pleased to build up all the contents I expeſt in this world upon the interest of a vertuous life, and the ſupport of religion, that I may be rich in good works, content in the iſſues of thy providence, my health may be the reſult of temperance and ſeverity, my mirth in ſpirituall emanations, my reſt in hope, my peace in a good conſcience, my ſatisfaction and acquieſcence in thee; that from content I may paſſe to an eternall fulneſſe, from health to immortality, from grace to glory, walking in the paths of righteouſneſſe by the waters of comfort to the land of everlasting reſt to feaſt in the glorious communications of eternity, eternally adoring, loving and enjoying the infinity of the ever Bleſſed and muſterious Trinity, to whom be glory and honour, and dominion now and for ever. Amen.



Ad num. 17.

## Discourse 15.

## Of Certainty of SALVATION.

1.

**H**en the holy J E S U S took an account of the first legation and voyage of his Apostles, he found them rejoicing in priviledges, and exterior powers, in their authority over unclean spirits ; but weighing it in his balance, he found the cause too light, and therefore diverted it upon the right object. *Rejoice that your names are written in Heaven ;* the revelation was confirmed and more personally applyed in answer to S. Peters Question, *We have forsaken all and followed thee, what shall we have therefore.* Their LORD answered ; *Ye shall sit upon twelve thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.* Amongst these persons to whom CHRIST spake *Judas* was ; he was one of the twelve, and he had a throne allotted for him ; his name was described in the book of life, and a sceptre and a crown was deposited for him too ; for we must not judge of CHRIST'S meaning by the event, since he spake these words to produce in them faith, comfort and joy in the best objects : it was a sermon of duty as well as a homily of comfort, and therefore was equally intended to all the Colledge ; and since the number of thrones is proportioned to the number of men it is certain there was no exception of any man there included ; and yet tis as certain *Judas* never came to sit upon the throne, and his name was blotted out of the book of life ;

\* quod dixit Iesus 2. Discipulis, Luca 10. v. 20 eorum nominis delcripta esse in celo ; praedestinationem licet aliquatenus denotet, non tamen ad gloriam sed ad manus Evangelicum, & ministerium in regno. Alii autem verba illa non remportantur ; the condition of lower persons to whom no revelation is made, re sed causam gaudii tantum narrare j statim & legitiman ; ex suppositione scil. & quando hec contigerit, aut ad effectum perducetur. Ut cuncti autem verba significant certum est Doctores Ecclesie non paucos tradidisse 72. Et si seipulos Christum reliquie nec redire denuo.

no priviledges are indulged, no greatnesse of spirituall eminency is appendant, as they have no greater certainty in the thing, so they have lese in person, and are therefore to work out their salvation with great fears and tremblings of Spirit.

Part III.

The purpose of this consideration is, that we do not judge of our finall condition by any discourses of our own, relying upon GODS secret counsels, *Ad scelus ab humore et predestinatione eternitatis*. This is a mountaine upon which who-*jusmodi votis* soever climbs like Moses to behold the land of Canaan at great distances *facillime transi*, may please his eyes, or satisfie his curiosity, but is certain never to *tur. Tacit.* enter that way. It is like enquiring into fortunes concerning which *Nos parvum ac* *Favorinus the Philosopher spake not unhandfomely*; they that foretell *debile vulgus* *events of destiny*, and secret providence, either foretell sad things or *scrutamus penitus Superos*, prosperous. If they promise prosperous and deceive, you are made miserable by a vain speculation. If they threaten ill fortune and say false, *hinc pallor, et ira* *thou art made wretched by a false fear*. But if they foretell adversity *Hinc scelus, in-* and say true, thou art made miserable by thy own apprehension, before thou art so by destiny; And many times the fear is worse then the *modestia voti*. *evil feared*. But if they promise felicities and promise truely, what *Statius*. shall come to passe; then thou shalt be wearied by an impatience *A.Gellius.l.14.* and a suspended hope; and thy hope shall ravish and deflowre the joyes *Futurungaudie* of thy possession. Much of it is hugely applicable to the present Question; *fructum spes* and our Blessed LORD, when he was petitioned, that he would grant to *tibi jam pra-* the two sons of Zebedee, that they might sit one on the right hand, *floraverit*. and the other on the left in his kingdom, rejected their desire, and onely promised them, what concerned their duty, and their suffering, referring them to that, and leaving the finall event of men to the disposition of his Father. This is the great secret of the kingdom, which GOD hath locked up and sealed with the Counsels of eternity. *The sure foundation of GOD standeth, having this seal, The Lord knoweth who are his.* This seal shall never be broken up, till the great day of Christ, in the mean time, the Divine knowledge is the onely repository of the finall sentences, and this *way of God is unsearchable, and past finding out*. And therefore if we be follicitous, and curious to know what GOD in the counsels of eternity hath decreed concerning us, he hath in two fair tables described all those sentences, from whence we must take accounts; the revelations of Scripture, and the book of Conscience: The first recites the law and the conditions: The other gives in evidence: The first is clear, evident and conspicuous; The other when it is written with large characters may also be discerned; but there are many little accents, periods, distinctions, and little significations of actions, which either are there written in water or sullied over with carelessness, or blotted with forgetfullnesse or not legible by ignorance, or misconstrued by interest and partiality, that it will be extremely difficult to read the hand upon the wall or to copy out one line of the eternall sentence. And therefore excellent was the counsell of the son of Sirach: *Ecclu.3.21.22* *seek not out the things, that are too hard for thee, neither search the things, that are above thy strength, but what is commanded thee think thereupon with reverence, for it is not needfull for thee to see with thine eyes the things, that are in secret.* For whatsoever GOD hath revealed in generall concerning election, it concernes all persons within the pale of Christianity;

## Part III.

he hath conveyed notice to all Christian people, that they ~~are the sons of~~ GOD, that they are the heirs of eternity, coheires with Christ, partakers of the Divine nature: meaning that such they are by the deligne of GOD, and the purposes of the manifestation of his Son; The election of GOD is disputed in Scripture to be an act of GOD separating whole nations, and rejecting others, in each of which many particular instances there were, contrary to the generall and universall purpose; and of the elect nations many particulars perished, and many of the rejected people fale down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven; and to those persons to whom GOD was more particular, and was pleased to shew the scruples of his eternall counsels and to reveal their particular elections, as he did to the twelve Apostles, he shewed them wrapped up and sealed; and to take off their confidences, or presumptions he gave probation in one instance, that those scruples may be cancelled, that his purpose concerning particulars may be altered by us, and therefore that he did not discover the bottome of the abyse, but some purposes of speciall grace, and indefinite design; but his peremptory, finall, unalterable decree he keeps in the cabinets of the eternall ages never to be unlocked, till the angel of the Covenant shall declare the unalterable universall sentence.

3. But as we take the measure of the course of the sun by the dimensions of the shadows made by our own bodies, or our own instruments: so must we take the measures of eternity by the span of a mans hand, and guesse at what God decrees of us, by considering how our relations, and endearments are to him; and it is obserueable, that all the confidences, which the Spirit of God hath created in the Elect are built upon duty, and stand or fall according to the strength or weaknesse of such supporters. *We know we are translated from death to life by our love unto the Brethren:* meaning that the performance of our duty is the best consignation to eternity, and the onely testimony GOD gives us of our election. And therefore we are to make our judgements accordingly. And here I consider that there is no state of a Christian, in which by vertue of the Covenant of the Gospel it is effectively, and fully declared, that his sins are actually pardoned, but onely in Baptisme, at our first coming to Christ, when he redeemes us from our vain conversation, when he makes us become Sons of GOD, *when he justifies us freely by his grace,* When we are purified by faith, when we make a Covenant with CHRIST to live for ever according to his laws. And this I shall suppose I have already proved and explicated in the Discourse of re-pentance. So that who ever is certain, he hath not offended GOD since that time, and in nothing transgresseth the laws of Christianity, he is certain, that he actually remains in the state of baptismall purity, but it is too certain that this certainty remaines not long, but we commonly throw some durt into our waters of baptisme, and stain our white robe, which we then put on.

4. But then because our restitution to this state is a thing, that consists of so many parts, is so divisible, various, and uncertain whether it be arrived to the degree of innocence, (and our innocence consists in a mathematicall point, and is not capable of degrees any more then unity, because one staine destroyes our being innocent) it is therefore a very difficult matter to say that we have done all our duty towards our restitution to baptismall grace; and if we have not done all that we can do,

it is harder to say that GOD hath accepted that which is lesse then the conditions , we entred into, when we received the great justification and pardon of sins. We all know we do lesse then our duty , and we hope that GOD makes abatements for humane infirmities; but we have but a few rules to judge by, and they not infallible in themselves, and we yet more fallible in the application, whether we have not mingled some little minutes of malice in the body of infirmities, and how much will bear excuse ; and in what time, and to what persons, and to what degrees, and upon what endeavours, we shall be pardoned ? So that all the intervall between our loosing baptis-mall grace and the day of our death, we walk in a cloud,having lost the cer-tain knowledge of our present condition by our prevarications. And indeed it is a very hard thing for a man to know his own heart;& he that shal observe how often himself hath been abused by confidences, and secret imperfec-tions, and how the greatest part of Christians in name onely, do think them-selves in a very good condition, when God knows they are infinitely re-moved from it, and yet if they did not think themselves well and sure, it is unimaginable they should sleep so quietly, and walk securely , and con-sider negligently and yet proceed confidently, he that considers this, and up-on what weak & false principles of Divinity men have raised their strengths and persuasions, will easily consent to this, that it is very easie for men to be deceived in taking estimate of their present condition, of their being in the state of grace.

But there is great variety of men, and difference of degrees ; and every step of returning to GOD may reasonably adde one degree of hope , till at last it comes to the certainty and top of hope. Many men beleive them-selves to be in the state of grace, and are not. Many are in the state of grace , and are infinitely fearfull they are out of it. And many that are in Gods favour do think they are so, and they are not deceived. And all this is certain , for some sin that sin of presumption and flattery of themselves, and some good persons are vexed with violent fears and temptations to de-spair ; and all are not ; and when their hopes are right, yet some are strong and some are weake ; for they, that are well perswaded of their pre-sent condition , have persuasions as different as are the degrees of their ap-proach to innocence. And he that is at the highest hath also such abate-ments, which are apt and proper for the conservation of humilitie and godly fear. *I am guilty of nothing* (faith Saint Paul) *but I am not hereby justified*, meaning thus , though I be innocent for ought I know, yet GOD who judges otherwise then we judge may finde some thing to reprove in me : *It is GOD that judges*, that is , concerning my degrees of accep-tance , and hopes of glory. If the person be newly recovering from a state of sin, because his state is imperfect , and his sin not dead, and his lust active , and his habite not quite extinct , it is easie for a man to be too hasty in pronouncing well. He is wrapt up in a cloke of clouds, hidden and encombr'd, and his brightest day is but twi-light , and his discernings dark, conjecturall and imperfect , and his heart is like a cold hand newly applyed to the fire , full of pain ; and whether the heat or the cold be strongest is not easie to determine ; or like middle colours which no man can tell, to which of the extremes they are to be accounted. But according as persons grow in grace , so they may grow in confidence of their present condition. It is not certain they Job.9.21.

*1. Cor. 4.4.*  
Cum autem in  
rebus officiis  
mus Deum nra-  
jorem tamen of-  
fensarum partem  
ne i. te ligirus  
quidem; id circa  
ait Apostolus,  
nihil conscius  
sui, &c. q. d.  
multa deicta  
committit, qua  
comittit me  
non intelligo.  
Propter hanc  
cautiam Propheta  
ait, Delicta quis  
intelligit?  
*S. Basil. c. 2.*  
Monast. Conflit.  
*Eccles. 9.1.2.*

## Part III.

will do so, for sometimes the beauty of the tabernacle is covered with goats hair, and skins of beasts, and holy people do infinitely deplore the want of such graces which God observes in them with great complacency and acceptance. Both these cases say, that to be certainly perswaded of our present condition is not a duty: Sometimes it is not possible, and sometime it is better to be otherwise. But if we consider of this certainty as a blessing and a reward, there is no question, but in a great and an eminent sanctity of life, there may also be a great confidence and fulnesse of perswasion, that our present being is well and gracious, and then it is certain that such persons are not deceived. For the thing it selfe being sure, if the persuasion answers to it, it is needless to dispute of the degree of certainty and the manner of it. Some persons are heartily peruwaded of there being reconciled, and of these some are deceived and some are not deceived, and there is no signe to distinguish them, but by that which is the thing signified: a holy life according to the strict rules of Christian Discipline tells what persons are confident, and who are presumptuous. But the certainty is reasonable in none, but in old Christians, habitually holy persons, not in new converts, or in lately lapsed people; for concerning them we finde the spirit of GOD speaking with clauses of restraint and ambiguity, a [perhaps,] and [who knoweth] and [peradventure] the thoughts of thy heart may be forgiven thee, or [GOD] may have mercy on thee. And that GOD hath done so, they onely have reason to be confident, whom GOD hath blessed with a lasting continuing piety, and who have wrought out the habites of their precontracted vices.

*Beatus Daniel praeclus futuro-  
ri de sententia  
Dei dubitat.  
Rem temera-  
riam faciunt  
qui audacter  
veniam polliti-  
centur peccanti-  
vices.*

*bus S. Hieron.*

*Dan. 4.27.*

*Joel. 2.14.*

*Acts 8.22.*

6.

*Matth. 24.13.*

*Rom. 11.20.*

*Revel. 2.5.*

*C. 10.*

But we find in scripture many precepts given to Holy persons being in the state of grace to secure their standing and perpetuate their present condition. For [ he that endureth unto the end he [ onely ] shall be saved ] ( said our blessed S A V I O U R ) and [ he that standeth let him take heed lest he fall. ] And, thou standest by faith, be not high minded but fear, and, work out your salvation with fear and trembling. Hold fast that thou hast, and let no man take the crown from thee. And it was excellent advice, for one church had lost their first love, and was likely also to loose their crown. And Saint Paul himselfe, who had once entred within the vail, and seen unutterable glories, yet was forced to endure hardship, and to fight against his own disobedient appetite, and to do violence to his inclinations, for fear, that whilst he preached to others himselfe should become a castaway. And since we observe in holy story, that Adam and Eve fell in Paradise, and the Angels fell in heaven it self, stumbling at the very jewels, which pave the streets of the celestiall Jerusalem; and in C H R I S T S family, one man for whom his L O R D had prepared a throne turned Devil, and that in the number of the Deacons it is said, that one turned Apostle, who yet had been a man full of the holy Ghost, it will lessen our train, and discompose the gayeties of our present confidence to think that our securities cannot be really distinguished from danger and uncertainties. For every man walks upon two legs, one is firm, invariable, constant and eternall, but the other is his own. GODS promises are the objects of our faith, but the events and finall conditions of our souls, which is consequent to our duty can at the best be but the objects of our hope. And either there must in this be a lesse certainty, or else faith and hope

hope are not two distinct graces. GODS gifts and vocation are without re-pentance ; meaning [on GODS part] but the very people , concerning whom Saint Paul used the expression were reprobate and cut off , and in good time shall be called again. In the mean time many single persons perish. There is no condemnation to them that are in CHRIST JESUS , GOD will look to that , and it will never fail ; but then they must secure the following period , and not walk after the Flesh , but after the Spirit. Behold the goodness of God towards thee (saith Saint Paul) if thou continue in his goodness , otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. And if this be true concerning the whole Church of the Gentiles , to whom the Apostle then made the addresse, and concerning whose election the decree was publike , and manifest , that they might be cut off , and their aboad in GODS favour was upon condition of their perseverance in the faith ; much more is it true in single persons , whose election in particular is shut up in the abyse and permitted to the condition of our faith , and obedience , and the revelations of Doomesday .

Part III.

Rom.11. per  
totum.

Rom.8.1.

Rom.11.22.

Certain it is , that GOD hath given to holy persons the Spirit of adoption , enabling them to cry Abba Father , and to account themselves for sons , and by this Spirit we know we dwell in him , and therefore it is called in Scripture the earnest of the Spirit , though at its first mission and when the Apostle wrote and used this appellative , the holy Ghost was of greater signification , and a more visible earnest and enderement of their hopes , then it is to most of us since. For the visible sending of the holy Ghost upon many Believers in gifts , signes , and prodiges was infinite argument to make them expect events as great beyond that , as that was beyond the common gifts of men ; just as miracles and Prophecy , which are gifts of the Holy Ghost , were arguments of probation for the whole Doctrine of Christianity : and this being a mighty verification of the great promise , the promise of the Father , was an apt instrument to raise their hopes and confidences concerning those other promises , which JESUS made , the promises of immortality and eternall life , of which the present miraculous graces of the holy Spirit were an earnest and in the nature of a contracting peny ; and still also the holy Ghost , though in another manner , is an earnest of the great price of the heavenly calling the rewards of heaven : though not so visible and apparent as at first , yet as certain and demonstrative , where it is discerned , or where it is beleaved , as it is and ought to be in every person , who does any part of his duty , because by the Spirit we do it , and without him we cannot. And since we either feel or beleieve the presence and gifts of the holy Ghost to holy purposes , we cannot but entertain him as an argument of greater good hereafter , and an earnest peny of the perfection of the prefent grace , that is , of the rewards of glory : glory and grace differing no otherwise then as an earnest in part of payment does from the whole price , the price of our high calling . So that the Spirit is an earnest , not because he alwaies signifies to us , that we are actually in the estate of grace , but by way of argument or reflexion ; we know we do belong to GOD , when we receive his Spirit : (and all Christian people have received him , if they were rightly baptized and confirmed) and therefore know by that testimony , that we belong to God , that is , we are the people with whom God hath made a Covenant , to whom he hath promised and intends

7.

Rom.8.15.

1.John.4.13.

2.Cor.1.22.

G 5.c.v.5.

## Part. III.

Hebr. 5.4.5.

greater blessings, to which the present gifts of the Spirit are in order. But all this is conditionall, and is not an immediate testimony of the certainty and future event; but of the event, as it is possibly future, and may (without our fault) be reduced to act as certainly as it is promised, or as the earnest is given in hand. And this the Spirit of God often times tells us in secret visitations, and publike testimonies, and this is that which Saint Paul calls, *tastring of the heavenly gift, and partaking of the holy Ghost, and tastring of the good word of God, and the power of the world to come;* but yet some that have done so have fallen away, and have quenched the Spirit, and have given back the earnest of the Spirit, and contracted new relations, and God hath been their Father no longer, for they have done the works of the Devil. So that if new converts be uncertain of their present state, old Christians are not absolutely certain they shall persevere. They are as sure of it as they can be of future acts of theirs, which God hath permitted to their own power. But this certainty cannot exclude all fear, till their charity be perfect; onely according to the strength of their habits, so is the confidence of their abodes in grace

8.

Beyond this, some holy persons have degrees of persuasion superadded, as largesses and acts of grace, God loving to bleffe one degree of grace with another, till it comes to a confirmation in Grace, which is a state of salvation directly opposite to obduracy; and as this is irremediable and irrecoverable, so is the other inamissible: As God never leaves a person obdurate, and obstinately impenitent, so he never loses a man, whom he hath confirmed in grace, *whom he [so] loves he loves unto the end,* and to others indeed he offers his persevering love, but they will not entertain it with a perfevering duty. They will not be beloved unto the end. But I insert this caution; that every man, that is in this condition of a confirmed grace, does not alwayes know it. But sometimes God draws aside the curtains of peace, and shews him his throne, and visits him with irradiations of glory, and sends him a little star to stand over his dwelling, and then again covers it with a cloud. It is certain concerning some persons, that they shall never fall, and that God will not permit them to the danger or probability of it; to such it is morally impossible; but these are but few, and themselves know it not, as they know a demonstrative proposition, but as they see the Sunne, sometimes breaking from a cloud, very brightly, but all day long giving necessary and sufficient light.

9.

Concerning the multitude of Beleevers this discourse is not pertinent, for they onely take their own accounts by the imperfections of their own duty, blended with the mercies of God: the cloud gives light on one side, and is dark upon the other; and sometimes a bright ray peepes through the fringes of a showre, and immediately hides it self, that we might be humble and diligent, striving forwards, and looking upwards, endeavouring our duty, and longing after heaven, working out our salvation with fear and trembling, and in good time our calling and election may be assured, when we first according to the precept of the Apostle use all diligence. Saint Paul, when he writ his first Epistle to the Corinthians, was more fearfull of being reprobate, and there-

1.Cor.9.27.

Vide etiam

Philip.3.11.

therefore he used exteriour arts of mortification. But when he writ to the Romans, which was a good while after, we finde him more confident of his finall condition, *perswaded that neither height, nor depth; Angel, nor principality, nor power could separate him from the love of GOD in JESUS CHRIST;* And when he grew to his latter end, when he wrote to S. Timothie, he was more confident yet, and declared that now a crown of righteousness was certainly laid up for him, for now he had fought the fight, and finished his course, The time of his departure was at hand. Henceforth he knew no more fear; his love was perfect, as this state would permit, and that cast out all fear. According to this precedent, if we reckon our securities we are not likely to be reproved by any words of Scripture, or by the condition of humane infirmitie. But when the confidence outruns our growth in grace, it is it self a sin; though when the confidence is aquall with the grace, it is of it self no regular and universall duty, but a blessing and a reward, indulged by speciaill dispensation, and in order to personall necessities, or accidentall purposes. For onely so much hope is simply necessary, as excludes despair, and encourages our duty, and glorifies GOD, and entertains his mercy; but that the hope should be without fear is not given, but to the highest faith, and the most excellent charity, and to habituall, ratified, and confirmed Christians, and to them also with some variety. The sum is this, all that are in the state of beginners, and imperfection, have a conditionall certainty, changeable and fallible in respect of us ( for we meddle not with what it is in GODS secret purposes: ) changeable I say, as their wills and resolutions. They that are grown towards perfection have more reason to be confident, and many times are so; but still although the strength of the habites of grace addes degrees of morall certainty, to their expectation, yet it is but as their condition is, hopefull and promising, and of a morall determination. But to those few to whom GOD hath given confirmation in grace, he hath also given a certainty of condition, and therefore if that be revealed to them, their persuasions are certain and infallible. If it be not revealed to them, their condition is in it self certain, but their persuasion is not so; but in the highest kinde of hope, *an anchor of the soul sure and stedfast.*

2.Tim. 4.6,7,  
8.



## THE PRAYER.

**O** Eternall GOD, whose Counsels are in the great deep, and thy wayes past finding out, thou hast built our faith upon thy promises, our hopes upon thy goodnesse, and hast described our paths between the waters of comfort and the dry barren land of our own duties and affections: we acknowledge that all our comforts derive from thee, and to our selves we owe all our shame and confusions and degrees of desperation. Give us the assistances of the *CCC 4* *holy*

## Part III.

Holy Ghost to help us in performing our duty, and give us those comforts and visitations of the holy Ghost, which thou in thy infinite and eternall wisdom knowest most apt and expedient to encourage our duties, to entertain our hopes, to alleviate our sadness, to refresh our spirits, and to endure our abode and constant endeavours in the strictnesses of religion and sanctity. Lead us dearest G O D from grace to grace, from imperfection to strength, from acts to habits, from habits to confirmation in grace, that we may also passe into the regions of comfort, receiving the earnest of the spirit, and the adoption of sons, till by such a signature we be consigned to glory, and enter into the possession of the inheritance, which we expect in the kingdom of thy Sonne, and in the fruition of the felicities of thee, O Gratiouse Father, G O D eternall. Amen.



## Sect. 14.

### Of the third year of the preaching of J E S U S.

**B**ut JESUS knowing of the death of the Baptist, Herods jealousy, and the envy of the Pharisees, retired into a desert place beyond the lake, together with his Apostles. For the people pressed so upon them, they had not leisure to eat. But neither there, could he be hid, but great multitudes flocked thitheralso, to whom he preached many things. And afterwards because there were no villages in the neighbourhood, lest they should faint in their return to their houses he caused them to sit down upon the grasse, and with five loaves of barley, and two small fishes he satisfied five thousand men besides women and children, and caused the Disciples to gather up the fragments, which being amassed together filled twelve baskets. Which miracles had so much proportion to the understanding, and met so happily with the affections of the people, that they were convinced, that this was the *Messias, who was to come into the world* and had a purpose to have taken him by force and made him a King.

But he, that left his Fathers kingdom to take upon him the miseries and infelicities of the world, fled from the offers of a Kingdom, and their tumultuary election, as from an Enemy, and therefore sending his Disciples to the ship before, towards Bethsaida, he ran into the mountains to hide himself, till the multitude should scatter to their severall habitations; he in the mean time taking the opportunity of that retirement for the advantage of his prayers. But when the Apostles were far engaged in the deep, a great tempest arose, with which they were pressed to the extremity of danger, and the last refuges, labouring in

sadnesse and hopelesnesse, till the fourth watch of the night, when in the midst of their fears and labour, JESUS comes walking on the sea, and appeared to them, which turned their fears into affrightments; for they supposed it had been a spirit; but he appeased their fears with his presence and manifestation who he was; which yet they desired to have proved to them by a signe. For *Simon Peter said to him, Master, if it be thou, Command me to come to thee on the waters.* The L O R D did so, and Peter throwing himself upon the confidence of his Masters power, and providence, came out of the ship, and his fear began to weigh him down, and he cried saying, *LORD save me.* JESUS took him by the hand, reproved the timorousnesse of his faith, and went with him into the ship: where when they had worshipped him, and admired the Divinity of his power and person, they presently came into the land of Genesareth, the ship arriving at the port immediately, and all that were sick or possessed with unclean spirits, were brought to him, and as many as touched the border of his garment, were made whole.

By this time, they whom J E S U S had left on the other side of the lake had come as far as Capernaum to seek him, wondring that he was there before them, but upon the occasion of their so diligent inquisition JESUS observes to them, ‘That it was not the Divinity of the miracle, that provoked their zeal, but the satisfaction they had in the loaves, a carnal complacency in their meal; and upon that intimation speaks of celestial bread, the divine nutriment of souls, and then discourses of mysterious and symbolical manducation of CHRIST himself, affirming that ‘he himself was the bread of life, that came down from Heaven, that he would give his Disciples his flesh to eat, and his blood to drink,’ and all this should be for the life of the World to nourish unto life eternal; so that without Epiphany. b.c. it, a happy eternity could not be obtained. Upon this discourse, divers ref. 51. of his Disciples (amongst whom S. Mark the Evangelist is said to be one, though he was afterwards recalled by Simon Peter) forsook him, being scandalized by their literal and carnal understanding of those words of JESUS, which he intended in a spiritual sense. For the words that he spake, were not profitable in the sene of flesh and blood, but they are spirit, and they are life, himself being the Expounder, who best knew his own meaning.

When J E S U S saw this great defection of his Disciples from him, he turned him to the twelve Apostles, and asked If they also would go away? Simon Peter answered, *LORD, whither shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life, and we believe and are sure, thou art that C H R I S T the Sonne of the living G O D.* Although this publick confession was made by Peter in the name and confidence of the other Apostles, yet JESUS told them, that even amongst the twelve there was one Devil, meaning Judas Iscariot, who afterwards betrayed him; this he told them Prophetically, that they might perceive, the sad accidents which afterwards hapned, did not invade and surprize him in the disadvantages of ignorance or improvision, but came by his own knowledge and providence.

Then came to him the Pharisees, and some Scribes which came from Jerusalem and Galilee (for J E S U S would not go to Judaea, because the Jews laid wait to kill him) and quarrelled with him about certain impertinent, unnecessary rites derived to them not by divine sanction, but ordinances of man; such as were washing their hands oft, when they eat, bapti-

## Part III.

baptizing cups and platters, and washing tables and beds, which ceremonies the Apostles of JESUS did not observe, but attended diligently to the simplicity and spirituall holinesse of their Masters doctrine: But in return to their vain demands JESUS gave them a sharp reproof for prosecuting these and many other traditions to the discountenance of divine precepts; and in particular they taught men to give to the Corban, and refused to supply the necessity of their parents, thinking it to be religion, though they neglected piety and charity; and again he thunders out woes and sadnesses against their impieties for being curious of minutes, and punctual in rites and ceremonials, but most negligent and incurious of judgement and the love of GOD; for their pride, for their hypocrisy, for their imposing burdens upon others, which themselves helped not to support; for taking away the key of knowledge from the people, obstructing the passages to heaven; approving the acts of their Fathers in persecuting the Prophets. But for the Question it self concerning washings, JESUS taught the people, that no outward impurity did stain the soul in the sight of God, but all pollution is from within, from the corruption of the heart, and impure thoughts, unchaste desires, and unholy purposes; and that, charity is the best purifier in the world.

6. And thence JESUS departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into a house, that he might not be known. The diligence of a Mothers love, and sorrow and necessity found him out in his retirement; for a Syrophoenician woman came and besought him, that he would cast the Devil out of her daughter: but JESUS discoursed to her by way of discomfort and rejection of her, for her nations sake. But the seeming denial did but enkindle her desires, and made her importunity more bold and undeniable; she begged but some crumis, that fell from the childrens table, but one instance of favour to her daughter, which he powred forth without measure upon the sons and daughters of Israel. JESUS was pleased with her zeal and discretion, and pityed her daughters infelicity, and dismissed her with saying, *The Devil was gone out of her daughter.*

7. But JESUS stayed not long here, but returning to the sea of Galilee through the midst of Decapolis they brought unto him a man deaf and dumb, whom JESUS cured by touching his tongue, and putting his fingers in his ears, which caused the people to give a large testimony in approbation of all his actions. And they followed him unto a mountaine, bringing to him multitudes of diseased people, and he healed them all. But because the people had followed him three dayes, and had nothing to eat, JESUS in pity to their need resolved to feast them once more at the charge of a miracle; Therefore taking seven loaves, and a few small fishes, he blessed them, satisfied four thousand men besides women and children. And there remained seven baskets full of broken bread and fish. From whence JESUS departed by ship to the coasts of Mageddon and Dalmatia, whither the Pharisees and Sadduces came seeking of him a signe: but JESUS rejected their impertinent and captious demand, knowing they did it to ill-purposes, and with disaffection; reproving them that they discerned the face of the skie, and the prognosticks of faire or foul weather, but not the signes of the times of the Son of man; However, since they had neglected so great demonstrations of miracles, gracious discourses, holy laws and Prophecies they must expect no other signe, but the sign of the Prophet Jonas, meaning, the resur-

resurrection of his body after three dayes burial , and so he dismissed the impertinent inquisitors.

And passing again over the lake, as his Disciples were solicitous , because they had forgot to take bread he gave them caution to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadduces , and the leaven of Herod , meaning the hypocrite and vanities of the one , and the heresie of the other . For Herods leaven was the pretence that he was the *Messias*, which the Sect of the Herodians did earnestly and spitefully promote ; and after this entertainment of themselves by the way, they came together to Bethsaida, where JESUS cured a blinde Man with a collyrium of spittle, salutary as Balsam , or the purest eye-bright, when his divine benediction once had hallowed it : but J E S U S staid not there, but departing thence into the coasts of Cafarea Philippi out of Herods power, for it was in Philips jurisdiction, after he had prayed with his Disciples, he enquired what opinion the World had of him, and whom they reported him to be ? They answered, *Some say thou art John the Bapift, some that thou art Elias, or Jeremias, or one of the Prophets* ; for in Galilee especially, the Sect of the Pharisees was mightily disseminated, whose opinion it was, that the souls of dead Men according to their several merit did transmigrate into other bodies of very perfect and excellent persons . And therefore in all this variety none hit upon the right , or fancied him to be a distinct person from the ancients , but although they differed in the assignation of his name , yet generally they agreed it was the soul of a departed Prophet, which had passed into another body . But JESUS asked the Apostles their opinion , and Peter in the name of all the rest made an open and confident confession, *Thou art CHRIST the Son of the living G O D.*

This confession JESUS not onely confirmed as true, but as revealed by GOD, and of fundamental necessity ; for after the blessing of Peters person, upon allusion of Peters name, JESUS said, that *upon this Rock [the article of Peters confession] he would build his Church* , promising to it assistances even to perpetuity , infomuch that *the gates of Hell*, that is, persecution and death and the grave should *never prevail against it* ; adding withal, a promise to Peter in behalf of all the rest , as he had made a confession for them all, that he would *give unto him the keys of the kingdom of heaven, so that whatsoever he should binde in earth should be bound in heaven, and whatsoever he should loose on earth should be loosed in heaven* ; a power which he never communicated before or since, but to their successors ; greater then the large charter of Nature, and the donative of Creation, in which all the creatures under Heaven were made subject to Mans Empire, but till now Heaven it self was never subordinate to humane ministrition.

And now the dayes from hence forward to the death of JESUS we must reckon to be like the Vigils or Eves of his Passion ; for now he began, and often did ingeminante those sad predictions of his unhandsome usage he should shortly finde, that he should *be rejected of the Elders and chief Priests, and Scribes, and suffer many things at Jerusalem, and be killed and be raised up the third day*. But Peter hearing that sad discourse so contrary to his hopes, which he had blended with temporal expectancies (for he had learned the Doctrine of CHRISTS advent , but not the mystery of the Croffe) in great and mistaken civility took JESUS aside, and began to rebuke that saying, *Be it far from thee, L O R D, this shall not be unto thee*. But JESUS full of zeal against

## Part III.

against so soft and humane admonition, that favoured nothing of GOD, o  
of abstracted immaterial considerations, chid Peter bitterly; *Get thee b e  
hinde me Satan, thou art an offence unto me.* And calling his Disciples to him,  
told them a second part of a sad doctrine, that not onely himself, but all  
they also must suffer too. For when the Head was to be crowned with  
thorns, if the Members were wrapped in softnesses, it was an unhandsome  
undecency and a disunion too neer an antipathy; and therefore who ever  
will be the Disciples of JESUS must take up his Crosse, deny himself, and  
his own fonder appetites, and trace his Masters footsteps mark'd out with  
blood, that he shed for our redemption and institution. And that there  
be no escape from the participation of CHRIST'S suffering, JESUS added  
this dilemma. ‘ He that will save his life shall lose it, and he that will lose  
‘ it, shall save it to eternity; for as the first are foolish to the extremest mi-  
‘ sery, that will lose their souls to gain the World, so they are most wise and  
‘ fortunate, that will give their lives for him; because when the Son of Man  
‘ shall come in his own glory, and his Fathers, and of his Angels, he shall  
‘ reward every Man according to his works. This Discourse JESUS conclu-  
‘ ded with a Prophesie, that some standing in that presence shoulld not dye  
‘ till they see the Son of Man coming in his Kingdom.

## II.

Of the greater glories of which in due time to be revealed, JESUS after  
eight dayes gave a bright and excellent probation; For taking with him  
*Peter and Janes, and John,* he went up into the mountain Tabor to pray,  
and while he prayed he was transfigured before them, and his face did shine  
like the Sun, and his garments were white and glistering. And there ap-  
peared talking with him *Moses and Elias* gloriously, speaking of the decease  
which he should accomplish at Jerusalem: which glory these Apostles, af-  
ter they had awaked from sleep, did behold. And the interlocutors with  
JESUS having finished their embassy of death (which they delivered in  
formes of glory representing the excellencies of the reward together with  
the sharpeſſe of the paſſage and interval) departed, leaving the Apostles  
full of fear, and wonder and extatſe, inſomuch that *Peter* talked he knew  
not what, but nothing amisse, ſomething Prophetical, ſaying, *Master it is  
good to be here, let us build three tabernacles:* And ſome devout persons in  
memory of the mystery did erect three Churches in the ſame place in after  
ages. But after the departure of those attendant Saints, a cloud encircled  
JESUS, and the Disciples, and a voice came from the excellent glory, *This  
is my beloved Son, hear him.* The cloud quickly disappeared, and freed the  
Disciples from the fear it had put them in. So they attended JESUS, and  
descended from the mountain, being commanded silence, which they ob-  
ſerved till the reſurrection.

## 12

*Sæpe fui for-  
bendus aquis,  
sæpe igne vo-  
randus  
Sed timu're  
tuas ignis &  
unda manus.*

The next day came to JESUS a Man praying in behalf of his ſon, Lunat-  
ick and ſore troubled with a Devil, who fought oft to destroy him in fire  
and water, that JESUS would be pleased to deliver him. For his Apostles  
tryed, and could not by reaſon of the want of faith; for this grace if it be  
true, though in a leſſe degree, is of power to remove mountains, to pluck up  
trees by the roots, and to give them ſolid foundation in the waters: And  
JESUS rebuked the Devil, and he departed out of him from that very  
hour. Thence JESUS departed privately into Galilee, and in his journey  
repeated those ſadnesſes of his approaching paſſion, Which ſo afflieted the  
ſpirits of the Disciples, that they durſt no more provoke him to diſcourse,  
left

Beda de locis  
sanctis. c. 17.

lest he should take occasion to interweave something of that unpleasant argument with it. For sad and disconsolate persons use to create comforts to themselves by fiction of fancy, and use arts of avocation to remove displeasures from them, and stratagems to remove it from their presence, by removing it from their apprehensions, thinking the incommodity of it is then taken away, when they have lost the sense.

When J E S U S was now come to Capernaum, the exactors of rates came to *Simon Peter*, asking him if his Master paid the accustomed imposition, *viz.* a sicle or didrachme, the fourth part of an ounce of silver, which was the tribute which the LORD imposed upon all the sons of Israel from twenty years old and above, to pay for redemption and propitiation, & for the use of the Tabernacle. When *Peter* came into the house, JESUS knowing the message that he was big with, prevented him by asking him, *of whom do the kings of the nations take tribute, of their own children, or of strangers?* *Peter* answered, *of strangers*. Then said J E S U S, then are the children free; meaning, that since the Gentile Kings do not exact tribute of their sons, neither will GOD of his. And therefore this pension, to be paid for the use of the Tabernacle, for the service of G O D, for the redemption of their souls, was not to be paid by him, who was the Son of G O D, but by strangers; yet to avoid offence, he sent *Peter* a fishing, and provided a fish with two didrachmes of silver in it, which he commanded *Peter* to pay for them two.

Exod. 30.

But when the Disciples were together with J E S U S in the house, he asked them what they discoursed, upon the way; for they had fallen upon an ambitious and mistaken quarrel, which of them should be greatest in their Masters kingdom, which they still did dream should be an external and secular royalty, full of phantie and honour. But the Master was diligent to check their forwardness, establishing a rule for Clerical deportment; *He that will be greatest amongst you let him be your minister;* so supposing a greater and a lesser, a minister and a person to be ministred unto, but dividing the grandeur of the person from the greatness of office (that the higher the imployment, is the more humble should be the Man,) because in spiritual prelature it is not as in secular pomps, where the dominion is despotic, the coercion bloody, the dictates imperious, the laws externally compulsionary, and the titles arrogant and vain, and all the advantages are so pasted upon the person, that making that first to be splendid, it passes from the person to the subjects, who in abstracted essences do not easily apprehend regalities in veneration, but as they are subjected in persons made excellent by such superstructures of majesty; but in dignities Ecclesiastical the Dominion is paternal, the Regiment perswasive and argumentative, the coercion by censures immaterial, and impresses upon the spirit, the Laws are full of admonition, and sermon; the titles of honour monitours of duty, and memorials of labour and offices; and all the advantages, which from the office usually pass upon the person, are to be divested by the humility of the Man, and when they are of greatest veneration they are abstracted excellencies, and immaterial, not passing through the person to the people, and reflected to his lustre, but transmitted by his labour, and ministry, and give him honour for his labours sake (which is his personal excellency) not for his honour and title, which is either a derivative from Christ, or from the constitution of pious persons, estimating and valuing the relatives of Religion.

14.

Then

## Part III.

15

Then J E S U S taketh a little childe, and setteth him in the midst, propounding him by way of embleme, a patern of humility and simplicity, without the mixtures of ambition or caytive distempers; such infant candour and lowlinesse of spirit, being the necessary port, through which we must passe, if we will enter into the courts of Heaven. But as a current of wholesome waters breaking from its restraint, runs out in a succession of waters, and every preceding draught draws out the next: so were the discourses of JESUS excellent and opportune, creating occasions for others, that the whole doctrine of the Gofpel, and the entire will of the Father might be communicated upon designe; even the chances of words and actions being made regular and orderly by Divine Providence. For from the instance of humility in the symbol and Hieroglyphick of the childe, 'JESUS discourses of the care GOD takes of little children, whether naturally or spiritually such; the danger of doing them scandal and offences, 'the care and power of their Angels guardian, of the necessity in the event 'that scandals should arise, and of the great woe and infelicity of those persons who were the active ministers of such offences.

16

*Injuriarum qui vult,  
oblivisci potest, qui  
fecit nurquam. Tacit.  
\* De genzis debitorum qui solvendo  
non fuit. vid. Livian.  
Decad. 1. lib. 1. & 6.  
& Dionys. Halicar-  
nass. hist. Rom. 1. 6. &  
A. Gellius. 1. 20. c. t.  
qui sit, licuisse feci-  
re si vellet aq[ui] parti  
corpus debitoris.  
Eo tamen consilio  
sic barbarum excus-  
fir. Celius.) tanta im-  
minans pena de-  
nunciari et, ne ad  
eum urquam perve-  
nirent; infestum esse  
antiquitus nemini  
neq[ue] legi, n[on]q[ue] audi-  
vi. Duravit tamen  
ad annum C. niantini  
M. ut plumbatis co-  
derentur debitoris;  
qui tandem Christianam  
manus erudimenta  
in leges introduxerat,  
& plumbatorum im-  
manitatem sustulit.  
Cod. Theod. l. 4. & 7.  
et exact.*

17

But *Jhn* interrupted him telling him of a stranger that cast out Devils in the name of JESUS, but because he was not of the family, he had forbidden him. 'To this JESUS replied, that he shoulde in no wise have forbidden him, for in all reason he would do veneration to that person, whose name he saw to be energetical and triumphant over Devils, and in whose name it is almost necessary, that Man should believe, who used it as an instrument of ejection of impure spirits. Then JESUS proceeded in his excellent Sermon, and union of discourses, adding holy precepts concerning offences which a Man might do to himself; in which case he is to be severe, though most gentle to others. For in his own case he must shew no mercy but abscission; for it is better to cut off the offending hand or foot, or extinguish the offending eye, rather then upon the support of a troublesome foot, and by the light of an offending eye, walk into ruine, and a sad eternity, where the worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And so JESUS ended this chain of excellent discourses.

18

About this time was the Jewes feast of Tabernacles, whither J E S U S went

went up as it were in secret, and passing through Samaria he found the inhabitants of a little village so inhospitable, as to refuse to give him entertainment; which so provoked the intemperate zeal of *James* and *John*, that they would fain have called for fire to consume them, even as *Elias* did. But JESUS rebuked the furies of their anger, teaching them to distinguish the spirit of Christianity from the ungentleness of the decretory zeale of *Elias*. For since the Son of man came with a purpose to seeke and save what was lost, it was but an indiscreet temerity suddenly upon the lightest umbrages of displeasure to destroy a man, whose redemption cost the effusion of the dearest blood from the heart of JESUS. But contrarywise JESUS does a miracle upon the ten leprosy persons which came to him from the neighbourhood, crying out with sad exclamations for helpe. But JESUS had sent them to the Priest to offer for their cleansing, thither they went, and but one only returned to give thanks, and he a stranger, who with a loud voice glorified GOD and with humble adoration worshipped, and gave thanks to JESUS.

When JESUS had finished his journey, and was now come to Jerusalem, for the first dayes he was undiscerned in publike conventions, but heard of the various opinions of men concerning him, Some saying, he was a good man, others that he deceived the people, and the Pharisees sought for him to do him a mischief. But when they despaired of finding him in the midst of the feast and the people, he made sermons openly in the middest of the temple; whom when he had convinced by the variety and divinity of his miracles and discourses, they gave the greatest testimony in the world of humane weaknesse, and how prevalent, a prejudice is above the confidence and conviction of a demonstration. For a proverb, a mistake, an errour in matter of circumstance did in their understandings outweigh multitudes of miracles and argument; and becasne Christ was of Galilee, because they knew whence he was, because of the proverb, that out of Galilee comes no Prophet; because the rulers did not believe in him, these outweighed the demonstrations of his mercy and his power, and divinity. But yet very many believed on him; and no man durst lay hands to take him; for as yet his time was not come, in which he meant to give himselfe up to the power of the Jewes; and therefore when the Pharisees sent officers to seize him, they also became his Disciples, being themselves surprised by the excellency of his Doctrine.

After this, JESUS went to the mount of Olivet on the East of Jerusalem, and the next day returned again into the temple, where the scribes and Pharisees brought him a woman taken in the act of adultery, tempting him to give sentence, that they might accuse him of severity or intermeddling, if he condemned her; or of remissenesse and popularity, if he did acquit her. But JESUS found out an expedient for their difficulty, and changed the scene by bidding the innocent person among them cast the first stone at the adulteresse, and then stooping down to give them faire occasion to withdraw, he wrote upon the ground with his finger, whilst they left the woman, and her crime to a more private censure; JESUS was left alone, and the woman in the midst, whom JESUS dismissed, charging her to sin no more. And a while after, JESUS begins again to discourse to them of his mission from the Father, of his Crucifixion and exaltation from the earth, of the reward of believers, of the excellency of truth, of spirit-

## Part III.

'ull liberty, and relations, who are the sons of Abraham, and who the  
 'children of the Devil; of his own eternall generation; of the de-  
 'sire of Abraham to see his day. In which sermon he continued, adding still  
 new excellencies and confuting their malicious and vainer calumnies, till  
 they, that they also might confute him, took up stones to cast at him; but  
 he went out of the Temple, going through the midst of them, and so  
 passed by.

21.

*Epiphaneia & interitus prophet. c. 7.*

But in his passage he met a man, who had been born blinde; and after he had discoursed cursorily of the cause of that blindnesse, it being a misery, not sent as a punishment to his own or his parents sin, but as an occasion to make publike the glory of GOD; he to manifest that himself was the light of the world in all sermons said it now, and proved it by a miracle, for sitting down he made clay of spittle, and anointing the eyes of the blinde man bid him go wash in Siloam, which was a pool of lympid water, which GOD sent at the prayer of *Isaiah* the Prophet, a little before his death, to satisfie the necessities of his people opprest with thirst, and a strict siege, and it stood at the foot of the mount Sion, and gave its water at first by returns and periods, alwayes to the Jewes, but not the Enemies. And those intermitted springings were still continued, but onely a pool was made from the frequent effluxes. The blinde man went and washed and returned seeing, and was incessantly vexed by the Pharisees to tell them the manner, and circumstances of the cure, and when the man had averred the truth, and named his Physician, giving him a pious and charitable testimony, the Pharisees because they could not force him to disavow his good opinion of JESUS, cast him out of the synagogue. But JESUS meeting him received him in to the Church, told him he was CHRIST, and the man became again enlightened and he believed and worshipped. But the Pharisees blasphemed, for such was the dispensation of the Divine mysteries, that the blinde shall see, and they which think they see clearly should become blinde, because they had not the excuse of ignorance to lessen or take off the sin, but in the midst of light they shut their eyes, and doated upon darknesse, therefore did their sin remain.

22.

But JESUS continued his sermon among the Pharisees insinuating repre-  
 'hensions in his dogmaticall discourses, which like light shined & discovered  
 'error. For by discoursing the properties of a good sheepeheard, and the law-  
 'full way of intromission he proved them to be theives and robbers, because  
 'they refused to enter in by JESUS, who is the door of the sheep; and up-  
 'on the same ground reproved all those false Christs, which before him usur-  
 'ped the title of Messias, and proved his own vocation and office by an argu-  
 'ment, which no other shepherd would use, because he laid down his life for  
 'his sheep: others would take the fleece, and eat the flesh, but none but him  
 'self would die for his sheep; but he would first die, and then gather his sheep  
 'together into one fold, ( intimating the calling of the Gentiles ) to which  
 'purpose he was enabled by his Father to lay down his life, and to take it  
 'up; and had also endeared them to his Father, that they should be pre-  
 'served unto eternal life, and no power shoulde be able to take them out of  
 'his hand, or the hand of his Father; for because JESUS was united to the  
 'Father, the Fathers care preserved the sons flocks.

23.

But the Jews to requite him for his so divine Sermons betook them-  
 selves to their old argument, they took up stones again to cast at him, pre-  
 tending

ending he had blasphemed ; but JESUS proved it to be no blasphemy to call himself the Son of GOD, because they, to whom the Word of GOD came, are in Scripture called Gods. But nothing could satisfie them, whose temporal interest was concerned not consent to such doctrine, which would save their souls by ruining their temporal concernments. But when they sought again to take him, JESUS escaped out of their hands, and went away beyond Jordan, where *John* at first baptized, which gave the people occasion to remember that *John* did no miracle, but this Man does many, and *John* whom all men did revere, and highly account of for his office and sanctity, gave testimony to JESUS, and many believed on him there.

After this, JESUS knowing, that the harvest was great and as yet the labourers had been few, sent out seventy two of his Disciples with the like commission as formerly the 12 Apostles, that they might go before to those places, whither himself meant to come. Of which number were the seven, whom afterwards the Apostles set over the Widows, and *Matthias, Mark*, and some say *Luke, Justus, Barnabas, Apelles, Rufus, Niger, Cephas* not *Peter, Thaddeus, Aristion, & John*. The rest of the names could not be recovered by the best diligence of *Eusebius* and *Epiphanius*. But when they returned from their journey, they rejoiced greatly in the legation and power, and J E S U S also rejoiced in spirit giving glory to G O D, that he had made his revelations to babes, and the more imperfect persons ; like the lowest valleys which receive from heaven the greatest floods of raine and bleslings, and stand thick with corn and flowers, when the mountains are unfruitfull in their height and greatness.

And now a Doctor of the Law came to JESUS, asking him a Question of the greatest consideration, that a wise man could ask or a Prophet answer ? *Master, what shall I do to inherit eternall life ?* JESUS referred him to the Scriptures, and declared the way to heaven to be this only, *to love the Lord with all our powers, and faculties, and our neighbour as our self.* But when the Lawyer being captious made a scruple in a smooth ruffe, asking what is meant by [ neighbour ] J E S U S told him by a parable of a traveller fallen into the hands of robbers, and neglected by a Priest and by a Levite, but relieved by a Samaritane ; that no distance of countrey or religion destroyes the relation of neighbourhood : but every person, with whom we converse in peace and charity is that neighbour, whom we are to love as our selves.

JESUS having departed from Jerusalem, upon the forementioned danger came to a village called Bethany, where *Martha* making great and busie preparation for his entertainment to expresse her joy, and her affections to his person, desired JESUS to dismiss her sister *Mary* from his feet, who sate there feasting her self with the viands and sweetnesse of his doctrine, incurious of the provisions for entertainment ; but Jesus commended her choice, and though he did not expressly disrepute *Martha's* civility, yet he preferred *Mary's* religion and sanctity of affections. In this time (because the night drew on, on which no man could work) JESUS hastened to do his Fathers businesse, and to pour out whole Cataracts of holy lessons like the fruitfull *Nilus* swelling over the banks, and filling all the trenches to make a plenty of corn and fruits, great as the inundation. J E S U S therefore teaches his Disciples that form of prayer the second time, which we call the LORDS prayer, teaches them assiduity and indefatigable

*Epiphan. Pan.*  
*L. 1. tom. I.*  
*Euseb. lib. I.*  
*c. 12.*  
*Papias apud*  
*Euseb. l. 3. c. 33.*

## Part III.

defatigable importunity in prayer, by a parable of an importunate neighbour, borrowing loaves at midnight, and a troublesome widow, who forced an unjust judge to do her right by her clamorous and hourely addresses; encourages them to pray, by consideration of the divine goodness and fatherly affection, far more indulgent to his Sons, then natural Fathers are to their dearest issue; and adds a gracious promise of successe to them that pray. He reproves Pharisaicall ostentation, arms his Disciples against the fear of men and the terrors of persecution, which can arrive but to the incommodities of the body; teaches the fear of G O D , who is L O R D of the whole man, and can accuse the soul as well as punish the body. He refuses to divide the inheritance between two Brethren, as not having competent power to become L O R D in temporall jurisdictions: He preaches against covetousnesse and the placing felicities in worldly possessions, by a parable of a rich man, whose riches were too big for his barnes, and big enough for his soul, and runne over into voluptuousnesse, and stupid complacencies in his perishing goods; he was snatched from their possession and his soul taken from him in the violence of a rapid and hasty sicknesse in the space of one night; Discourses of Divine providence and care over us all, and descending even as low as graffe; he exhorts to alms-deeds, to watchfulness, and preparation against the sudden and unexpected coming of our L O R D to judgement, or by the arrest of death: Tells the offices and sedulity of the Clergy under the apologue of Stewards and Governours of their Lords houses; teaches them gentlenesse and sobriety, and not to do evil upon confidence of their Lords absence and delay, and teaches the people even of themselves to judge, what is right concerning the signes of the coming of the Son of Man. And the end of all these discourses was, that all men should repent, and live good lives, and be saved.

27.

At this sermon there were present some, that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate mingled with their sacrifices. For the Galileans were a sort of people, that taught it to be unlawful to pay tribute to strangers, or to pray for the Romans; and because the Jewes did both, they refused to communicate in their sacred rites, and would sacrifice apart; at which solemnity when Pilate the Roman deputy had apprehended many of them, he caused them all to be slain, making them to die upon the same Altars. These were of the province of Judea, but of the same opinion with thofe, who taught in Galilee, from whence the sect had its appellative. But to the story, J E S U S made reply, that these externall accidents, though they be sad and calamitous, yet they are no arguments of condemnation against the persons of the men to convince them of a greater guilt then others, upon whom no such visible signatures have been imprinted. The purpose of such chances is, that we should repent, least we perish in the like judgement.

28.

About this time a certain Ruler of a synagogue renewed the old Question about the observation of the Sabbath, repining at J E S U S that he cured a woman that was crooked, loosing her from her infirmity, with which she had been afflicted eighteen yeers. But J E S U S made the man ashamed by an argument from their own practise, who themselves loose an ox from the stall on the Sabbath, and lead him to watering: And by the same argument.

giment he also stopt the mouths of the scribes and Pharisees, which were open upon him for curing an hydroptic person upon the Sabbath. For JESUS, that he might draw off and separate Christianity from the yoke of ceremonies by abolishing and taking off the strictest Mosaicall rites, chose to do very many of his miracles upon the Sabbath, that he might do the work of abrogation and institution both at once; not much unlike the sabbatical pool in Judæa, which was dry six dayes, but gushed out in a full stream upon the Sabbath: For though upon all dayes CHRIST was operative and miraculous, yet many reasons did concurre and determine him to a more frequent working upon those dayes of publike ceremony and convention. But going forth from thence he went up and down the cities of Galilee, reenforcing the same doctrine he had formerly taught them, and daily adding new precepts, and cautions and prudent insinuations: advertising 'of the multitudes of them that perish, and the paucity of them that shall be saved, and that we should strive to enter in at the straight gate; that the way to destruction is broad and plausible, the way to heaven nice and austere, and few there be that finde it: teaches them modesty at feasts, and entertainments of the poor: discourses of the many excuses and unwillingnes of persons, who were invited to the feast of the kingdom, the refreshments of the Gospel; and tacitly insinuates the rejection of the Jewes, who were the first invited, and the calling of the Gentiles, who were the persons called in from the high wayes and hedges; he reprehends Herod for his subtily and designe to kill him, prophefyes that he should die at Jerusalem, and intimates great sadnesses future to them for neglecting this their day of visitation, and for killing the prophets, and the Messengers sent from G O D.

It now grew towards winter, and the Jewes feast of dedication was at hand, therefore JESUS went up to Jerusalem to the feast, where he preached in Solomons porch, which part of the temple stood intire from the first ruines: and the end of his sermon was, that the Jews had like to have stoned him. But retiring from thence he went beyond Jordan, where, he taught the people in a most elegant and perfwasive parable concerning 'the mercy of G O D in accepting penitents, in the parable of the prodigall son returning; discourses of the designe of the Messias coming into the world to recover erring persons from their sin and danger in the apolouges of the lost sheep, and goat. And under the representment of an unjust but prudent steward, he taught us so to employ our present opportunities and estates by laying them out in acts of mercy and Religion, that when our souls shall be dismissed from the stewardship and custody of our body, we may be entertained in everlasting habitations; he instructeth the Pharisees in the questions of divorces, limiting the permissions of separations to the only cause of fornication: preferreth holy celabrate before the estate of marriage in them, to whom the gift of continency is given in order to the kingdom of Heaven: telleth a story or a parable (for which, is uncertain) of a rich Man (whom *Euthimus* out of the tradition of the Hebrews nameth *Nymensis*) and *Lazarus*: the first a voluptuous person and uncharitable; the other pious, afflicted, sick, and a beggar; the first dyed, and went to Hell, the second to Abrahams bosome, G O D so ordering the dispensation of good things, that we cannot easily enjoy two Heavens, nor shall the infelicities of our lives (if we be pious) end otherwise then

*Joseph de Belli  
Jud. l.7. c.24.*

29.

Part III.

'in a beatified condition: the Epilogue of which story discovered this trath  
'also, that the ordinary means of salvation are the expresse revelations of  
'Scripture, and the ministeries of GODS appointment; and whosoever  
'neglects these shall not be supplyed with means extraordnary, or if he  
'were, they would be totally ineffectual.

30.

And still the people drew water from the fountains of our Saviour, which  
streamed out in a full and continual emanation. For adding wave to wave,  
line to line, precept upon precept, he reproved the fastidiousnesse of the  
'Pharisee, that came with Eucharist to GOD and contempt to his Brother,  
'and commended the humility of the Publicans addresse, who came de-  
ploring his sins; and with modesty and penance, and importunity begged  
'and obtained a mercy. Then he laid hands upon certain young children,  
'and gives them benediction, charging his Apostles to admit infants to him,  
'because to them in person, and to such in embleme and signification the  
'kingdome of heaven does appertaine. He instructs a young man in the  
'wayes and counsels of perfection, besides the observation of precepts, by  
'heroicall renunciations and acts of munificent charity; which discourse,  
because it alighted upon an indisposed, and an infortunate subject (for the  
young man was very rich) JESUS discourses how hard it is for a rich man  
to be saved; but he expounds himselfe to meane, *they that trust in riches;*  
'and however, it is a matter of so great temptation, that it is almost impos-  
sible to escape, yet with God nothing is impossible. But when the Apostles  
heard the master bidding the young man sell all and give to the poore  
and follow him, and for his reward promised him a heavenly treasure; Peter in  
the name of the rest began to thinke, that this was their case, and the pro-  
mise also might concerne them; bnt they asked the Question what shall  
we have, who have forsaken all and followed thee? JESUS answered, that  
they should sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

31.

And JESUS extended this mercy to every Disciple, that should forsake,  
either house or wife or children, or any thing for his sake and the Gospels,  
and that they should receive a hundred fold in this life] by way of comfort  
and equivalency, [and in the world to come] thousands of glories and pos-  
sessions in fruition, and redundancy. For *they, that are last shall be first,*  
*and the first shall be last:* and the despised people of this world shall reign like  
kings, and contempt is selfe shall swell up into glory, and poverty into an  
eternall satisfaction. And these rewards shall not be accounted according  
to the priviledges of nations, or priority of vocation, but readineſſe of mind,  
and obedience, and sedulity of operation after calling, which J E S U S  
taught his Disciples in the parable of the labourers in the vineyard, to  
whom the Master gave the same reward, though the times of their working  
were different; as their calling and imployment had determined the  
opportunity of their labours.

Disc. 16.



## Discourse 16.

### Of SCANDAL, or giving and taking offence.

*Ad. man. 3.*

**A**sad curse being threatned in the Gospel to them, who offend any of CHRIST'S little ones, that is, such as are novices and babes in Christianity, it concerns us to learn our duty and perform it, that we may avoid the curse; for, *wo to all them, by whom offences come.* And although the duty is so plainly explicated and represented in glosse and case by the severall commentaries of S. Paul upon this menace of our blessed SAVIOUR, yet because our English word [offence] which is commonly used in this Question of scandal, is so large and equivocall, that it hath made many pretences, and intricated this article to some inconvenience, it is not without good purpose to draw into one body those propositions, which the Masters of spirituall life have described in the managing this Question.

1. By whatsoever we do our duty to GOD we cannot directly do offence, or give scandall to our Brother; because in such cases where GOD hath obliged us, he hath also obliged himself to reconcile our duty to the designs of GOD, to the utility of souls, and the ends of charity. And this proposition is to be extended to our obedience to the lawfull constitutions of our competenter Superiours, in which cases we are to look upon the commandment, and leave the accidentall events to the disposition of that providence, who reconciles dissonancies in nature, and concentres all the variety of accidents into his own glory. And whosoeuer is offended at me for obeying GOD or GODS vicegerent is offended at me for doing my duty, and in this there is no mire dispute, but whether I shall displease GOD, or my peevish neighbour. These are such whom the spirit of GOD complains of under other representements; They think it strange we run not into the same excesse of riot: Their eye is evill, because their Masters eye is good: and the abounding of GODS grace also may become to them an occasion of falling, and the long-suffering of GOD, the encouragement to sin. In this there is no difficulty: for in what case soever we are bound to obey GOD or Man, in that case and in that conjunction of circumstances, we have nothing permitted to our choice, and have no authority to remitt of the right of GOD or our Superior. And to comply with our neighbour in such Questions, besides that it cannot serve any purposes of piety, if it declines from duty in any

*Matth. 18. 7.*

*Rom. 14.*

*I. Cor 8.*

*Galat. 2.*

21

## Part III.

instance, it is like giving alms out of the portion of **Orphanes**, or building hospitals with the money and spoils of sacrilege. It is pusillanimity, or hypocrisy, or a denying to confess **C H R I S T** before men to comply with any man, and to offend **G O D**, or omit a duty. Whatsoever is necessary to be done, and is made so by **GOD**, no weaknesse or peevishnesse of man can make necessary not to be done. For the matter of scandall is a duty beneath the prime obligations of religion.

3. 2. But every thing, which is used in religion is not matter of precise duty, but there are somethings, which indeed are pious and religious, but dispensable, voluntary, and commutable ; such as are voluntary fasts, exterior acts of discipline, and mortification not enjoyed ; great degrees of exterior worship, prostration, long prayers, vigils ; and in these things although there is not directly a matter of scandal, yet there may be some prudential considerations in order to charity and edification. By pious actions, I mean ; either particular pursuances of a generall duty, which are uncommanded in the instance, such as are the minutes and expresses of alms ; or else they are *commended*, but in the whole kinde of them unenjoyed, such as Divines call the counsels of perfection. In both these cases a man cannot be scandalous. For the man doing in charity, and the love of **G O D** such actions which are aptly exprefive of love, the man ( I say ) is not uncharitable in his purposes ; and the actions themselves being either attempts or proceedings toward perfection, or else actions of direct duty are as innocent in their productions, as in themselves. And therefore without the malice of the recipient cannot induce him into sin ; and nothing else is scandal. To do any pious act proceeds from the spirit of **G O D**, and to give scandal from the spirit of malice, or indiscretion ; and therfore a pious action, whose fountain is love and wisdom, cannot end in uncharitableness or imprudence. But because when any man is offended, at what I esteem piety, there is a question, whether the action be pious or no ; therefore it concerns him that works to take care, that his action be either an act of duty, though not determined to a certain particular, or else be something counselled in scripture, or practised by a holy person there recorded, and no where reproved, or a practise warranted by such precedents, which modest, prudent, and religious persons account a sufficient inducement of such particulars : for he that procedes upon such principles derives the warrant of his actions from beginnings, which secure the particular and quits the scandall.

4. This I say is a security against the uncharitableness and *the sin of scandal* ; Because a zeal of doing pious actions is a zeal according to **GOD** : but it is not always a security against the *indiscretion of the scandal*. He that reproves a foolish person in such circumstances, that provoke him or make him impudent or blasphemous, did not give scandal, and brought no sinne upon himself, though he occasioned it in the other. But if it was probable such effects would be consequent to the reprehension, his zeal was imprudent and rash, but so long as it was zeal for **G O D**, and in its own matter lawfull, it could not be an active or guilty scandal ; but if it be no zeal and be a designe to entrap a mans unwariness or passion or shame, and to disgrace the man, by that means or any other to make him sin, then it is directly the offending of our Brother. They that preache

preacht CHRIST out of envy intended to do offence to the Apostles, but because they were impregnable, the sin rested in their own bosome, and GOD wrought his own ends by it. And in this sense they are scandalous persons, who fast for strife, who pray for rebellion, who intice simple persons into the snare by colours of Religion. Those very exteriour acts of piety become an offence, because they are done to evil purposes, to abuse Profelytes, and to draw away Disciples after them, and make them love the sin, and march under so splendid and fair colours. They who out of strictnesse and severity of perswasion represent the conditions of the Gospel alike to every person, that is, nicer then CHRIST described them in all circumstances, and deny such liberties of exteriour desires and complacency, which may be reasonably permitted to some Men, do very indiscreetly, and may occasion the alienation of some Mens mindes from the entertainments of Religion; but this being accidental to the thing it self, and to the purpose of the Man is not the *sin of scandal*, but it is the *indiscretion of scandal*, if by such means he divorces any Mans minde from the cohabitation and unions of Religion: and yet if the purpose of the Man be to affright weaker and unwise persons, it is a direct scandal, and one of those wayes which the Devil uses toward the peopling of his kingdom, it is a plain laying of a snare to entrap feeble and uninstructed soules.

But if the pious action have been formerly joyn'd with any thing that is truly criminal, with idolatry, with superstition, with impious customes, or impure rites, and by retaining the piety, I give cause to my weak brother to think I approve of the old appendage, and by my reputation invite him to swallow the whole action without discerning, the case is altered; I am to omit that pious action, if it be not under command, until I have acquitted it from the suspicion of evil company. But when I have done, what in prudence I guesse sufficient to thaw the frost of jealouſie, and to separate those diſſonançies, which formerly seemed united, I have done my duty of charity by endeavouring to free my brother from the snare, and I have done what in Christian prudence I was obliged, when I have protested against the appendant crime; if afterwards the same person shall entertain the crime upon pretence of my example, who have plainly disfavoured it: he layes the snare for himself, and is glad of the pretence, or will in spite enter into the net, that he might think it reasonable to rail at me. I may not with Christian charity or prudence wear the \* picture of our blessed LORD in rings or medals, though with great affection and designes of doing him all the honour that I can, if by such pictures I invite persons, apt, more to follow me then to understand me, to give divine honour to a picture; but when I have declared my hatred of superstitious worshippings, and given my brother warning of the snare, which his own mistake, or the Devils malice was preparing for him, I may then without danger signifie my piety and affections in any civil representments, which are not against G O D S law, or the customes of the Church, or the analogy of Faith. And there needs no other reason to be given for this rule, then that there is no reason to be given against it; if the nature of the thing be innocent, and the purpose of the Man be pious, and he hath used his moral industry to secure his brother against accidental mischances, and abuse; his duty in this particular can have no more parts and instances.

But it is too crude an assertion to affirm indefinitely that whatsoever hath

\* E, Ιανουαριον  
της ειναι μη  
ωρεισθι. Dicit  
um proverbia  
liter, contra  
leves & ina  
enes ceremonias  
civilis & po  
pularis religio  
nis.

## Part III.

been abused to evil or superstitious purposes must presently be abjured, and never entertained, for fear of scandal; for it is certain that the best things have been most abused; have not some persons used certain verses of the Psalter as an antidote against the tooth-ach? and carried the blessed Sacrament in pendants about their necks as a charm to countermand Witches, & S. Johns Gospel as a spel against wilde beasts and wilder untamed spirits? Confession of sins to the Ministers of Religion hath been made an instrument to serve base ends; and so indeed hath all Religion been abused; and some persons have been so receptive of scandal, that they suspected all Religion to be a meer stratagem, because they have observed very many Men have used it so. For some natures are like Spunges, or Sugar, whose utmost verge if you dip in wine, it drowns it self by the moisture it sucks up, and is drenched all over, receiving its dissolution from within; its own nature did the mischief, and plucks on its own dissolution. And these Men are greedy to receive a scandal, & when it is presented but in small instances they suck it up to the dissolution of their whole religion, being glad of a quarrel, that their impieties may not want all excuse. But yet it is certainly very unreasonable to reject excellent things because they have been abused; as if separable accidents had altered natures & essences, or that they resolve never to forgive the duties for having once fallen into the hands of unskilful or malicious persons. *Hezekiah* took away the brazen Serpent, because the people abused it to idolatry; but the Serpent had long before lost its use; and yet if the people had not been a peevish and refractory & superstitious people, in whose nature it was to take all occasions of superstition; & further yet, if the taking away such occasions and opportunities of that sin in special had not been most agreeable with the designes of G O D in forbidding to the people the common use of all images, in the second Commandment, which was given them after the erection of that brazen statue; *Hezekiah* possibly would not, or at least, had not been bound to have destroyed that monument of an old story & a great blessing, but have sought to separate the abuse from the minds of Men, and retain'd the image. But in Christianity, when none of these circumstances occur, where by the greatness & plenty of revelations we are more fully instructed in the wayes of duty, & when the thing it self is pious, and the abuse very separable, it is infinite disparagement to us, or to our Religion, either that our Religion is not sufficient to cure an abuse, or that we will never part with it, but we must unpardonably reject a good, because it had once upon it a crust or spot of leprosie, though since it hath been washed in the waters of Reformation. The Primitive Christians abstain'd from actions of themselves indifferent, which the unconverted people used, if those actions were symbolical, or adopted into false religions, or not well understood by those they were bound to satisfie: But when they had walsched off the accrefcences of Gentile superstition, they chose such rites, which their neighbours used, and had designes not imprudent or unhandfome; and they were glad of a Heathen Temple to celebrate the Christian rites in them, and they made no other change, but that they ejected the Devil, and invited their LORD into the possession.

3. In things merely indiferent, whose practise is not limited by command, nor their nature heightned by any appendant piety, we must use our liberty so as may not offend our Brother, or lead him into a sin directly or indirectly. For scandal being directly against charity, it is to be avoided in

the same measure, and by the same proportions, in which charity is to be pursued. Now we must so use our selves, that we must cut off a foot, or pluck out an eye rather then the one should bear us and the other lead us to sin and death ; we must rather rescind all the naturall and sensuall or deerest invitation to vice, and deny our selves lawfull things, then that lawful things should betray us to unlawfull actions. And this rule is the meaure of charity : our neighbours soul ought to be dearer unto us then any temporal priviledge. It is lawful for me to eat herbs, or fish, and to observe an aseetic diet ; But if by such austeries I lead others to a good opinion of Montanism, or the practises of Pythagoras, or to beleeve flesh to be impure, I must rather alter my dyet, then teach him to sin by mistaking me. S. Paul gave an instance of eating flesh sold in the shambles from the idol temples ; to eat it in the relation of an Idol sacrifice, is a great sin ; but when it is sold in the shambles the property is altered to them that understand it so. But yet even this Paul would not do, if by so doing he should encourage undiscerning people to eat all meat conveyed from the temple, and offered to Devils. It is not in every Mans head to distinguish formalities, & to make abstractions of purpose from exteriour acts, and to alter their devotions by new relations and respects depending upon intellectual and Metaphysical notions. And therefore it is not safe to do an action, which is not lawful, but after the making distinctions, before ignorant & weaker persons, who swallow down the bone and the box that carries it, and never pare their apple, or take the core out. If I by the law of charity must rather quit my own goods, then suffer my brother to perish, much rather must I quit my priviledge, & those superstructures of favour and grace, which Christ hath given me beyond my necessities, then wound the spirit, and destroy the soul of a weak Man, for whom Christ died ; It is an inordinate affection to love my own ease, and circumstances of pleasure before the soul of a brother ; & such a thing are the priviledges of Christian liberty ; for Christ hath taken off from us the restraints, which God had laid upon the Jews in meat and Holydays ; but these are but circumstances of grace given us for opportunities, & cheap instances of charity ; we should ill die for our brother, who will not lose a meal to prevent his sin, or change a dish to save his soul. And if the thing be indifferent to us, yet it ought not to be indifferent to us, whether our brother live or dye.

4. And yet we must not to please peevish or froward people betray our liberty, which Christ hath given us. If any man opposes the lawfullnesse, and licence of indifferent actions, or be disturbed at my using my priviledges innocently ; In the first case I am bound to use them still ; In the second I am not bound to quit them to please him. For in the first instance he, that shall cease to use his liberty to please him, that sayes his liberty is unlawfull, encourages him that sayes so, in his false opinion, and by complying with him gives the scandal ; And he, who is angry with me for making use of it, is a person that, it may be, is crept in to spy out and invade my liberty, but not apt to be reduc'd into sin by that act of mine, which he detests, for which he despises me, and so makes my person unapt to be exemplar to him ; to be angry with me for doing what CHRIST hath allowed me, and which is part of the liberty he purchased for me, when he took upon himself the form of a servant, is to judge me, and to be uncharitable to me ; and he that does so is before hand with me, and upon the active part ; he does the scandal to me, and by offering to deprive me of my liberty he makes my way to heaven narrower, and more encombed, than CHRIST left.

Part III.

left it, and so places a stumbling stone in my way ; I put none in his. And if such peevishnesse and discontent of a Brother engages me to a new and unimposed yoke , then it were in the power of my enemy , or malevolent person to make me never to keep festivall, or never to observe any private fast, never to be prostrate at my prayers, nor to do any thing but according to his leave ; and his humour shall become the rule of my actions, and then my charity to him shall be the greatest uncharitableness in the world to my self ; and his liberty shall be my bondage. Adde to this, that such complying, and obeying the peevishnesse of discontented persons is to no end of charity ; for beside that such concessions never satisfie persons, who are unreasonably angry , because by the same reason they may demand more, as they ask this for which they had no reason at all, it also encourages them to be peevish and gives fuel to the passion, and feeds the wolf, and so encourages the sin, and prevents none.

5. For he onely gives scandal , who induces his Brother directly or collaterally into sin, as appears by all the discourses in scripture guiding us in this duty ; and it is called, *laying a stumbling block in our Brothers way*, a wounding the Conscience of our weak Brother. Thus Balaam was said to lay a scandal before the sons of Israel by tempting them to fornication with the daughters of Moab . Every ill example, or imprudent, sinfull , and unwary deportment is a scandal, because it invites others to do the like , leading them by the hand, taking off the strangenesse and insolency of the act, which deterres many men from entertaining it ; and it gives some offers of security to others , that they shall escape as we have done ; besides that it is in the nature of all agents naturall and morall to assimilate either by proper efficiency , or by counsell and merall invitements others to themselves. But this is a direct scandal ; and such it is to give money to an idle person, who you know will be drunk with it : or to invite an intemperate person to an opportunity of excesse, who desires it alwayes , but without thee wants it. Indirectly and accidentally , but very criminally they give scandal, who introduce persons into a state of life , from whence probably they passe into a state of sin ; so did the Israelites, who married their daughters to the Idolatrous Moabites , and so do they, who intrust a pupill to a vicious Guardian. For although GOD can preserve children in the midst of flames without scorching, yet if they finde their hair, or scorch their flesh, they that put them in, are guilty of the burning. And yet further : if persons so exposed to danger should escape by miracle ; yet they escape not, who expose them to the danger. They who threw the children of the captivity into the furnace were burnt to death, though the children were not hurt ; and the very offering a person in our trust to a certain or probable danger foreseen and understood, is a likely way to passe sin upon the person so expos'd , but a certain way to contract it in our selves ; it is directly against charity, for no man loves a soul, unlesse he loves its safety ; and he cares not to have his childe safe, that throws him into the fire. Hither are to be reduced all false doctrines aptly productive of evil life ; the doctrines are scandalous , and the men guilty , if they understand the consequents of their own propositions : or if they think it probable that persons will be led by such doctrines into evil periusions , though themselves beleive them not to be necessary products of their opinions, yet the very publishing such opinions, which (of themselves not being necessary or otherwise very profitable ) are apt

*1 Cor. 8.10.12 Rom. 14.21. Math. 5.29. & 13.57. Mark 14.27. & 6.3. & 4. 17. Luke 7.23. John 16.1.*

apt to be understood, by weak persons at least, to ill ends, is against charity, and the duty we owe to our Brothers soul.

¶ 6. It is not necessary for ever to abstain from things indifferent to prevent the offending of a brother, but onely till I have taken away that rock, against which some did stumble, or have done my endeavour to remove it. In Questions of religion it is lawfull to use primitive and ancient words, at which men have been weakened and seem to stumble, when the objection is clear'd, and the ill consequents and suspicion disavowed, & it may be of good use, charity, & edification to speak the language of the purest ages, although that some words were used also in the impurest ages, and descended along upon changing, and declining articles; when it is rightly explicated in what sense the best men did innocently use them, and the same sense be now protested. But in this case it concerns prudence to see that the benefit be greater then the danger. And the same also is to be said concerning all the actions & parts of Christian liberty. For if after I have removed the unevenness & objection of the accident, that is, if when I have explained my disfavour to the crime, which might possibly be gathered up & taken into practise by my misunderstood example, still any Man will stumble and fall, it is a resolution to fall, a love of danger, a peevishnesse of spirit, a voluntary misunderstanding; it is not a misery in the Man more, then it is his own fault: and when ever the cause of any sin becomes criminal to the Man that sins, it is certain that if the other, who was made the occasion, did disavow and protest against the crime, the Man that sins, is the onely guilty person both in the effect and cause too; for the other could do no more but use a moral and prudent industry to prevent a being mis-interpreted; and if he were tyed to more, he must quit his interest for ever in a perpetual scruple; and it is like taking away all laws to prevent disobedience, and making all even to secure the World against the effects of pride or stubbornnesse. I adde to this, that since actions indifferent in their own natures are not productive of effects and actions criminal, it is meerly by accident, that Men are abused into a sin, that is, by weaknesse, by misconceit, by something that either discovers malice or indiscretion, which because the act it self does not of it self, if the Man does not voluntarily or by intention, the sin dwells no where but with the Man that entertains it; the Man is no longer weak then he is mistaken, and he is not mistaken or abused into the sin by example of any Man who hath rightly stated his own question, and divorc'd the superstition of the sin from his action; whatsoever comes after this is not weaknesse of understanding, but strength of passion; and he that is alwayes learning, and never comes to the knowledge of the truth, is something besides a silly Man; Men cannot be alwayes babes in CHRIST without their own fault; they are no longer CHRIST'S little ones, then they are inculpably ignorant. For it is but a mantle cast over pride and fowardnesse to think our selves able to teach others, and yet pretend offence and scandal; to scorn to be instructed, and yet complain that we are offended, and lead into sin for want of knowldg of our duty. He that understands his duty, is not a person capable of scandal by things indifferent. And it is certain, that no man can say concerning himself, that he is scandaliz'd atanother, that is, that he is lead into sin by mistake and weaknesse; for if himself knowes it, the mistake is gone; well may the guides of their souls complain concerning such persons, that their sin is procured by offending persons or actions,

*A dōcēre tū mī.  
st. 1 Cor. 8.*

12.

but

## Part III.

but he that complains concerning himself to the same purpose pretends ignorance for other ends and contradicts himself by his complaint and knowledge of his error. The boy was prettily peevish, who when his Father bid him pronounce *Thalassius*, told him he could not pronounce *Thalassius*; at the same time speaking the word: just so importint, weak, and undiscerning a person is that, who would forbid me to do an indifferent action upon pretence, that it makes him ignorantly sin, for his saying so confutes his ignorance, and argues him of a worse folly; it is like asking my neighbour, whether such an action be done against mine own will?

II.

*Galat. 2.  
2,3,4, &c.*

7. When an action is apt to be mistaken to contrary purposes, it concerns the prudence and charity of a Christian to use such compliance as best cooperates to Gods glory, and hath in it the lese danger. The Apostles gave an instance in the matter of circumcision, in which they walked warily, and with variety of designe, that they might invite the Gentiles to the easie yoke of Christianity, and yet not deterre the Jew by a disrepect of the Law of *Moses*. And therefore Saint *Paul* circumcised *Timothy*, because he was among the Jews and descended from a Jewish parent, and in the instance gave sentence in compliance with the Jewish persuasion; because *Timothy* might well be accounted for a Jew by birth; unto them the rites of *Moses* were for a while permitted; but when *Titus* was brought upon the scene of a mixt assembly, and was no Jew, but a Greek, to whom *Paul* had taught, they ought not to be circumcised: although some Jews watched, what he would do, yet he plainly refused to circumcise him, choosing rather to leave the Jews angry, than the Gentiles scandalized or lead into an opinion, that circumcision was necessary; or that he had taught them otherwise out of collaterall ends, or that now he did so. But when a case of Christian liberty happened to Saint *Peter*, he was not so prudent in his choice, but at the coming of certain Jews from Jerusalem, withdrew himself from the society of the Gentiles, not considering, that it was worse, if the Gentiles, who were invited to Christianity by the sweetnesse of its liberty and compliance, should fall back, when they that taught them the excellency of Christian liberty durst not stand to it, then if those Jews were displeased at Christianity for admitting Gentiles into its communion after they had been instructed, that G O D had broken down the partition wall; and made them one sheepfold. It was of greater concernment to G O D S glory to gain the Gentiles, then to retain the Jews; and yet if it had not, the Apostles were bound to bende to the inclinations of the weaker, rather then be mastered by the wilfullnesse of the stranger, who had been sufficiently instructed in the articles of Christian liberty, and the adopting the Gentiles into the family of G O D. Thus if it be a Quastion whether I should abate any thing of my externall religion or ceremonies to satisfie a heretick or a contentious person, who pretends scandal to himself, and is indeed of another persuasion; and at the same time I know that good persons would be weakeued at such forbearance and estranged from the good persuasion and charity of communion, which is part of their duty, it more concernes charity, and the glory of G O D, that I secure the right than twine about the wrong, wilfull and malicious persons; A Prelate must rather fortifie and encourage obedience, and strengthen discipline, than by remissenesse toward refractory spirits, and a desire not so seeme severe, weaken

weaken the hands of conscientious persons by taking away the marks of difference between them that obey, and them that obey not ; and in all cases when the question is between a Friend to be secured from Apostasie, or an Enemy to be gained from indifferency, S. Pauls rule is to be observed ; *Do good to all, but especially to the household of faith.* When the Church in a particular instance cannot be kinde to both, she must first love her own Children.

8. But when the question is between pleasing and contenting the fancies of a Friend, and the gaining of an Enemy, the greater good of the Enemy is infinitely to be preferred before the satisfying the unnecessary humour of the Friend ; and therefore that we may gain persons of a differing Religion, it is lawful to entertain them in their innocent customes, that we may represent our selves charitable, and just, apt to comply in what we can, and yet for no end complying further then we are permitted. It was a policy of the Devil to abuse Christians to the rites of Mithra, by imitating the Christian ceremonies ; and the Christians themselves were beforehand with him in that policy ; for they facilitated the reconciliation of Judaisme with Christianity by common rites , and invited the Gentiles to the Christian Churches, because they never violated the Heathen Temples, but loved the Men, and imitated their innocent rites, and onely offered to reform their erreurs, and hallow their abused purposes ; and this, if it had no other contradictory , or unhandsome circumstance, gave no offence to other Christians, when they had learn'd to trust them with the government of Ecclesiastical affairs, to whom GOD had committed them, and they all had the same parposes of Religion and Charity. And when there is no objection against this, but the furies or greater heats of a mistaken zeal; the complyance with evil or unbelieving persons to gain them from their errors to the wayes of truth and security is great prudence and great charity ; because it chooses and acts a greater good at no other charge or expence but the discomposing of an intemperate zeal.

9. We are not bound to intermit a good, or a lawfull action, assoon as as any man tells us it is scandalous , for that may be an easie stratagem to give me laws, and destroy my liberty : But either , when the actionis of it self, or by reason of a publike known indisposition of some persons probably introductory of a sin ; or when we know, it is so in fact. The other is but affrighting a Man ; this onely is prudent , that my charity be guided by such rules, which determine wise men to actions or omissions respectively. And therefore a light fame is not strong enough to wrest my liberty from me, but a reasonable belief , or a certain knowledge ; in the taking of which estimate we must neither be too credulous and easie, nor yet ungentle and stubborn; but do according to the actions of wise men, and the charities of a Christian. Hither we may refer the rules of abstaining from things which are of evil report. For not every thing , which is of good report, is to be followed, for then a false opinion, when it is become popular must be professed for conscience sake ; nor yet every thing that is of bad report, is to be avoided, for nothing endured more shame and obloquy then Christianity at its first commencement. But by [good report] we are to understand such things, which are well reported of by good men and wise men ; or Scripture ; or the consent of nations

## Part III.

nations; and thus for a woman to marry within the yeer of mourning is scandalous, because it is of evil report, gives suspicition of lightnesse or some worse confederacy before the death of her husband. The thing it self is apt to minister the suspicition, and such we are bound to prevent; and unlefe the suspicition be malicious, or imprudent and unreasonable, we must conceal our actions from the surprises and deprehensions of suspicition. It was scandalous amongst the old Romanes not to marry; among the Christians for a Clergy man to marry twice, because it was against an Apostolicall canon; but when it became of ill report for any Christian to marry the second time, because this evill report was begun by the errors of *Montanus* and is against a permission of holy Scripture, no lay Christian was bound to abstaine from a second bed, for fear of giving scandall.

14.

10. The precept of avoiding scandal concerns the Governours of the Church or state in the making and execution of laws. For no law in things indifferent ought to be made to the provocation of the subject, or against that publike disposition, which is in the spirits of men, and will certainly cause perpetuall irregularities and schismes. Before the Law be made the superiour must comply with the subject; after it is made the subject must comply with the Law; but in this, the Church hath made fair provision, accounting no lawes obligatory, till the people have accepted them, and given tacite approbation; for Ecclesiasticall Canons have their time of probation, and if they become a burden to the people, or occasion Schisms, Tumults, publick disunion of affections and jealousies against authority, the lawes give place, and either fix nor, when they are not first approved, or disappear by desuetude. And in the execution of laws no lesse care is to be taken; for many cases occur in which the laws can be rescued from being a snare to Mens consciences by no other way, but by dispensation, and slacking of the discipline as to certain particulars. Mercy and Sacrifice, the Letter and the Spirit, the words and the intention, the general case and the particular exception, the present disposition, and the former state of things are oftentimes so repugnant, and of such contradictory interests, that there is no stumbling-block more troublesome or dangerous then a severe literall and rigorous exacting of lawes in all cases. But when stubbornnesse or a contentious spirit, when rebellion and pride, when secular interest or ease and licentiousnesse set Men up against the lawes, the lawes then are upon the defensive, and ought not to give place; it is ill to cure particular disobedience by removing a constitution decreed by publick wisdom for a general good. When the evil occasioned by the law is greater then the good designed, or then the good which will come by it in the present constitution of things, and the evil can by no other remedy be healed, it concerns the Lawgivers charity to take off such positive constitutions, which in the authority is meerly humane, and in the matter indifferent, and evil in the event. The sum of this whole duty I shall choose to represent in the words of an excellent person, *S. Jerome*: We must for the avoiding of Scandal quit "every thing which may be omitted without prejudice to the threefold "truth of life, of justice, and doctrine; meaning, that what is not expressly commanded by GOD, or our superiours, or what is not ex-

presley commended as an act of piety and perfection, or what is not an obligation of justice, that is, in which the interest of a third person, or else our own Christian liberty is not totally concernd, all that is to be given in sacrifice to mercy and to be made matter of edification and charity: but not of scandal, that is of danger and sin and falling, to our neighbour.



## The Prayer.

O Eternall JESUS, who art made unto us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption, give us of thy abundant charity, that we may love the eternall benefit of our Brothers soul with a true, diligent and affectionate care and tenderesse: Give us a fellow-feeling of one anothers calamities, a readinesse to bear each others burdens, aptnesse to forbear, wisdom to advise, counsell to direct, and a spirit of meekenesse and modesty trembling at our infirmities, fearfull in our Brothers dangers, and joyfull in his restitution and securities. Lord, let all our actions be pious and prudent, our selves wise as serpents, and innocent as Doves, and our whole life exemplary and just and charitable, that we may like lamps shining in thy temple serve thee and enlighten others and guide them to thy sanctuary, and that shining cleerly and burning zealously, when the Bridegroom shall come to bind up his jewels, and beautifie his Spouse, and gather his Saints together, we and all thy Christian people knitt in a holy fellowship may enter into the joy of our Lord, and partake of the eternall refreshments of the kingdom of light and glory, where thou O holy and eternall JESU, livest and reignest in the excellencies of a kingdom, and the infinite durations of eternity. Amen.

Discourse



## Discourse XVII.

*Ad Num. 21.  
¶ 27.*

*Of the causes and manner of the  
Divine judgements.*

Πάντες δέ οὐδε-  
ναλόν ἀφαίνει τὸν  
αἰθρόποτον.  
*Selon,*



GODS judgements are like the writing upon the wall, which was a missive of anger from GOD upon Belshazzar, it came upon an errand of revenge, and yet was writ in so dark characters, that none could read it but a Prophet. When ever GOD speaks from heaven, he would have us to understand his meaning; and if he declares not his sense in particular signification yet we understand his meaning well enough, if every voice of GOD lead us to repentance. Every sad accident is directed against sin, either to prevent it or to cure it; to glorifie GOD, or to humble us; to make us go forth of our selves, and to rest upon the centre of all felicities, that we may derive help from the same hand, that smote us. Sin and punishment are so neer relatives, that when GOD had marked any person with a sadnessse, or unhandsome accident, men think it warrant enough for their uncharitable censures and condemn the man, whom GOD hath smitten, making GOD the executioner of our uncertain or ungentle sentences. *Whether sinned this man or his parents, that he was born blind?* said the pharisees to our blessed Lord: *Neither this man, nor his parents,* was the answer; meaning, that GOD had other ends in that accident to serve; and it was not an effect of wrath, but a designe of mercy both directly and collaterally. Gods glory must be seen clearly by occasion of the curing the blinde man. But in the present case the answer was something different. Pilate slew the Galileans, when they were sacrificing in their conventicles apart from the Jews. For they first had separated from obedience, and paying tribute to Cesar, and then from the Church, who disavowed their mutinous and discontented doctrines. The cause of the one and the other are linked in mutuall complications and endeernment, and he who despises the one will quickly disobey the other. Presently upon the report of this sad accident the people run to the judgement seat, and every man was ready to be accuser and witnessse and judge upon these poor destroyed people; but JESUS allaias their heat, and though he would by no means acquit these persons from deserving death for their denying tribute to Cesar, yet he alters the face of the tribunal, & makes those persons, who were so apt to be accusers and judges, to act another part, even of guilty persons too, that since they will needs be judging, they might judge themselves, for [think not these were greater sinners, than all the other Galileans, because they suffered such things. I tell you nay but except ye repent ye shall all likewise perish;] meaning, that although there was great probability to beleve such persons, schismaticks (I mean) and rebels, to be the greatest

*Luke 13. 2.*

greatest sinners of the World, yet themselves who had desigues to destroy the Son of GOD, had deserved as great damnation. And yet it is observable, that the holy J E S U S onely compared the sins of them that suffered with the estate of the other Galileans, who suffered not; and that also applices it to the persons present who told the news, to consigne this truth unto us, that when persons confederate in the same crimes are spared from a present judgement falling upon others of their own society, it is indeed a strong alarm to all to secure themselves by repentance against the hostilities and eruptions of sin; but yet it is no exemption or <sup>\*</sup> security to them that escape to beleieve themselves persons less sinful; for GOD sometimes decimates or tithes delinquent persons, and they dye for a common crime according as GOD hath cast their lot in the decrees of predestination; and either they that remain are sealed up to a worse calamity, or left within the reserves and mercies of repentance; for in this there is some variety of determination and undiscerned providence.

The purpose of our blessed SAVIOUR is of great use to us in all the traverses and changes, and especially the sad and calamitous accidents of the World. But in the misfortune of others we are to make other discourses concerning Divine judgments, then when the case is of nearer concernment to our selves. For first, when we see a person come to an unfortunate and untimely death, we must not conclude such a Man perishing and miserable to eternity. It was a sad calamity that fell upon the Man of Judah, that returned to eat bread into the Prophets house contrary to the Word of the LORD; he was abused into the act by a Prophet, and a pretence of a command from GOD, and whether he did violence to his own understanding, and believed the Man, because he was willing, or did it in sincerity, or in what degree of sin or excuse the action might consist no Man there knew, and yet a Lion slew him, and the lying Prophet that abused him escaped and went to his grave in peace: Some persons joyed in society or interest with criminals have perished in the same judgements; and yet it would be hard to call them equally guilty who in the accident were equally miserable and involved. And they who are not strangers in the affaires of the World cannot but have heard, or seen some persons, who have lived well and moderately, though not like the flames of the Holocaust, yet like the ashes of incense, sending up good perfumes, and keeping a constant and slow fire of piety or justice, yet have been surprized in the midst of some unusual unaccustomed irregularity, and dyed in that sinne; a sudden gayety of fortune, a great joy, a violent change, a friend is come, or a marriage-day, hath transported some persons to indiscretions and too bold a license, and the indiscretion hath betrayed them to idle company, and the company to drink, and drink to a fall, and that hath hurried them to their grave; and it were a sad sentence to think GOD would not repute the untimely death for a punishment great enough to that deflexion from duty, and judge the Man according to the constant tenour of his former life; If such an act was not of a malice great enough to outweigh the former habites, and interrupt the whole state of acceptance and grace. Something like this was the case of Uzzah, who espying the tottering Ark went to support it with an unhallowed hand; GOD smote him, and he dyed immediately. It were too severe to say his zeal and indis-

## Part III.

\*--Xρόνος  
Κυρίας Τι εἰπεῖς  
Θεος αὐτούς τοὺς  
εζήσας στοιχίου.

*Eschyl. Insidiae.*  
Mus. ill. Deus  
partem percusit  
lententia sua  
gladio, ut par-  
tem corrigeret  
exemplo, proba-  
retq; omnibus  
timul, & coers-  
cendo censu-  
ram, & indul-  
gendo pietatem,  
Salvian.

2.

-vetabo qui esse.  
retis sacram  
ulgari arcana,  
sub itidem  
Sic tribibus, fra-  
gilemque, mecum  
Solvat phas-  
lum: sacer DIESpi-  
ter  
Neglectus, in-  
cello addidit ina-  
tegrum.  
Hor. l. 3. od. 2.

Part III.

cretion carried him beyond a temporal death to the ruines of eternitie. *Origen* and many others have made themselves Eunuchs for the kingdom of Heaven, and did well after it; but those that did so, and dyed of the wound, were smitten of GOD and dyed in their folly; and yet it is rather to be called a sad consequence of their indiscretion, than the expresse of a final anger from GOD Almighty. For as GOD takes off our sins and punishments by parts, remitting to some persons the sentence of death, and inflicting the fine of a temporal losse, or the gentle scourge of a lesser sickness: so also he layes it on by parts, and according to the proper proportions of the Man and of the crime; and every transgression, and lesser deviation from our duty does not drag the soul to death eternal, but GOD suslites our repentance, though imperfect to have an imperfect effect, knocking off the fetters by degrees, and leading us in some cases to a councell, in some to judgement, and in some to Hell fire; but it is not alwayes certain that he who is lead to the prison doores shall there lye entombed; and a Man may by a judgement be brought to the gates of Hell, and yet those gates shall not prevail against him. This discourse concernes persons whose life is habitually fair, and just, but are surprized in some unhandsome, but lese criminal action, and dye or suffer some great calamity, as the instrument of its expiation or amendment.

3:

2. But if the person, upon whom the judgement falls, be habitually virtuous; or the crime of a clamorous nature or deeper tincture; if the Man sinne a sinne unto death, and either meets it or some other remarkable calamity, not so feared as death; provided we passe no further then the sentence we see then executed, it is not against charity or prudence, to say, this calamity in its own formality, and by the intention of GOD is a punishment and judgement. In the favourable cases of honest and just persons, our sentence and opinions ought also to be favourable; and in such questions to encline ever to the side of charitable construction, and read other ends of GOD in the accidents of our neighbour, then revenge or expresse wrath. But when the impiety of a person is scandalous and notorious, when it is clamorous and violent, when it is habitual and yet corrigible, if we finde a sadness and calamity dwelling with such a sinner, especially if the punishment be spiritual; we reade the sentence of GOD written with his own hand, and it is not sawciness of opinion, or a pressing into the secrerts of providence to say the same thing, which GOD hath published to all the World in the expresses of his Spirit; In such cases we are to observe the severity of GOD; on them that fall, severity; and to use those judgements as instruments of the fear of GOD, and arguments to hate sin, which we could not well do, but that we must look on them as verifications of GODS threatening against great and impenitent sinners. But then if we descend to particulars we may easily be deceived.

4

For some Men are diligent to observe the accidents and chances of Providence upon those especially, who differ from them in opinion; and what ever ends GOD can have, or what ever sins Man can have, yet we lay that in fault which we therefore hate, because it is most against our interest: the contrary opinion is our Enemy, and we also think GOD hates it; but such fanies do seldom serve either

the

the ends of truth or charity. ‘*Pierre Calceon* died under the Barbers’ hand: there wanted not some who said, it was a judgement upon him for condemning to the fire the famous *Pucelle* of France, who prophesied the expulsion of the English out of the Kingdom. They that thought this, believed her to be a Prophetesse; but others that thought her a Witch, were willing to finde out another conjecture for the sudden death of the Gentleman. But I instance in a trifle. Certain it is, that GOD removed the Candlestick from the Levantine Churches, because he had a quarrel unto them; for that punishment is never sent upon pure delignes of enmiration, or for direct and immediate purposes of the Divine Glory, but ever makes reflexion upon the past slaine; but when we descend to a judgement of the particulars, GOD walks so in the dark to us, that it is not discerned, upon what ground he smote them. Some say it was because they dishonoured the eternal JESUS in denying the procession of the holy Ghost from the Sonne: the Church of Rome calls the Churches of the Greek communion, Schismatical, and thinks GOD righted the Roman quarrel, when he revenged his own; some think they were cut off for being breakers of Images, others thinke that their zeal against Images was a meanes they were cut off no sooner; and yet he that shall observe what innumerable Sects, Herefies, and Factions were commenced amongst them, and how they were wanton with Religion, making it serve ambitious and unworthy ends, will see that besides the ordinary conjectures of interested persons, they had such causes of their ruine, which we also now feel heavily incumbent upon our selves. To see GOD adding eighteen years to the life of *Hezekiah* upon his prayer, and yet cutting off the young son of David begotten in adulterous embraces; to see him rejecting *Adonijah*, and receiving *Solomon* to the kingdom, begotten of the same Mother, whose son GOD in anger formerly slew; to observe his mercies to *Manasses*, in accepting him to favour, and continuing the Kingdom to him, and his severity to *Zedekiah* in causing his eyes to be put out; to see him rewarding *Nebuchadnezzar* with the spoils of Egypt for destroying Tyre, and executing GODS severe anger against it, and yet punishing others for being executioners of his wrath upon Jerusalem, even then when he purposed to chastise it; to see *Wenceslaus* raised from a Peasant to a Throne, and *Pompey* from a great Prince reduced to that condition, that a Pupil and an Eunuch passed sentence of death upon him; to see great fortunes fall into the hand of a Fool, and honourable old persons, and learned Men descend to unequal beggary; to see him strike a stroke with his own hand in the conversion of *Saul*, and another quite contrary in the cutting off of *Judas* must needs be some restraint to our judgements concerning the general state of those Men, who lye under the rod; but it proclaims an infinite uncertainty in the particulars, since we see contrary accidents happening to persons guilty of the same crime, or put in the same indispositions. GOD hath marked all great sinnes with some signal and expresse judgements, and hath transmitted the records of them, or represented them before our eyes; that is, hath done so in our age, or it hath been noted to have been done before, and that being sufficient to affright us from those crimes, GOD hath not thought it expedient to do the same things to all persons in

## Part III.

Pendula dum  
tonor secat ex-  
crementa capilli  
Expirans cadit,  
& gelida tellure  
cadaver  
Decubat, ultra-  
ces sic pendunt  
erit ina poenas.  
V alerand.

Part III.

Fulgos lib.9.  
c.12.

the same cases, having to all persons produced instances and examples of fear by fewer accidents, sufficient to restrain us, but not enough to passe sentence upon the changes of Divine Providence.

5.

But sometimes GOD speakes plainer, and gives us notice, what crimes he punishes in others, that we may the rather decline such rocks of offence. If the crime and the punishment be symbolical, and have proportion and correspondence of parts, the hand of GOD strikes the Man, but holds up one finger to point at the sinne. The death of the childe of Bathsheba was a plain declaration, that the anger of GOD was upon David for the adulterous mixture. That blasphemier, whose tongue was presently struck with an ulcerous tumour, with his tongue declared the glories of GOD, and his own shame. And that famous person, and of excellent learning Giacchetus of Geneva, being by his Wife found dead in the unlawfull embraces of a stranger woman, who also dyed at the same instant, left an excellent example of GODS anger upon the crime, and an evidence, that hee was then judged for his intemperance. Such are all those punishments, which are naturall consequents to a crime, as Dropies, rednesse of eyes, dissolution of nerves, apoplexies to continuall drunkennesse, to intemperate eating short lives and sudden deaths, to lust, a caitive slavish disposition, and a foul diseased body; fire and sword, and depopulation of Towns and villages, the consequents of ambition and unjust wars: poverty to prodigality, and all those judgements, which happen upon curslings and horrid imprecations, when GOD, is under a curse called to attest a lye, and to connive at impudence; or when the oppressed persons in the bitterness of their souls wish evil and pray for vengeance on their oppressours, or that the Church upon just cause inflicts spirituall censures, and delivers unto Satan, or curses and declares the Divine sentence against sinners, as S. Peter against *Ananias* and *Saphira*, and S. Paul against *Elimas*, and of old Moses against Pharaoh and his Egypt: ( of this nature also was the plague of a withered hand inflicted upon *Je-roboam*, for stretching forth his hand to strike the Prophet ) In these and all such instances the offspring is so like the Parent, that it cannot easily be concealed; sometime the crime is of that nature, that it cryes aloud for vengeance, or is threatened with a speciaall kinde of punishment, or by the observation and experience of the world hath regularly happened to a certain sort of persons, such as are dissolutions of estates, the punishment of sacrilegide; a descending curse upon posterity for four generations, specially threatened to the crime of idolatry; any plague whatsoever to oppression; untimely death to murder; an unthriving estate to the detention of tithes, or whatsoever is GODS portion allotted for the services of religion; untimely and strange deaths to the persecutors of Christian religion; *Nero* killed himself, *Domitian* was killed by his servants, *Maximinus* and *Decius* were murthered, together with their children, *Vale-rianus*, imprisoned, fled and slain with tortures by *Sapor* King of Persia, *Diocletian* perished by his own hand, and his house buriat with the fate of Sodome and Gomorrah, with fire from above, *Antiochus* the President under *Aurelian* while *Agapetus* was in his agony and sufferance of Martyrdome, cryed out of a flame within him, and dyed; *Flaccus* runned out his entrailes presently after he had caused *Gregory Bishop*

*Poenit. tamen  
præsens cum tu  
deponis ami-  
cum  
Turgidus et cru-  
dum pavonem in  
balnea portas.  
Hinc subitæ  
mortes atq; in-  
testata senectus.  
Juven. Sat. I.  
Quos nimis ef-  
frænes habui-  
nunc vapulo re-  
nes  
Sic luitur juve-  
nis culpa dolore  
enix.*

Bishop of Spoleto to be slain, and *Dioscorus* the Father of Saint *Barbara* had accused and betrayed his Daughter to the Hangmans cruelty for being a Christian, and he dyed by the hand of GOD by fire from Heaven. These are GODS tokens, marks upon the body of infected persons, and declare the malignity of the disease, and bids us all beware of those determined crimes.

3. But then in these and all other accidents we must first observe from the cause to the effect, and then judge from the effect concerning the nature and the degree of the cause; we cannot conclude; this family is lessened, beggered, or extinct, therefore they are guilty of Sacrilege; but thus; they are sacrilegious, and GOD hath blotted out their name from among the posterities, therefore this judgement was an expresse of GODS anger against Sacrilege; the judgement will not conclude a sinne, but when a sinne infers the judgement with a legible character, and a prompt signification, not to understand GODS choice is next to stupidity or carelessness. *Arius* was known to be a Seditious, Heretical, and dissembling person, and his entrails descended on the earth, when he went to cover his feet; it was very suspicuous, that which was the punishment of those sins, which were the worst in him; but he that shall conclude *Arius* was a Heretick, or seditious upon no other ground, but because his bowels gushed out, begins imprudently, and proceeds uncharitably. But it is confiderable that Men do not arise to great crimes on the sudden, but by degrees of carelessness to lesser impieties, and then to clamorous sins: And GOD is therefore said to punish great crimes or actions of highest malignity, because they are commonly productions from the spirit of reprobation, they are the highest ascents and suppose a body of sinne; and therefore although the judgement may be intended to punish all our sins, yet it is like the Syrian army, it kills all that are its enemies, but it hath a speciall commision to fight against none but the King of Israel, because his death would be the dissolution of the body; and if GOD humbles a Man for his great sinne, that is, for those acts which combine, and consummate all the rest, possibly the body of sinne may separate, and be apt to be scattered and subdne by singe acts and instruments of mortification; and therefore it is but reasonable in our making use of GODS judgements upon others to think that GOD will rather strike at the greatest crimes; not onely because they are in themselves of greatest malice and iniquity, but because they are the summe total of the rest, and by being great progressions in the state of sinne, suppose all the rest included; and we by proportioning and observing the judgement to the highest, acknowledge the whole body of sinne to lye under the curse, though the greatest onely was named, and called upon with the voice of thunder. And yet because it sometimes happens, that upon the violence of a great and new occasion some persons leap into such a sinne, which in the ordinary course of sinners uses to be the effect of an habitual and growing state, then, if a judgement happens, it is clearly appropriate to that one great crime, which as of it self it is equivalent to a vicious habit, and interupts the acception of all its former contraries, so it meets with a curse such as usually GOD chooses for the punishment of a whole body and state of sinne. However, in making observation upon the ex-

-exit Arius alve  
Intellex plus mente  
cadens, lethumq; pe-  
receptus  
Cum Juda commune  
tulit, qui gutture  
pendens  
Viceviribus curvatus  
obit, nec pena se-  
questrat  
Quod par culpa ligat,  
qui mejicit honor  
Vuiinus, ab ore pa-  
rant: hic prodidit  
ille direxit  
Sacrilega de voce-  
Poet Christ.  
apud Baron. T. 3.

## Part III.

presles of GODS anger we must be careful that we reflect not with any bitterness or scorn upon the person of our calamitous Brother, lest we make that to be an evil to him, which GOD intends for his beneit, if the judgement was medicinal; or that we increase the load already great enough to sink him beneath his grave, if the judgement was intended for a final abscission.

7. But if the judgements descend upon our selves we are to take another course; not to enquire into particulars to finde out the proportions (for that can onely be a deigne to part with just so much as we must needs) but to mend all that is amisse; for then onely we can be secure to remove the *Achan*, when we keep nothing within us or about us, that may provoke GOD to jealousie or wrath. And that is the proper product of holy fear, which GOD intended should be the first effect of all his judgements: and of this GOD is so careful, and yet so kinde and provident, that fear might not be produc'd alwayes at the expence of a great suffering, that GOD hath provided for us certain prologues of judgement, and keeps us waking with alarms, that so he might reconcile his mercies with our duties. Of this nature are Epidemical diseases, not yet arrived at us, prodigious tempests, thunder and loud noises from Heaven, and he that will not fear when GOD speaks so loud, is not yet made soft with the impreſſes and perpetual droppings of Religion. ‘Venerable Bede reports of *S. Chad*, that

*Hist. Gent. Anglor. l.3.c.18.*

‘if a great gust of winde suddenly arose, he presently made some holy ejaculation to beg favour of GOD for all mankinde, who might possibly be concerned in the effects of that winde; but if a storm succeeded, he fell prostrate to the earth, and grew as violent in prayer, as the storm was either at land or sea. But if GOD added thunder and lightning he went to the Church, and there spent all his time during the tempest in reciting *Litanies*, *Psalms*, and other holy prayers, till it pleased GOD to restore his favour, and to seem to forget his anger. And the good Bishop added this reaſon; because these are the extenſions and stretchings forth of GODS hand, and yet he did not strike, but he that trembles not, when he sees GODS arm held forth to strike us, understands neither GODS mercies nor his own danger; he neither knows what those horrors were which the people saw from mount Sinai, nor what the glories and amazements shall be at the great day of judgement. And if this religious Man had seen *Tullus Hostilius* the Roman King, and *Anastasius* a Christian Emperour, but a reputed Heretick, struck dead with thunder-bolts, and their own houses made their urnes to keep their ashes in, there could have been no posture humble enough, no prayers devout enough, no place holy enough, nothing ſufficiently exprefive of his fear, and his humility, and his adoration and Religion to the Almighty, and infinite power and glorious mercy of GOD, ſending out his emissaries to denounce war with deſignes of peace. A great Italian General ſeeing the ſudden death of *Alfonſus* Duke of Ferrara, kneel'd down instantly, ſaying, *And ſhall not this ſight make me religious?* Three and twenty thousand fell in one night in the Affyrian Camp, who were all slain for Fornication. And this ſo prodigious a judgement was recorded in Scripture for our example and affrightment, that wee ſhould not with ſuch freedome entertain a crime, which destroyed ſo numerous a body of Men in the darkneſſe of one evening: Fear, and modeſty, and universall reformation,

ormation are the purposes of GODS judgements upon us, or in our neighbourhood.

5. Concerning judgements happening to a nation or a Church, the consideration is particular, because there are fewer capacities of making sins to become nationall then personall, and therefore if we understand, when a sin is nationall we may the rather understand the meaning of GODS hand, when he strikes a people. For nationall sinnes grow higher and higher not neerly according to the degree of the sinne, or the intention alone, but according to the extension, according to its being nationall so it is productive of more or lesse mischief to a kingdom. Customary iniquities amongst the people do then amount to the account of nationall sinnes, when they are of so universall practise as to take in well neer every particular; such as was that of Sodome, not to leave ten righteous in all the Countrey, and such were the sinnes of the old world, who left but eight persons to escape the angry baptisme of the flood. And such alfo was the murmur of the children of Israel, refusing to march up to Canaan at the commandment of GOD, they all murmured but Caleb and Joshua; and this GOD in the case of the Amalekites calls *the fulfilling of their sins*, and *a filling up the measure of their iniquities*. And hither also I reckon the defection of the ten tribes from the house of Judah, and the Samaritan schisme; these caused the totall extirpation of the offending people. For although these sins were personall and private, yet when they come to be universall by diffusion and dissemination, and the good people remaining among them, are but like drops of wine in a tun of water, of no confederation with GOD, save only to the preservation of *their own persons*: then, although the persons be private: yet all private or singular persons make the nation. But this hath happened but seldome in Christianity: I think indeed never, except in the case of mutinies and rebellion against their lawfull Prince, or the attesting violence done in unjust warres; but GOD only knowes, and no man can say that any sin is nationall by diffusion, and therefore in this case we cannot make any certain judgement, or advantage to our selves, or very rarely, by observing the changes of providence upon a people.

But the next above this in order to the procuring popular judgements is publike impunitis, the not doing justice upon criminalls publikely complained of, and demanded, especially when the persons interested call for justice and execution of good laws, and the Princes arm is at liberty and in full strength, and there is no contrary reason in the particular instance to make compensation to the publike for the omission, or no care taken to satisfie the particular. *Abimelech* thought he had reason to be angry with Ishaack for saying *Rebecca* was his sister, for *one of the people might have been with thy wife, and thou shouldest have brought evill upon us*. Meaning that the man should have escaped unpunished by reason of the mistake, which very impunity he feared might be expounded to be a countenance and encouragement to the sin. But this was no more then his fear; the case of the Benjamites comes home to this present article; for they refused to do i st ce upon the men that had ravished and killed the Levites concubine, they lost twenty five thousand in battell, their cities were destroyed, and the whole tribe almost extinguished. For

*Excunda culpa  
Iecula, nuptias  
Primum inquinare, & genus  
& doinos  
Eoc fonte derivata clades  
In patria r popu-  
lumq; fluxit.  
Hor. l. 3. od. 6.*

Ezek. 14.20.

## Part III.

Deut. 32. 33.

punishing publike and great acts of injustice is called in Scripture, *putting away the evil from the land*; because to this purpose the sword is put into the Princes hand, and he bears the sword in vain, who ceases to protect his people: And not to punish the evil is a voluntary retention of it, unless a speciall case intervene, in which the Prince thinks it convenient to give a particular pardon, provided this be not encouragement to others nor without great reason, big enough to make compensation for the particular omission, and with care to render some other satisfaction to the person injured: in all other cases of impunity that sin becomes nationall by forbearing, which in the acting was personall; and it is certain the impunity is a spring of universal evils, it is no thank to the publike if the best man be not as bad as the worst.

10.

But there is a step beyond this and of a more publike concernment, such are the *laws of Omri*, when a nation consents to, and makes ungodly statutes; When *mischief is established as a law*, then the nation is engaged to some purpose. When I see the people despise their Governours, scorne and rob and disadvantage the Ministers of religion, make rude addresses to GOD, to his Temple, to his Sacraments, I look upon it as the insolencies of an untaught people, who would as readily do the contrary, if the fear of GOD and the King were upon them by good examples, and precepts, and laws, and severe executions. And further yet, when the more publike and exemplar persons are without sense of religion, without a dread of Majesty, without reverence to the Church, without impresses of conscience and the tendernesses of a religious fear towards GOD; as the persons are greater in estimation of Law, and in their influences upon the people, so the score of the nation advances, and there is more to be paid for in popular judgements. But when iniquity or irreligion is made a sanction, and either GOD must be dishonoured or the Church exauthorated, or her rites invaded by a Law, then the fortune of the kingdom is at stake. No sin engages a nation so much, or is so publike, so solemn iniquity as is a wicked law. Therefore it concerns Princes and states to secure the piety and innocency of their laws; and if there be any evil laws, which upon just grounds may be thought productive of GODS anger, because a publike misdemeanour cannot be expiated, but by a publike act of repentance, or a publike calamity, the laws must either have their edge abated by a defuetude, or laid asleep by a non execution, or dismembred by contrary provisoes, or have the sting drawn forth by interpretation, or else by abrogation be quite rescinded. But these are nationall sins within it self, or within its own body, by the act of the body ( I mean ) diffusive or representative, and they are like the personall sins of men in or against their own bodies in the matter of sobriety. There are others in the matter of justice as the nation relates to other people communicating in publike entercourse.

11.

For as the entercourse between man and man in the actions of commutative and distributive justice are the proper matter of virtues and vices personall, so are the transactions between nation and nation against the publike rules of justice, sins nationall directly, and in their first originall, and answer to injustice between man and man; such are commencing warre upon unjust titles, invasion of neighbours territories, confederaciees and aids upon tyrannicall interest, warres against

—lion, Ilion  
Batalis, incestus  
que Judex  
Emulier pere-  
grina vertit  
In pulvrem ex  
quo destituit  
Deos—  
Mercedi pacta  
Laomedon.  
*Hes. l. 3. od. 3.*

true

true religion or Sovereignty, violation of the Laws of nations, which they have consented to as the publike instrument of accord and negotiation, breach of publike faith, defending Pirates and the like. When a publike judgement comes upon a nation, these things are to be thought upon, that we may not think our selves acquitted by crying out against swearing and drunkennesse and cheating in manufactures, which unlesse they be of universall dissemination, and made nationall by diffusion, are paid for upon a personall score; and the private infelicities of our lives will either expiate or punish them severely. But while the people mourns for those sins, of which their low condition is capable, sins that may produce a popular feaver, or perhaps the plague, where the misery dwells in cottages, and the Princes often have indemnity, as it was in the case of David; yet we may not hope to appease a war, to master a rebellion, to cure the publike distempers of a kingdom, which threatens not the people onely, or the governors also, but even the government it self, unlesse the sins of a more publike capacity be cut off by publike declarations, or other acts of nationall justice and religion. But the duty, which concerns us all in such cases, is that every man in every capacity should enquire into himself, and for his own portion of the calamity put in his own symbole of emendation, for his particular, and his prayers for the publike interest; in which it is not safe, that any private persons should descend to particular censures of the crimes of Princes and states, no not towards GOD, unlesse the matter be notorious and past a Question; but it is a sufficient assoilment of this part of his duty, if when he hath set his own house in order, he would pray with indefinite significations of his charity and care of the publike, that GOD would put it into the hearts of all whom it concerns, to endeavour the removall of the sin, that hath brought the exterminating Angel upon the nation. But yet there are sometimes great lines drawn by GOD in the expresses of his Anger in some judgements upon a nation; and when the judgement is of that danger as to invade the very constitution of a kingdom, the proportions that judgements many times keep to their sins intimate that there is some nationall sin, in which either by diffusion, or representation, or in the direct matter of sins as false oaths, unjust wars, wicked confederacies or ungodly Laws, the nation in the publike capacity is delinquent.

For as the nation hath in sins a capacity distinct from the sins of all the people, in as much as the nation is united in one head, guarded by a distinct and a higher Angel, as Persia by Saint Michael, transacts affaires in a publike right, transmits influence to all particulars from a common fountain, and hath entercourse with other collective bodies, who also distinguish from their own particulars: so likewise it hath punishments distinct from those infelicities, which vex particulars; punishments proportionable to it self, and to its own sins; such as are change of governments, of better into worse, of Monarchy into Aristocracy, and so to the lowest ebbe of Democracy, death of Princes, infant Kings, forreigne invasions, civil wars, a disputable title to the Crown, making a nation tributary conquest by a Forreigner, and which is worst of all, removing the candlestick

## Part III.

\*Dii ten iso  
ren quod geris,  
i peras.  
Hinc o.ane prin-  
cipium,huc reser-  
exiun;  
Dii multa neg-  
lecti dederunt  
Hesperia mala  
Iudiciora.  
*Hor. I. 3. od. 5.*

stick from a people by extinction of the Church, or that, which is necessary to its conservation, the severall orders and ministeries of religion; and the last hath also proper bins of its own analogy, such as are false articles in the publike confessions of a Church, schisme from the Catholike, publike scandals, a generall vitiouſneſſe of the Clergy, an indiſſerency in \* religion, without warmth and holy fires of zeal, and diligent purſuance of all its just and holy intereſts; now in these and all parallel cases, when GOD by punishments hath probably marked and diſtinguiſhed the crime, it concerns publike persons to be the more forward and importunate in conſideration of publike irregularities: and for the private also not to neglect their own particulars; for by that means although not certainly, yet probably they may ſecure themſelves from falling in the publike calamity. It is not infallibly ſure that holy persons ſhall not be ſmitten by the destroying Angel; for GOD in ſuch deaths hath many ends of mercy, and ſome of providence to ſerve; but ſuch private and perſonall emendations and devotions are the greateſt ſecuritieſ of the men againſt the judgement, or the evill of it, preſerving them in this life, or waſting them over to a better. Thus many of the LORDS champions did fall in battle, and the armies of the Benjamites did twice prevail upon the juſter people of all Israel; and the Greek Empire hath declined and flirunk under the fortune and power of the Ottoman family; and the Holy-land, which was twice poſſeſſed by Christian Princes is now in the dominion of unchristened Sarraens, and in the production of theſe alterations many a gallant and pious perſon ſuffered the evils of war, and the change of an untimely death.

13.

But the way for the whole nation to proceed in caſes of Epidemicall diſeases, wars, great judgements, and popular calamities is to do in the publike proportion the ſame, that every man is to do for his private; by publike acts of justice, repenſance, fastings, pious laws, and execution of juſt and religious edicts, making peace, quittinh of unjust intereſts, declaring publikely againſt a crime, protesting in behalf of the contrary vertue or religion; and to this also every man, as he is a member of the body politick muſt coopeſate, that by a repenſance in diſtillation, help may con e aſwell as by a ſin of universall diſemination the plague was haſtened and invited the rather. But in theſe caſes all the work of diſcerning and prououcing concerning the cauſe of the judgement, as it muſt be without asperity, and onely for diſigneſ of correction and emendation, ſo it muſt be done by Kings and Prophets, and the aſſiſtance of other publike perſons, to whom the publike is committed. *Jſuah* cast lots upon *Achan*, and diſcovered the publike trouble in a private iuſtice; and of old, the Prophets had it in commiſſion to reprove the popular iniquity of nations, and the conſederate ſins of kingdoms: and in this, Christianity altered nothing: and when this is done modeſtly, prudently, humbly, and penitently, oftentimes the tables turn immeadiately, but alwaies in due time; and a great alteration in a kingdom becomes the greateſt bleſſing in the world and fastens the Church, or the crown or the publike peace in bands of great continuance and ſecurity; and it may be, the next age ſhall feel the benefits of our ſufferance and repenſance; and therefore as we muſt endeavour to ſecure it; ſo we muſt not be too decretry in the caſe of others or diſconsolate or diſſident in our own, when it may ſo happen, that all ſucceeding generations ſhall ſee, that God pardoned us, and loved us even when he finiothe us.

PRAYER.



## THE PRAYER.

Q Eternall and powerfull G O D thou just and righteous Governor of the world, who callest all orders of men by precepts, promises and threateninges, by mercies and by judgements, teach us to admire and adore all the wistome, the effects and infinite varieties of thy providence, and make us to dispose our selves so by obedience, by repentance, by all the manners of holy living, that we may never provoke thee to jealousy, much lesse to wrath and indignation against us. Keep farre from us the sword of the destroying Angel, and let us never perish in the publike expresses of thy wrath, in diseases Epidemicall, with the furies of warre, with calamitous, sudden, and horrid accidents, with unusuall diseases, unlesse that our so strange fall be more for thy glory and our eternall benefit, and then thy will be done; We beg thy gracie that we may cheerfully conforme to thy holy will and pleasure. L O R D open our understandings, that we may know the meaning of thy voice, and the signification of thy language, when thou speakest from heaven in signes and judgements; and let a holy fear so soften our spirits, and an intense love so inflame and sanctifie our desires, that we may apprehend every intimation of thy pleasure at its first and remotest and most obscure representment, that so we may with repentance go out to meet thee, and prevent the expresses of thine anger. Let thy restraining grace and the observation of the issues of thy justice so allay our spirits, that we be not severe and forward in condemning others, nor backwards in passing sentence upon our selves; make us to obey thy voice described in holy Scripture, to tremble at thy voice expressed in wonders, and great effects of providence, to condemn none but our selves, nor to enter into the recesses of thy sanctuary, and search the forbidden records of predestination, but that we may read our duty in the pages of revelation, not in the labels of accidentall effects, that thy judgements may confirm thy word, and thy word teach us our duty, and we by such excellent instruments may enter in and grow up in the wayes of godlinesse through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

Discourse



## Sect. 15.

*Of the accidents happening from the Death  
of Lazarus untill the death and buriall  
of J E S U S.*



While J E S U S was in Galilee, Messengers came to him from *Martha*, and her sister *Mary*, that he would hasten into Judæa to Bethany to releeve the sicknesse and imminent dangers of their brother *Lazarus*. But he deferred his going, till *Lazarus* was dead; purposing to give a great probation of his Divinity, power, and misson by a glorious miracle; and to give G O D glory, and to receive reflexions of the glory upon himself. For after he had stayed two dayes, he called his disciples to go with him into Judæa, telling them, that *Lazarus* was dead, but he would raise him out of that sleep of death; but by that time J E S U S was arrived at Bethany he found that *Lazarus* had been dead four dayes, and now neer to putrefaction. But when *Martha* and *Mary* met him, weeping their pious teares for their dead Brother, J E S U S suffered the passions of piety and humanity, and wept, distilling that pretious liquorre into the grave of *Lazarus*, watering the dead plant, that it might spring into a new life, and raise his head above the ground.

When J E S U S had by his words of comfort and institution strengthened the faith of the two mourning Sisters, and commanded the stone to be removed from the grave, he made an addresse of adoration and Eucharist to his Father, confessing his perpetuall propensity to hear him, and then cryed out, *Lazarus come forth*. And he that was dead came forth from his bed of darknesse with his night clothes on him, whom when the Apostles had unloosed at the command of J E S U S, he went to Bethany: and many that were present beleaved on him; but others wondring and malicious went and told the Pharisees the story of the miracle, who upon that advise called their great Councell, whose great and solemn cognition was of the greater causes of Prophets, of Kings, and of the holy Law. At this great assembly it was, that *Caiphas* the high priest prophesyed, that it was expedient one should die for the people, and thence they determined the death of J E S U S. But he knowing they had passed a decretory sentence against him retired to the city Ephraim in the tribe of Judah neer the desert, where he stayed a few dayes, till the approximation of the feast of Easter.

Against

Against which feast when JESUS with his Disciples was going to Jerusalem, he told them the event of the journey would be, that the Jews should deliver him to the Gentiles, that they should scourge him, and mock him, and crucify him, and the third day he would rise again. After which discourse the Mother of Zebedees children begged of Jesus for her two sons, that one of them might sit at his right hand, the other at the left in his kingdom. For no discourses of his passion, or intimations of the mysteriousness of his kingdom could yet put them into right understandings of their condition. But JESUS, whose heart and thoughts were full of fancy and apprehensions of the neighbour passion, gave them answer in proportion to his present conceptions, and their future condition. For if they desired the honours of his kingdom, such as they were, they should have them, unless themselves did decline them; They should drink of his cup, and dip in his lavatory, and be washed with his baptism, and sit in his kingdom, if the heavenly Father had prepared it for them; but the donation of that immediately was an issue of Divine election and predestination, and was only competent to them, who by holy living and patient suffering put themselves into a disposition of becoming vessels of election.

But as JESUS in this journey came neer to Jericho, he cures a blind man, who sate begging by the way side; and espying Zacheus the chief of the publicans upon a tree (that he being low of stature might upon that advantage of station see JESUS passing by) he invited himself to his house, who received him with gladnesse, and repentance of his crimes, purging his conscience, and filling his heart and house with joy and sanctity, for immediately upon the arrivall of the Master at his house he offered restitution to all persons, whom he had injured, and satisfaction, and half of his remanent estate he gave to the poor, and so gave the fairest entertainment to JESUS, who brought along with him salvation to his house. There it was that he spake the parable of the King, who concredited divers talents to his servants, and having at his return exacted an account, rewarded them who had improved their bank, and been faithful in their trust with rewards proportionable to their capacity and improvement; but the negligent servant, who had not meliorated his stock, was punished with ablegation and confinement to outer darknesse. And from hence sprang up that dogmaticall proposition, which is mysterious and determined in Christianity: *to him that hath shall be given, and from him that hath not shall be taken away, even, what he hath;* After this going forth of Jericho he cured two blinde men upon the way.

Six dayes before Easter, JESUS came to Bethany, where he was feasted by *Martha and Mary*, and accompanied by *Lazarus*, who sate at the table with JESUS. But *Mary* brought a pound of Nard Pistick, and as formerly she had done, again anoints the feet of JESUS, and fills the house with the odour, till G O D himself smelt thence a favour of a sweet smelling sacrifice. But *Judas Iscariot*, the Thief, and the Traytor repined at the vanity of the expence (as he pretended) because it might have been sold for 300 pence, and have been given to the poor. But JESUS in his reply taught us, that there is an opportunity for actions of religion as well as of charity. *Mary* did this against the burial of J E S U S, and her religion was accepted by him, to whose honours, the holocaust of love, and the oblations of alms-deeds are in their proper seasons direct actions of worship and duty. But at this meeting

## Part III.

Epiphan. contr.  
Manich.

6.

Meeting there came many Jewes to see Lazarus, who was raised from death, as well as to see J E S U S : and because by occasion of his resurrection many of them believed on J E S U S , therefore the Pharisees deliberated about putting him to death. But G O D in his glorious providence was pleased to preserve him as a trumpet of his glories, and a testimony of the miracle thirty years after the death of JESUS.

The next day being the fist day before the passeover, J E S U S came to the foot of the mount of olives and sent his Disciples to Bethphage a village in the neighbourhood, commanding them to unloose an asse and a colt, and bring them to him , and to tell the owners it was done for the Masters use ; and they did so, and when they brought the asse to JESUS, he rides on him to Jerusalem, and the people having notice of his approach took branches of Palm trees, \* and went out to meet him, strewing branches and garments in the way, crying out, Hosanna to the son of David : Which was a form of exclamation used to the honour of G O D , and in great solemnities , and b signifies, [ Adoration to the Son of David by the rite of carrying branches ; ] which when they used in procession about their altars, they used to pray, L O R D save us, L O R D prosper us, which hath occasioned the reddition of Hoschiannah to be amongst some, that prayer, which they repeated at the carrying of the Hoschiannah, as if it self did signify [ L O R D save us. ] But this honour was so great and unusuall to be done even to Kings, that the Pharisees knowing this to be an appropriate manner of addresse to G O D said one to another by way of wonder, hear ye what these men say ? For they were troubled to hear the people revere him as a G O D .

7.

Joseph de bello  
Jud. l. 6. c. 3.

When JESUS from the mount of olives beheld Jerusalem he wept over it, and foretold great sadnesses and infelicities furely contingent to it, which not onely happened in the sequele of the story, according to the main issues and significations of this Prophecy, but even to minutes and circumstances it was verified. For in the mount of olives where JESUS shed tears over perfusing Jerusalem, the Romans first pitched their tents, when they came to its finall overthrow. From thence descending to the city he went into the temple, and still the acclamations followed him till the Pharisees were ready to burst with the noises abroad, and the tumults of envy and scorn within , and byobserving that all their endeavours to supprese his glories were but like clapping their hands to veil the sun, and that in despight of all their stratagems the whole nation was become Disciple to the glorious Nazarene. And there he cured certain persons , that were blinde and lame.

8.

But whilest he aboad at Jerusalem, certain Greeks, who came to the feast to worship, made their addresse to Philip, that they might be brought to JESUS. Philip tels Andrew, and they both tell JESUS ; who having admitted them, discoursed many things concerning his passion, and then prayed a petition, which is the end of his own sufferings, and of all humane actions, and the purpose of the whole creation ; Father glorify thy Name. To which he was answered by a voice from heaven, I have both glorifiedit, and will glorify it again ; but this, nor the whole series of miracles, that he did, the mercies, the cures, the divine discourses could gain the faith of all the Jewes, who were determined by their humane interest ; for many of the rulers who believed on him durst not confess him, because they

they loved the praise of men more then the praise of GOD. Then JESUS again exhorted all men to beleeve on him, that so they might in the same act beleeve on GOD, that they might approach unto the light and not abide in darknesse, that they might obey the commandments of the Father, whose expresse charge it was, that JESUS should preach this Gospel, and that they might not be judged at the last day by the word, which they have rejected; which word to all its observers is everlasting life. After which Sermon retiring to Bethany he abode there all night.

On the morrow returning to Jerusalem, on the way being hungry he passed by a figtree, where expecting fruit he found none, and cursed the figtree, which by the next day was dried up and withered. Vpon occasion of which preternaturall event, JESUS discoursed of the power of faith and its power to produce miracles; but upon this occasion others, the Disciples of JESUS in after ages have pleased theniselves with phansies and imperfect descants, that cursed this tree in mistery and secret intendment, it having been the tree, in the eating whose fruit Adam prevaricating the Divine law made an inlet to sin, which brought in death, and the sadnesses of JESUS passion. But JESUS having entred the city came into the temple and preached the Gospell, and the chief Priests and scribes questioned his commission, and by what authority he did those things; but JESUS promising to answer them, if they would declare their opinions concerning Johns baptism, which they durst not for fear of displeasing the people or throwing durt in their own faces, was acquitted of his obligation by their declining the proposition.

But there he reproved the Pharisees and rulers by the Parable of two sons; the first whereof said to his Father, he would not obey, but repented and did his command, the second gave good words but did nothing: meaning, that persons of the greatest improbability were more heartily converted then they, whose outside seemed to have appropiated religion to the labels of their frontlets. He added a parable of the vineyard let out to husbandmen, who killed the servants sent to demand the fruits, and at last, the son himself, that they might invade the inheritance; but made a sad commination to all such, who should either stumble at this stone, or on whom this stone should fall. After which, and some other reprehensions, which he so vailed in parable that it might not be expounded to be calumny or declamation, although such sharp sermons had been spoken in the peoples hearing, but yet so transparently, that themselves might see their own iniquality in thole modest and just representments, the Pharisees would fain have seized him, but they durst not for the people, but resolued if they can, to entangle him in his talk; and therefore send out spies who should pretend sanctity and veneration of his person, who with a goodly insinuating preface, that JESUS regarded no mans person, but spake the word of GOD with much simplicity and justice, desired to know, if it were lawfull to pay tribute to Cesar or not? A Question, which was of great dispute, because of the numerous sect of the Galileans, who denied it, and of the affections of the people, who loved their money, and their liberty, and the privileges of their nation; and now in all probability he shall fall under the displeasure of the people or of Cesar. But JESUS called to see a peny, and finding it to be superscribed with Cesars image; with incomparable wisdom he brake their snare, and established an Evangelical

*Isidor. ad Theod. Pomp. l. I. c. 51*

ie.

**Part III.** *I*call proposition for ever, saying, *Give to Cesar the things, that are Cesars, and to GOD the things, that are GODS.*

**11.** Having so excellently and so much to their wonder answered the Pharisees, the sadduces bring their great objection to him against the resurrection, by putting case of a woman married to seven husbands, and whose wife should she be in the resurrection? thinking that to be an impossible state, which engages upon such seeming incongruities, that a woman should at once be wife to seven men. But JESUS first answered their objection, telling them, that in the resurrection all those relations, whose foundation is in the imperfections and passions of flesh and blood, and duties here below, shall cease in that state, which is so spirituall, that it is like to the condition of Angels, amongst whom there is no difference of sex, no cognations, no genealogies, or derivation from one another; and then by a new argument proves the resurrection, by one of GODS appellatives, who did then delight to be called, *The GOD of Abraham Isaack and Jacob*: for since that *GOD is not the GOD of the dead, but of the living*, unto him even these men are alive; and if so, then either they now exercise acts of life, and therefore shall be restored to their bodies, that their actions may be compleat, and they not remain in a state of imperfection to all eternity; or if they be alive and yet cease from operation, they shall be much rather raised up to a condition which shall actuate and make perfect their present capacities and dispositions, least a power and inclination should for ever be in the root, and never rise up to fruit or herbage, and so be an eternall vanity, like an old bud or an eternall childe.

**12.** After this, the Pharisees being well pleased, not that JESUS spake so excellently, but that the Pharisees were confuted, came to him, asking, which was the great commandment, and some other things, more out of curiosity then pious desires of satisfaction. But at last, JESUS was pleased to ask them concerning CHRIST, *whose son he was?* They answered, *the son of David*, but he replying, *how then doth David call him Lord, the L O R D said unto my L O R D, sit thou on my right hand, &c.* They had nothing to answer; but JESUS then gave his Disciples caution against the pride, the hypocrisy, and the oppression of the Scribes and Pharisees, commended the poor widdows oblation of her two mites into the treasury, it being a great love in a little print, for it was all her living. All this was spoken in the temple, the goodly stones of which when the Apostles beheld with wonder, they being white and firm, twenty cubits length, twelve in breadth, eight in

**Lib. 14. Antiq.  
cap. 14.** depth as Josephus reports, JESUS prophesies the destruction of the place: concerning which prediction, when the Apostles being with him at the mount of olives asked him privately, concerning the time, and the signes of so sad event, he discoursed largely of his coming to judgement against that city, and interwoven predictions of the universall judgement of all the world; of which this though very sad was but a small adumbration; adding precepts of watchfullnesse, and standing in preparation with hearts filled with grace, our lamps alwaies shining, that when the Bridegroom shall come we may be ready to enter in, which was intended in the parable of the five wise virgins: and concluded

his Sermon with a narrative of his passion, foretelling that within two dayes he should be crucified.

JESUS descended from the mount, and came to Bethany, and turning into the house of Simon the leper, Mary Magdalen having been reproved by Judas for spending ointment upon JESUS feet, it being so unaccustomed and large a profusion, thought now to speak her love once more, and trouble no body, and therefore she poured ointment on his sacred head, believing that being a pomposnesse of a more accustomed festivity would be indulged to the expressions of her affection; but now all the Disciples murmured, wondering at the prodigiousnesse of the womans religion, great enough to consume a province in the overflowings of her thankfullnesse and duty. But JESUS now also entertained the sincerity of her miraculous love, adding this Prophesie, that where the Gospel should be preached, there also a record of this act should be kept, as a perpetuall monument of her piety, and an attestation of his divinity, who could foretell future contingencies; Christianity receiving the greatest argument from that, which Saint Peter calls, *the surer word of Prophecy*, meaning it to be greater then the testimony of miracles, not easie to be dissembled by impure spirits, and whose efficacy shoule descend to all ages; for this prophesie shall for ever be fulfilling, and being every day verified does every day preach the Divinity of Christs person and of his institution.

Two dayes before the Passeover the scribes and Pharisees called a counsell to contrive crafty wayes of destroying JESUS, they not daring to do it by open violence; Of which meeting when Judas Iscariot had notice (for those assemblies were publike and notorious) he ran from Bethany and offered himself to betray his Master to them, if they would give him a considerable reward. They agreed for thirty pieces of silver; of what value each piece was, is uncertain, but their own nation hath given a rule, that when a piece of silver is named in the Pentateuch, it signifies a *sicle*; if it be named in the Prophets, it signifies a *pound*; if in the other writings of the old testantient, it signifies a *talent*; this therefore being alledged out of the Prophet Jereniy \* by one of the Evangelists, it is probable, the price at which Judas sold his *LORD* was thirty pound weight of silver; a goodly price for the SAVIOUR of the world to be prized at, by his undiscerning and unworthy Countreymen.

The next day was the first day of unleavened bread, on which it was necessary they should kill the Passeover; therefore JESUS sent Peter and John to the city to a certain man, whom they should finde carrying a pitcher of water to his house; him they should follow, and there prepare the Passeover. They went and found the man in the same circumstances, and prepared for JESUS and his family, who at the even came to celebrate the Passeover. It was the house of John frnamed Mark, which had alwaies been open to this blessed family, where he was pleased to finish his last supper, and the mysteriousnesse of the vespers of his passion.

When evening was come, Jefus stood with his Disciples & eat the Paschal lamb, after which he girt himself with a towel, & taking a bafin wash'd the feet of his Disciples, not onely by the ceremony, but in his discourses instructing them in the doctrine of humility, which the Master by his so great condescension to his Disciples had made sacred, and imprinted the lesson in lasting characters, by making it symbolical. But Peter was unwilling to be washed by his Lord until he was told he must renounce his part in him, unless he

Elias Levita *Jud. in Tiefb. ARIAS Montanus in dictio. Syro-Chaldaic.*

\* Matth. 20. ubi citatur Jeremias pro Zecharias, per errorum illationem in Codices, Nam tempore S. Augustini in non nullis Codicibus ut Zecharias legitur; et quod hodie in Syrac. etiam formulis ex coram uno hoc est, deinde a Jeremias diffunduntur multa alia in ver. Tertius, non descripta, & in N.T. reperiuntur: quod eo magis est credibile quia præverbiatus dictum apud Iudeos, spiritum Jeremias refecisse in Zecharia.

Alexand. Manapud Mezaphrauen die n. Janis vide Adr. hom. in de script. Jerusal.

Part III.

were washed, which option being given to Peter, he cryed out, *not my feet only, but my hands and my head.* But JESUS said, the ablution of the feet was sufficient for the purification of the whole man; relating to the custome of those countries, who used to go to supper immediately from the baths, who therefore were sufficiently clean save only on their feet, by reason of the dust contracted in their passage from the baths to the dining-rooms; from which when by the hospitable master of the house they were caused to be cleansed, they needed no more ablution and by it JESUS passing from the letter to the spirit meant, that the body of sin was washed in the baths of baptisme; and afterwards, if we remained in the same state of purity, it was only necessary to purge away the filth contracted in our passage from the Font to the altar; and then we are clean all over, when the Baptismall state is unaltered and the little adherencies of imperfection and passions are also wash-ed off.

17

But after the manduacion of the Paschal lambe, it was the custome of the nation to sit down to a second supper, in which they eat herbs and unleavened bread; the *Major Domus* first dipping his morsell, and then the family; after which, the Father brake bread into pieces, and distributed a part to every of the Guests, and first drinking himself, gave to the rest the chalice filled with wine according to the age and dignity of the person; Adding to each distribution a form of benediction proper to the mystery, which was Eucharisticall and commemorative of their deliverance from Egypt: this supper JESUS being to celebrate, changed the forms of benediction, turned the ceremony into mystery, and gave his body and blood in Sacrament and religious configuration, so instituting the venerable Sacrament which from the time of its institution is called the *Lords supper*, which rite JESUS commanded the Apostles to perpetuate in commemoration of him their Lord, untill his second co-ming and this was the first delegation of a perpetuall ministry, which JESUS made to his Apostles, in which they were to be succeeded to, in all generations of the Church.

18.

But JESUS being troubled in spirit told his Apostles, that one of them should betray him; which prediction he made that they might not be scandalized at the sadnesse of objection of the passion, but be confirmed in their belief seeing so great demonstration of his wisdom and spirit of Prophesie. The Disciples were all troubled at this sad arrest and looking one on another, doubting of whom he spake; but they beckned to the be-loved Disciple, leaning on JESUS breast, that he might ask: for they who knew their own innocency and infirmity were desirous to satisfie their curio-sity, and to be rid of their indetermination and their fear. But JESUS being asked gave them a signe, and a sop to Judas, commanding him to do what he list speedily; for JESUS was extremely streightned till he had drunk the chalice off, and accomplished his mysterious and afflictive baptisme. After Judas received the sop, the Devil entred into him, and Judas went forth immedately, it being now night.

19.

When he was gone out, JESUS began his farewell Sermon, rarely mixt of sadnesse and joyes, and studded with mysteries as with Emeraulds, dis-coursing of the glorification of GOD in his son, and of those glories, which the Father had prepared for him; of his suddain departure, and

and his migration to a place, whither they could not come yet, but afterwards they should, meaning, first to death, and then to glory, commanding them to loue one another, and foretelling to Peter (who made confident protests, that he would dye with his Master) that before the cock should crow twice, he should deny him thrice: But least he should afflict them with too sad representements of his present condition, he comforts them with the comforts of faith, with the intendments of his departure to prepare places in heaven for them, whither they might come by him, who is the way, the truth and the life, adding a promise in order to their present support, and future felicities, that if they should ask of GOD any thing in his name, they should receive it, and upon condition they would love him, and keep his commandments he would pray for the holy Ghost to come upon them, to supply his room, to furnish them with proportionable comforts, to enable them with great gifts, to lead them into all truth, and to abide with them for ever; then arming them against future persecutions, giving them divers holy precepts, discoursing of his emanation from the Father, and of the necessity of his departure, he gave them his blessing and prayed for them, and then, having sung a hymne, which was part of the great Alleluiah beginning at the 114 psalme, [When Israel came out of Egypt] and ending at the 118 inclusively, went forth with his Disciples over the brook Cedron unto the mount of olives to a village called Gethsemani, where there was a garden, into which he entered to pray together with his Disciples.

But taking Peter, James and John apart with him about a stones cast from the rest, he began to be exceeding sorrowfull and sad even unto death. For now he saw the ingredients of his bitter draught, powring into the chalice, and the sight was full of horrour and amazement; he therefore fell on his face and prayed, O my Father, if it be possible let this cup passe from me. In this prayer he fell into so sad an agony, that the paines inflicted by his Fathers wrath, and made active by his own apprehension were so great, that a sweat distilled from his sacred body as great and conglobated as drops of blood; and God who heard his prayer, but would not answer him in kind, sent an Angel to comfort him in the sadness, which he was pleased not to take away. But knowing that the drinking this cup was the great end of his coming into the world he laid aside all his own interests, and deuested himselfe of the affections of flesh and blood, willing his Fathers will; and because his Father commanded, he in defiance of sense and passion was desirous to suffer all our paines. But as when two seas meet, the billows contest in ungentle embraces and make violent noises, till having wearied themselves into smaller waves and disunited drops they run quietly into one stream: so did the spirit and nature of JESUS assault each other with disagreeing interests, and distinguishing disputations, till the earnestnesse of the contention was diminished by the demonstrations of the spirit, and the prevailings of grace, which the sooner got the victory, because they were not to contest with an unsanctified or a rebellious nature, but a body of affections which had no strong desires, but of its own preservation; and therfore JESUS went thrice, and prayed the same prayer, that if it were possible the cup might passe from him, and thrice made an act of resignation; and in the intervals came and found his Apostles asleep, gently chiding their incuriousnesse,

29.

quidam ex Hegelippo norant ex irroratione Sanguinis Christi natam arborem sic philippus Esquini et alii. Sed haec sunt erroris nugae.

## Sect. 15. HISTORY OF THE ACCIDENTS FROM THE DEATH

## Part III.

21.

and warning them to *watch and pray*, that they *enter not into temptation*; till the time that the *waytour* came with a multitude armed with swords and staves from the Priests and Elders of the people to apprehend him.

*Judas* gave them the opportunity of the night, that was all the advantage they had by him, because they durst not seize him by day for fear of the people, but he signified the person of his Master to the soildiers by a kiss, and an address of seeming civility. But when they came towards him, *IESUS* said, *Whom seek ye?* they said, *IESUS of Nazareth.* He said, *I am he.* But there was a Divinity upon him, that they could not seize him at first; but like a wave climbing of a Rock is beat back and scattered into members, till falling down it creeps with gentle waftings and kisses the feet of the stony mountain, and so encircles it: So the soildiers coming at first with a rude attempt, were twice repelled by the glory of his person, till they falling at his feet were at last admitted to the seizure of his body, having by those involuntary prostrations confessed his power greater then theirs, and that the lustre and influence of a GOD are greater then the violences and rudenesses of Souldiers. And still they like weak eyes durst not behold the glory of this Sunne, till a cloud like a dark veil did interrupt the emmissions of his glories; they could not seize upon him, till they had thrown a veil upon his holy face; which although it was a custome of the Easterlings, and of the Roman Empire \* generally, yet in this case was violence and necessity, because a certain impetuosity and vigorousnesse of spirit, and divinity issuing from his holy face made them to take sanctuary in darknesse, and to throw a veil over him in that dead time of a sad and dismal night. But *Peter*, a stout \* Galilean, bold and zealous attempted a rescue, and smote a servant of the high Priest and cut off his ear; but *JESUS* rebuked the intemperance of his passion, and commanded him to put up his sword, saying, *all they that strike with the sword, shall perish with the sword*, so putting a bridle upon the illegal inflictions and expresses of anger or revenge from an incompetent authority. But *JESUS* touched *Malchus* ear and cured it.

22.

When *JESUS* had yeelded himself into their power, and was now led away by the chief Priest, Captains of the Temple, Elders of the people, and Souldiers, who all came in combination and covenant to surprize him, his Disciples fled, and *John* the Evangelist, who with grief and an over-running phansie had forgot to lay aside his upper garment, which in festivals they are used to put on, began to make escape, but being arrested by his linen upon his bare body, was forced to leave that behinde him, that himself might escape his Masters danger; for now was verified the prophetical saying, *I will smite the Shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered.* But *Peter* followed afarre off; and the greatness of *Johns* love, when hee had mastered the first inconsiderations of his fear, made him to returne a while after into the High Priests Hall.

23.

*JESUS* was first led to *Annas*, who was the Prince of the Sanhedrim, and had cognisance of Prophets and publick doctrines; who therefore enquired of *JESUS*, concerning his Disciples and his Discipline; but

*S.Hieron. in  
c. 9. Matt.  
\*I Lictor, obnu-  
be caput Libo-  
ratoris Urbis  
knjus. Livit.  
\* Om Spouse  
Exes Σικω.  
Nonn.*

but he answered that his doctrine had been publike or popular, that he never taught in conventicles: and therfore referred him to the testimony of all the people : for which free answer , a servant standing by , smote him on the face , and JESUS meekely asked him , what evil he had done ? But *Annas* without the seventy assessoris could judge nothing, and therefore sent him bound to *Caiaphas*, who was high Priest that yeer, President of the rites of the temple, as the other high Priest was of the great Councell. Thither *Peter* came , and had admission by the meanes of another Disciple supposed to be *John* , who having sold his possessions in Galilee to *Caiaphas*, came and dwelt neere mount Sion , but was by intervention of that bargain made known to the high Priest , and brought *Peter* into the house ; where when *Peter* was challenged three times by the servants , to be a Galilean and of JESUS family , he denied and forswore it , till JESUS looking back reminded him of his prediction , and the foulenesse of the crime , and the cock crew ; for it was now the second cocke crowing after ten of the clocke in the fourth watch ; and *Peter* went out , and wept bitterly , that he might cleanse his soul, washing off the foul stains, he had contracted in his shamefull perjury and denyeing of his LORD. And it is reported of the same holy person, that ever after , when he heard the cock crow he wept , remebering the old instrument of his conversion , and his own unworthiness for which he never ceased to do actions of sorrow and sharp repen-

*Arsenius in  
vitis pp.*

24.

On the morning the councell was to assemble ; and whilst JESUS was detained in expectation of it , the servants mocked him , and did all actions of affront , and ignoble despight to his sacred head : and because the Question was , whether he were a Prophet , they covered his eyes and smote him in derision , calling on him to prophesie who smote him. But in the morning , when the high Priests and rulers of the people were assembled , they sought false witnessesse against JESUS , but found none to purpose ; they raid boldy and could prove nothing , they accused vehemently , and the allegations were of such things as were no crimes , and the greatest article , which the united diligence of all their malice could pretend was that he said he would destroy the temple , and in three dayes build it up again ; but JESUS neither answered this nor to any other of their vainer allegations ; for the witnesses destroyed each others testimony by their disagreeing ; till at last , *Caiaphas* , who to verifie his Prophesie and to satisfie his ambition , and to baitre his envy was furiously determined JESUS should die , adjures him by the living GOD to say whether he were the CHRIST , the son of the living GOD. JESUS knew his designe to be an inquisition of death, not of piety or curiositie, yet because his hour was now come, openly affirmed it without any expedient to elude the high Priests malice, or to decline the Question.

When *Caiaphas* heard the saying, he accused JESUS of Blasphemy, and pretended an apprehension so tragically, that he overacted his wonder and fained-detestation , for he rent his garments ( which was the interjection of the Country, and custome of the nation, but forbidden to the high

25

## Part III.

Priest;) and called presently to sentence, and as it was agreed before hand, they all condemned him as guilty of death, and as far as they had power, inflicted it; for they beat him with their fists, smote him with the palmes of their hands, spit upon him, and abused him beyond the license of enraged tyrants. When Judas heard that they had passed the finall and decretry sentence of death upon his LORD, he who thought not, it would have gone so far, repented him to have been an instrument of so damnable a machination, and came and brought the silver, which they gave him for hire, threw it in amongst them, and said *I have sinned in betraying the innocent blood.* But they incurious of those hell torments Judas felt within him, because their own fires burnt not yet, dismissed him, and upon consultation bought with the money *a field to bury strangers in.* And Judas went and hanged himself, and the judgement was made more notorious and eminent by an uniuall accident at such deaths, for he so fwell-ed, that he burst, and his bowels gushed out. But the Greek scholiast and some

<sup>a</sup> *Euthym. in 26 Matt. Cedren. in Compend. Oecumen. in c. 1. A.D.*  
<sup>b</sup> *Juvencus hist. Evang. l.4. Beda de locis Sanct. c.4. 26.*

<sup>a</sup> others report out of *Papias Saint Johns Schollar*, that *Judas* fell from the figtree, <sup>b</sup> on which he hanged, before he was quite dead, and survived his attempt somewhat, being so sad a spectacle of deformity, and pain and a prodigious tumour, that his plague was deplorable, and highly miserable, till at last he burst in the very substance of his trunk as being extended beyond the possibilities and capacities of nature.

But the high Priests had given JESUS over to the secular power, and carried him to Pilate to be put to death by his sentence and military power, but coming thither they would not enter into the judgement hall because of the feast, but Pilate met them, and willing to decline the busynesse bid them judge them according to their own law; They replied, it was not lawfull for them to put any man to death, <sup>a</sup> meaning during the seven dayes of unleavened bread (as appears in the instance of Herod, who detained Peter in prison, intending after Easter to bring him out to the people) and their malice was resolute, till the sentence they had passed were put in execution, others thinking that all the right of inflicting capitall punishments was taken from the nation by the Romans; and Josephus writes, that when Ananias their high Priest had by a Councell of the Jews condemned Saint James the brother of our LORD, and put him to death without the consent of the Roman President he was deprived of his Priesthood. But because Pilate who either by common right, or at that time was the Judge of capitall inflictions was averse from intermeddling in the condemnation of an innocent person, they attempted him with excellent craft; for knowing that Pilate was a great servant of the Roman greatness, and a hater of the sect of the Galileans, the high Priest accused JESUS, that he was of that sect, that he denied paying tribute to Cesar, that he called himself King. Concerning which when Pilate interrogated JESUS he answered that his Kingdom was not of this world; and Pilate thought he had nothing to do with the other, he came forth again and gave testimony, that he found nothing worthy of death in JESUS. But hearing that he was a Galilean and of Herods jurisdiction, Pilate sent him to Herod, who was at Jerusalem at the feast, and Herod was glad, because he had heard much of him, and since his return from Rome had desired to see him: but could not by reason of his own avocations, and the ambulatory life of CHRIST; and now he hoped

so see a miracle done by him, of whom he had heard so many. But the event of this was, that JESUS did there no miracle, Herods soldiery set him at naught and mocked him, and that day Herod was reconciled to Pilate, and JESUS was sent back arrayed in a white and splendid garment ; which though possibly might be intended for derision yet was a symbole of innocence, condemned persons usually being arrayed in blacks ; and when Pilate had again examined him, J E S U S meek as a lamb, and as a sheep before the shearers opened not his mouth, in so much that Pilate wondred ; perceiving the greatest innocence of the man by not offering to excuse or lessen any thing ; though Pilate had power to release him or crucify him, yet his contemp of death was in just proportion to his innocence , which also Pilate concealeed not, for he published J E S U S S innocence by Herods and his own sentence ; to the great regret of the Rulers, who like raving wolves thirsted for a draught of blood and to devour the morning prey.

But Pilate hoped to prevail upon the Rulers, by making it a favour from them to JESUS, and an indulgence from him to the nation to set him free ; for oftentimes even malice it self is driven out by the Devil of self love, and so we may be acknowledged the authors of a saferty we are content to rescue a man, even from our own selves. Pilate therefore offered that according to the custome of the nation JESUS should be released for the honour of the present festivall, and as a donative to the people ; but the spirit of malice was here the more prevalent, and they desired that Barabbas a murderer, a Thief, and a seditious person shoud be exchanged for him. Then Pilate casting about all wayes to acquit JESUS of punishment, and himself of guilt, offered to scourge him and let him go, hoping that a lesser draught of blood might stop the furies and rabidnesse of their passion, without their bursting with a river of his best and vitall liquor. But these leeches would not so let go ; they cry out, crucifie him ; and to engage him finally they told him, if he did let this man go, he was no friend to Cesar.

But Pilate called for water, and washed his hands, to demonstrate his own unwillingnesse, and to reject and transmit the guilt upon them, who took it on them as greedily as they sucked the blood ; they cryed out, *his blood be on us, and our children.* As Pilate was going to give sentence his wife being troubled in her dreams, sent with the earnestnesse and passion of a woman, that he should *have nothing to do with that just person* ; but he was engaged ; Cesar and JESUS, GOD and the King did seem to have different interests, or at least he was threatned into that opinion, and Pilate though he was satisfied, it was but calumny and malice , yet he was loath to venture upon his answere at Rome in case the high Priest should have accused him ; for no man knows whether the interest, or the mistake of his Judge may cast the sentence ; and whoever is accused strongly is never thought intirely innocent, and therefore not onely against the Divine laws, bat against the Romian too, he condemned an innocent person upon objections notoriously malicious ; he adjudged him to a death, which was onely due to publike theves and homicides, (crimes with which he was not charg'd) upon a pretence of blasphemy, of which he stood accused but not convicted, and for which by the Jewish law he should have been stoned if found guilty : And this he did put into present execution against the Tiberian law, which

## Part III.

about twelve years before decreed in favour of condemned persons, that after sentence execution should be deferred ten days.

Sueton. ad Tiberio  
c. 75.  
Dio Rom hist. l. 57.  
Sub Tiberio & Druso  
Coss. corruptus a. cit  
codex epist. Sidoni  
qui ait, nunc ex ve  
rente S. C. Tiberiano  
triginta dierum vitam  
poti sententiam  
trahit.

29.  
I. in servorum. D. de  
panis.  
I. levia D. de accus.

And now was the holy Lamb to bleed, first therefore Pilates souldiers arayed him in a kingly robe, put a reed in his hand for a sceptre, plat a crown of thorns and put it on his head, they bow the knee and mock him, they smite hym with his phantastick sceptre, and instead of tribute pay him with blowes and spittings upon his holy head; and when they had empetyed the whole stock of poisonous contempt, they deuest him of the robes of mockery, and put him on his own: they lead him to a pillar and binde him fast, and scourge him with whips, a punishment that slaves only did use to suffer (free persons being in certain cases beaten with rods and clubs) that they might adde a new scorne to his afflictions, and make his sorrows like their own guilt, vast and mountainous. After which Barabbas being set free, Pilate delivered JESUS to be crucified.

The souldiers therefore having framed a crosse sad and heavy, laid it upon JESUS shoulders, (who like Isaack bore the wood, with which he was to be sacrificed himself) and they drive him out to crucifixion, who was scarce able to stand under that intollerable load; and when he fainted, they compell Simon a Cyrenian to help him. A great and a mixt multitude followed JESUS to Golgotha, the charnell house of the city and the place of execution. But the women wept with bitter exclamations, and their sadness was encreased by the sad predictions JESUS then made of 'their future misery, saying, ye daughters of Jerusalem weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children, for the time shall come that men shall say, Blessed are the barren that never bare, and the paps that never gave suck, for they shall call on the hils to cover them, and on the mountains to fall upon them, that by a sudden ruine, they may escape the lingring calamities of famine and fear, and the horrour of a thousand deaths.'

When JESUS was come to Golgotha, a place in the mount of Calvary (where according to the tradition of the \* Ancients Adam was buried, and where a Abraham made an altar for the sacrifice of his son) by the piety of his Disciples, and (it is probable) of those good women, which did use to minister to him, there was provided wine mingled with myrrhe, which among the Levantines is an excellent & pleasant b mixture, & such as the piety and indulgence of the nations used to administer to condemned persons. But JESUS, who by voluntary susception did choose to suffer our pains, refused that refreshment, which the piety of the women presented to him; The souldiers having strippd him, naild him to the crosse with four nailes, and divided his mantle into four parts, giving to each souldier a part, but for his coat, because it would be spoiled, if parted, it being weaved without seam, they cast lots for it.

Now Pilate had caused a title containing the cause of his death to be supercribed on a table in Latine, Greek, and Hebrew, JESUS of Nazareth, King of the Jewes, But the Pharisees would have it altered, and that he said he was King of the Jewes: but Pilate out of wilfulness, or to do despight to the nation, or in honour to JESUS whom he knew to be a just person, or being overruled by divine providence, refused to alter it; and there were crucified with JESUS two theives, JESUS being in the midst, according to the Prophecy; he was reckoned with the transgressours. Then JESUS prayed for his persecutors; Father forgive them for they know

31.  
Golgotha locus est  
capitis, Galvaria  
quondam  
Lingua paterna prior,  
sic illum nomine  
dixit.  
Hic hominum pri  
mam suscepimus esse  
sepultum.  
Hic medium teret est  
a Tertul. lib. 2.  
contra Marcion.  
Origen. tract. 35. in  
Math.  
Basil. in Levit. c. 55.  
Arian de pass. &  
cruce, & see o. n. 3  
pp. unicus exceptio  
Hieronymo,  
in epist. ad Ephes.  
c. 5. & in c. 27. Matt.  
a. 5. Aug. febr. 71.  
de tempore.  
b Plin. nat hist. l. 14  
c. 13.  
Athanaeus l. 11. 30.  
Si calidam potas, ar  
densi myrra Falerno  
Convenit, & melior  
si vapor inde meros.  
Marital. l. 14.

32.

Proconsulis tabella;  
sententia est, quae fe  
mel letat, nec augeri  
litera una, nec minuti  
potest; sed uocu  
recitat, ita provinciar  
instrumento refertur.  
Apulei l. 1. Florido.

not, what they doe. But while JESUS was full of pain and charity, and was praying and dying for his Enemies, the Rulers of the Jewes mocked him; upbraiding him with the good works he did, and the expresses of his power; saying, *he saved others, himself he cannot save*; others saying, *let him come down from the Croffe, if he be the King of the Jews and we will beleeve in him*; and others according as their malice was determined by fancy and occasion added weight and scorn to his pains, and of the two malefactors that were crucified with him, one reviled him, saying, *If thou be the CHRIST, save thy self and us*. And thus far the Devill prevailed undoing himself in riddle, provoking men to do despight to CHRIST, and to heighten his passion out of hatred to him, and yet doing and promoting that, which was the ruin of all his own kingdom and potent mischiefs; like the \* Jew who in indignation against Mercury, threw stones at his image, and yet was by his superior judged idolatrous, that being the manner of doing honour to the Idol among the gentiles. But then CHRIST who had upon the Croffe prayed for his enemies, and was heard of GOD in all that he desired, felt now the beginnings of successe. For the other theef whom the present pains and circumstances of JESUS passion had softened and made believing, reproved his fellow for not fearing GOD, confessed that this death hapned to them deservedly, but to JESUS causelessly: and then prayed to JESUS, *LORD remember me, when thou comest into thy kingdom*. Which combination of pious acts, and miraculous conversion JESUS entertained with a speedy promise of glory, promising that upon that very day he should be with him in Paradise.

*Now there were standing by the Croffe the mother of Jesus and her sister, and Mary Magdalene and John: and JESUS being upon his deathbed, although he had no temporall estate to bestow, yet he would make provision for his Mother, who being a widow, and now childelele was likely to be exposed to necessity and want; and therefore he did arrogate John the beloved Disciple into Maries kindred, making him to be her adopted son, and her to be his Mother by fiction of Law. Woman behold thy son; and Man behold thy Mother. And from that time forward John took her home to his own houfe, which he had neer mount Sion, after he had sold his inheritance in Galilee to the high Priest.*

While these things were doing, the whole frame of nature seemed to be dissolved and out of order, while their LORD and Creatour suspeted: For the sun was so darkned, that the stars appeared, and the Eclipse was prodigious in the manner aswell as in degree, because the Moon was not then in conjunction, but full; and it was noted by Phlegon the freed man of the Emperour Hadrian, by Lucian out of the acts of the Galls, and Dionysius while he was yet a heathen; excellent schollars all, great historians and Philosophers, who also noted the day of the week and hour of the day, agreeing with the circumstances of the croffe: For the sun hid his head from beholding such a prodigy of sin and sadness, and provided a veil for the nakednes of JESUS, that the women might be present, and himself die, with modesty.

The eclipse and the Passion began at the fixt houre and endured till the ninth, about which time JESUS being tormented with the unufferable load of his Fathers wrath, due for our sins, and wearied with pains and heavnesse, cryed out, *My God, My God why hast thou forsaken me?* and, as it is thought, repeated the whole two and twentieth Psalme, which is an admirable

\* R. Minasses, vide  
Dyonit. Volum. in  
anno. ad Rab. B.  
Maimon.

33.

34.

Origen. contr.  
Celi. l. 2.  
Tertul. Apolog.  
Lucian in ait. sui  
Mirt. August. ep. 80  
ad Hesychium. Suidas  
in vita Dyonis. ait.  
cum dixisse; Aut  
Deus patitur, aut pa-  
tienti compatis: &  
ha de causa Athen-  
enses exercit. aram.  
λύρας φ Θεω  
ajunt quidam.

5.

## Part III.

\* Plin. nat. hist.  
c 31 c 11 Ve-  
teres Spongiae  
conglutinant  
vulne a  
Tertul. de spect.  
c 25. poterit &  
de misericordia  
moveri defixis  
in mortuis uno-  
runt, & spongiae  
retiati orum.

admirable narrative of the passion, full of prayer and sadness, and description of his pains at first, and of Eucharist and joy and prophecy at the last. But these first words, which it is certain and recorded that he spake, was in a language of it self, or else by reason of distance not understood, for they thought he had called for *Elías* to take him down from the Crosse : Then JESUS being in the agonies of a high Fever, said, *I thirst, and one ran and filled a sponge with vinegar wrapping it with hyssop and put it on a reed, that he might drink.* The vinegar and the \* sponge were in executions of condemned persons set to stop the too violent issues of blood, and to prolong the death ; but were exhibited to him in scorn ; mingled with gall, to make the mixture more horrid and ungentle. But JESUS tasted it only, and refused the draught ; and now knowing that the Prophesies were fulfilled, his Fathers wrath appealed, and his torments satisfactory, he said, *it is finished, and crying with a loud voice, Father into thy hands I commend my spirit, he bowed his head and yielded up his spirit into the hands of GOD ;* and dyed, hastning to his Fathers glories. Thus did this glorious Sun set in a sad and clouded West, running speedily to shine in the other World.

36.

S. Hierom. ep.  
150. q. 8.

Then was the veil of the Temple, which separated the seceret Mosaick rites from the eyes of the people, *rent in the midſt from the top to the bottome,* and the Angels, presidents of the Temple called to each other to depart from their seats ; and so great an Earthquake happened, that the rocks did rend, the mountains trembled, the graves opened, and the bodies of dead persons arose walking from their coemeteries to the holy City, and appeared unto many ; and so great apprechensions and amazements happened to them all that stood by, that they departed, smiting their breasts with sorrow and fear ; and the Centurion, that ministred at the execution, said ; *Certainly this was the Son of GOD ;* and he became a Disciple, renouncing his military imployment, and dyed a Martyr.

37.

Apud Metaph.  
die 16. Octob.

But because the next day was the Jews Sabbath, and a Paschal Festival besides, the Jews hastened that the bodies should be taken from the Crosse, and therefore sent to Pilate to hasten their death by breaking their legs, that before Sun-set they might be taken away, according to the commandment, and be buried. The souldiers therefore came, and brake the legs of the two theevess ; but espying, and wondring that J E S U S was already dead they brake not his legs ; for the Scripture foretold, that a bone of him should not be broken ; but a souldier with his lance pierced his side, and immediately there streamed out two rivulets, of Water, and Blood ; but the holy Virgin Mother, whose foul during this whole Passion was pierced with a sword, and sharper sorrows, though she was supported by the comforts offaith, and thofe holy predictions of his resurrection, and future glories, which Mary had laid up in store against this great day of expence ; now that she saw her holy Sonne had suffered all, that our necessities, and their malice could require or inflict ; caused certain ministers, with whom she joyned, to take her dead Son from the Crosse, whose body when she once got free from the nails, she kissed and embraced with entertainments of the neerest vicinity that could be expressed by a person, that was holy and sad, and a Mother weeping for her dead son.

38.

Pbilo de leg.  
special.  
Deutr. 21.

But she was highly satisfied with her own meditations, that now that great mystery determined by Divine Predestination before the beginning of all ages was fulfilled in her Son ; and the Passion, that must needs be, was

was accomplished; she therefore first bathes his cold body with her warm tears, and makes clean the surface of the wounds and delivering a winding napkin to *Joseph* of Arimathea, gave to him in charge to enwrappe the body and embalm it, to compose it to the grave, and do it all the rites of funerall having first exhorted him to a publike confession of what he was privately till now; and he obeyed the counsell of so excellent a person, and ventred upon the displeasure of the Jewish rulers, and went confidently to *Pilate*, and begged the body of J E S U S. And *Pilate* gave him the power of it.

*Joseph* therefore takes the body, binds his face with a napkin, washes the body, anoints it with ointment, enwrappes it in a composition of myrrhe and aloes, and puts it into a new tomb which he for himself had hewen out of a rock (it not being lawfull among the Jewes to interre a condemned person in the common coemtries) for all these circumstances were in the Jewes manner of burying; but when the sun was set the chiefe Priests and Pharisees went to *Pilate*, telling him that J E S U S, whilst he was living, foretold his own resurrection upon the third day; and least his disciples should come and steal the body, and say he was risen from the dead, desired that the sepulchre might be secured against the danger of any such imposture. *Pilate* gave them leave to do their pleasure, even to the satisfaction of their smallest scruples. They therefore sealed the grave, rolled a great stone at the mouth of it, and as an ancient tradition fayes, bound it about with labels of iron and set a watch of soldiers, as if they had intended to have made it surer then the decrees of fate, or the never failing laws of nature.

Part III.

Metaphr. August. 15.

39.

Beda de locis  
sanctis cap. 2.  
Niceph. l. I.

c. 32.

Ad. Sect.

---

  
Ad. Sect. 15.

*Considerations of some preparatory accidents before the entrance of J E S U S into his Passion.*

**H**E that hath observed the story of the life of JESUS cannot but see it all the way to be strewed with thorns and sharp pointed stones, and although by the kisses of his feet they became precious and salutary, yet they procured to him sorrow and disease ; it was *meat and drink to him to do his Fathers will*, but it was bread of affliction, and rivers of tears to drink ; and for these he thirsted like the earth after the cool stream ; for so great was his perfection , so exact the conformity of his will, so absolute the subordination of his interior faculties to the infinite love of GOD, which sat regent in the court of his will and understanding, that in this election of accidents he never considered the taste, but the goodnesse, never distinguisched sweet from bitter; but duty and piety alwayes prepared his table. And therefore now knowing that his time determined by the Father was nigh, he hastened up to Jerusalem, *he went before his Disciples*, saith S. *Mark*, and they followed him trembling and amazed ; and yet before that even then when his brethren observed he had a designe of publication of himself, he suffered them *to go before him*, and *went up as it were in secret*. For so we are invited to Martyrdom, and suffering in a Christian cause by so great an example : the holy JESUS is gone before us, and it were *a holy contention to strive whose zeal were forwardest* in the designes of humiliation and self-denial ; but it were also well , if in doing our selves secular advantage , and promoting our worldly interest we shoulde follow him, who was ever more distant from receiving honours then from receiving a painful death. Those affections which dwell in sadnesse , and are married to grief and lye at the foot of the Crosse, and trace the sad steps of JESUS, have the wisdom of recollection, the tempers of sobriety, and are the best imitations of JESUS, and securities against the levity of a dispersed and a vain spirit. This was intimated by many of the Disciples of JESUS in the dayes of the Spirit, and when they had *tasted of the good word of GOD , and the powers of the world to come* ; for then we finde many ambitious of Martyrdom and that have laid stratagenis and designes, by unusual deaths to get a crown. The soul of S. Laurence was so scorched with so ardent desires of dying for his LORD, that he accounted the coals of his Gridiron but as a Julip or the aspersion of cold water to refresh

fresh his soul ; they were chill as the Alpine snowes in respect of the heats of his Diviner flames ; and if these lesser starres shine so brightly, and burn so warmly , what heat of love may we suppose to have been in the Sun of Righteousnesse ? If they went fast toward the crown of Martyrdom, yet we know that the holy JESUS went before them all ; no wonder that he cometh forth as a bridegroom from his chamber, and rejoiceth as a gyant to run his course.

When the Disciples had overtaken JESUS, he begins to them a sad Homily upon the old text of suffering, which he had well nigh for a year together preached upon; but because it was an unpleasing lesson, so contradictory to those interests upon the hopes of which they had entertained themselves, and spent all their desires, they could by no means understand them: for an understanding prepossessed with a fancy or an unhandsome principle, construes all other notions to the sense of the first; & whatsoever contradicts it, we think it an objection, & that we are bound to answer it. But now that it concerned CHRIST to speak so plainly , that his Disciples by what was to happen within five or six dayes might not be scandalized, or beleeve it happened to JESUS without his knowledge and voluntary entertainment, he tells them of his sufferings to be accomplished in this journey to Jerusalem ; and here the Disciples shewed themselves to be but Men, full of passion, and indiscreet affection ; and the bold Galilean S. Peter , took the boldnesse to dehort his Master from so great an infelicity ; and met with a reprehension so great, that neither the Scribes nor the Pharisees, nor Herod himself ever met with its parallel ; JESUS called him *Satan*, meaning, that no greater contradiction can be offered to the desigines of GOD, and his holy Son, then to dissuade us from suffering; and if we understood how great are the advantages of a suffering condition , we should think all our daggers gilt , and our pavements strewed with Roses, and our halters silken, and the rack an instrument of pleasure, and be most impatient of those temptations, which seduce us into ease, and divorce us from the Crosse, as being opposite to our greatest hopes and most perfect desires. But still this humour of S. Peters imperfection abides amongst us, he that breaks off the yoke of obedience, and unties the bands of Discipline , and preaches a cheap Religion, and presents Heaven in the midst of flowres, and strewes Carpets softer then the Asian luxury in the way , and sets the songs of Sion to the tunes of Persian and lighter aires , and offers great liberty of living, and bondage under affection and sins, and reconciles eternity with the present enjoyment , he shall have his schooles filled with Disciples ; but he that preaches the Crosse and the severities of Christianity, and the strictnesses of a holy life , shall have the lot of his blessed LORD, he shall be thought ill of, and deserted.

Our blessed LORD five dayes before his Passion, sent his Disciples to a village to borrow an Asse, that he might ride in triumph to Jerusalem ; he had none of his own, but yet he who was so dear to GOD could not want what was to supply his needs. It may be, GOD hath laid up our portion in the repositories of other Men ; and means to furnish us from their tables, to feed us from their granaries, and that their wardrobe shall clothe us ; for it is all one to him to make a fist bring us money, or a Crow to bring us meat, or the stable of our neighbour to furnish our needs of beasts ; if he brings it to thy need as thou wantest it, thou hast all the good in

## Part III.

in the use of the Creature, which the owners can receive. And the Horse which is lent me in charity does me as much ease, and the bread which is given me in almes feeds me as well as the other part of it, which the good Man that gave me a portion reserved for his own eating, could do to him. And if we would give GOD leave to mak provisions for us in the wayes of his own choosing, and not estimate our wants by our manner of receiving, being contented that GOD by any of his own wayes wil minister it to us, we should find our cares eased, and our content increased, and our thankfulnesse engaged, and all our moderate desires contented by the satisfaction of our needs. For if GOD is pleased to feed me by my neighbours charity, there is no other difference, but that GOD makes me an occasion of his ghostly good, as he is made the occasion of my temporal; and if we think it dispagement, we may remember that GOD conveys more good to him by me, then to me by him; and it is a proud impatience to refuse, or be angry with GODS provisions, because he hath not observed my circumstances, and ceremonies of election.

4. And now begins that great triumph, in which the holy JESUS was pleased to exalt his office, and to abase his person. He rode like a poor Man upon an Asse, a beast of burden, and the lowest value, and yet it was not his own; and in that equipage he received the acclamations due to a mighty Prince, to the Son of the eternal King; telling us, that the smallnesse of fortune, and the rudenesse of exteriour habiliments, and a rough wall, are sometimes the outsides of a great glory; and that when GOD means to gloriise or do honour to a person, he needs no help from secular advantages; he hides great riches in renunciation of the World, and makes great honour break forth from the clouds of humility, and victory to arise from yeeling, and the modesty of departing from our interest; and peace to be the reward of him that suffers all the hostilities of Men and Devils; for JESUS in this great humility of his, gives a great probation that he was the *Messias*, and the King of Sion, because no other King entred into those gates, riding upon an Asse, and received the honour of *Hosannah* in that unlikelyhood and contradiction of unequal circumstances.

5. The blessed JESUS had never but two dayes of triumph in his life; the one was his transfiguration upon mount Tabor, the other, this his riding into the holy City. But that it may appear how little were his joyes and present exteriour complacencies; in the day of his transfiguration *Moses* and *Elias* appeared to him, telling him, what great things he was to suffer: And in this day of his riding to Jerusalem he wet the Palms with a dew sweeter then the moistures upon mount Hermon, or the drops of Mannah: for to allay the little warmth of a springing joy he let down a shoure of tears, weeping over undone Jerusalem in the day of his triumph, leaving it disputable, whether he fel more joy or sorrow in the acts of love; for he triumphed to consider, that the redemption of the World was so neer; and wept bitterly that Men would not be redeemed: His joy was great to consider, that himself was to suffer so great sadness for our good; and his sorrow was very great to consider, that we would not entertain that good, that he brought and laid before us by his Passion. He was in figure as his servant *S. Pathmatus* was afterwards in letter and true story, crucified upon palms; which indeed was the Embleme of a victory; but yet, such as had leaves sharp, pointant, and vexatious. However, he entred into Jerusalem dressed in

Palma est victoru<sup>m</sup>, palme tu  
affixus es, ergo  
Iesus obi, quo-  
niam non nulli  
victor cibis.

in gayeties, which yet he placed under his feet ; but with such pomps and solemnities, each family according to its proportion was accustomed to bring the Paschal Lamb to be slain for the Pasceover ; and it was not an undecent ceremony, that the Lamb slain from the beginning of the world should be brought to his slaughter with the acknowledgements of a religious solemnity , because now that real good was to be exhibited to the world , which those little Paschal Lambs did but signify, and represent in shadow ; and that was the true cause of all the little joy he had.

And if we consider what followed, it might seem also to be a designe to heighten the dolorousnesse of his person ; for to descend from the greatest of worldly honours , from the adoration of a GOD, and the acclamations to a King, to the death of a slave, and the torments of a Crosse, and the dishonours of a condemned' criminall, were so great stoopings and vast changes, that they gave height and sense and excellency to each other. This then seemd an excellent glory, but indeed was but an art and instrument of grief; for such is the nature of all our felicities, they end in sadness and encrease the sting of sorrows , and adde moment to them, and cause impatience and uncomfortable remembrances ; but the griefs of a Christian, whether they be instances of repentance, or parts of persecutio-  
n, or exercises of patience, end in joy and endlesse comfort. Thus JESUS like a rainbow half made of the glories of light, and half of the moisture of a cloud, half triumph and half sorrow, entred into that town where he had done much good to others, and to himself received nothing but affronts ; yet his tenderesse encreased upon him, and that very journey , which was CHRISTS last solemn visit for their recovery, he doubled all the instruments of his mercy and their conversion ; he rode in triumph, the chil-  
dren sang *Hosannah* to him, he cured many diseased persons , he wept for them, and pitied them, and fighed out the intimations of a prayer, and did penance for their ingratitude , and staid all day there, looking about him towards evening, and no Man would invite him home, but he was forced to go to Bethany,where he was sure of an hospitable entertainment.I think no Christian that reads this, but will be full of indignation at the whole City, who for malice or for fear durst not receive their Saviour into their hou ses, and yet we do worse ; for now that he is become our LORD with mightier demonstrations of his eternal power, we suffer him to look round about upon us for moneths and yeers together, and possibly never entertain him till our house is ready to rush upon our heads, and we are going to unusual and stranger habitations. And yet in the midst of a populous and mutinous City this great King had some good subjects, persons that threw away their own garments, and laid them at the feet of our LORD, that being devested of their own, they might be reinvested with a robe of his righteousness, wearing that till it were changed into a stole of glory ; the very ceremony of their reception of the LORD became symbolical to them, and expressive of all our duties.

But I consider, that the blessed JESUS had affections not lesse then infinite towards all mankinde ; and he who wept upon Jerusalem, who had done so great despit to him, and within five dayes were to fill up the measure of their iniquities, and do an act, which all ages of the world could never repeat in the same instance, did also in the number of his tears reckon

Part III.

our sins as sad considerations and incentives of his sorrow. And it would well become us to consider, what great evil we do, when our actions are such as for which our blessed L O R D did weep. He who was seated in the bosom of felicity, yet he moistened his fresh Lawrells upon the day of his triumph with tears of love, and bitter alloy. His day of triumph was a day of sorrow, and if we would weep for our own sins, that instance of sorrow would be a day of triumph and jubilee.

8. From hence the holy JESUS went to Bethany, where he had another manner of reception than at the holy city. There he supped; for his goodly day of triumph had been with him a fasting day. And *Mary Magdalene*, who had spent one box of Nard pistick upon our LORDS feet as a sacrifice of Eucharist for her conversion, now bestowed another in thankfullnesse for the restitution of her brother *Lazarus* to life, and configned her L O R D unto his buriall; and here she met with an evil interpreter; *Judas*, an Apostle, one of the L O R D S own family pretended it had been a better religion to have given it to the poor; but it was malice, and the spirit either of envy or avarice in him that passed that sentence; for he that sees a pious action well done, and seeks to undervalue it, by telling how it might have been better, reproves nothing but his own spirit. For a man may do very well, and GOD would accept it, though to say, he might have done better is to say onely, that action was not the most perfect and absolute in its kinde; but to be angry at a religious person and without any other pretence, but that he might have done better, is spirituall envy; for a pious person would have nourished up that infant action by love and praise, till it had grown to the most perfect and intelligent piety; but the event of that man gave the interpretation of his present purpose; and however, it could be no other then a rash judgement of the action, and intention, of a religious, thankfull, and holy person. But she found her L O R D, who was her Beneficiary in this, become her Patron and her Advocate. And hereafter when we shall finde the Devil the great accuser of GODS saints, object against the piety and religion of holy persons; a cup of cold water shall be accepted unto reward and a good intention heightned to the value of an exteriour exprefion; and a piece of gumme to the equality of a holocaust, and an action done with great zeal and an intense love to be acquitted from all its adherent imperfections, C H R I S T receiving them into himself, and being like the Altar of incense hallowing the very smoake, and raising it into a flame, and entertaining it into the embraces of the firmament and the bosom of heaven. CHRIST himself who is the Judge of our actions is also the entertainer and object of our charity and duty, and the advocate of our persons.

*Judas* who declaimed against the woman, made tacite reflexions upon his L O R D for suffering it; and indeed every obloquy against any of C H R I S T S servants is looked on as an arrow shot into the heart of CHRIST himself; and now a persecution being begun against the L O R D within his own family, another was raised against him from without. For the chief priests took crafty counsel against JESUS, and called a confilctory to contrive how they might destroy him: and here was the greatest representment of the goodness of GOD and the ingratitude of man that could be practised or understood. How often had JESUS poured forth tears for them, how many sleeplesse nights had he awaked to do them advantage? How many dayes

dayes had he spent in Homilies and admirable visitations of mercy and charity in casting out Devils, in curing their sick, in correcting their delinquencies, in reducing them to the wayes of security and peace, and that we may use the greatest expressions in the World, that is, his own, *in gathering them as a Hen gathereth her chickens under her wings*, to give them a strenght, and warmth, and life, and ghostly nourishment? And the chief Priests together with their faction use all arts and watch all opportunities to get CHRIST, not that they might possess him, but to destroy him, little considering that they extinguish their own eyes, and destroy that spring of life, which was intended to them for a blissful immortality.

And here it was that the Devil shewed his promptnesse to furnish every evil intended person with apt instruments to act the very worst of his intentions; the Devil knew their purposes and the aptnesse and proclivity of *Judas*, and by bringing these together he served their present designe, and his own great intendment. The Devil never fails to promote every evil purpose; and except where GODS restraining grace does intervene and interrupt the opportunity by interposition of different and crosse accidents to serve other ends of providence; no man easily is fond of wickednesse, but he shall receive enough to ruine him. Indeed *Nero* and *Julian*, both witty Men and powerful, desired to have been Magicians, and could not; and although possibly the Devill would have corresponded with them, who yet were already his own in all degrees of security, yet GOD permitted not that, lest they might have understood new wayes of doing despight to Martyrs and afflicted Christians. And it concernes us, not to tempt GOD, or invite a forward enemy; for as we are sure the Devil is ready to promote all vicious desires, and bring them out to execution; so we are not sure that GOD will not permit him; and he that defires to be undone, and cares not to be prevented by GODS restraining grace shall finde his ruine in the folly of his own desires, and become wretched by his own election. *Judas* hearing of this congregation of the Priests went and offered to betray his LORD, and made a covenant, the price of which was thirty pieces of silver, and he returned.

It is not intimated in the history of the life of J E S U S, that *Judas* had any malice against the person of CHRIST: For when afterwards he saw the matter was to end in the death of his LORD, he repented; but a base and unworthy spirit of covetousnesse possessed him; and the reliques of indignation for missing the price of the ointment which the holy *Magdalene* had poured upon his feet, burnt in his bowels with a secret dark melancholy fire, and made an eruption into an aet, which all ages of the World could never parallel; they appointed him for hire thirty pieces, and some say that every piece did in value equal ten ordinary current Deniers, and so *Judas* was satisfied by receiving the worth of the three hundred pence, at which he valued the Nard Piftick. But hereafter let no Christian be ashamed to be despised and undervalued; for he will hardly meet so great a reproach as to have so disproportioned a price set upon his life, as was upon the holy JESUS. Saint Mary *Magdalene* thought it not good enough to aneal his sacred feet; *Judas* thought it a sufficient price for his head; for covetousnesse aimes at base and low purchases, whilst holy

Part III.

love is great and comprehensive as the bosome of heaven, and aims at nothing that is less than infinity. The love of GOD is a holy fountain, lypid and pure, sweet and salutary, lasting and eternall. The love of money is a vertiginous pool sucking all into it to destroy it. It is troubled and uneven, giddy and unsafe, serving no end but its own, and that also in a restlesse and uneasy motion. The love of GOD spends it self upon him to receive again the reflexions of grace and benediction; the love of money spends all its desires upon it self to purchase nothing but unsatisfying instruments of exchange, or supernumerary provisions, and ends in dissatisfaction, and emptinesse of spirit, and a bitter curse. *S. Mary Magdalen* was defended by her LORD against calumny and rewarded with an honourable mention to all ages of the Church, besides the *unction from above*, which she shortly after received to configne her to crowns and scepters: but *Judas* was described in the Scripture the book of life with the black character of death, he was disgraced to eternall ages and presently after acted his own tragedy with a sad and ignoble death.

12.

Now all things being fitted, our blessed LORD sends two disciples to prepare the passeover, that he might fulfil the law of *Moses* and passe from thence to institutions Evangelicall, and then fulfill his sufferings. CHRIST gave them a signe to guide them to the house; a man bearing a pitcher of water; by which some that delight in mysticall significations say was typified the Sacrament of Baptisme: meaning, that although by occasion of the Paschal solemnity the holy Eucharist was first instituted, yet it was afterwards to be applied to practise according to the sene of this accident; only baptized persons were apt succipents of the other more perfective rite, as the taking nutriment supposes persons born into the world, and within the common conditions of humane nature. But in the letter it was an instance of the Divine omniscience who could pronounce concerning accidents at distance, as if they were present; and yet also like the provision of the colt to ride on, it was an instance of providence, and security of all GODS sons for their portion of temporalls; JESUS had not a Lamb of his own; and possibly no money in the bags to buy one; and yet Providence was his Guide, and the charity of a good man was his *Proveditore*, and he found excellent conveniences in the entertainments of a hospitable good man, as if he had dwelt in *Ahabs* Ivory house and had had the riches of *Solomon*, and the meat of his household.

The

## T H E P R A Y E R .

**O** Holy King of Sion, eternal JESUS, who with great humility and infinite love didst enter into the holy city, riding upon an ass, that thou mightest verify the predictions of the Prophets, and give example of meeknesse and of the gentle and paternal government which the Eternall Father laid upon thy shoulders; be pleased dearest LORD to enter into my soul with triumph, trampling over all thine enemies, and give me grace to entertain thee with joy and adoration, with abjection of my own desires, with lopping off all my superfluous branches of a temporall condition, and spending them in the offices of charity and religion, and devesting my self of all my desires, laying them at thy holy feet, that I may bear the yoke and burden of the LORD with alacrity, with love, and the wonders of a satisfied and triumphant spirit. LORD enter in and take possession, and thou to whose honour the very stones would give testimony, make my stony heart an instrument of thy praises; let me strew thy way with flowers of vertue and the holy Rosary of Christian graces, and by thy aid and example let us also triumph over all our infirmities and hostilities, and then lay our victories at thy feet, and at last follow thee into thy heavenly Jerusalem with palms in our hands, and joy in our hearts, and eternall acclamations on our lips, rejoicing in thee, and singing Halelujahs in a happy eternity, to thee O holy King of Sion, eternall JESUS. Amen.

2.

**O** Blessed and Dear LORD who wert pleased to permit thy self to be sold to the assemblies of evil persons for a vile price by one of thy own servants, for whom thou hadst done so great favours, and hadst designed a crown and a throne to him, and he turned himself into a sooty coal and entred into the portion of evil angels; teach us to value thee above all the joyes of men, to prize thee at an estimate beyond all the wealth of nature, to buy wisdome, and not to sell it, to part with all, that we may enjoy thee, and let no temptation abuse our understandings; no lose vex us into impatience; no frustration of hope fill us with indignation; no pressure of calamitous accidents make us angry at thee the fountain of love and blessing; no covetousnesse transport us into the suburbs of hell and the regions of sin; but make us to love thee as well as ever any creature loved thee, that we may never burn in any fires but of a holy love, nor sink in any inundation, but what proceeds from penitentiall shoures, and suffer no violence, but of implacable desires to live with thee, and when thou callest us to suffer with thee, and for thee. LORD let me never be betrayed by my self, or any violent accident and importunate temptation; let me never be sold for the vile price of temporal gain or transient pleasure, or a pleasant dream; but since thou hast bought me with a price, even then, when thou wert sold thy self, let me never be separated from thy possession. I am thine, bought with a price, LORD save me, and in the day, when thou bindest up thy jewels, remember LORD that I cost thee as dear as any, and therefore cast me not into the portion of Judas; but let me walk and dwell and bathe in the field of thy blood, and passe from hence pure and sanctified into the society of the elect Apostles, receiving my part with them, and my lot in the communications of thy inheritance; O gracious LORD and Dearest SAVIOUR JESUS. Amen.

*Considerations upon the washing of the Disciples feet by  
J E S U S, and his sermon of humility.*

2.



He holy JESUS went now to eat his last Paschall supper, and to finish the work of his legation, and to fulfill that part of the law of *Moses* in every of its smalleſt and most minute particularities, in which also the actions were ſignificant of ſpiritual duties; which we may tranſferre from the letter to the ſpirit in our own instances, that as JESUS eat the Paschall Lamb with a ſtaffe in his hand, with his loins girt, with ſandals on his feet, in great haſte, with unleavened bread and with bitter herbs: ſo we alſo ſhould do all our ſervices according to the ſignification of theſe ſymboles, leaning upon the croſſe of JESUS for a ſtaffe, and bearing the rod of his government, with loins girt with Angelicall chauſtity, with ſhoes on our feet, that ſo we may guard and have cuſtody over our affections, and *be ſlood with the preparation of the Gofpell of peace*, eating in haſte as becomes persons hungry and thirſting after righteouſneſſe, doing the work of the LORD zealousl and fervently, without the leaven of malice and ſecular iñtereſt, with bitter herbs of self-de‐nyall and mortification of our ſenfull and inordinate deſires. The ſenſe and myſtery of the whole act with all its circumſtanſes is, that we obey all the ſanctions of the Divine law, and that every part of our religion be pure and peaceable, chauſt and obedient, conſident in GOD and diſſident in our ſelves, frequent and zealous, humble and reſigned, just and charitable, and there will not eaſily be wanting any juſt circumſtanſe to hallow and conſecrate the action.

2.

When the holy JESUS had finished his laſt Mosaick rite he deſcends to give example of the firſt fruit of evangeliſcall graces: he riſes from ſupper, layes afide his garment like a ſervant, and with all the circumſtanſes of an humble miniftry washes the feet of his Disciples, begining at the firſt, S. Peter, until he came to *Judas* the Traitor, that we might in one ſcheme ſee a rare conjuſtion of charity and humility, of ſelf de‐nyall and indiſterrency, repreſented by a perſon glorious and great, their LORD and Maſter, ſad and troubled; and he chose to wash their \* feet rather then their head, that he might have the opportunity of a more humble poſture and a more apt ſignification of his charity. Thus GOD layes every thing afide, that he may ſerve his ſervants; heaven ſtoops to earth, and one abyſſe calls upon another, and the miſeries of man, which were next to infinite are excelled by a mercy equall to the immenſity of GOD. And this washing of their feet, which was an accuſtomed ciuity and entertainment of honoured ſtrangers at the begining of their meal, C H R I S T deferred to the end of the Paschall ſupper, that it might be the preparatory to the ſecond, which he intended ſhould be feſtivall to all the world: S. Peter was troubled that the hands of his L O R D ſhould wash his ſervants feet, thoſe hands which had opened the eyes of the blinde, and cured lepers, and healed all diſeaſes, and when lift up

Auctor et regis  
tu misteriorum  
dixit dicitur  
Apparetur ſuper  
nos, in idioſo  
ponit. Nonn.  
\* Idecirco pedes  
potius quam ma‐  
nus & caput:  
quia in lavandis  
pedibus, & aſſis:  
Gruſor eft ge‐  
ſus humilitatis,  
& propinquier  
ſignificatio cha‐  
ritatii, qua nos  
lavat ſanguine  
ſuo a peccatis  
noſtris. Rupert

to heaven were omnipotent, and could restore life to dead and buried persons; he counted it a great indecency for him to suffer it; but it was no more then was necessary, for they had but lately been earnest in dispute for precedency: and it was of it self so apt to swell into tumour and inconvenience, that it was not to be cured, but by some prodigy of example, and miracle of humility, which the holy JESUS offered to them in this expresse calling them to learn some great lesson; a lesson which GOD descended from heaven to earth, from riches to poverty, from essentiaill innocence to the disreputation of a sinner, from a Master to a servant to learn us, that is, that we should esteem our selves but just as we are, low, sinfull, miserable, needy and unworthy. It seems it is a great thing, that man shoud come to have just and equall thoughts of himself, that GOD used such powerfull arts to transmit this lesson, and engrave it in the spirits of men; and if the receipt fails, we are eternally lost in the mists of vanity, and enter into the condition of those Angels, whom pride transformed and spoiled into the condition of Devils, and upon consideration of this great example Guericus a good man cryed out, *Thou hast overcome, O L O R D, thou hast overcome my pride; this example hath mastered me,* I deliver my self up into thy hands, never to receive liberty or exaltation but in the condition of thy humblest servant.

And to this purpose S. Bernard hath an affectionate and devout consideration, saying that some of the Angels as soon as they were created had 'an ambition to become like GOD, and to aspire into the throne, which GOD had appointed to the holy JESUS in eternall ages: when GOD created man presently the Devil rubbed his leprosie upon him, and he would needs be like GOD too, and Satan promised him, that he should; As the evill Angels would have been like to GOD in power and majesty, so man would have been like him in knowledge, and have imitated the wisdom of the eternall Father. But man had the fate of *Gehezi*, he would needs have the talent and garments of *Lucifer*, and he had also his plague; he lost paradise for his pride; and now what might befit the Son of GOD to do, seeing man so lost, and GOD so zealous of his honour? I see ( faith he ) that by occasion of me the Father looses his Creatures, for they have all aspired to be like me, and are fallen into the greatest infelicities. Behold I will go towards Man in such a forme, that whosoever from henceforth would become like me shall be so, and be a gainer by it. And for this cause the Son of GOD came from heaven, and made himself a poor humble person, and by all the actions of his life commented upon the present discourse: *Learn of me, for I am meek and humble of heart: Blessed be that mercy and bounty, which moved Almighty GOD to condescend to that so great appetite we had of being like him, for now we may be like unto GOD, but it must be by humility, of which he hath given us an example powerfull as miracles, and great, as our own pride and misery.*

And indeed our blessed L O R D knowing that examples are like maps and perfect schemes, in which the whole continent may at once be represented to the eye to all the purposes of art and benefit, did in the latter end of his life draw up the dispersions and larger harvest of his precepts, binding them in the bundle of great examples, and casting them into

Quomodo non  
humiliabitur ho-  
mo sub tam ha-  
mili Deo?  
S. Bernard.

3.

Math. 11.29.

4.

## Part III.

actions, as into summes totall; for so this act of washing the feet of *his own Ministers*, and then dying for them, and for all *his enemies* did preach the three great summes of Evangelicall perfection with an admirable energy and abbreviature; *humility*, and *charity*, and *sufferings*, being to Christianity as the *body*, and the *soul*, and the *spirit* are to the whole man. For no man brings a sad funerall into the theatre to make his spectators merry, nor can well preach chasteitie in the impurity of the Bor-delli, or perswade temperance, when himself is full of wine and luxur-y, and enters into the baths to boil his undigested meat, that he may re-turn to his second supper, and breaths forth impure belchings toge-ther with his homily; a poor hermit, or a severely living Philoso-pher, into whose life his own precepts have descended, and his do-trine is mingled with his soul, mingles also effect and vertue with homilies, and incorporates his doctrine in the hearts of his Disciples.

Turgidus hic e-pulis acq; albo-ventrelavatur  
Guttura sulphur-reas lente exha-lante Mephites.  
Pers. sat. 3.

And this the holy JESUS did in his own person, bearing the bur-den first upon his own shoulders, that we may with better alacrity undergoe what our blessed L O R D bears with us and for us. But that we may the better understand, what our blessed LORD designed to us in this lecture, let us consider the proper acts of humility, which integrate the vertue.

5.

1. The first is, *C H R I S T S* humble man thinks meanly of himself; and there is great reason every man should; for his body is but rot-tenesse and infirmity covered with a fair mantle, a dungbill overcast with snow, and if we consider sadly, that from trees and plants come oil, balsame, wine, spices, and aromatick odors, and that from the sinks of our body no such sweet or salutary emanations are observed, may at least think it unreasonable to boast our beauty, which is nothing but a clear and well coloured skinne, which every thing in the world can spoil; nor our strength which an ague tames into the infirmities of a childe, and in which we are excelled by a bull; nor any thing of our body which is nothing but an unruly servant of the soul, marked with characters of want and dependance, and begging help from all the elements, and upon a little disturbance growing troublesome to it self by its own impurities. And yet there is no reason in respect of the soul for any man to exalt himself above his Brother; because all reasonable souls are equall; and that one is wise, and another is foolish, or lesse learned, is by accident and extrincky caufes; G O D at first makes all alike, but an indisposed body, or an inopportune education or evil customes superinduce variety and difference; And if G O D discerns a man from his Brother by distinction of gifts, it alters not the case; still the man hath nothing of himself that can call him excellent; it is as if a wall, upon which the sunne reflects should boast it self against another that stands in the shadow; greater glory is to be paid to G O D for the discerning gifts; but to take any of it to our selves, and rise higher then our Brother or advance our own opinion, is as if a man should be proud of being in debt, and think it the greater excellency, that he is charged with heavier and more severe accounts.

6.

Auerantur om-niafigmata ver-borum celestis-  
mulati gestus, ve-rum humilem  
patientie ostendit, s. Hier.

This act confists not in declamations and formes of Satyre against our selves, saying; I am a miserable sinfull creature, I am proud, or covetous, or ignorant. For many men say so that are not willing

to be thought so; neither is humility a vertue made up of wearing old clothes, or doing servile and mean imployments by voluntary undertaking, or of sullen gestures, or demisse behaviour, and artifice of lowly expressions: for these may become snares to invite and catch at honour, and then they are collateral designes of pride, and direct actions of hypocrisy; but it consists in a true understanding of our own condition, and a separating our own *nothing* from the good we have received; and giving to GOD all the glory; and taking to our selves all the shame and dishonour, due to our sinfull condition. He that thinks himself truely miserable, and vilified by sin, hates it perfectly; and he, that knows himself to be nothing, cannot be exalted in himself; and whatsoever is besides these two extremes of *a naturall nothing* and *a superadded sin* must be those good things we have received, which because they derive from GOD must make all their returns thither. But this act is of greater difficulty in persons pious, full of gifts and eminent in graces, who being fellow-workers together with GOD, sometimes grow tacitely and without notice given to confide in themselves, and with some freer phansie ascribe too much of the good action to their own choice and diligence, and take up their crowns, which ly at the foot of the throne, and set them upon their own heads. For a finner to desire to be esteemed a sinner, is no more humility, then it is for the son of a plowman to confess his Father; but indeed it is hard for a man to be cried up for a Saint, to walk upon the spire of glory, and to have no adherence or impure mixtures of vanity grow up on the outside of his heart. All men have not such heads to walk in great heights without giddinesse and unsettled eyes: Lucifer and many Angels walking upon the battlements of heaven grew top-heavy and fell into the state of devils; and the Father of the Christian Hermits S. Anthony was frequently attempted by the Devil, and sollicited to vanity, the Devil usually making phantaſtick noises to be heard before him, *Make room for the Saint and servant of God*: But the goodman knew Christs voice to be a low base of humility, and that it was the noise of hell, that invited to complacencies and vanity; and therefore took the example of the Apostles, who in the midst of the greatest reputation and spirituall advancements were dead unto the world, and seemed to live in the state of separation. For the true stating our own Question and knowing our selves must needs represent us set in the midst of infinite imperfections, loaden with sins, choaked with the noises of a polluted conscience, persons fond of trifles, neglecting objects fit for wise men, full of ingratititude, and all such things, which in every man else we look upon as scars and deformities, and which we use to single out, and take one alone as sufficient to disgrace and disrepute all the excellencies of our Neighbour; but if we would esteem them with the same severity in our selves and remember with how many of such objections our little felicities are covered, it would make us charitable in our censures, compassionate and gentle to others, apt to excuse, and as ready to support their weaknesses, and in all accidents and chances to our selves to be content and thankfull, as knowing the worst of poverty and inconvenience to be a mercy and a splendid fortune in respect of our demerits. I have read that when the Duke of Candia had voluntarily entered into the incommodities of a religious poverty and retirement, he was one day spied and pitied by a lord of Italy, who out

S. Hier. in vita S. An-  
thoni.

Part III.

of tendernes wished him to be more careful and nutritive of his person. The good Duke answered, Sir, Be not troubled, and think not that I am ill provided of conveniences, for I send a Harbinger before, who makes my lodgings ready, and takes care that I be royally entertain'd. The Lord asked him who was his Harbinger? he answered, The knowledge of my self, and the consideration of what I deserve for my sins, which is, eternal torments; and when with this knowledge I arrive at my lodging, how unprovided soever I finde it, me thinks it is ever better then I deserve. The sum of this meditation consists in believing, and considering, and reducing to practice those thoughts, that we are nothing of our selves, that we have nothing of our own, that we have received more then ever we can discharge, that we have added innumerable sins, and that we can call nothing our owne, but such things which we are ashamed to owne, and such things which are apt to ruine us. If we do nothing contrary to the purpose and hearty perswasion of such thoughts, then we think meanly of our selves; and in order to it, we may make use of this advice, to let no day passe without some sad recollection and memory of somewhat, which may put us to confuson and mean opinion of our selves; either call to mind the worst of our sins, or the undiscreetest of our actions, or the greatest of our shame, or the uncivillest of our affronts, any thing to make us descend lower, and kisse the foot of the mountain; and this consideration applyed also to every tumour of spirit assoon as it rises, may possibly allay it.

2. Christ's humble man bears contumelies evenly and sweetly, and desires not to be honored by others. He chooses to do those things that deserve honour and a fair name, but then eates not of those fruits himself, but transmits them to the use of others and the glories of GOD. This is a certain consequence of the other, for he that truly disesteemeth himself is content that others should do so too; and he, who with some regret and impatience hears himself scorned or undervalued, hath not acquired the grace of

Appetere de humilitate laudem humilitatis non est virtus sed subvercio. Quid a perversum magis aut indignius quam ut inde velis haberi melior, unde tibi videris detrior. S. Bernard. Est qui nequiter humiliat se, & interiora ejus sunt plena dolo. *Ecclesiasticus*. 1. 2. 11. Nil lascivius est Carissimo In Saturnalibus ambulat togatus Mart. and

7.  
Ara uinciri &  
pro nihilo res  
putari. Gerson

which Serapion in *Cassian* noted to a young person, who perpetually accused himself with the greatest semblances of humility; but was impatient when Serapion reproved him. Did you hope that I would have praised your humility, and have reputed you for a Saint? it is a strange personnesse to desire others to esteem highly of you for that, in which to your self you seem most unworthy: He that enquires into the faults of his own actions, requiring them that saw it to tell him in what he did amisse, not to learn the fault, but to engage them to praise it, cozens himself into pride, and makes humility the instrument. And a Man would be ashamed if he were told that he used stratagems for praise; but so glorious a thing is humility, that pride to hide her own shame puts on the others vizor, it being more to a proud Mans purposes to seem humble then to be so. And such was the Cynick, whom *Lucian* derided because that one searching his scrip in expectation to have found in it mouldy bread or old rags, he discovered a bale of dice, a box of perfumes, and the picture of his fair Mistresse. *Carissimus* walked in his Gown in the feast of Saturne, and when all Rome was let loose in wantonnesse, he put on the long robe of a Senator, and a severe person, and yet nothing was more lascivious then he. But the Devil Pride prevails sometimes upon the spirit of Lust. Humility neither directly nor by consequence seeks for praise, and suffers it not to rest upon its own pavement, but reflects it all upon GOD, and receives all lessening

and instruments of affront and disgrace, that mingle not with sin or uncleances, more willingly then Panegyricks. When others have their desires, thou not thine, the sayings of another are esteemed, thine slighted ; others ask and obtain, thou beggest and art refused ; they are cried up, thou disgraced and hissed at ; and while they are employed thou art laid by, as fit for nothing ; or an unworthy person commands thee, and rules thee like a tyrant ; he reproves thee, suspects thee, reviles thee ; canst thou bear this sweetly, and entertain the usage as thy just portion, and as an accident most fit and proper to thy person & condition ? Doeſt thou not raise Theatres to thy ſelf and take delight in the ſuppletories of thy own good opinion, and the flatteries of ſuch, whom thou endereſt to thee, that their Praiſing thee ſhould heal the wounds of thine honour by an imaginary and phantaſtick reſtitution ? He that is not content and patient in affronts hath not yet learned humility of the holy JESUS.

3. As Chrift's bumble man is content in affronts and not greedy of praife, ſo when it is preſented to him, he takes no contentment in it ; and if it be eaſie to want praife when it is denied, yet it is harder not to be delighted with it, when it is offered ; but there is much reaſon that we ſhould put reſtraints upon our ſelves, leaſt if we be Praiſed without deſert we finde a greater judgement of GOD, or if we have done well and received Praife for it, we loſe all our reward, which GOD hath depoſited for them, that receive not their good things in this life. For as ſilver is tried in the melter, and gold in the Chryſole ; ſo is a man tried by the mouth of him that Praiſes him ; that is, he is either clarified from his droſſe by looking upon the Praife as a homily to teach, and an instrument to invite his duty, or elſe, if he be alreaſy pure, he is conſolidated, ſtrengthened in the ſobriety of his ſpirit, and retires himſelf cloſer into the Strengths and ſecuritiess of humility. Nay this ſtep of humility uſes in very holy perſons to be enlaſged to a deliht in affronts and diſreputatiou in the world : Now I begin to be Chrift's Diſciplē (ſaid Ignatius the Martyr, whea in his journey to Rome he uſtered perpetuall reuiliings and abuse) S. Paul rejoiced in his infirmities and reproach ; and all the A-poſtles at Jeruſalem went from the tribunall rejoicing, that they were eſteemed worthy to ſuffer shame for the name of Jefus. This is an excellent condition and degree of humility. But I choose to adde one that is leſſe, but in all perſons neceſſary.

4. Chrift's humble Man is careful never to ſpeak any thing that may redound to his own Praife, unleſſe it be with a deſigne of charity or duty ; that either GODS glory or the profit of his neighbour be concerned in it, but never ſpeaking with a deſigne to be eſteemed learned or honourable. S. Arſenius had been Tuour to three Caſars, Theodoſius, Arcadiuſ, and Honoriuſ ; but afterwards when he became religiouſ, no word escaped him that might repreſent and tell of his former greatneſſe : and it is obſerved concerning S. Jerome, that although he was of noble extraction, yet in all his own writings there is not the ſmalleſt intimation of it. This I deſire to be underſtood only to the ſenſe and purpoſes of humility, and that we have no deſignes of vanity and phancy in ſpeaking learnedly or recounting our exteriour advantages ; but if either the profit of our brother, or the glory of GOD, if either there be piety or charity in the deſigne, it is lawful to publith all thoſe excellencies with which GOD hath diſtinguiſhed us from others. The young Marquēſe of Caſtilion being to do publick exercise in course

8.

Tanta n. confi-  
deratione trepi-  
dat (Davio) ne  
aut de his in qui-  
bus laudatur &  
non sunt, n. ajuſ  
Dei iudicium  
inveniat, aut de  
his in quibus  
laudatur & ſunt,  
competens pra-  
mium perdat. S.  
Gregor.

9.

---

Part III.

---

his course of Philosophy, made it a case of conscience, whether he were bound to dispute his best, fearing lest vanity might transport him in the midst of those praises, which his collegiates might give him. It was an excellent consideration in the young Gentleman; but in actions civil and humane, since the danger is not so immediate; and a little complacency becoming the instrument of virtue and encouragement of studies may with like care be referred to GOD as the giver, and celebrate his praises; he might with more safety have done his utmost, it being in some sense a duty to encourage others, to give account of our graces and our labours, and all the appendant vanity may quickly be suppressed. A good name may give us opportunity of persuading others to their duty, especially in an age, in which Men choose their doctrines by the Men that preach them: and S. Paul used his liberty, when he was zealous for his Corinthian Disciples, but restrained himself, when it began to make reflexions upon his own spirit; but although a good name be necessary, and in order to such good ends, whither it may serve, it is lawful to desire it: yet a great name, and a pompous honour and secular greatness hath more danger in it to our selves than ordinarily it can have of benefit to others; and although a Man may use the greatest honours to the greatest purposes, yet ordinary persons may not safely desire them; because it will be found very hard to have such mysterious and abstracted considerations, as to separate all our proper interests from the publick end. To which I adde this consideration, That the contempt of honour, and the instant pursuit of humility is more effective of the ghosly benefit of others, then honours and great dignities can be, unlesse it be rarely and very accidentally.

10.

If we need any new incentives to the practice of this grace, I can say no more, but that Humility is truth, and Pride is a lye; that the one glorifies GOD, the other dishonours him: Humility makes Men like Angels, Pride makes Angels to become Devils; that Pride is folly, Humility is the temper of a holy spirit and excellent wisdom; that Humility is the way to glory, Pride to ruine and confusion; Humility makes Saints on earth, Pride undoes them; Humility beatifies the Saints in Heaven, and the Elders throw their Crowns at the foot of the Throne; Pride disgraces a Man among all the societies of earth: GOD loves one, and Satan sollicites the cause of the other, and promotes his own interest in it most of all; and there is no one grace in which CHRIST propounded himself imitable so signally, as in this of Meekness and Humility; for the enforcing of which he undertook the condition of a servant and a life of poverty, and a death of disgrace; and washed the feet of his Disciples, and even of *Judas* himself, that his action might be turned into a Sermon to preach this duty, and to make it as eternal as his own stoy.

THE

## The PRAYER.

O Holy and eternal JESUS, who wert pleased to lay aside the glories and incomprehensible Majesty, which clothed thy infinity from before the beginning of Creatures, and didst put on a cloud upon thy brightnesse, and wert invested with the impure and imperfect broken robe of humane nature, and didst abate those splendors which broke through the veile, commanding Devils not to publish thee, and Men not to proclaime thy excellencies, and the Apostles not to reveale those glories of thine, which they discovered encircling thee upon mount Tabor in thy transfiguration, and didst by perpetual Homilies and symbolical mysterious actions, as with deep characters, engrave humility into the spirits of thy Disciples, and the discipline of Christianity: teach us to approach near to these thy glories, which thou hast so covered with a cloud, that we might without amazement behold thy excellencies; make us to imitate thy gracious condescensions, take from us all vanity and phantaſtick complacencies in our own persons or actions; and when there arises a reputation consequent to the performance of any part of our duty, make us to reflect the glory upon thee, suffering nothing to adhere to our own spirits but shame at our own imperfection, and thankefulnesse to thee for all thy assistances; let us never seek the praise of Men from unhandſome actions, from flatteries, and unworthy discourses, nor entertaine the praise with delight, though it proceed from better principles; but fear and tremble lest we deserve punishment or loose a reward, which thou hast deposited for all them that seek thy glory, and despise their own, that they may imitate the example of their LORD. Thou O LORD, didſt triumph over Sin and Death, subdue also my proud understanding, and my prouder affections, and bring me under thy yoke, that I may do thy work, and obey my Superiours, and be a servant of all my brethren in their necessities, and esteem my ſelf inferior to all Men by a deep ſense of my own unworthineſſe, and in all things may obey thy laws and conform to thy precedents, and enter into thine inheritance, O holy and eternal JESUS. Amen.

Discourse



## Discourse XVIII.

*Vpon the institution and reception of the  
holy Sacrament of the LORDS  
Supper.*

I.



S the sun among the stars, and Man among the sublunary creatures is the most eminent and noble, the Prince of the inferiors, and their measure, or their guide : so is this action among all the instances of religion, it is the most perfect and consummate, it is an union of mysteries, and a consolidation of duties, it joyns GOD and man, and confederates all the societies of men in mutual complexions, and the entertainments of an excellent charity ; it actually performs all that could be necessary for man, and it presents to man as great a thing as GOD could give : For it is impossible any thing should be greater then himself. And when GOD gave his Son to the world it could not be, but he should give us all things else ; and therefore this blessed Sacrament is a consigning us to all felicities, because after a mysterious and ineffable manner we receive him, who is light and life, the fountain of grace, and the sanctifier of our secular comforts, and the authour of holiness and glory. But as it was at first, so it hath been ever since, *Christ came into the world and the world knew him not* : so Christ hath remained in the world by the communications of this Sacrament, and yet he is not rightly understood, and less truely valued. But Christ may say to us as once to the woman of Samaria, *Woman if thou didst know the gift of GOD, and who it is that speaks to thee, thou wouldest ask him*. So if we were so wise or so fortunate to know the excellency of this gift of the LORD, it would fill us full of wonder and adoration, joy and thankfullnesse, great hopes and actuall felicities, making us heires of glory by the great additions and present increment of grace.

2.

After supper JESUS took bread and blessed it ] and made it to be a heavenly gift ; He gave them bread and told them, it was his body ; that body which was broken for redemption of man, for the salvation of the world. S. Paul calls it [ bread ] even after consecration ; *The Bread, which we break, is it not the communication of the body of Christ?* so that by divine faith we are taught to expresse our belief of this mystery in these words ; [ The bread, when it is consecrated and made sacramentall is the body of our LORD ; and the fraction and distribution of it is the communication of that body, which died for us upon the Crofie ; ] He that doubts of either of the parts of this proposition must either think, CHRIST was not able to verifie his word, and to make bread by his benediction to become to

1. Cor. 10, 16.

to us to be *his body*, or that S. Paul did not well interpret and understand this mystery, when he called it *bread*. CHRIST reconciles them both, calling himself *the bread of life*; and if we be offended at it, because it is *alive* and therefore less apt to become *food*, we are invited to it because it is *bread*; and if the sacrament to others seem less mysterious, because it is *bread*, we are heightened in our faith and reverence because it is *life*; The bread of the Sacrament is the life of our soul, and the body of our LORD is now conveyed to us by being the bread of the Sacrament. And if we consider how eatle it is to faith, and how impossible it seemes to curiosity, we shall be taught confidence and modesty, resigning our understanding to the voice of CHRIST and his Apostles, and yet expressing our own articles as CHRIST did, in indefinite significations. And posibly it may not well consist with our duty to be inquisitive into the secrets of the kingdom, which we see by plain event hath divided the Church, almost as much as the Sacrament hath united it, and which can onely serve the purposes of the school, and of evil men, to make Questions for that, and factions for these, but promote not the ends of a holy life, obedience or charity.

Some so observe the literall sense of the words, that they understand them also in a natural. Some so alter them by metaphors & preternatural significations, that they will not understand them at all in a proper. We see it, we feel it, we tast it, and we smel it to be bread; and by Philofophy we are lead into a beleef of that substance, whose accidents these are, as we are to believe that to be fire, which burns and flames & shines; but Christ also affirmed concerning it, *This is my body*; And if Faith can create an assent as strong, as its object is infallible, or can be as certain in its conclusion, as sense is certain in its apprehensions, we must at no hand doubt, but that it is CHRISTS body. Let the sense of that be what it will, so that we believe those words, And (whatsoever that sense is, which CHRIST intended) that we no more doubt in our faith, then we do in our sense, and then our Faith is not reproveable. It is hard to do so much violence to our *sense*, as not to think it *bread*: But it is more unsafe to do so much violence to our *Faith* as not to believe it to be *CHRISTS body*. But it would be confidered, that no interest of religion, no saying of CHRIST, no reverence of opinion, no sacrednesse of the mystery is disavowed, if we believe both what we hear and what we see. He that believes it to be *bread*, and yet verily to be *CHRISTS body* is onely tyed also by implication to believe GODS omnipotence, that he who affirmed it can also verifie it. And they that are forward to believe the change of substance can intend no more, but that it be believed verily to be the body of our L O R D. And if they think it impossible to reconcile its being bread, with the verity of being *CHRISTS body*, let them remember, that themselves are put to more difficulties, and to admit of more miracles, and to contradict more sciences, and to refuse the testimony of sense in affirming the special manner of Transubstantiation. And therefore it were safer to admit the words in their first sence, in which we shall no more be at war with reason, nor so much with sense and not at all with faith. And for persons of the contradictory perswasion, who to avoid the naturall sence affirm it onely to be figurative, since their designe is onely to make this sacrament to be *CHRISTS body* in the sence of *faith*, and not of *Philosphy*, they may remember that its being really present, does not hinder, but that

## Part III.

that all that reality may be spirituall ; and if it be CHRIST'S body, so it be not affirmed such, in a naturall sense and manner, it is still onely the object of faith and spirit ; and if it be affirmd onely to be spirituall, there is then no danger to Faith in admitting the words of CHRIST'S institution, *This is my Body.* I suppose it to be a mistake to think whatsoever is reall must be naturall, and it is no lesse to think spirituall to be onely figurative ; that's too much, and this is too little ; Philosophy and Faith may well be reconciled, and whatsoever objection can invade this union may be cured by modesty. And if we professe we understand not the manner of this mystery, we say no more, but that it is a mystery ; and if it had been necessary we should have construed it into the most latent sense, CHRIST himself would have given a Clavis , and taught the Church to unlock so great a secret. CHRIST said, *this is my body, this is my blood.* S. Paul said, *the bread of blessing that we break is the communication of the body of Christ, and the chalice which we blesse is the communication of the blood of CHRIST.* And, *we all are one body, because we eat of one bread.* One proposition aswell as the other, is the matter of faith; and the latter of them, is, also of sense; One is as literall as the other, and he that distinguishes in his belief, as he may place the impropriety upon which part he please, and either say it is improperly called bread, or improperly called CHRIST'S body : so he can have nothing to secure his proposition from error , or himself from boldnesse in decreeing concerning mysteries against the testimonies of sense , or beyond the modesty and simplicty of Christian Faith. Let us love and adore the abyse of divine wisdom and goodnesse, and entertain the Sacrament with just and holy receptions, and then we shall receive all those fruits of it , which an earnest disputer, or a peremptory dogmatizer , whether he happen right or wrong hath no warrant to expect upon the interest of his opinion.

In the institution of this Sacrament Christ manifested first his Almighty Power; Secondly his infinite wisdom; and thirdly his unspeakable charity. First, his power is manifest in making the symboles to be the instruments of conveying himself to the spirit of the receiver ; he nourishes the soul with bread, and feeds the body with a sacrament ; he makes the body spirituall by his graces there ministred: And makes the spirit to be united to his body by a participation of the Divine nature : In the Sacrament that body, which is reigning in heaven, is exposed upon the table of blessing ; and his body which was broken for us is now broken again, and yet remains impassible. Every consecrated portion of bread and wine does exhibite CHRIST intirely to the faithfull receiver, and yet CHRIST remaines one . while he is wholly ministred in 10000 portions; so long as we call these mysterious , and make them intricate to exercise our faith , and to represent the wonder of the mystery, and to encrease our charity ; our being inquisitive into the abyse can have no evil purposes. God hath instituted the rite in visible symbols to make the secret grace as preuentiall and discerneable as it might, that by an instrument of sense our spirits might be accommodated as with an exterior object to produce an internall act. But it is the prodigy of a miraculous power by instruments so easie to produce effects so glorious; this then is the object of wonder and adoration.

2. And this effect of power does also remark the Divine wisdom, who hath ordained such symboles, which not onely like spittle and clay toward the

1. Cor. 10.  
16. 17.

*Chrysost. notat  
Apostolum non  
dixisse panem esse  
panorum sed  
xaravias τον  
αριστην χριστου,  
ne indicaret ita  
participari cor-  
pus Domini, ut  
fiant Unum Par-  
ticipans & res  
participata, sicut  
verbū & Dei  
Caro. i. uilexerit  
partem aliquam  
sibi vendicat,  
i. κακων τοτις  
particeps est.*

4.

5.

the curing blinde eyes proclaim an Almighty Power, but they are apposite and proper to signifie a duty, and become to us like the word of life, and from bread they turn into a Homily. For therefore our wisest Master hath appointed Bread and Wine, that we may be corporally united to him, that as the symbols becoming nutriment are turned into the substance of our bodies, so CHRIST being the food of our soules should assimilate us, making us partakers of the Divine Nature. It also tells us, that from hence we derive life and holy motion; *for in him we live, and move, and have our being.* He is the staffe of our life, and the light of our eyes, and the strength of our spirit; He is the viand for our journey, and the antepast of Heaven; and because this holy mystery was intended to be a Sacrament of union, that lesson is morally represented in the symbols; that as the salutary juice is expressed from many clusters running into one Chalice, and the Bread is a masse made of many grains of Wheat; so we also (as the Apostle infers from hence, himself observing the analogy) should be *one bread and one body, because we partake of that one bread.* And it were to be wished, that from hence also all Christians would understand a signification of another duty, and that they would often communicate, as remembiring that the soul may need a frequent ministration, as well as the body its daily portion. This consideration of the *Divine Wisdom* is apt to produce reverence, humility, and submission of our understanding to the immensity of GODS unsearchable abysses.

3. But the story of the *love of our dearest LORD* is written in largest characters, who not onely was at that instant busie in doing Man the greatest good, even then, when Man was contriving his death and his dishonour, but contrived to represent his bitter Passion to us without any circumstances of horreur, in symboles of pleasure and delight, that *we may taste and see how gracious our LORD* is who would not transmit the record of his Passion to us in any thing that might trouble us; *no love can be greater than that which is so beatifical, as to bestow the greatest good;* and *no love can be better expressed than that,* which although it is productive of the greatest blessings, yet is curious also to observe the *smallest circumstances.* And not onely both these, but many other circumstances and arguments of love concur in the holy Sacrament. 1. It is a tendernes of affection that ministers wholesome physick with arts and instruments of pleasure; and such was the charity of our LORD, who brings health to us in a golden Chalice; life, not in the bitter drugs of Egypt, but in spirits and quintessences; giving us apples of Paradise, at the same time yeelding food, and health, and pleasure. 2. Love desires to do all good to its beloved object, and that is *the greatest love* which gives us *the greatest blessings;* and the Sacrament therefore is the argument of his greatest love, for in it we receive the honey and the honeycomb, the Paschal Lamb with his bitter herbs, CHRIST with all his griefs, and his Passion with all the salutary effects of it. 3. Love desires to be remembred, and to have his object in perpetual representment, and this Sacrament CHRIST designed to that purpose, that he, who is not present to our eyes, might always be present to our spirits. 4. Love demands love again, and to desire to be beloved, is of it self a great argument of love. And as GOD cannot give us a greater blessing then his love, which is himself with an excellency of relation to us supperadded; so what greater demonstration of it can he make to us then to desire us to love him with as much earnest-

## Part III.

earnestnesse and vehemency of desire, as if we were that to him, which he is essentially to us, the authour of our being and our blessing? 5. And yet to consummate this love and represent it to be the greatest and most excellent, the holy JESUS hath in this Sacrament designed, that we should be united in our spirits with him, incorporated to his body, partake of his Divine nature, and communicate in all his graces; and love hath no expression beyond this, that it desires to be united to its object. So that what Moses said to the Men of Israel; *What nation is so great, who hath GOD so nigh unto them, as the LORD our GOD is in all things, for which we call upon him,* We can enlarge in the meditation of this holy Sacrament; for now the LORD our GOD calls upon us, not onely to be nigh unto him, but to be all one with him, not onely as he was in the incarnation, flesh of our flesh, and bone of our bone; but also to communicate in spirit, in grace, in nature, in Divinity it self.

7.

Upon the strength of the premises, we may sooner take an estimate of the graces, which are conveyed to us in reception and celebration of this holy Sacrament and sacrifice. For as it is a commemoration and representement of CHRISTS death, so it is a commemorative sacrifice; as we receive the symbols and the mystery, so it is a sacrament. In both capacities the benefit is next to infinite. 1. For whatsoever CHRIST did at the institution, the same he commanded the Church to do in remembrance and repeated rites; and himself also does the same thing in heaven for us, making perpetuall intercession for his Church, the body of his redeemed ones, by representing to his Father his Death and sacrifice; there he sits a high priest continually, and offers still the same one perfect sacrifice, that is, still represents it as having been once finished and consummate in order to perpetuall and never failing events; and this also his ministers do on earth, they offer up the same sacrifice to GOD, the sacrifice of the Crosse by prayers, and a commemorating rite, and representement according to his holy institution; and as all the effects of grace, and the titles of glory were purchased for us on the crosse, and the actuall mysteries of redemption, perfected on earth, but are applyed to us and made effectuall to singe persons, and communities of men by CHRISTS intercession in heaven: so also they are promoted by acts of duty and religion here on earth, that we may be workers together with GOD (as S. Paul expresses it) and in virtue of the eternall and all-sufficient sacrifice may offer up our prayers and our duty, and by representing that sacrifice may send up together with our prayers an instrument of their graciousnesse and acceptation. The funerals of a deceased friend are not onely performed at his first interring, but in the monethly minds and anniversary commemoartions, and our grief returns upon the sight of a picture, or upon any instance which our dead friend desired us to preserve as his memoriall; we celebrate and exhibite the Lords death in sacrament and symbole; and this is that great expresse, which when the Church offers to GOD the Father, it obtains all those blessings, which that sacrifice purchased. Themistocles snatch'd up the son of King Admetus and held him between himself and death to mitigate the rage of the King, and prevailed accordingly. Our very holding up the son of GOD and representing him to his Father, is the doing an act of mediation, and advantage to our selves in the vertue and efficacy of the mediatour. As CHRIST is a Priest in heaven for ever and yet does not sacrifice himself a fresh, nor yet without

2. Ch. 6. I.

### Part III.

without a sacrifice could he be a Priest but by a daily ministrant and intercession represents his sacrifice to GOD, and offers himself as sacrificed; so he does upon earth by the ministry of his servants; he is offered to GOD, that is, he is by prayers and the Sacrament represented or *offered up to GOD as sacrificed*, which in effect, is a celebration of his death, and the applying it to the present and future necessities of the Church, as we are capable, by a ministry like to his in Heaven. It followes then, that the celebration of this sacrifice be in its proportion an instrument of applying the proper sacrifice to all the purpos(es), which it first designed; it is ministerially and by application an instrument propitiatory, it is Eucharistical, it is an homage, and an act of adoration, and it is imperatroy, and obtaines for us, and for the whole Church all the benefits of the sacrifice, which is now celebrated and applied, that is, As this rite is the remembrance and ministerial celebration of C H R I S T S sacrifice, so it is destined to do honour to GOD, to expresse the homage and duty of his servants, to acknowledge his supreme dominion, to give him thanks and worship, to beg pardon, blessings and supply to all our needs. And its profit is enlarged not only to the persons celebrating, but to all to whom they designe it, according to the nature of sacrifices and prayers, and all such solemn actions of religion.

2. If we consider this, not as the act and ministry of Ecclesiastical persons, but as the duty of the whole Church communicating, that is, as it is a Sacrament, so it is like the springs of Eden, from whence issue many Rivers; or the trees of celestial Jerusalem, bearing various kindes of fruit. *I. Hee that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abides in mee, and I in him; CHRIST in his Temple and his John 6.56.*

resting-place, and the worthy Communicant is *in sanctuary* and a place of protection; and every holy soul having feasted at his Table may say as Saint Paul, <sup>a Gal.2.20.</sup> *A I live, yet not I, but CHRIST liveth in mee.* <sup>b 1 Phil.2.1.</sup> So that to live is CHRIST,] <sup>c Col.3.4.</sup> *CHRIST is our life, and he dwels in the body, and the Spirit, of every one that eats CHRISTS flesh and drinks his blood.* Happy is that Man, that sits at the Table of Angels, that puts his hand into the dish with the King of all the Creatures, and feeds upon the eternal Sonne of GOD, joyning things below with things above, Heaven with Earth, Life with Death, *that Mortality might bee swallowed up of life,* and sin be destroyed by the inhabitation of its greatest Conquerour. And now I need not enumerate any particulars, since the Spirit of GOD hath ascertained us, that CHRIST enters into our hearts, and takes possession, and abides there, that wee are made temples and celestiall mansions, that wee are all one with our Judge, and with our Redeemer, that our Creatour is bound unto his Creature with bonds of charity, which nothing can dissolve, unlesse our own hands break them; that Man is united with GOD, and our weaknesse is fortifid by his strength, and our miseries wrapped up in the golden leaves of glory. 2. Hence it followes that the Sacrament is ~~an~~ instrument of reconciling us to GOD, and taking off the remanent guilt, and stain, and obligations of our sinnes. *This is the blood, that was shed for you for the remission of sinnes. For there is no condemnation to them that are in CHRIST JESUS.* And such are all they, who worthily eat the flesh of CHRIST, by receiving him, they more and more receive remission of sins, redemption,

## Part III.

sanctification, wisdom, and certain hopes of glory. For as the soul touching and united to the flesh of *Adam*, contracts the stain of original misery and imperfection; so much the rather shall the soul united to the flesh of *CHRIST* receive pardon and purity, and all those blessed emanations from our union with the second *Adam*. But this is not to be understood, as if the first beginnings of our pardon were in the holy Communion; for then a Man might come with his impurities along with him, and lay them on the holy Table to stain and pollute so bright a presence. No; First, Repentance must prepare the wayes of the *LORD*, and in this holy rite those words of our *LORD* are verified; *He that is justified let him be justified still*, that is, here he may receive the increase of grace; and as it growes, so sinne dyes, and we are reconciled by neerer unions and approximations to *GOD*.

3. The holy Sacrement is the pledge of glory and the earnest of immortality; for when we have received him, who hath overcome Death, and henceforth dies no more, hee becomes to us like the tree of life in Paradise; and the consecrated symboles are like the seeds of an eternal duration, springing up in us to eternal life, nourishing our spirits with grace, which is but the prologue and the infancy of glory, and differs from it, onely as a Childe from a Man. But *GOD* first raised up his Sonne to life, and by giving him to us hath also consigned us to the same state; for *our life is hid with CHRIST in GOD*; when we lay down and cast aside the impurer robes of flesh, they are then but preparing for glory; and if by the only touch of *CHRIST*, bodies were redintegrate and restored to natural perfections, how shall not we live for ever, who eat his flesh and drink his blood? It is the discourse of Saint *Cyril*; and let all the mysterious places of holy Scripture concerning the effects of *CHRIST* communicated in the blessed Sacrement be drawn together in one Scheme, we cannot but observe, that although they are so exprested, as that their meaning may seem intricate and involved, yet they cannot be drawn to any meaning at all, but it is as glorious in its sense as it is mysterious in the expression; and the more intricate they are, the greater is their purpose; no words being apt and proportionate to signifie this spirituall secret, and excellent effects of the Spirit. A veil is drawn before all these testimonies, because the people were not able to behold the glory, which they cover with their curtain, and *CHRIST* dwelling in us, and giving us his flesh to eat and his blood to drink, and the hiding of our life with *GOD*, and the communication of the body of *CHRIST*, and *CHRIST* being our life, are such secret glories, that as the fruition of them is the portion of the other world, so also is the full perception and understanding of them; for therefore *GOD* appears to us in a cloud, and his glories in a veil, that we understanding more of it by its concealement, then we can by its open face, which is too bright for our weak eyes, may with more piety also entertain the greatnesse by these indefinite and mysterious significations, then we can by plain and direct intuitions, which like the Sunne in a direct ray enlightens the object, but confounds the organ.

I should but in other words describe the same glories, if I should adde, that this holy Sacrement does enlighten the spirit of Man, and clarifie

*Abaratus p. 2 p.  
manor apud S. Ig-  
nat. ep. ad Ephel.  
Spes resurrec.  
onis. Optat. Mi-  
levit. 1.6. contr.  
Parmen. & S.  
John 6. Qui  
manducat car-  
nem meam, ha-  
bet vitam ete-  
nam, & resuici-  
tabo eum in no-  
viissimo die.  
*Colos. 3.3.*  
*S.Cyril.Alex.*  
*l.4.in Ioh.c.14**

clarifie it with spirituall discernings ; and as he was to the two Disciples at Emmaus , so also to other faithful people , C H R I S T is known in the breaking of bread ; that it is a great defence against the hostilities of our ghostly enemies , this holy bread being like the cake in Gideons camp , overturning the tents of Midian ; that it is the relief of our sorrowes , the antidote and preservative of soules , the viand of our journey , the guard and pafte-port of our death , the \* wine of Angels , that it is more healthfull then Rhubarb , more pleasant then Cassia , that the Betele and Lareca of the Indians , the Moly or Nepenthe of Pliny , the Lyrinon of the Persians , the Balsam of Judea , the Mannah of Israel , the Honey of Jonathan , are but weake expressions to tell us , that this is excellent above Art and Nature , and that nothing is good enough in Philosophy to become its embleme . All these must needs fall very short of those plaine words of C H R I S T , *This is my body* ; the other may become the extasies of piety , the transportation of joy and wonder , and are like the discourse of S. Peter upon Mount-Tabor : he was resolv'd to say some great thing , but he knew not what ; but when we remember , that the body of our L O R D , and his blood is communicated to us in the bread and the chalice of blessing , we must sit down and rest our selves , for this the mountain of the L O R D , and we can go no further .

In the next place it will concern our enquiry to consider , how we are to prepare our selves ; for at the gate of life a man may meet with death ; and although this holy Sacrament be like Manna , in which the obedient find the relishes of obedience , the chaste of purity , the meek persons of content and humility ; yet virtuous and corrupted palates finde also the gusts of death and Colliquintida . The Sybarites invited their women to their solemn sacrifices a full year before the solemnity , that they might by previous dispositions and a long foresight attend with gravity and fairer order the celebration of the rites . And it was a reasonable answer of Pericles to one that askt him , why he being a Philosophicall and severe person came to a wedding trimmed and adorned like a Paranympth ? *I come adorned to an adorned person* , trimmed , to a Bridegroom , and we also , if we come to the marriage of the Son , with the soul , (which marriage is celebrated in this sacred mystery) and have not on a wedding garment , shall be cast into outer darknesse , the portion of undressed and unprepared souls .

For from this Sacrament are excluded all unbaptized persons , and such who lie in a known sin , of which they have not purged themselves by the apt and proper instruments of repentance . For if the paschal lamb was not to be eaten , but by persons pure and clean according to the sanctifications of the Law ; the son of GOD can lesse endure the impurities of the Spirit , than GOD could suffer the uncleannesses of the Law . S. Paul hath given us instruction in this . *First let a man examin himself , and so let him eat : for he , that eats and drinke unworthily eats and drinke damnation to himself not discerning the L O R D S body* ; that is ; although in the Church of Corinth by reason of the present schisme the publike Discipline of the Church was neglected , and every man permitted to himself ; yet even then no man was disobligeed from his duty of private repentance , and holy preparations to the perception of

Tanquam leones  
ignem spirantes  
recedamus ex illo  
la mensu , D<sup>r</sup>o.  
monibus facti  
terribiles . S.  
Chryloft .  
\* Poculum quo  
inebriatur affer  
quis fidelium . S.  
Ambr. ser. 15. n.  
Psalm 8.

Plutarch. sym-  
pos.

1 Cor. 11. 28.

## Part III.

so great a mystery ; that the *LORDS* body may be discerned from common nutriment. Now nothing can so unhallow and defecate the rite as the remanent affection to a sin, or a crime unrepented of. And self examination is prescribed, not for it self, but in order to abolition of sin and death ; for it self is a relative term and an imperfect duty, whose very nature is in order to something beyond it. And this was in the primitive Church understood to so much severity, that if a man had relapsed after one publike repentance into a foul crime he was never again readmitted to the holy Communion ; and the Fathers of the

*Concil. Eliber.* Councill of *Eliberis* call it [ a mocking and jesting at the Communion of our *LORD* to give it once again after a repentance and a relapse and a second or third postulation.] And indeed we use to make a sport of the greatest instruments of religion, when we come to them after an habitnall vice , whose face we have , it may be, wetted with a tear , and breathed upon it with a sigh , and abstained from the worst of crimes for two or three dayes , and come to the Sacrament to be purged , and take our rise by going a little back from our sin , that afterwards we may leap into it with more violence , and enter into its utmost angle ; this is dishonouring the body of our *LORD*, and deceiving our selves. *CHRIST* and *Belial* cannot cohabite ; unless we have left all our sins , and have no fondnesse of affection towards them, unless we hate them, (which then we shall best know , when we leave them and with complacency entertain their contraries ) then *CHRIST* hath washed our feet , and then he invites us to his holy Supper. Hands dipt in blood , or polluted with unlawfull gains , or stained with the spots of Flesh are most unfit to handle the holy body of our *LORD*, and minister nourishment to the soul. *CHRIST* loves not to enter into the mouth full of cursings, oaths, blasphemies, revilings or evil speakings, and a heart full of vain and vicious thoughts stinks like the lake of Sodom , he findes no rest there , and when he enters he is vexed with the unclean conversation of the impure inhabitants , and flies from thence with the wings of a Dove , that he may retire to pure and whiter habitations. Saint *Justin Martyr* reckoning the predispositions required of every faithfull soul for the entertainment of his *LORD*

S. Baffi l. 2 de bapt.  
c.3 Legatur vobum  
caput.

5. Ambrof 1.6.c.37. in  
Luc.9. Vbiq; myterii  
ordo servatur ut pri-  
us per remissione  
peccatorum vulneri-  
bus medicina tribu-  
tur, postea alimonia  
menta celestis exau-  
beret. Paulin, in vita  
S. Ambrof.

Si dux quipiam, fi-  
consul ipse, si qui si-  
admodum ornatu in-  
digne adest, cohibe  
et coceat. Quid si  
iuste pelle non au-  
des, mihi dicas, non  
parmitam ista fieri,  
animam porius tra-  
dam meam, quam  
Umanum aliqui  
corpus indigne. S.  
Chrysostom.83. in  
Mathis.

" sayes, that it is not lawfull for any to eat the Eucharist , but to him " that is wash'd in the laver of regeneration for the remission of sins, " that believes CHRIST'S doctrine to be true , and that lives accord-  
" ing to the Discipline of the holy JESUS. And therefore Saint *Ambrose* refused to minister the holy Communion to the Emperour *Theodosius*, till by publike repentance he had reconciled himself to *GOD*, and the society of faithfull people , after the furious and cholericke rage and slaughter committed at Thessalonica ; and as this act was like to cancelling and a circumvallation of the holy mysteries , and a proper duty for a Prelate , to whose dispensation the rites are committed , so it was an act of duty to the Emperour, whose soul Saint *Ambrose* had betrayed , unless he had represented , his indisposition to communicate , in expressions of authoritay and truth. For this holy Sacrament is a nourish-  
ment of spirituall life , and therefore cannot with effect be ministred to them , who are in the state of spirituall death ; it is giving cordiall to a dead man. And although the outward rite be ministred , yet the

the grace of the Sacrament is not communicated, and therefore it were well that they also abstained from the rite it self.

It is more generally thought by the Doctors of the Church, that our blessed LORD administered the Sacrament to *Judas*, although he knew he sold him to the Jews. \* Some others deny it, and suppose *Judas* departed presently after the sop given him, before he communicated; however it was, CHRIST who was LORD of the Sacraments might dispense it as he pleased; but we must minister and receive it according to the rules he hath since described; but it becomes a precedent to the Church in all succeeding ages, although it might also have in it something extraordinary and apter to the first institution; for because the fact of *Judas* was secret, not yet made notorious, C H R I S T chose rather to admit him into the rites of external communion, then to separate him with an open shame for a fault not yet made open. For our blessed LORD did not reveale the Man and his crime till the very time of ministration, if *Judas* did communicate. But if *Judas* did not communicate, and that our blessed LORD gave him the sop at the Paschal supper, or at the interval between it and the institution of his own, it is certain that *Judas* went out as soon as he was discovered, and left this part of discipline upon Record, that when a crime is made publick and notorious, the Governors of the Church according to their power are to deny to give the blessed Sacrament, till by repentance such persons be restored. In private finnes, or finnes not known by solemnities of Law, or evidence of fact, good and bad are entertained in publick communion, and it is not to be accounted a crime in them that minister it, because they cannot avoid it, or have not competent authority to separate persons, whom the publick act of the Church hath not separated; but if once a publick separation be made, they that come, and he that rejects them not, both, pollute the blood of the everlasting Covenant.

The duty of preparation, that I here discourse of, is such a preparation as is a disposition to life; it is not a matter of convenience or advantage to repent of our sins before the Communion, but it is of absolute necessity, we perish, if we neglect it; for we eat damnation, and Satan enters into us, not CHRIST. And this preparation is not the act of a day, or a week; but it is a new state of life; no Man that is an habitual sinner must come to this feast, till he hath wholly changed his course of life. And then according as the actions of infirmity have made lesse or greater invasion upon his peace and health, so are the acts of repentance to be proportioned, in which the greatness of the preparations, their neighbourhood to death, or their frequent repetition, and the conduct of a spiritual Man are to give us counsel and determination. When a ravening and hungry Wolfe is destitute of prey, he eats the Turf, and loads his stomack with the glebe he treads on; but as soon as he findes better food, he vomits up his first load. Our secular and sensuall affections are loads of earth upon the Conscience, and when we approach to the Table of the LORD to eat the bread of the elect, and to drink the wine of Angels, we must reject such impure adhesions, that *holy persons* being nourished with *holy symbols*, may be sanctified and receive the eternal reward of holiness.

But as none must come hither but they that are in the state of

\* Negatus a Clemente Rom. sc. confit. c. 15 ab Hilario Can. go. in Math. Innocentio 1. 13. c. Myster. c. 12. a Ruperto, Hildebrand, Cenoman, &c. paucis aliis.

Nec a communione  
prohibere querquam  
pollutum nisi aut  
sponte confidit, aut  
in aliquo fine secula-  
ri fave Ecclesiastico  
Judicio nominatum  
et concordatum S. Aug.  
Lyon. mil. hom. 50.  
S. Thomas 3 p. 9. q. 51.  
a. 1.

## Part III.

grace, or charity and the love of GOD and their Neighbours ; and that the abolition of the state of sin is the necessary preparation , and is the action of yeers , and was not accepted as sufficient till the expiration of divers yeers by the Primitive Discipline , and in some cases not till the approach of Death ; so there is another preparation, which is of lesse necessity, which supposes the state of grace, and that, oil is burning in our lamps, but yet it is a preparation of ornament , a trimming up the soul, a dressing the spirit with degrees and instances of piety and progresses of perfection ; and it consists in setting apart some portion of our time before the Communion, that it be spent in prayer, in meditations , in renewing the vows of holy obedience, in examining our consciences, in mortifying our lesser irregularities, in devotions and actions of precise Religion , in acts of Faith, of Hope, of Charity, of zeal and holy desires, in acts of Eucharist or thanksgiving , of joy at the approach of so blessed opportunity, and all the acts of vertue whatsoever, which have indefinite relation to this and to other mysteries ; but yet are specially to be exercised upon this occasion, because this is the most perfect of external rites, and the most mysterious instrument of sanctification and perfection. There is no time or degree to be determined in this preparation ; but they , to whom *much is forgiven, will love much*, and they, who understand the excellence and holiness of the mystery, the glory of the guest that comes to inhabit, and the undecency of the closet of their hearts by reason of the adherencies of impurity, the infinite benefit then designed, and the increase of degrees by the excellency of these prævious acts of holiness, will not be too inquisitive into the necessity of circumstances and measures, but do it heartily, and devoutly, and reverently, and as much as they can, ever esteeming it necessary, that the actions of so great solemnity shoud by some actions of piety attending like handmaids be distinguished from common imployments, and remarked for the principal and most solemn of religious actions. The Primitive Church gave the holy Sacrament to Infants <sup>a</sup> immediately after baptism, and by that act transmitted this proposition , that nothing was of absolute necessity, <sup>b</sup> but innocency and purity from sin, and a being in the state of grace ; other actions of Religion are excellent addition to the dignity of the person, and honour of the mystery , but they were such of which Infants were not capable. The sum is this ; after the greatest consociation of religious duties for preparation, no Man can be sufficiently worthy to communicate, let us take care , that we be not *unworthy* by bringing a guilt with us, or the remanent affection to a sin.

When the happy hour is come, in which the LORD vouchsafes to enter into us, and dwell with us, and be united with his servants , we must then do the same acts over again with greater earnestness and intension ; confess the glories of GOD, and thy own unworthiness, praise his mercy with extasie of thanksgiving and joy, make oblation of thy self, of all thy faculties and capacities, pray, and reade, and meditate, and worship ; and that thou mayest more opportunely do all this, rise early to meet the Bridegroom, pray for special assistance, enter into the assembly of faithful people cheerfully, attend there diligently, demean thy self reverently, and before any other meat or drink receive the body of thy Saviour with pure hands , with holy intention, with a heart full of joy and faith, and hope, and wonder , and Eucharist. These things I therefore set down irregularly, and without method, because

a Clem. Rom. 1.8.  
confit. c. 20. Concil.  
Tolet. l. 1. c. 14.  
S. Aug. ep. 28. ad Bonif. & ep. 107. & lib.  
4 de Trin. c. 10.  
b Habentem adhuc  
voluntatem peccandi  
gravari magis dico  
Eucharistia percepiti  
one quam præficiari:  
sed hoc de iis dico  
quos capitalia. & mor-  
talia non gravant.  
Genazd. 1.3 de Ecclesi.  
dogmat. c. 52.

because in these actions no rule can be given to all persons ; and onely such a love, and such a religion in general is to be recommended, which will overrun the banks, and not easily stand confin'd within the margent of rules and artificial prescriptions. Love and religion are boundlesse, and all acts of grace relating to the present mystery, are fit and proportion'd entertainments of our LORD. This onely remember, that we are by the mystery of one bread confederated in one body , and the communion of Saints , and that the Sacrifice which we then commiemorate was designed by our LORD for the benefit of all his Church ; let us be sure to draw all faithful people into the society of the present blessing, joyning with the holy Man that Ministers, in prayers and offerings of that mystery for the benefit of all sorts of Men, of CHRIST'S Catholick Church : And it were also an excellent act of Christian communion, and agreeable to the practise of the Church in all ages to make an oblation to GOD for the poor ; that as we are fed by Christ's body, so we also should feed CHRIST'S body, making such returns as we can, a grain of Frankincense in exchange for a Province, an act of duty and Christian charity, as Eucharistical for the present grace, that all the body may rejoice and glory in the salvation of the LORD.

After thou hast received that pledge of immortality and antepast of glory, even the LORDS body in a mystery, leave not thy SAVIOUR there alone, but attend him with holy thoughts and colloquies of prayer and Eucharist. It was sometime counted infamous for a Woman to entertain a second love till the body of her dead Husband was dissolved into ashes, and disappeared in the form of a body. And it were well that so long as the consecrated symboles remain within us according to common estimate, we should keep the flame bright, and the perfume of an actual devotion burning, that our communion be not a transient act, but a permanent and lasting intercourse with our LORD. But in this every man best knowes his own opportunities and necessities of diversion; I onely commend earnestly to practise, that every receiver should make a recollection of himself, and the actions of the day, that he improve it to his best advantage, that he shew unto our LORD all the defects of his house, all his poverty and weaknesses; and this let every man do by such actions and devotions, which he can best attend, and himself by the advice of a spirituall man finde of best advantage. I would not make the practise of religion, especially in such irregular instances to be an art or a burden or a snare to scrupulous persons: What S. Paul said in the case of charity, I say also in this: *He that sowes plentifully shall reap plentifully, and he that sowes sparingly shall gather at the same rate; let every man do as himself purposeth in his heart:* onely it were well in this sacrament of love we had some correspondency, and proportionable returns of charity, and religious affections.

Some religious persons have moved a Question, whether it were better to communicate often or seldom? as thinking it more reverence to those holy mysteries to come but seldom, while others say, it is greater religion or charity to come frequently; But I suppose this question does not differ much from a dispute, whether is better to pray often or to pray seldom? For whatsoever is commonly pretended against a frequent communion may in its proportion object against a solemn prayer; remanent affection to a sin, enmity with neighbours, secular avocations to the height of care and trouble: for these either are great undecencies in order to a holy

### Part III.

17.

*Male olim aet  
est cū sacrificia  
computationibus  
finerant.*

Απὶ τέτοιῳ φάσι  
οι τὸ μετίην αὐ-  
τομάτως, ὅτε  
μέτα τὸ θύην εἰ-  
πος ἢ τοῖς οὐε-  
ρίοις ἀνεβαῖνει.

18

## Part III.

prayer, or else are direct irregularities, and unhallow the prayer. And the celebration of the holy Sacrament is in it self, and its own formality a sacred, solemn, and rituall prayer; in which we invocate GOD by the merits of CHRIST, expressing that adjuration not onely in words but in actuall representment, & commemoration of his passion: And if the necessities of the Church were well considered we should finde that a daily sacrifice of prayer and a daily prayer of sacrifice were no more but what her condition requires, and I would to GOD the governors of Churches would take care, that the necessities of Kings and kingdoms, of Churches, and states, were represtented to GOD by the most solemn and efficacious intercessions; and CHRIST hath taught us none greater than the praying in the vertue and celebration of his sacrifice. And this is the Counsel, that the Church received from Ignatius: *Hasten frequently to approach to the Eucharist, the glory of GOD. For when this is daily celebrated we break the powers of Satan, who turns all his actions into hostilities and darts of fire.* But this concerns the ministers of religion, who living in communities and colledges must make religion the businesse of their lives, and support kingdoms, and serve the interest of kings by the prayer of a daily sacrifice. And yet in this ministry the Clergy may serve their own necessary affaires, if the ministrition be divided into courses, as it was by the Oeconomy and wisdom of Solomon, for the Temple.

19.

\* vel Gennadius, c. 54. de Eccles. dogmat.

Epiſt. 80. ad Lucinum.

Iraqſificut nobis  
licet vel ieiunare  
Semper, vel ferti-  
per orare, & diem  
Dominicum acce-  
pto corpore  
Domini, indeſi-  
nenter celebaret  
gaudentibus, &c.  
*Idem.*

\* Concil. Later.

But concerning the communion of secular and lay persons, the conſideration is ſomething different. \* S. Austin gave this anſwer to it: *To receive the Sacrament every day I neither praise nor reprove; at leaſt let them receive it every LORDS day.* And this he ſpoke to Husbandmen and merchants. At the firſt commencement of Christianity, while the fervors Apostolical, and the calentures of infant Christendom did laſt, the whole assembly of faithfull people communicated every day: and this laſted in Rome and Spaine untill the time of S. Jerome, concerning which diligence he gives the ſame censure, which I now recited from S. Austin; for it ſuffered inconvenience by reaſon of a declining piety, and the intervening of ſecular intereſts. But then it came to once a week;

and yet that was not every where ſtrictly obſerved; but that it be received once every fortnight. S. Jerome counſels very strongly to Eustochium a holy virgin; *let the virgins confeffe their ſins twice every moneth, or oftener, and being fortified with the communion of the LORDS body, let them manfully fight againſt the Devils forces and attempts.* A while after, it came to once a moneth, then once a year, then it fell from that too, till all the Christians in the West were commanded to communicate every Easter by the decree of a great \* Councell above 500 years ſince; but the Church of England finding that too little, hath commanded all her children to receive thrice every year at leaſt, intending that they ſhould come oftener, but of this ſhe demands an account; for it hath fared with this Sacrament as with other actions of religion, which have descended from flames to ſtill fires, from fires to ſparks, from ſparks to embers, from embers to ſmoke, from ſmoke to nothing; and although the publike declenſion of piety is ſuch, that in this preſent conjuſture of things it is imposſible men ſhould be reduced to a daily communion, yet that they are to communicate frequently is ſo a duty, that as no excuse but impossibility can make the omission innocent; ſo the loſſe and conſequēnt want is infinite and invaluable.

Foc

For the holy Communion being a remembrance and sacramentall repetition of CHRIST'S passion, and the application of his sacrifice to us, and the whole Catholike Church ; as they , who seldom communicate, delight not to remember the passion of our LORD, and sin against his very purpose, and one of the designes of institution ; so he cares not to receive the benefits of sacrifice, who so neglects their application, and reducing them to actuall profit, and reception ; Whence came the sanctimony of the primitive Christians, whence came their strict observation of the divine Commandments, whence was it that they persevered in holy actions with hope, and an unwearied diligence ? from whence did their despising worldly things come , and living with common possession, and the distributions of an universall charity ? whence came these and many other excellencies but from a constant prayer, and a daily Eucharist ? They who every day represented the death of CHRIST, every day were ready to die for Christ; It was the discourse of an ancient and excellent person. And if we consider, this Sacrament is intended to unite the spirits and affections of the world, and that it is diffusive and powerful to this purpose [for we are one body (saith S. Paul) because we partake of one bread :] possibly we may have reason to say, that the wars of Kingdoms, the animosity of Families, the infinite multitude of Law-suits , the personal hatreds , and the univeral want of charity, which hath made the world miserable and wicked , may in a great degree be attributed to the neglect of this great symbole and instrument of charity. The Chalice of the Sacrament is called by Saint Paul, *The cup of blessing*; and if children need every day to beg blessing of their parents , if we also thirst not after this cup of blessing, blessing may be far from us. It is called the communication of the blood of CHRIST ; and it is not imaginable that Man should love Heaven , or felicity, or his LORD, that desires not perpetually to bathe in that salutary stream, the blood of the holy JESUS, the immaculate Lamb of GOD.

But I finde, that the religious fears of Men are pretended a colour to excuse this irreligion. Men are wicked, and not prepared, and busie, and full of cares, and affairs of the world ; and cannot come with due preparation, [and therefore better not come at all : Nay, Men are not ashamed to say, they are at enmity with certain persons and therefore cannot come. Concerning those persons, who are unprepared, because they are in a state of sin or uncharitableness , it is true, they must not come ; but this is so far from excusing their not coming, that they encrease their sin and severe misery to themselves because they do not *lay aside every weight*, and the *sinne that does so easily beset them*, that they may come to the marriage Supper. It is as if we shoud excuse our selves from the duties of charity, by saying we are uncharitable ; from giving almes, by saying we are covetous ; from chastity, by saying, we are lascivious. To such Men it is just that they graze with the Goats, because they refuse to wash their hands, that they may come to the supper of the Lamb. 2. Concerning those that pretend cares and incumbrances of the world] if their affairs make sin and impure affections to stick upon them , they are in the first consideration ; but if their office be necessary, just, or charitable, they imitate Martha and choose the less perfect part, when they neglect the offices of Religion for duties Oeconomical. 3. But the other sort have more pretence and *fainer*

## Part III.

fairer vertue in their outside. They suppose like the Persian Princes, the seldomer such mysterious rites are seen, the more reverence we shall have, and they the more majesty : and they are fearfull lest the frequent attractation of them should make us lesse to value the great earnestnes of our redemption and immortality. It is a pious consideration, but not becoming them ; for it cannot be, that the Sacrament be undervalued by frequent reception without the great unworthinesse of the persons, so turning GODS grace into lightnesse and loathing manna : nay it cannot be without an unworthy communication ; for he that receives worthily, encreases in the love of GOD and religion ; and the fires of the altar are apt to kindle our sparks into a flame ; and when CHRIST our LORD enters into us, and we grow weary of him, or lesse fond of his frequent entrance, and perpetuall cohabitation, it is an infallible signe we have let his enemy in, or are preparing for it. For this is the difference between secular and spiritual objects. Nothing of this world hath any pleasure in it long beyond the hope of it ; for the possession and enjoyment is found so empty, that we grow weary of it ; but whatsoever is spiritual, and in order to GOD, is lesse before we have it, but in the fruition it swels our desires, and enlarges the appetite, and makes us more receptiue and forward in the entertainment ; and therefore those acts of religion that set us forward in time, and backward in affection, do declare that we have not well done our duty, but have communicated unworthily. So that the mending of our fault will answer the objection. Communicate with more devotion, and repent with greater contrition, and walk with more caution, and pray more earnestly, and meditate diligently, and receive with reverence and godly fear, and we shall finde our affections encrease together with the spiritual enjouement.

22.

And if after all diligence it be still feared, that a man is not well prepar'd, I must say that it is a scruple, that is, a trouble beyond a doubt, and without reason, next to superstition, and the dreams of religion. And it is nourished by imagining, that no duty is accepted, if it be lesse than perfection, and that GOD is busied in heaven, not onely to destroy the wicked, and to dash in pieces vessels of dishonour, but to break a bruised reed in pieces, and to cast the smoking flax into the flames of hel. In opposition to which we must know that nothing makes us unprepared but an evil conscience, a state of sin, or a deadly act ; but the lesser infirmities of our life, against which we daily strive, and for which we never have any kindnesse or affections, are not spots in these feasts of charity, but instruments of humility, and stronger invitations to come to those rites, which are ordaine for corroboratives against infirmities of the soul, and for the growth of the spirit in the strengths of GOD. For those other acts of preparation, which precede and accompany the duty, the better and more religiously they are done, they are indeed of more advantage, and honourable to the Sacrament ; yet he that comes in the state of grace, though he takes the opportunity upon a sudden offer, sins not ; and in such indefinite duties, whose degrees are not described it is good counsell to do our best, but it is ill to make them instruments of scruple, as if it were essentially necessary to do that in the greatest height, which is onely intended for advantage and the fairer accommodation of the mystery. But these very acts if they be esteemed necessary preparations to the Sacrament are the greatest arguments in the world, that it is best to communicate often, because the doing of that, which must suppose the exercise

*Tempestivum  
acecum sola  
Conscientia in-  
tegritas facit.  
S. Chrysost.*

ercise of so many graces, must needs promote the interest of religion and dispose strongly to habitual graces by our frequent and solemn repetition of the acts. It is necessary that every communicant be first examined concerning the state of his soul, by himself or his superior, and that very scrutiny is in admirable order towards the reformation of such irregularities which time and temptation, negligence and incuriousnesse, infirmity or malice hath brought into the secret regions of our will and understanding. Now although this examination be therefore enjoyned, that no man should approach to the holy Table in the state of ruine and reprobation, and that therefore it is an act not of direct preparation, but an enquiry, whether we be prepared or no, yet this very examination will finde so many little irregularities, and so many great imperfections, that it will appear the more necessary, to repair the breaches and lesser ruines by such acts of piety and religion; because every communication is intended to be a nearer approach to GOD, a further step in grace, a progresse towards glory, and an instrument of perfection; and therefore upon the stock of our spiritual interests, for the purchase of a greater hope, and the advantages of a growing charity, ought to be frequently received. I end with the words of a pious and learned person: *It is a vain fear and an imprudent reverence, that Johan. Gerson procrastinates and deferrers going to the LORD, that calls them; they deny to go to the fire pretending they are cold, and refuse physick because they need it.*



## The P R A Y E R.

**O** Blessed and Eternall Jesus, who gavest thy self a sacrifice for our sins, thy body for our spirituall food, thy blood to nourish our spirits, and to quench the flames of hell and lust, who didst so love us, who were thine enemies, that thou desiredst to reconcile us to thee, and becamest all one with us, that we may live the same life, think the same thoughts, love the same love, and be partakers of thy resurrection and immortality: Open every window of my soul that I may be full of light, and may see the excellency of thy love, the merits of thy sacrifice, the bitterness of thy passion, the glories and virtues of the mysterious sacrament. LORD let me ever hunger and thirst after this instrument of righteousness, let me have no gust or relish of the unsatisfying delights of things below, but let my soul dwell in thee, let me for ever receive thee spiritually, and very frequently communicate with thee sacramentally, and imitate thy vertues piously, and strictly, and dwell in the pleasures of thy house eternally. LORD, thou hast prepared a table for me, against them that trouble me; let that holy Sacrament of the Eucharist be to me a defence and shield, a nourishment and medicine, life and health, a means of sanctification and spirituall growth, that I receiving the body of my Deereft LORD may be one with his mystical body, & of the same spirit united with indissoluble bonds of a strong faith, and a holy hope, and a never failing charity, that from this veile I may passe into the visions of eternall clarity, from eating thy body to beholding thy face in the glories of thy everlasting kingdom, O blessed and eternall Jesus. Amen.

Confide-

## Ad. Sect. 15.

*Considerations of the accidents happening  
on the Vespers of the passion.*

**W**hen JESUS had supped and sang a hymn, and prayed and exhorted, and comforted his Disciples with a farewell sermon, in which he repeated such of his former precepts, which were now apposite to the present condition, and reinforced them with proper and pertinent arguments, he went over the brook Cedron, and entred into a garden, and into the prologue of his Passion, choosing that place for his agony and satisfactory pains, in which the first scene of humane misery was represented, and where he might best attend the offices of devotion preparatory to his death. Besides this he therefore departed from the house, that he might give opportunity to his Enemies surprise, and yet not incommodate the good man, by whose hospitality they had eaten the paschall lamb; so that he went like a lamb to the slaughter, to the garden as to a prison, as if by an agreement with his persecutors he had expected their arrest, and stayed there to prevent their further enquiry. For so great was his desire to pay our ransome that himself did assist by a forward patience, and active opportunity towards the persecution, teaching us that by an active zeal and a ready spirit we assist the designes of GOD S glory though in our own sufferings and secular infelicities.

Et enim in horto  
tanquam in carcere S. Chrys.  
Ut labore mi-  
nuat Iudeis se  
querentibus.  
Theophyl.

2.

When he entred the garden, he left his Disciples at the entrance of it, calling with him onely Peter, James, and John; he withdrew himself from the rest about a stones cast, and began to be exceeding heavy. He was not sad till he had called them, (for his sorrow began when he pleased) which sorrow he also chose to represent to those three, who had seen his transfiguration, the earnest of his future glory, that they might see of how great glory for our sakes he disrobed himself, and that they also might by the confronting those contradictory accidents observe, that GOD uses to dispence his comforts, the irradiations and emissions of his glory, to be preparatives to those sorrows, with which our life must be alloyed and seasoned; that none should refuse to partake of the sufferings of CHRIST, if either they have already felt his comforts or hope hereafter to wear his crown. And it is not ill observed, that S. Peter being the chief of the Apostles and Doctor of the Circumcision, S. John being a Virgin, and S. James the first of the Apostles, that was martyred, were admitted to C H R I S T S greatest retirements, and mysterious seceracies as being persons of so singular and eminent dispositions, to whom according to the pious opinion of the Church, especiall coronets are prepared in heaven, besides the great

great crown of righteousness, which in common shall beautifie the heads of all the saints; meaning this, that *Doctors, Virgins and Martyrs* shall receive even for their very state of life, and accidental graces more eminent degrees of accidental glory, who like the sun reflecting upon a lypnid fountain receives its rays doubled without any increment of its proper and natural light.

3.

J E S U S began to be exceeding sorrowfull, to be sore amazed and sad even to death. And because he was now to suffer the pains of our sins, there began his passion, whence our sins spring. From an evill heart and a prevaricating spirit all our sins arise: and *in the spirit of CHRIST* began his sorrow, where he truly felt the full value and demerit of sinne, which we thinke not worthy of a teare or a hearty sigh; but he groaned and fell under the burden. But therefore he took upon him this sadness, that our imperfect sorrow and contrition might be heightened in his example, and accepted in its union and confederacy with his. And J E S U S still designed a further mercy for us, for he sanctified the passion of feare, and hallowed naturall sadnesses, that we might not thinke, the infelicities of our nature, and the calamities of our temporall condition to become criminall, so long as they make us not omit a duty, or dispose us to the election of a crime, or force us to swallow a temptation, nor yet to exceed the value of their impulsive cause. He that grieves for the losse of friends, and yet had rather loose all the friends he hath, then loose the love of G O D, hath the sorrow of our L O R D for his precedent. And he that feares death, and trembles at its approximation, and yet had rather dye again, then sin once, hath not sinned in his feare, C H R I S T hath hallowed it, and the necessitous condition of his nature are his excuse. But it were highly to be wished, that in the midst of our caresses and levities of society, in our festivities, and triumphall merriments, when we laugh at folly, and rejoice in sinne, we would remember, that for those very merriments our blessed L O R D felt a bitter sorrow; and not one vain and sinfull laughter, but cost the holy J E S U S a sharp pang and throe of passion.

4.

Now that the holy J E S U S began to tast the bitter cup, he betook him to his great antidote, which himself the great Physician of our soules prescribed to all the world to cure their calamities, and to make them passe from miseries into vertue, that so they may arrive at glory; he prayes to his heavenly Father, he kneels down, and not only so, but falls flat upon the earth, and would in humility and fervent adoration have descended low as the centre, he prayes with an intension great as his sorrow, and yet with a dereliction so great, and a conformity to the divine will so ready, as if it had been the most indifferent thing in the world for him to be delivered to death or from it; for though his nature did decline death as that which hath a naturall horror and contradiction to the present interest of its preservation, yet when he looked upon it, as his Heavenly Father had put it into the order of redemption of the World, it was that baptism, which he was freightned till he had accomplished. And now there is not in the World any condition of prayer, which is essentiall to the dutie, or any circumstances of advantage to

Part III.

its performance, but were concentrated in this one instance; Humility of spirit, lowliness of deportment, importunity of desire, a fervent spirit, a lawfull matter, resignation to the will of G O D, great love, the love of a son to his Father, (which appellative was the form of his addresse) perseverance, (he went thrice, and prayed the same prayer,) it was not long, and it was so retired; as to have the advantages of a sufficient solitude and opportune recollection, for he was withdrawn from the most of his Disciples, and yet not so alone as to loose the benefit of communion, for Peter and the two Boanerges were neer him; C H R I S T in this prayer, which was the most fervent, that he ever made on earth, intending to transmit to all the world a precedent of devotion to be transcribed, and imitated; that we should cast all our cares, and empty them in the bosom of G O D, being content to receive such a portion of our trouble back again, which he affignes us for our spirituall emolumēt.

5.

The holy JESUS having in a few words poured out torrents of innocent desires, was pleased still to interrupt his prayer, that he might visit his charge, that little flock, which was presently after to be scattered: he was carefull of them in the midst of his agonies; they in his sufferings were fast asleep. He awakens them, gives them command to watch and pray, that is, to be vigilant in the custody of their senses, and observant of all accidents, and to pray that they may be strengthened against al incursions of

*Kai γερμανος οι  
εγωνται επιτησε-*  
*πα, μεγαλυτε.*

*Luke 22. 44.*  
*Extensus ora-*  
*bat, sic latimus*  
*interpres red-*  
*dit: Alii plures*  
*redundunt per*  
*[intensius.*

enemies and temptations; and then returns to prayer, and so a third time: his devotion still increasing with his sorrow, and when his prayer was full, and his sorrow come to a great measure, after the third, G O D sent his Angel to comfort him, and by that act of grace then onely expressed, hath taught us to continue our devotions so long as our needs last: it may be G O D will not send a comforter till the third time, that is, after a long expectation, and a patient sufferance, and a lasting hope. In the interim G O D supports us with a secret hand, and in his own time will refresh the spirit with the visitations of his Angels, with the emisions of comfort from the Spirit, the Comforter. And know this also that the holy Angel, and the L O R D of all the Angels stands by every holy person, when he prayes, and although he drawes before his glories the curtain of a cloud, yet in every instant he takes care we shall not perish, and in a just season dissolves the cloud, and makes it to distill in holy dew, and drops, sweet as Manna, pleasant as Nard, and wholesome as the breath of heaven. And such was

the consolation which the holy JESUS received by the minister y of the Angel, representing to CHRIST the L O R D of the Angels, how necessary it was that he should dye for the glory of G O D that in his paſlion his justice, wiſdome, goodneſſe, power and mercy ſhould ſhine, that unleſſe he died all the world ſhould perish; but his blood ſhould obtain their pardon; and that it ſhould open the gates of heaven, repair the ruine of Angels, establish a holy Church, be productive of innumerable adoptive children to his Father, whom himself ſhould make heirs of glo- ry; and that his paſlion ſhould ſoon paſſe away, his Father hearing and granting his prayer, that the cup ſhould paſſe ſpeedily, though indeed it ſhould paſſe through him, that it ſhould be attended and followed with a glorious reſurrecſtion, with eternall rest and glory of his humanity, with the exaltation of his Name, with a ſupreme dominion over all the world, and that his Father ſhould make him King of kings, and Prince of the Catholike

Catholike church. These or whatsoever other comforts the Angel ministred, were such considerations which the holy JESUS knew, and the Angel knew not but by communication from that GOD, to whose assumed humanity the angel spake, yet he was pleased to receive comfort from his servant, just as GOD receives glory from his creatures, and as he rejoices in his own works, even because he is good and gracious, and is pleased so to do; and because himself had caused a voluntary sadness to be interposed between the habituall knowledge and the actuall consideration of these discourses; and we feel a pleasure when a friendly hand layes upon our wound the plaister, which our selves have made; and applyes such instruments and considerations of comfort, which we have in notion and an ineffective habite, but cannot reduce them to act, because no man is so apt to be his own comforter; which GOD hath therefore permitted, that our needs should be the occasion of a mutuall charity.

It was a great season for the Angels coming because it was a great necessity, which was incubinent upon our LORD; for his sadness, and his agony was so great, mingled and compounded of sorrow and zeal, fear and desire, innocent nature and perfect grace, that he sweat drops as great as if the blood had started through little undiscerned fontinells, and outrun the streams and rivers of his Crosse; a *Euthymius*, and b *Theophylact* say, that the Evangelists use this, as a tragical expression of the greatest agony, and an unusuall sweat, a in c. 24. Mat. it being usuall to call the tears of the greatest sorrow, tears of b in 22. Luca. blood; but from the beginning of the Church it hath been more generally apprehended literally, and that some blood mingled with the serous substance issued from his veines in so great abundance, that they moistened the ground, and bedecked his garment, which stood like a new firmament studded with stars, portending an approaching storm; Now he came from Bozyah with his garments red and bloody; and this agony verified concerning the holy JESUS those words of David, [I am poured out like water, my bones are dispersed, my heart in the midst of my body is like melting wax] saith Justin Martyr. a Venerable Bede saith, that the descending of these drops of blood upon the earth besides the generall purpose, had also a particular relation to the present infirmities of the Apostles, that our blessed LORD obtained of his Father by the merits of those holy drops, mercies, and speciall support for them; and that effusion redeemed them from the present participation of death. And S. Austin meditates that the body of our LORD all overspread with drops of bloody sweat did prefigure the future state of Martyrs, and that his body mysticall should be clad in a red garment variegated with the symboles of labour and passion, sweat and blood: by which himself was pleased to purify his Church, and present her to GOD holy and spotlesse; what collaterall designes and tacite significations might be designed by this mysterious sweat I know not; certainly it was a sad beginning of a most dolorous passion; and such griefs, which have so violent, permanent and sudden effects upon the body, which is not of a nature symbolical to interior and immateriall causes, are proclaimed by such marks to be high and violent; we have read of some persons, that the grief and fear of one night hath put a cover of snow upon their

## Part III.

Cum misericordia solamen  
tristis um  
Te solatur civis ex-  
tentus,  
Res miranda! solus  
dans gaudium  
Rex, a civi sumit se-  
latum.  
Hondemius Anglus.

6.

Justin Mart. Dial.  
Tryph. Athanas. l. 6  
de beat. filii Del. -  
Auz. l. 6. c. 5. de  
confess. Evag.  
Hieron. l. de tradi.  
Hebr. Iren. l. 4. c. 51  
contra hazel. Idem  
avunc. Dionyfius Alex.  
Amonius, Epiphani.  
& alii.

a lib. 6 in luc-

Part III.

their heads, as if the labours of thirty years had been extracted, and the quintessence dranke off in the passion of that night; but if nature had been capable of a greater or more prodigious imprese of passion then a bloody sweat, it must needs have happened in this agony of the holy JESUS, in which he undertook a grief great enough to make up the imperfect contrition of all the Saints, and to satisfie for the impenitencies of all the world.

7.

By this time the Traytour Judas was arrived at Gethsemani, and being in the voisnage of the garden; JESUS rises from his prayers and first calls his Disciples from their sleep, and by an a *Frony* seemes to give them leave to sleep on, but reproves their drowsinesse, when danger is so neer, and bids them henceforth take their rest, meaning, if they could for danger, which now was indeed come to the garden doors; but the holy JESUS, that it might appear, he undertook the passion with choice and a free election, not onely refused to fly, but called his Apostles to rise, that they might meet his murderers, who came to him with swords and staves, as if they were to surprise a Prince of armed outlaws, whom without force they could not reduce. So also might Butchers do well to go armed, when they are pleasd to be afraid of lambs, by calling them Lions. *Judas* onely discovered his Masters retirements, and betrayed him to the opportunities of an armed band, for he could not accuse his Master of any word or private action, that might render him obnoxious to suspicion or the Law. For such are the rewards of innocence and prudence, that the one secures against sin, the other against suspicion and appearencies.

8.

The holy JESUS had accustomed to receive every of his Disciples after absence with entertainment of a Kisse which was the endeirement of persons, and the expreſſion of the orientall civility, and *Judas* was confident that his L O R D would not reject him, whose feet he had washed at the time, when he foretold this event, and therefore had agreed to ſignifie him by this \* ſigne; and did ſo, beginning war with a kiffe, and breaking the peace of his L O R D by the ſymbole of kindneſſe; which because JESUS entertained with much evenneſſe and charitable expreſſions, calling him [ friend ] he gave evidence, that if he retained civilities to his greatest enemies in the very acts of hostility, he hath banquets and crowns and ſcepters for his friends, that adore him with the kiffes of charity, and love him with the ſincerity of an affectionate ſpirit. But our blessed L O R D besides his eſſentiall sweetneſſe, and ſerenity of ſpirit, understood well, how great benefits himself and all the world were to receive by occation of that act of *Judas*; And our greatest enemy does by accident to holy persons, the offices of their deareſt Friends; telling us our faults, without a cloak to cover their deformities, but out of malice laying open the circumſtances of aggravation, doing us affronts, from whence we have an instrument of our patience, and restraining us from scandalous crimes leaſt we become a ſcorn and reproof to them that hate us. And it is none of G O D S leaſt mercies, that he permits enemities amongst men, that animosities and peeuiſhneſſe may reprove more sharply, and correct with more ſeverity and ſimplicity then the gentle hand of Friends, who are apter to binde our wounds up, then to diſcover them, and make them ſmart; but they are to us an exceilent probation,

how

O ſignum facilegum!  
O placitum fugientium!  
dum! ubi ab oculo  
incipiunt bellum, e  
per pacis iudicium,  
Pacis rumpitur ſan  
cramentum, Auguſt.  
ferm. 12.  
Si honoras O dulcis  
Domine  
Inimicum amici no  
mine,  
Quales erunt amoris  
carnis  
Qui te canunt, et mo  
dulamur.  
Hondem. de paſſione.

how friends may best do the offices of friends, if they would take the plainnesse of Enemies in accusing, and still mingle it with the tendernesse and good affections of friends. But our blessed Lord called *Judas* [ Friend ; ] as being the instrument of bringing him to glory, and all the world to pardon, if they would.

JESUS himself begins the enquiry, and leads them into their errand, and tells them he was JESUS of Nazareth whom they sought. But this also, which was an answer so gentle had in it a strength greater then the Eastern winde, or the voice of thunder; for GOD was in that still voice, and it struck them down to the ground; \* And yet they, and so do we still persist to persecute our LORD, and to provoke the eternal GOD, who can with the breath of his mouth, with a word or a signe, or a thought reduce us into nothing, or into a worse condition, even an eternall duration of torments, and cohabitation with a never ending misery. And if we cannot bear a soft answer of the mercifull GOD, how shall we dare to provoke the wrath of the Almighty Judge? But in this instance there was a rare mixture of effects, as there was in CHRIST of natures : The voice of a man, and the power of GOD. For it is observed by the Doctors of the primitive ages, that from the nativity of our LORD to the day of his death, the Divinity & humanity did so communicate in effects, that no great action passed, but it was like the sun shinning through a cloud, or a beauty with a thin vail drawn over it, they gave illustration and testimony to each other. The holy JESUS was born a tender and a crying infant, but is adored by the *Magi* as a King ; by the Angels as their God. He is circumcised as a man, but a name is given him to signify him to be the Saviour of the world. He flies into Egypt like a distressed childe under the conduct of his helpeles parents, but as soon as he enters the Countrey , the Idols fall down and confess his true Divinity. He is presented in the Temple as the Son of man, but by *Simeon* and *Anna* he is celebrated with divine prayses for the *Messias*, the SON of GOD. He is baptiz'd in Jordan as a sinner, but the holy Ghost descending upon him proclaimed him to be the welbeloved of GOD. He is hungry in the Desert as a man ; but sustained his body without meat and drink for fourry dayes together by the power of his Divinity : there he is tempted of Satan as a weak man, and the angels of light minister unto him as their supreme LORD. And now a little before his death, when he was to take upon him all the affronts, miseries and exinanitions of the most miserable, he receives testimonies from above, which are most wonderfull : For he was transfigured upon Mount Tabor, entred triumphantly into Jerusalem, had the acclamations of the people ; when he was dying he darkened the sun , when he was dead he opened the sepulchres, when he was fast nailed to the Croffe he made the earth to tremble, now when he suffereth himself to be apprehended by a guard of Souldiers, he strikes them all to the ground onely by replying to their answer, that the words of the Prophet might be verified ; therefore my people shall know my name, therefore they shall know in that day, that I am he Isay. 52.6. that doth speak, behold it is I.

The Souldiers and servants of the Jews having recovered from their fall, and risen by the permission of JESUS still persisted in their enquiry after him, who was present, ready, and desirous to be sacrificed ; he therefore permitted himself to be taken, but not his Disciples, for he it was, that set them their bounds ; and he secured his Apostles to be witnesses of his suffering,

\* Πάλιτης ἡπ.  
διαδόσιοι μετέβο-  
μορεσ ασπιδίστατη  
Αυτοκράτορες  
πάτλωτοι ἐπε-  
στρύματο κονίη,  
Γράμμες, θερι-  
θίνης, ἀπέύχει  
λαίδατ φωνής.

Nonn.  
S. Cyril.  
S. Athanas.  
S. Leo, &c.

## Part III.

Semovit a periculo  
discipulos, non igno-  
rans ad se volum cer-  
tamen illud, et opus  
salutis nostra perti-  
nente. Regnans enim  
er non scientis na-  
tura opus erat. S.  
Cyt.

Dominum omnium,  
mysteria, non arma-  
tenuerunt, S. Ambros.  
in Luctu.

and his glories, and this work was the redemption of the world in which no man could have an active share; he alone was to tread the winepress; and time enough they should be called to a fellowship of sufferings. But JESUS went to them, and they bound him with cords, and so began our liberty and redemption from slavery and sin, and cursings, and death. But he was bound faster by bands of his own; his Fathers will, and mercy, pity of the world, prophecies and mysteries and love held him fast, and these cords were as strong as death; and the cords, which the Souldiers malice put upon his holy hands were but symboles and figures, his own compassion and affection were the moralls. But yet he vndertook this shott restraint and condition of a prisoner, that all sorts of perfecion and exterior calamities might be hallowed by his susception, and these pungent sorrows should like bees sting him, and leave their sting behinde, that all the sweetnesse should remain for us. Some melancholy devotions have from uncertain stories added sad circumstances of the first violence done to our LORD; that they bound him with three cords and that with so much violence, that they caused blood to start from his tender hands; that they spit then also upon him with a violence and incivility like that which their Fathers had used towards *Hur* the Brother of *Aaron*, whom they choaked with impure spittings into his throat, because he refused to consent to the making a golden calf. These particulars are not transmitted by certain Records; certain it is they wanted no malice, and now no power, for the LORD had given himself into their hands.

## II.

S. Peter seeing his Master thus ill used asked, *Master, shall we strike with the sword?* And before he had his answer cut off the ear of *Malchus*. Two swords there were in Christs family, and S. Peter bore one, either because he was to kill the Paschall Lamb, or according to the custom of the Countrey to secure them against beasts of prey, which in that region were frequent, and dangerous in the night. But now he used it in an unlawful war; he had no competent authority, it was against the ministers of his lawfull Prince, and against our Prince we must not draw our sword for *Christ* himself, himself having forbidden us; as his kingdom is not of this world, so neither were his defences secular; he could have called for many legions of Angels for his guard, if he had so pleased; and we read that one Angel flew 185000 armed men in one night; and therefore it was a vast power, which was at the command of our LORD; and he needs not such low auxiliaries as an army of rebels, or a navy of Pirates to defend his cause; he first lays the foundation of our happiness in his sufferings, and hath ever since supported religion by patience and suffering, and in poverty and all the circumstances and conjunctures of improbable causes. Fighting for religion is certain to destroy charity, but not certain to support faith. S. Peter therefore may use his keys, but he is commanded to put up his sword, and he did so, and presently he and all his fellows fairly ran away; and yet that course was much the more Christian, for though it had in it much infirmity, yet it had no malice. In the mean time the Lord was pleased to touch the ear of *Malchus*, and he cured it; adding to the first instance of power in throwing them to the ground, an act of miraculous mercy, curing the wounds of an enemy made by a Friend. But neither did this pierce their callous and obdurate spirits; but they lead him in uncouth wayes, and through the brook Cedron, in which it is said the ruder souldiers plunged him, and passed upon him all the affronts, and rudenesses, which an insolent

*Detorrente in  
via babit!* [I]  
*Fsal. I. 10. xl.*

insolent and cruell multitude could think of, to signify their contempt and their rage. And such is the nature of evil men, who when they are not soothed by the instruments and arguments of grace are much hardened by them; such being the purpose of GOD, that either, grace shall cure sin, or accidentally increase it; that it shall either pardon it, or bring it to greater punishment: for so I have seen healthful medicines abused by the incapacities of a healthlesse body become fuel to a feaver, and encrease the distemperature from indisposition to a sharp disease, and from thence to the margent of the grave. But it was otherwise in *Saul*, whom JESUS threw to the ground with a more angry sound than these persecutors; but *Saul* rose a Saint, and they persisted Devils, and the grace of GOD distinguished the events.



## THE PRAYER.

**O** Holy JESUS, make me by thy example to conform to the will of that eternal GOD, who is our Father, mercifull and gracious, that I may choose all those accidents, which his providence hath actually disposed to me, that I may know no desires but his commands, and his will, and that in all afflictions I may fly thither for mercy, pardon, and support, and may wait for deliverance in such times and manners, which the Father hath reserved in his own power, and graciously dispenses according to his infinite wisdom and compassion. Holy JESUS give me the gift and spirit of prayer, and do thou by thy gracious intercession supply my ignorances and passionate desires, and imperfect choices, procuring and giving to me such returns of favour, which may support my needs, and serve the ends of religion, and the spirit, which thy wisdom chooses, and thy passion hath purchased, and thy grace loves to bestow upon all thy saints and servants. Amen.

2.

**E**ternall GOD sweetest JESU, who didst receive Judas with the affection of a SAVIOUR, and sufferedst him to kisse thy cheek, with the serenity and tranquillity of GOD, and didst permit the soldiars to binde thee, with patience exemplary to all ages of Martyrs, and didst cure the wound of thy enemy with the charity of a parent, and the tendernesse of an infinite pity, O Kisse me with the kisses of thy mouth, embrace me with the entertainments of a gracious L O R D, and let my soul dwell and feast in thee, who art the repository of eternall sweetnesse and refreshments. Binde me O LORD with those bands which tyed thee fast, the chains of love; that such holy union may dissolve the cords of vanity, and confine the bold pretensions of usurping passions, and imprison all extravagancies of an impertinent spirit, and lead sin captive to the dominion of grace and sanctified reason, that I also may imitate all the parts of thy holy passion, and may by thy bands get my liberty, by thy kisse enkindle charity, by the touch of thy hand, and the breath of thy mouth have all my wounds cured and restored to the integrity of a holly penitent, and the purities of innocence, that I may love thee, and please thee, and live with thee for ever, O holy and sweetest JESU. Amen.



*Ad. Sect. 15. num.*

*Considerations upon the accidents happening  
from the apprehension till the Cru-  
cifixion of J E-  
S U S.*



THE house of *Annas* stood in the mount Sion, and in the way to the house of *Caiphas*, and thither he was led as to the first stage of their triumph for their surprise of a person so feared, , and desired ; and there a naughty person smote the holy JESUS upon the face for saying to *Annas*, that he had made his doctrine publike, and that all the people were able to give account of it ; to whom the lambe of GOD shewed as much meeknesse and patience in his answer, as in his answer to *Annas* he had shewed prudence and modesty. For now that they had taken JESUS they wanted a crime to object against him, and therefore were desirous to snatch occasion from his discourses, to which they resolved to tempt him by questions and affronts ; but his answer was generall and indefinite, safe and true, enough to acquit his doctrine from suspicions of secret designes, and yet secure against their present snares ; for now himself, who alwayes had the innocence of Doves, was to joyn with it the prudence and wariness of serpents ; not to prevent death, (for that he was resolved upon) but that they might be destitute of all appearance of a just caufe on his part. Here it was that *Judas* received his money, and here that holy face, which was designed to be that object in the beholding of which much of the celestiall glory doth consist, that face, which the Angels stare upon with wonder, like infants at a bright Sun-beam, was smitten extrajudicially by an incompetent person, with circumstances of despight, in the presence of a Judge, in a full assembly, and none reproved the insolency and the cruelty of the affront : for they resolved to use him as they use wolves and *Tigres*, withall things that may be destructive, violent and impious ; and in this the injury was heightened, because the blow was said to be given by *Malchus* an Idumean slave, and therefore a contemptible person: but far more unworthy by his ingratitude ; for so he repayed the H. Jesus for working a miracle and healing his ear. But so the Scripture was fulfilled; *He shall give his body to the smiters, and his cheeks to the nippers*, saith the Prophet *Isay*; and they shall smite the cheek of the judge of Israel, saith *Micah*. And

*Malchus Idu-  
menis missus ca-  
ptivus ab oris  
Episc.Cremon.  
l.2.Christ.  
Isay.50.6.  
Micah.5.1.*

And this very circumstance of the Passion, Lactantius \* affirms to have been foretold by the *Erythraean Sibyl*. But no meeknesse or indifferency could engage our LORD, not to protest his innocence, and though following his steps we must walk in the regions of patience, and tranquillity, and admirable toleration of injuries; yet we may represent such defences of ourselves, which by not resisting the sentence may testify that our suffering is undeserved: and if our innocence will not preserve our lives, it will advance our title to a better; and every good cause ill judged shall be brought to another tribunall to receive a just and unerring sentence.

*Amas* having suffered this unworthy usage towards a person so excellent, sent him away to *Caiphas*, who had formerly in a full councell, resolved he should die, yet now palliating the designe with the scheme of a tribunall, they seek out for witnesses, and the witnesses are to seek for allegations; and when they find them, they are to seek for proofes, and those proofes were to seek for unity and consent, and nothing was ready for their purposes, but they were forced to use the semblance of a judicall processe, that because they were to make use of Pilates authority to put him to death they might persuade *Pilate* to accept of their examination and conviction without further enquiry. But such had been the excellency and exemplar piety and prudence of the life of JESUS, that if they pretended against him questions of their Law they were not capitall in a Roman court. If they affirmed, that he had moved the people to sedition and affected the kingdom, they saw that all the world would convince them of false testimony; At last, after many attempts they accused him for a figurative speech, a trope, which they could not understand; which if it had been spoken in a literal sense and had been acted too according to the letter, had been so far from a fault that it would have been a prodigy of power, and it had been easier to raise the temple of Jerusalem, then to raise the temple of his bo-die. In the mean time, the Lamb of GOD left his cause to defend it self under the protection of his heavenly Father; not onely because himself was determined to die, but because if he had not, those premises could never have inferred it; but this silence of the holy JESUS fulfilled a Prophesie, it made his enemies full of murmur and amazement, it made them to see that he despised the accusations, as certain and apparent calumnies; but that himself was fearlesse of the issue, and in the sense of morality and mysteries, taught us not to be too apt to excuse our selves, when the semblance of a fault lies upon us, unless by some other duty we are obliged to our defences; since he *Taciturnitas* who was most innocent, was most silent; and it was expedient that *Christi apologia* as the first *Adam* increased his sin by a vain apology, the silence *Adæ absolvit.* and sufferance of the second *Adam* should expiate and recon-*S.Hieron.* cile it.

But *Caiphas* had a reserve, which he knew should do the businesse in that assembly; he adjured him by GOD to tell him, if he were the CHRIST. The holy JESUS being adjured by so sacred a name, would not now refuse an answer, least it might not consist with that honour which is due to it, and which he alwaies payed; and that he might neither despise the authority of the High priest nor upon so solemn occasion be wanting

\* Lib.4.instit.  
cap. 18.  
*Eis diripiuntur Christus, &c. omnis  
iustitia iste  
adversarius tu dominus  
jani quidam Christus  
omnis diripiens.*

2.  
Victor in  
S. Marc.

## Part III.

wanting to that great truth, which he came down to earth to persuade to the world. And when three such circumstances occurre, it is enough to open our mouths, though we let in death ; and so did our LORD : confessed himself to be the *CHRIST* the Son of the living *GOD* ; and this the High priest was pleased, as the designe was laid to call, blasphemy, and there they voted him to die. Then it was, the *high Priest rent his clothes* ; the veil of the temple was rent, when the Passion was finished ; the clothes of the Priests at the beginning of it ; and as that signified the departing of the Synagogue and laying religion open ; so did the rending the garments of *Caiphas*, prophetically signifie that the Priesthood should be rent from him, and from the nation : and thus the personated and theatricall admiration at JESUS, became the type of his own punishment, and consigned the nation to deletion ; and usually GOD so dispenses his judgements, that when men personate the tragedies of others, they really act their own.

*Confidit vestimenta sua ostendens turpitudinem suam, & nuditatem animalium mysteriis manifestas, confessendum esse sacerdotium vestrum.*

*Orig.*  
*Idem ait.*

*S. Hieronym.*

4.

Whilst these things were acting concerning the LORD, a sad accident happened to his servant *Peter* ; for being engaged in strange and evill company in the midst of danger, surprized with a Question without time to deliberate an answer, to finde subterfuges or to fortifie himself, denied his *LORD* shamefully, with some boldnesse at first, and this grew to a licentious confidence, and then to impudence, and denying with perjury, that he knew not his *LORD*, who yet was known to him as his own heart, and was dearer then his eyes, and for whom he professed but a little before, he would die ; but did not do so, till many years after. But thus he became to us a sad example of humane infirmity ; and if the Prince of the Apostles fell so fouly, it is full of pity, but not to be upbraided if we see the fall of lesser stars ; and yet that we may prevent so great a ruine we must not mingle with such company, who will provoke or scorn us into sin, and if we do, yet we must stand upon our guard that a suddain motion do not surprize us : or if we be arrested, yet let us not enter further into our sin, like wilde beasts intricating themselves by their impatience. For there are some, who being ashamed and impatient to have been engaged, take sanctuary in boldnesse and a shamelesse abetting it, so running into the darknesse of hell to hide their nakednesse ; but he also by returning, and rising instantly became to us a rare example of penitence, and his not lying long in the crime did facilitate this restitution. For the spirit of *GOD* being extinguished by our works of darknesse, is like a taper, which if, assoon as the flame is blown out, it be brought to the fire, it sucks light and without trouble is reenkindled ; but if it cools into death and stiffnesse it requires a longer stay and trouble. The holy JESUS in the midst of his own sufferings forgat not his servants danger, but was pleased to look upon him, when the cock crew ; and the cock was the preacher, and the look of JESUS was the grace that made the Sermon effectuall, and because he was but newly fallen and his habituall love of his Master, though interrupted, yet had suffered no naturall abatement, he returned with the swiftnesse of an eagle to the embraces and primitive affections of his *LORD*.

5.

By this time suppose sentence given, *Caiphas* prejudging all the Sanhedrim ; for he first declared JESUS to have spoken blasphemy, and the fact

*Οι τρόποι εἰς οὐρανούς τοὺς αὐτούς  
οὐτούς, & τοὺς  
εἰδοφέλους τούς  
τυχής αὐτούς.  
Sion. Agape.  
Diac. Capit.  
admonit. 69.  
Leo serm. 9. de  
pass. Dom. &  
Euthym. in hunc  
becum.*

fact to be notorious, and then asked their votes, which who so then should have denied, must have contested the judgement of the high Priest, who by the favour of the Romans was advanced, (*Valerius Gratus*, who was President of Judea, having been his Patron) and his faction potent, and his malice great, and his heart set upon this businesse; all which inconvenience none of them durst have suffered, unlesse he had had the confidence greater then of an Apostle at that time. But this sentence was but like strong dispositions to an enraged feaver, he was onely declared apt and worthy for death; they had no power at that time to inflict it; but yet they let loose all the fury of mad-men and insolency of wounded smarting soldiers: and although from the time of his being in the house of *Annas* till the Council met they had used him with studied indignities, yet now they renewed and doubled the unmercifulnesse, and their injustice, to so great a height, that their injuries must needs have been greater then his patience, if his patience had been lesse then infinite; for thus, Mans redemp-tion grows up, as the load swels, which the holy JESUS bare for us; for these were our portion, and we having turned the flowres of Paradise into thistles, shoudl for ever have felt their infelicity, had not JESUS paid the debt. But he bearing them upon his tender body with an even and excell-ent and dispasionate spirit, offered up these beginnings of sufferings to his Father to obtain pardon even for them, that injured him, and for all the World.

*Iudas* now seeing, that this matter went further then he intended it, repented of his fact; for although evil persons are in the progresse of their iniquity invited on by new arguments, and supported by confidence and a carelesse spirit; yet when iniquity is come to the height, or so great a proportion that it is apt to produce despair, or an intolerable condition, then the Devil suffers the Conscience to thaw and grow tender; but it is the tendernesse of a Bile, it is sorenesse rather and a new disease: and either it comes when the time of repentance is past, or leads to some act, which shall make the pardon to be impossible, and so it happened here. For *Iudas* either impatient of the shame, or of the sting, was thrust on to despair of pardon, with a violence as hasty and as great as were his needs. And despair is very often used like the bolts and bars of Hell gates, it seizes upon them that had entred into the suburbs of eternal death by an habitual sin, and it secures them against all retreat. And the Devil is forward enough to bring a Man to repentance, provided it be too late; and *Esaū* wept bitterly and repented him: and the five foolish Virgins lift up their voice a-loud when the gates were shut; and in Hell Men shall repent to all eternity. But I consider the very great folly and infelicity of *Iudas*; it was at midnight he received his money in the house of *Annas*, betimes in that morning he repented his bargain, he threw the money back again, but his sin stuck close, and it is thought to a sad eternity. Such is the purchase of treason, and the reward of covetousnesse; it is cheap in its offers, momen-tary in its possession, unsatisfying in the fruition, uncertain in the stay, sud-den in its departure, horrid in the remembrance, and a ruine, a certain and miserable ruine is in the event. When *Iudas* came in that sad condition, and told his miserable story to them that set him on work, they let him go away unpitied, he had served their ends in betraying his LORD, and those that hire such servants use to leave them in the disaster, to shame, and to sorrow; and so did the Priests, but took the money, and refused to put it in

## Part III.

Inde sacerdotes  
preium quod  
fanginis esset  
Ilicitum fantes  
adyui: jan condere templi  
Quod dare tum  
licitum, dum san-  
guis diatrahe-  
retur

Credebat —

Juvencus l. 4.  
hist. Evang.

\*Non potuit Ju-  
das prijore manu  
perire, & quam  
vis sceleratum  
occiderit, non  
debitam tamen.

S. Aug de civit.  
Dei, l. I c. 17.

7.

in Mythagog.

Eccles.

Author. com.

in Marc. apud.

S. Hieron.

to the treasury, because it was the price of blood ; but they made no scruple to take it from the treasury to buy that blood. Any thing seems lawful, that serves the ends of ambitious and bloody persons, and then they are scrupulous in their cases of conscience , when nothing of interest does intervene ; for evil men make religion the servant of interest, and sometimes weak men think, that it is the fault of the religion, and suspect that all of it is a designe, because many great politicks make it so. The end of the tragedy was, that *Judas* dyed with an ignoble death, marked with the circumstances of a horrid judgement, and perished by the most infamous hands in the world, that is, by his own. Which if it be confronted against the excellent spirit of S. Peter, who did an act as contradictory to his honour and the grace of G O D as could be easily imagined, yet taking sanctuary in the armes of his LORD, he lodged in his heart for ever, and became an example to all the world of the excellency of the Divine mercy and the efficacy of a holy hope and a hearty, timely and operative repentance.

But now all things were ready for the purpose, the High Priest and all his Councell go along with the holy JESUS to the house of Pilate, hoping he would verify their sentence, and bring it to execution, that they might once be rid of their fears, and enjoy their sin, and their reputation quietly. S. Basil affirms, that the High priest caused the holy JESUS to be led with a cord about his neck, and in memory of that, the Priests for many ages wore a stole about theirs ; but the Jewes did it according to the custome of the nation to signifie he was condemned to death ; they desired Pilate that he would crucify him they having found him worthy. And when Pilate enquired into the particulars, they gave him a generall and indefinite answer ; If he were not guilty we wuld not have brought him unto thee, they intended not to make Pilate Judge of the cause, but executer of their cruelty. But Pilate had not learned to be guided by an implicate faith of such persons, which he knew to be malicious and violent, and therefore still called for instances and arguments of their accusation : and that all the world might see with how great unworthiness they prosecuted the Messias, They chiefly there accused him of such crimes upon which themselves condemned him not, and which they knew to be false ; but yet likely to move Pilate, if he had been passionate or inconsiderate in his sentences. [He offered to make himself a King ;] this discourse happened at the entry of the Pratorium ; for the Jewes who made no conscience of killing the King of heaven, made a conscience of the exterrall customes and ceremonies of their law , which had in them no interiour sanctity, which were apt to separate them from the nations, and remark them with characters of religion and abstraction : it would desile them to go to a Roman Forum, where a capitall action was to be judged, and yet the effusion of the best blood in the world was not esteemed against their religion ; so violent and blinde is the spirit of malice, which turns humanity into cruelty, wisdom into craft, diligence into subornation, and religion into superstition.

Two other articles they alleadged against him , but the first concerned not Pilate, and the second was involved in the third, and therefore he chose to examine him upon this onely of his being a King. To which the holy JESUS answered, that it is true, he was a King indeed, but not of this world ; his throne is heaven, the Angels are his courtiers, and the whole creation are his subjects. His regiment is spirituall, his judicatories are the courts

of conscience and Church tribunals, and at Doomesday the clouds, the tribute which he demands are conformity to his Lawes, Faith, Hope, and Charity; no other gabels but the duties of a holy spirit, and the expresses of a religious worship and obedient will, and a consenting understanding: and in all this, *Pilate* thought the interest of *Cæsar* was not invaded. For certain it is, the discipline of JESUS confirmed it much, and supported it by the strongest pillars. And here *Pilate* saw how impertinent and malicious their accusation was; and we who declaim against the unjust proceedings of the Jews against our deereſt LORD, should do well to take care that we in accusing any of our Brethren either with malicious purpose or with an uncharitable circumstance do not commit the same fault, which in them we so hate and accule. Let no Man speak any thing of his Neighbour, but what is true; and yet if a truth be heightned by the biting rhetorick of a satyrical spirit, extended and drawn forth in circumstances and arts of aggravation, the truth becomes a load to the guilty person, is a prejudice to the sentence of the Judge, and hath not so much as the excuse of zeal, much leſſe the charity of Christianity. Sufficient to every Man is the plain story of his crime; and to excuse as much of it as we can would better become us, who perish, unleſſe we be excused for infinite irregularities. But if we adde this also, that we accule our Brethren before them, that may amend them and reform their error, if we pity their persons & do not hate them, if we seek nothing of their disgrace, and make not their shame publike, but when the publike is necessarily concerned, or the state of the mans sin requires it, then our accusations are charitable; but if they be not, all such accusations are accepted by CHRIST with as much displeasure in proportion to the degree of the malice, and the proper effect, as was this accusation of his own person.

But *Pilate* having pronounced JESUS innocent, and perceiving he was a Galilean sent him to *Herod* as being a more competent perfon to determine concerning one of his own jurisdiction. *Herod* was glad at the honour done to him, and the person brought him; being now desirous to see ſome miracle done before him. But the holy JESUS ſpake not one word there, nor did any ſigne, ſo to reprove the ſottish careleſneſſe of *Herod* who living in the place of JESUS's abode, never had ſeen his person, or heard his Sermons. And if we neglect the opportunities of grace, & refufe to hear the voice of *Christ* in the time of mercy and divine appointment, we may arrive at that ſtate of misery in which *Christ* will refufe to ſpeak one word of comfort to us; and the Homilies of the Gospel ſhall be dead letters, & the ſpirit not at all refreſhed, nor the understanding instructed, nor the affections mo ved, nor the will determined; but because we have, during all our time ſtopt our ears, in his time GOD will ſtop his mouth, and shut up the ſprings of grace, that we shall receive no refreſhment or inſtruction or pardon or felicity. JESUSuffered not himself to be moved at the pertinacious accusations of the Jews, nor the deſires of the tyrant, but perſevered in silence, till *Herod* and his ſervants despiled him and diſmissed him: For ſo it became our high Priest, who was to ſanctifie all our ſufferings, to conſecrate affronts and ſcorn, that we may learn to endure contempt, and to ſuffer our ſelves in a religious cauſe to be diſpiled; & when it happens in any other, to remember that we have our deareſt Lord for a precedent of bearing it with admirable ſimplicity and aquanimity of deportment; and it is a mighty ſtock

## Part III.

of self love, that dwells in our spirits, which makes us of all afflictions most impatient of this. But when JESUS endured this despight and suffered this to be added, that he was exposed in scorn to the boyes of the streets. For Herod caused him to be arrayed in white, sent him out to be scorned by the people, and hooted at by idle persons, and so remitted him to Pilate. And since that accident to our LORD, the church hath not undecently chose to clothe her Priests with albs or white garments; and it is a symbolicall intimation and representant of that part of the passion and affront which Herod passed upon the holy JESUS; and this is so far from deserving a reproof, that it were to be wished all the children of the Church would imitate all those graces, which CHRIST exercised, when he wore that garment, which she hath taken up in ceremony and thankfull memory, that is, in all their actions and sufferings be so estranged from secular arts and mixtures of the world, so intent upon religion, and active in all its interests, so indifferent to all acts of providence, so equal in all chances, so patient of every accident, so charitable to enemies, and so undetermined by exteriour events, that nothing may draw us forth from the severities of our religion, or entice us from the retirements of a re-collected and sober and patient spirit, or make us to depart from the courtesies of piety though for such adhesion and pursuit we be esteemed fools or ignorant or contemptible.

IO.

When Pilate had received the holy J E S U S and found that Herod had sent him back uncondemned, he attempted to rescue him from their malice by making him a donative and a freedman at the petition of the people. But they preferred a murderer, and a rebell; Barabbas before him; for themselves being rebels against the King of heaven, loved to acquit persons criminall in the same kinde of sin, rather then their LORD against whom they took up all the armes, which they could receive from violence and perfect malice, a desiring to have him crucified who raised the dead, and to have the other released who destroyed the living. And when Pilate saw they were set upon it, he consented and delivered him first to be scourged, b which the soldiery executed with violence and unrelenting hands, opening his virginall body to nakednesse and tearing his tender flesh till the pavement was purpled with a shower of holy blood. It is reported in the Ecclesiasticall story, that when S. Agnes and S. Barbara holy virgins and Martyrs were stripp naked to execution, GOD pitying their great shame and trouble to have their nakednesse discovered made for them a veil of light, and sent them to a modest and desired death. But the holy JESUS, who chose all sorts of shame and confusion, that by a fulnesse of suffering he might expiate his fathers anger, and that he might consecrate to our sufferance al kinde of affront and passion, endured even the shame of nakednesse at the time of his scourging, suffering himself to be devested of his robes, that wemight be clothed with that stole he put off; for therefore he took on him the state of sinning Adam, and became naked, that we might first be clothed with righteousness and then with immortality.

After they had scourged him without remorse, they clothed him with purple, and crowned him with thorns, and put a cane in his hand for a scepter, and bowed their knees before him, and saluted him with mockery, with a [Hail King of the Jews,] and they beat him and spit upon him, and then Pilate brought him forth, and shewed this sad spectacle to the people, hoping this

Θρόνος τοῦ θεοῦ στάθμη  
τιθεσθείσης σταυροῦ  
ων, μὲν λαμπρὸς  
αὐτοῖς χαρου-  
στικῶς τῷ καρδια-  
Menan.

a S. Aug. trac.

b 15. in John.

b *Vineus in his Dominus steret adibus, a que columnis Annexus tergum dedit ut servile flagellis lenter adhuc, templumq; gerit veneranda columna. Nosq; decet curfis immunes vivere flagris. President.*

c Naz. in Chr.

patiens,

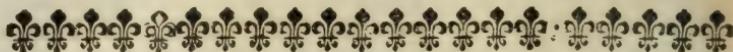
*Centurio in toto corpore scalpus amans.*

II.

this might move them to compassion who never loved to see a Man prosperous, and are alwaies troubled to see the same man in misery. But the earth, which was cursed for Adams sake, and was sowed with thornes and thistles produced the full harvest of them, and the second Adam gathered them all, and made garlands of them as enlignes of his victory, which he was now in persuit of against sin, the grave and hell; and we also may make our thornes which are in themselves pungent and dolorous to be a crown, if we bear them patiently, and unite them to CHRISTS passion, and offer them to his honour, and bear them in his cause, and rejoice in them for his sake; and indeed after such a grove of thornes growing upon the head of our LORD, to see one of CHRISTS members lost, delicate, and effeminate, is a great indecency, next to this of seeing the Jews use the KING of glory with the greatest reproach and infamy.

But nothing prevailing, nor the innocence of JESUS, nor his immunity from the sentence of *Herod*, nor the industry and diligence of *Pilate*, nor the misery, nor the sight of the afflicted lamb of GOD, at last (for so God decreed to permit it, and CHRIST to suffer it) *Pilate* gave sentence of death upon him, having first washed his hands, of which GOD served his end to declare the innocence of his Son, of which in this whole proesse he was most curious, and suffered not the least probability to adhere to him; yet *Pilate* served no end of his, nor preserved any thing of his innocence. He that rails upon a Prince, and cryes, saving your honour, you are a Tyrant, and he that strikes a man upon the face and cryes him mercy, and undoes him and fayes it was in jest, does just like that person, that sins against GOD, and thinks to be excused by saying it was against his conscience; that is washing our hands, when they are stained in blood, as if a ceremony of purification were enough to cleanse a soul from the stains of a spiritual impurity. So some refuse not to take any oath in times of persecution, and say it obliges not, because it was forced, and done against their wills; as if the doing of it were washed off by protesting against it, whereas the protesting against it declares me criminal if I rather choose not death then that which I profess to be a sin. But all the persons, which cooperated in this death, were in this life configned to a fearfull judgement after it. The Jewes took the blood (which *Pilate* seemed to wash off) upon themselves and their children, and the blood of this Paschal Lambe stuck upon their forehead and marked them, not to escape, but to fall under the sword of the destroying Angel, and they perished either by a more hasty death, or shortly after in the extirpation and miserable ruine of their nation; and *Pilate* who had a lesse share in the crime, yet had a black character of a secular judgement; for not long after, he was by *Vitellius* the President of Syria sent to Rome to answer to the crimes obiectet against him by the Jewes, whom to please he had done so much violence to his Conscience; and by Cefars sentence he was banished to Vienna, deprived of all his honours, where he lived ingloriously till by impatience of his calamity he killed himself with his own hand. And thus the blood of JESUS shed for the salvation of the world became to them a curse, and that which purifies the Saints stuck to them that shed it, and mingled it not with the tears of repentance, to be a leprosie loathsome and incurable. So, Manna turnes to wormes, and the wine of Angels to vineger

Part III. Vineger and Lees, when it is received into impure vessels, or tasted by wanton palates ; and the Sun himself produces Rats and Serpents, when it reflects upon the dirt of Nilus.



## The Prayer.

O Holy and immaculate Lamb of GOD, who *wert* pleased to suffer shame and sorrow, to be brought before tribunals, to be accused maliciously, betrayed treacherously, condemned unjustly, and scourged most rudely, suffering the most severe and most unhandsome infiictions, which could be procured by potent, subtile, and extreme malice, and didst choose this out of love greater then the love of Mothers, more affectionate then the tears of joy and pity, dropt from the eyes of most passionate women ; by these fontinels of blood issuing forth life and health and pardon upon all thine enemies ; teach me to apprehend the basenesse of sin in proportion to the greatest of those calamities, which my sin made it necessary for thee to suffer, that I may hate the cause of thy sufferings, and adore thy mercy, and imitate thy charity, and copy out thy patience and humility, and love thy person to the utmost extent and degrees of my affections. LORD, what am I, that the eternal Son of GOD should suffer one stripe for me ? But thy love is infinite ; and how great a misery is it to provoke by sins so great a mercy, and despise so miraculous a goodness, and to do fresh despight to the Sonne of GOD ? But our sinnes are innumerable, and our infirmities are mighty. Deereſt JESU pity me, for I am accused by my own conscience, and am found guilty, I am ſtripped naked of my innocence, and bound fast by lust, and tormented with stripes and wounds of enraged appetites. But let thy innocence excuse me, the robes of thy righteousness clothe me, thy bondage ſet me free, and thy ſtripes heal me, that thou being my Advocate, my Physician, my Patron and my LORD, I may be adopted into the union of thy merits, and partake of the efficacy of thy ſufferings, and be crowned as thou art, having my sins changed to vertues, and my thornes to rayes of glory under thee our Head, in the participations of eternity, O holy and immaculate Lamb of GOD. Amen.



## Discourse 19.

### Of D E A T H , and the due manner of preparation to it.

**H**e holy Spirit of GOD hath in Scripture revealed to us but one way of preparing to death, and that is, by a holy life ; and there is nothing in all the book of life concerning this exercise of addresse to death, but such advices, which suppose the dying person in a state of grace. S. James indeed counsels, that in sicknesse we should send for the Ministers Ecclesiastical, and that *they pray over us*, and that we *confesse our sins*, and they shall be forgiven, [that is,] those prayers are of great efficacy for the removing the sicknesse, and taking off that punishment of sin, and healing them in a certain degree, according to the efficacy of the ministry, and the dispositions or capacities of the sick person. *James. 5.14.*

But we must know, that oftentimes universal effects are attributed to partial causes ; because by the analogy of Scripture we are taught, that all the body of holy actions and ministeries are to unite in production of the event, and that without that adumbration one thing alone cannot operate ; but because no one alone does the work, but by an united power, therefore indefinitely the effect is ascribed sometimes to one, sometimes to another ; meaning, that one as much as the other, that is, altogether, are to work the pardon and the grace. But the doctrine of preparation to death we are cleerest taught in the Parable of the ten Virgins. Those, who were wise, stood waiting for the coming of the Bridegroom, their Lamps burning ; onely when the LORD was at hand, and the notice of his coming published, they trimmed their Lamps, and they, so disposed, went forth and met him, and entered with him into his interieur and eternal joyes. They whose Lamps did not stand ready before hand, expecting the uncertain hour, were shut forth, and bound in darknesse. [Watch therefore, so our LORD applyes and expounds the parable, *for ye know not the day nor the hour of the coming of the Son of man.*] When ever the arrest of death seizes us, unlesse before that notice we had oil in our vessels, that is, grace in our hearts, habitual grace (for nothing else can reside or dwel there, an act cannot inhabit or be in a vessel) it is too late to make preparation. But they who have it, may and must prepare, that is, they must stir the fire, trim the vessel, make it more actual in its exercise and productions, full of ornament, advantages and degrees, and that is all we know from Scripture concerning preparation.

And indeed since all our life we are dying, and this minute, in which I now write, death divides with me, and hath got the surer part, and more certain possession, it is but reasonable, that we should always be doing the offices

*Math. 25.13.*  
 Αντί εὐλόγος τοι  
 καὶ στενὸς πόθε  
 βέροι. Eschyl.  
 Agamem.

2.  
 festinat decur-  
 rere velox  
 Flotulus angu-  
 lus, miteraque  
 brevissima vitæ  
 Portio.

## Part III.

offices of preparation. If to day we were not dying and passing on to our grave, then we might with more safety defer our work till the morrow; but as fuel in a furnace in every degree of its heat, and reception of the flame is converting into fire and ashes, and the disposing it to the last mutation is the same work with the last instant of its change: so is the age of every day a beginning of death, and the night composing us to sleep bids us go to our lesser rest; because that night, which is the end of the preceding day is but a lesser death; and whereas now we have dyed so many dayes, the last day of our life is but the dying so many more, and when that last day of dying will come, we know not. There is nothing then added but the circumstance of sicknesse, which also happens many times before; onely men are pleased to call that, *death*, which is the end of dying, when we cease to dye any more: and therefore to put off our preparation till that which we call death, is to put off the work of all our life, till the time comes, in which it is to cease and determine.

But to accelerate our early indeavour ( beside what hath been formerly considered upon the proper grounds of repentance ) I here reinforce the consideration of Death in such circumstances, which are apt to engage us upon an early industry. 1. I consider that no man is sure, that he shall not dye suddenly, \* and therefore if heaven be worth securing, it were fit that we should reckon every day the vespers of death, and therefore that according to the usuall rites of religion it be begun and spent with religious offices; and let us consider, that those many persons, who are remarkable in history to have died suddenly, either were happy by an early piety, or miserable by a sudden death. And if uncertainty of condition be an abatement of felicity, and spoils the good we possesse, no man can be happy but he that hath lived well, that is, who hath secured his condition by an habituall and living piety. For since G O D hath not told us we shall not die suddenly, is it not certain he intended we should prepare for sudden death, as well as against death clothed in any other circumstances? *Fabius* surnamed the Painter was choaked with a hair in a messe of milk, *Anacreon* with a raisin, *Cardinall Colonna* with figs crested with ice, *Adrian* the fourth with a flye, *Drusus Pompeius* with a pear, *Domitius Afer* *Quintilians* Tutour with a full cuppe, \* *Casmire* the seconf, King of Polonia with a little draught of wine, *Anurath* with a full goblet, *Tarquinius Priscus* with a fish-bone. For assoon as a man is born, that which in nature onely remains to him, is to die, and if we differ in the way or time of our abode, or the manner of our exit, yet we are even at last, and since it is not determined by a naturall cause, which way we shall goe, or at what age; a wise man will suppose himself alwaies upon his death-bed; and such supposition is like making of his will, he is not the neerer death for doing it, but he is the readier for it when it comes.

\* Mart. Crom. l. 6. Volterra. l. 4. c. 23. Cui nasci configur. mori relat; interval lis distinguuntur, exten- tu a quatuor. Quintil. Dives ne pisco na- ratus ab Inacho Nil intercessit an pau per. & infima De gente sub Dio motoris. Videlicet nil mis- trans Occi. Omnes eodem cogi- mur. Hor. l. 2. od. 3.

*Ego tunc uixi & xejos esit bixxus* ομηρεδεις ή ταυτη σιντος τη μετα χειρον

S. Jerome said well; *He deserves not the name of a Christian, who will live in that state of life, in which he will not die.* And indeed it is a great venture to be in an evil state of life; because every minute of it hath

hath a danger ; and therefore a succession of actions, in every one of which he may as well perish as escape, is a boldnesse , that hath no mixture of wisdom or probable venture. How many persons have dyed in the midst of an act of sport, or at a merry meeting ? *Grimoaldus* a Lombard King dyed with shooting of a Pigeon : *Thales* the Miletian in the Theatre ; *Lucia* the sister of *Aurelius* the Emperour playing with her little son was wounded in her breast with a Needle and dyed : *Benno* Bishop of Adelburg, with great ceremony and joy consecrating S. Michaels Church, was crowded to death by the people ; so was the Duke of Saxony at the inauguration of *Albert I.* The great Lawyer *Baldus* playing with a little Dog was bitten upon the lip, instantly grew mad and perished : *Charles* the eighth of France seeing certain Gentlemen playing at Tennis court, swooned and recovered not. *Henry II.* was killed running at Tilt : *Ludovicus Borgia* with riding the great Horse. And the old *Syracusan Archimedes* was slain by a rude Soldier , as he was making Diagrams in the sand, which was his greatest pleasure. How many Men have dyed laughing, or in the extasies of a great joy ? \* *Philippides* the Comedian, and *Dionysius* the Tyrant of Sicily, died with joy at the news of a victory. *Diagoras* of Rhodes \*, and *Chilon* the Philosopher, expired in the embraces of their sons crowned with an Olympick Lawrel. *Polycrita Naxia* \* being saluted the Saviouresse of her countrey ; *Marcus Juventius* when the Senate decreed him honours ; the Emperour \* *Comrade* the second, when he triumphed after the conquest of Italy, had a joy bigger then their heart, and their phansie swell'd it, till they burst and dyed. Death can enter in at any door : *Philistion* of Nice dyed with excessive laughter, so did the Poet *Philemon*, being provoked to it onely by seeing an Ass eat figs. And the number of persons, who have been found suddenly dead in their beds, is so great , that as it engages many to a more certain and regular devotion for their compline, so it were well it were pursued to the utmost intention of GOD ; that is, that all the parts of Religion should with zeal and assiduity be entertain'd and finished, that as it becomes wise Men, we never be surprized with that we are sure will some time or other happen. A great General in Italy at the sudden death of *Alfonsus* of Ferrara, and *Lodovico Corbinelli* at the sight of the sad accident upon *Henry II.* of France now mentioned , turned religious, and they did what GOD intended in those deaths. It concernes us to be curious of single actions , because even in those shorter periods wee may expire and finde our graves. But if the state of life be contradictory to our hopes of Heaven , it is like affronting of a Cannon before a beleaguer'd Town a moneth together ; it is a contempt of safety, and a rendering all reason uselesse and unprofitable ; but he onely is wise, who having made death familiar to him by expectation and daily apprehension , does at all instants go forth to meet it. The wise Virgins went forth to meet the Bridegroom, for they were ready. Excellent therefore is the counsel of the son of Sirach : Use physick or ever thou be sick, before judgement examine thy self, and in the day of visitation thou shalt finde mercy. Humble thy self before thou be sick, and in the time of sins shew repentance ; let nothing binder thee to pay thy vows in due time, and defer not until death to be justified.

Crantzus l.3.

c.51.

Matthiol. in  
Dioscor.

\* Plin.l.7.c.53

\* Cicer.1.

Tuscul.

\* Plut.Qy Gel.

de illust. mulie.

\* Cuspinian.

Lotus nobis-  
cum est, hilaris  
conauit, & i-  
demInventus mane  
est mortuus  
Andragoras.

Mart.l.6.

Eccl.18.19.

Part III.

*Homil. 12. in  
Evan.*

*L.S.C. 15. hist.  
Gent. Anglor.*

\* *Biblioth. ff.  
P. tom. 3.*

6.  
*Math. 25.13.*  
24.42.  
*Mark. 13.33.*  
*2 Pet. 3.11.*

2. I consider that it often happens that in those few days of our last visitation, which many men designe for their preparation and repentance, GOD hath expressed by an exteriour accident, that those persons have deceived themselves and neglected their own salvation. S. Gregory reports of *Chrysaurius* a Gentleman in the Province of Valery, rich, vicious and witty, lascivious, covetous and proud, that being cast upon his deathbed he phansyed he saw evil spirits coming to arrest him and drag him to hell. He fell into great agony and trouble, shreeked out, called for his son, who was a very religious person, flattered him, as willing to have been rescued by any thing; but perceiving his danger increase and grown desperate, he called loud with repeated clamours, *Give me respite but till the morrow*, and with those words he died, there being no place left for his repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears and groanes. The same was the case of a drunken Monke, whom Venerable *Bede* mentions. Upon his death-bed he seemed to see Hell opened and a place assignd him neer to *Caiphas* and those who crucified our dearest L O R D. The religious persons that stood about his bed, called on him to repent of his sins, to implore the mercies of G O D, and to trust in C H R I S T; but he answered with reason enough, *This is no time to change my life, the sentence is passed upon me, and it is too late.* And it is very considerable and sad, \* which *Petrus Damianus* tels of *Gunizo*, a factious and ambitious person, to whom, it is said, the Tempter gave notice of his approaching death: but when any man preached repentance to him, out of a strange incuriousnesse, or the spirit of reprobation, he seemed like a dead and unconcerned person; in all other discourses he was awake and apt to answer. For G O D had shut up the gates of mercy, that no streams should issue forth to quench the flames of hell; or else had shut up the gates of reception and entertainment, that it should not enter; either G O D denyes to give them pardon when they call, or denyes to them a power to call; they either cannot pray, or G O D will not answer. Now since these stories are related by men learned, pious and eminent in their generations, and because they served no designe but the ends of piety, and have in them nothing dissonant from revelation or the frequent events of providence, we may upon their stock consider, that G O D S judgements and visible marks being set upon a state of life, although they happen but seldom in the instances, yet they are of universal purpose and signification. Upon all murderers God hath not thrown a thunderbolt, nor broke all sacrilegious persons upon the wheel of an inconstant and ebbing estate, nor spoken to every oppressour from heaven in a voice of thunder, nor cut off all rebels in the first attempts of insurrection: But because he hath done so to some, we are to look upon those judgements as divine accents, and voices of G O D, threatening all the same crimes with the like events, and with the ruines of eternity: For though G O D does not always make the same prologues to death, yet by these few accidents happening to single persons we are to understand his purposes concerning all in the same condition; it was not the person so much as the estate, which G O D then remarked with so vifible characters of his displeasure.

And it seems to me a wonder, that since all the records of Scripture urging the uncertainty of the day of death, the horrour of the day of judgement, the severity of G O D, the dissolution of the world, the certainty of

of our account, still from all these premises the spirit of GOD makes no other inference, but that we *watch, and stand in a readinesse, that we live in all holy conversation and gadlinesse,* and that there is no one word concerning any other manner of an essentially necessary preparation, none but this; yet that there are doctrines commenced, and rules prescribed, and offices set down, and suppletories invented by Curates of soules how to prepare a vicious person, and upon his death-bed to reconcile him to the hopes and promises of heaven; concerning which I desire that every person would but enquire, where any one promise is recorded in Scripture concerning such addresses, and what articles CHRIST hath drawn up between his Father and us concerning a preparation begun upon our death-bed; and if he shall finde none (as most certainly from the Genesis to the Revelation there is not a word concerning it, but very much against it) let him first build his hopes upon this proposition, that *a Holy life is the onely preparation to a happy death,* and then we can without danger proceed to some other considerations.

When a good man or a person, concerning whom it is not certain, he hath lived in habituall vices, comes to dye, there are but two generall wayes of entercourse with him; the one to keep him from new sinnes, the other to make some emendations of the old, the one to fortify him against especiall weakenesse, and proper temptations of that estate, and the other to trimme his lamp, that by excellent actions he may adorne his spirit, making up the omissions of his life, and supplying the imperfections of his estate, that his soule may returne into the hands of its Creatour as pure as it can, every degree of perfection being an advantage so great, as that the losse of every the least portion of it cannot be recompensed with all the good of this world: Concerning the first, the temptations proper to this estate are either weakenesse in faith, despaire or presumption; for whatsoever is besides these, as it is the common infelicity of all the severall states of life, so they are oftentimes arguments of an ill condition, of immortification of vicious habites, and that he comes not to this combate well prepared; such as are covetousnesse, unwillingnesse to make restitution, remanent affections to his former vices, an unregigned spirit, and the like.

In the Ecclesiastical story we finde many dying persons mentioned, who have been very much afflicted with some doubts concerning an article of faith. S. Gregory in an epistle he writ to S. Austin instances in the temptation which Eusebius suffered upon his death-bed; and although somtimes the Divill choothes an article, that is not proper to that state, knowing that every such doubt is well enough for his purpose, because of the incapacity of the person to fuster long disputes, and of the iealousy and suspicion of a dying and weake man, fearing least every thing should cozen him, yet it is comonly instanced in the article of the Resurrection or the state of separation or reunion. And it seemes to some persons incredible, that from a bed of sicknesse, a state of misery, a cloud of ignorance, a load of passions a man shoule enter into the condition of a perfect understanding, great ioy, and an intellectuall life, a conversation with Angels, a fruition of GOD; the change is greater then his reason; and his faith being in conclusion, tottering like the Arke, and ready to fall, seemes a pillar as unsafe and unable to rely on, as a banke of turfe in an Earthquake. Against this, a generall remedy is prescribed by spiritual persons, that the sick man should apprehend all changes of persuasion, which hapned to him in his sicknes, contradictory to those

--*tecum prius  
ergo voluta  
Hac animo an-  
te tubas, galea-  
tum sero duelli  
Poenitet--  
Juven. sat 1.*

7.

8.  
*De praconis  
S. Hieron.*

### Part III.

Part III.

asents ; which in his clearest use of reason he had, to be temptations and arts of the Devil ; and he hath reason so to think, when he remembers how many comforts of the spirit of GOD, what joyes of religion, what support, what assistances, what strengths he had in the whole course of his former life upon the stock of faith, and interest of the doctrine of Christianity. And since the disbelieving \* the promises Evangelicall at that time can have no end of advantage, and that all wise men tell him, it may have an end to make him loose the title to them , and do him infinite disadvantage upon the stock of interest and prudence, he must reject such fears, which cannot help him, but may ruin him. For all the works of grace, which he did upon the hopes of GOD, and the stock of the Divine revelations , (if he failes in his hold upon them) are all rendred unprofitable. And it is certain, if there be no such thing as immortality and resurrection, he shall loose nothing for believing there is , but if there be , they are lost to him

χι το πεπλεμεν· for not believing it.  
ει γι μαδεν εσι π-

λεποτητι ; αιν' ουτι τετραγε τοι χρζιοι αι τοι τοι με τη δειπνης ιτελης τωις παρουσιαις διετησα δυνετητη  
ι ει διανοια μοι ειναι την ευρισκετεσ ( κακον γδ λο ) αιν' οιλιγον ι στρατηγη ιπολιτη· Non abs re  
g. erit ut Moribundus si non de articulis fidei differat & sentiat de fiducia comper-  
tae veritatis, at saltem, ( quod de Socrate dixit Tertullianus ) de industria consultae  
equanimitatis.

9.  
But this is also to be cured by proper arguments. And there is no Christian man, but hath within him, and carries about him demonstrations of the possibility and great instances of the credibility of those great changes, which these tempted persons have no reason to distrust but because they thinke them too great, and to good to be true. And here, not onely consideration of the Divine power, and his eternall goodness is a proper Antidote, but also the observation of what we have already received from GOD. To be raised from nothing to something is a mutation not leſſe then infinite, and from that which we were in our first conception to passe into so perfect and curious bodies and to become discursive, sensible, passionate, and reasonable, and next to Angels is a greater change, then from this state to passe into that excellency and perfection of it, which we expect as the melioration and improvement of the present ; for this is but a mutation of degrees; that of substance ; this is more sensible ; because we have perception in both states, that is of greater distance, because the first terme we were so remov'd from what we are, that we could not perceive what then we were ; much leſſe desire to be what we now perceive ; and yet GOD did that for us unasked, without any obligation on his part, or merit on ours ; much rather then may we be confident of this alteration of accidents and degrees ; because GOD hath obliged himself by promise ; he hath dispos'd us to it by qualities actions and habites, which are to the state of glory as infancy is to manhood, as elements are to excellent discourses, as blossoms are to ripe fruits ; and he that hath wrought miracles for us, preserved us in dangers, done strange acts of providence, sent his Son to take our nature, made a Virgin to bear a Son, and GOD to become Man, and two natures to be one individuall person, and all in order to this end, of which we doubt, hath given us so many arguments

arguments of credibility, that if he had done any more, it would not have been left in our choice to believe or not believe; and then much of the excellency of our faith would have been lost. Add to this, that we are not tempted to disbelieve the Roman story, or that Virgils Æneids were writ by him, or that wee our selves are descended of such parents; because these things are not onely transmitted to us by such testimony, which we have no reason to distrust, but because the tempter cannot serve any end upon us by producing such doubts in us; and therefore since we have greater testimony for every article of faith, and to believe it, is of so much concernment to us, we may well suspect it to be an artifice of the Devil to rob us of our reward; this proceeding of his being of the same nature with all his other temptations, which in our life time like fiery darts he threw into our face to despoil us of our glory and blot out the image of GOD imprinted on us.

2. If the Devil tempts the sick person to despair, he who is by GOD appointed to minister a word of comfort, must fortifie his spirit with consideration and representement of the divine goodnesse, manifest in all the expresses of nature and grace, of providence and revelation; that GOD never extinguishes the smoaking flax nor breaks the bruised reed; that a constant and a hearty endeavour is the sacrifice which GOD delights in; that in the firmament of Heaven there are little Starres, and they are most in number; and there are but few of the greatest magnitude; that there are children and babes in CHRIST as well as strong Men; and amongst these there are great difference; that the interruptions of the state of grace by intervening crimes if they were rescind by repentance they were great danger in the interval, but served as increment of the Divine Glory, and arguments of care and diligence to us at the restitution. These and many more are then to bee urged when the sick person is in danger of being swallowed up with overmuch sorrow; and therefore to bee insisted on in all like cases as the Physician gives him Cordials, that we may doe charity to him and minister comfort, not because they are alwayes necessary, even in the midst of great sadnesses and discomforts. For wee are to secure his love to GOD, that he acknowledge the Divine Mercy, that he believes the article of remission of finnes, that he be thankfull to GOD for the blesings which already he hath received, and that he lay all the load of his discomfort upon himself, and his own incapacities of mercy; and then the sadness may be very great, and his tears clamorous, and his heart broken all in pieces, and his humilitie lower then the earth, and his hope indiscernable, and yet no danger to his final condition: despair reflects upon GOD, and dishonours the infinity of his mercy, and if the sick person do but confess that GOD is not at all wanting in his promises, but ever abounding in his mercies, and that it is want of the condition on his own part, that makes the misery, and that if he had done his duty GOD would save him; let him be assited with perpetual prayers, with examples of lapsed and returning sinners, whom the Church celebrates for Saints, such as *Mary Magdalen*, *Mary of Egypt*, *Aifa*, *Thasis*, *Pelagia*: let it be often inculcated to him, that as GODS mercy is of it self infinite, so its demonstration to us is not determined to any certain period, but hath such latitudes in it, and reservations,

10.  
 Οὐαῖς χρὶ φίλοι  
 τάτη, ταχὺ αὐ-  
 τον ἀστεῖον  
 Ἐλαῖδης εἰ γει-  
 ση, αὐθαυτοῦ  
 διώλει. Τόσο.  
 Εὐαίπτων χρὶ<sup>τὸς</sup>  
 ταχὺ στρέψεις εἰ  
 βίον.  
 Αὐθαυτῷ α-  
 τοχών καθάρια  
 ταῦτα διάποιοι  
 Μενανδ.

## Part III.

which as they are apt to restrain too great boldnesse, so to become sanctuaries to disconsolate persons; let him be invited to throw himself upon GOD upon these grounds, that he who is our Judge, is also our Advocate and Redeemer, that he knowes and pities our infirmities, and that our very hoping in him does endear him, and he will deliver us the rather for our confidence, when it is balanced with reverence and humility; and then all these supernumerary fears are advantagous to more necessary graces, and do more secure his finall condition, then they can disturb it.

11. When Saint Arsenius was neer his death, he was observed to be very tremulous, sad, weeping and disconsolate. The standers by asked the reason of his fears, wondring that he having lived in great sanctity for many years, should not now rejoice at the going forth of his prison. The good man confessed the fear, and withall said it was no other then he had alwayes borne about with him in the dayes of his pilgrimage, and what he then thought a duty, they had no reason now to call either a fault or a misery. Great sorrowes, fears, and distrustings of a mans own condition are oftentimes but abatements of confidence or a remission of joyes and gayeties of spirit, they are but like falutary clouds, dark and fruitfull; and if the tempted person be strengthened in a love of GOD though he goe not further in his hopes then to believe a possibility of being saved, then to say, *GOD can save him, if he please*, and to pray that he will save him, his condition is a state of grace, it is like a root in the ground trod upon, humble and safe, not so fine as the state of flowers, yet that which will spring up in as glorious a resurrection, as that which looks fairer and pleases the sense, and is indeed a blessing, but not a duty.

12. But there is a state of Death-bed, which seems to have in it more Question, and to be of nicer consideration. A sick person after a vicious and base life; and if upon whatsoever he can do, you give him hopes of a pardon, where is your promise to warrant it? if you do not give him hopes do you not drive him to despair and ascertaine his ruine to verify your proposition? To this I answer, that despair is opposed to hope, and hope relies upon the Divine promises; and where there is no promise, there the despair is not a sin, but a meere impossibility. The accurst spirits which are sealed up to the judgement of the last day cannot hope; and he that repents not, cannot hope for pardon; and therefore if all the state of death-bed can produce, be not the duty of repentance, which is required of necessity to pardon, it is not in such a person properly to be called *despair*, any more then it is blindnesse in a stone, that it cannot see: Such a man is not within the capacities of pardon, and therefore all those acts of exterior repentance, and all his sorrow and resolution and tears of emendation, and other preparatives to interior repentance are like oil poured into mortal wounds, they are the care of the Physician; and these are the cautions of the Church, and they are at no hand to be neglected. For if they do not alter the state, they may lessen the judgement, or procure a temporal blessing; and if the person recover, they are excellent beginnings of the state of grace, and if they be pursued in a happy opportunity, will grow up into glory.

But if it be demanded, whether in such cases the Curate be bound to give

give absolution? I can give no other answer but this, that if he lye under the censure of the Church the laws of the Church are to determine the particular, and I know no Church in the world, but uses to absolve death-bed penitents upon the instances of those actions of which their present condition is capable; though in the primitive ages in some cases they denied it. But if the sick person be under no positive censure, and is bound onely by the guilt of habituall vice, if he desires the prayers of the Church, she is bound in charity to grant them; to pray for pardon to him, and all other graces in order to salvation; and if he absolves the penitent, towards GOD it hath no other efficacy but of a solemne prayer, and therefore it were better that all the charity of the office were done, and the solemnity omitted, because in the earnest prayer she cooperates to his salvation as much as she can, and by omitting the solemnity distinguishes evil livers from holy persons, and walks securely, whilst she refuses to declare him pardoned whom GOD hath not declared to be so: and possibly that form of absolution, which the Churches of the west now use, being indicative and declaratory of a present pardon, are for the very form sake not to be used to death-bed-penitents after a vicious life; because if any thing more be intended in the form then a prayer, the truth of the affirmation may be questioned, and an Ecclesiastical person hath no authority to say to such a man, *I absolve thee*; but if no more be intended but a prayer, it is better to use a meer prayer, and common form of addresse then such words which may countenance unsecure confidences, evil purposes, and worse lives.

3. If the Devil tempts a sick person, who hath lived well, to presumption, and that he seems full of confidence and without trouble, the care that is then to be taken is to consider the disease, and to state the Question right. For at some instants and periods GOD visits the spirit of a man, and sends the immission of a bright ray into him, and some good men have been so used to apprehensions of the Divine mercy, that they have an habituall cheerfulness of spirit and hopes of salvation. S. Jerome reports that *Hilarion* in a death-bed agony felt some tremblings of heart, till reflecting upon his course of life he found comforts springing from thence by a proper emanation, and departed cheerfully: and *Hezekiah* represented to GOD in prayer the integrity of his life, and made it the instrument of his hope; and nothing of this is to be called *presumption*, provided it be in persons of eminent sanctity and great experience, old Disciples, and the more perfect Christians; but because such persons are but seldom and rare, if the same confidence be observed in persons of common imperfection and an ordinary life, it is to be corrected and allayed with consideration, of the Divine severity and justice, and with the strict requisites of a holy life, with the deceit of a mans own heart, with consideration and generall remembrances of secret sins, and that the most perfect state of life hath very great needs of mercy, and if the righteous scarcely be saved where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear? And the spirit of the man is to be promoted and helped in the encrease of contrition, as being the proper deleterie to cure the extravagancies of a forward and intemperate spirit.

But there is a presumption commenced upon opinion, relying either upon a persuasione of single predestination, or else (which is worse)

Poenitentia qua  
ab infirmitate peti-  
tur, infirma est:  
poenitentia que  
a mortiente tan-  
tu[m] petitur, tis-  
meo ne & ipsa  
moriatur. S Aug  
term. de temp-  
vide eund.lib. 50  
homil. homil. 41

14.

Egregere anima,  
quid times? ies-  
tuaginta prope  
annis servisti  
Christo, & jam  
mortuus es?  
S. Hier. in vita  
Hilla r.

Vx vita etiam  
la dabilit, si sine  
in illicet cordia dif-  
ficiatis eam.  
S. Aug. l. 9.  
contest.

15.

## Part III.

upon imaginary securities, that heaven is to be purchased upon conditions easier then a dayes labour, and that an evil life may be reconciled to heaven by the intervening of little or single acts of piety or repentance. If either of them both have actually produced ill life, to which they are apt, or apt to be abused, the persons are miserable in their condition, and cannot be absolutely remedied by going about to cure the presumption ; that was the cause of all, but now it is the least thing to be considered ; his whole state is corrupted, and men will not by any discourses or spirituall arts used on their death-beds be put into a state of grace ; because there is no time to change the state, and there is no muration then, but by single actions ; from good to better a dying man may proceed, but not from the state of reprobation to the life of grace ; and yet it is good charity to unloose the bonds of Satan, whereby the man is bound and led captive at his will, to take off the presumption by destroying the cause , and then let the work of grace be set as forward as it can, and leave the event to GOD ; for nothing else is left possible to be done. But if the sick man be of a good life, and yet have a degree of confidence beyond his vertue upon the phansy of predestination , it is not then a time to refind his opinion by a direct opposition, but let him be drawn off from the consideration of it, by such discourses as are apt to make him humble and penitent ; for they are the most apt instruments to secure the condition of the man, and atteniper his spirit. These are the great temptations incident to the last scene of our lives ; and are therefore more particularly suggested by the Tempter, because they have in them something contrary to the universall effect of a holy life, and are designes to interpose between the end of the journey, and the reception of the crown ; and therefore it concernes every man who is in a capacity of receiving the end of his faith, the salvation of his soul, to lay up in the course of his life something against this great day of expence , that he may be better fortified with the armour of the spirit against these last assaults of the Devil, that he may not shipwreck in the haver.

**26.** *Eschewing evil* is but the one half of our work, we must also do good ; and now in the few remanent dayes or hours of our life, there are certain exercises of religion, which have a speciall relation to this state, and are therefore of great concernment to be done, that we may make our condition as certain as we can, and our portion of glory greater, and our pardon surer, and our love to increase, and that our former omissions and breaches be repaired with a condition in some measure proportionable to those great hopes which we then are going to possesse. And 1. Let the sick person in the beginning of his sicknesse, and in every change and great accident of it make acts of resignation to GOD, and intirely submit himself to the divine will, remembering, that sicknesse may do the work of GOD, and produce the effect of the spirit, and promote the interestis of his foul, as well as health, and oftentimes better, as being in it self and by the grace of GOD apt to make us confess our own impotency and dependencies , and to understand our needs of mercy and the continual influences and supports of heaven ; to withdraw our appetites from things below ; to correct the vanities and insolencies of an impertinent spirit: to abate the extravagancies of the flesh ; to put our carnall lusts into letters and disability, to remember

us of our state of pilgrimage, that this is our way and our stage of trouble and banishment, and that Heaven is our country; for so, sicknesse is the trial of our patience, a fire to purge us, an instracter to teach us, a bridle to restrain us, and a state inferring great necessities of union and adhesions unto GOD. And as upon these grounds we have the same reason to accept sicknesse at the hands of GOD, as to receive physick from a Physician; so it is an argument of excellent grace to give GOD hearty thanks in our disease, and to accept it cheerfully, and with spiritual joy.

Some persons create to themselves excuses of discontent, and quarrel not with the pain, but the ill consequents of sicknesse, it makes them troublesome to their friends, and consider not that their friends are bound to accept the trouble, as themselves to accept the sicknesse; that to tend the sick is at that time allotted for the portion of their work, and that charity receives it as a duty, and makes that duty to be a pleasure: and however, if our friends account us a burden, let us also accept that circumstance of affliction to our selves with the same resignation and indifference, as we entertain its occasion, the sicknesse it self; and pray to GOD to enkindle a flame of charity in their breasts, and to make them compensation for the charge and trouble we put them to, and then the care is at an end. But others excuse their discontent with a more religious colour, and call the disease their trouble and affliction, because it impedes their other parts of duty, they cannot preach or study or do exterior assistances of charity and almes, or acts of repentance and mortification. But it were well, if we could let GOD proportion out our work, and set our task; let him choose what virtues we shall specially exercise; and when the will of GOD determines us, it is more excellent to endure afflictions with patience, equanimity, and thankfulness, then to do actions of the most pompous religion and laborious or expensive charity; not onely because there is a deliciousnesse in actions of religion and choice, which is more agreeable to our spirit, then the toleration of sicknesse can be, which hath great reward, but no present pleasure; but also because our suffering and our imployment is consecrated to us, when GOD chooses it, and there is then no mixtures of imperfection, or secular interest, as there may be in other actions even of an excellent religion, when our selves are the choosers. And let us also remember, that GOD hath not so much need of thy works, as thou hast of patience, humility, and resignation. *S. Paul* was far a more considerable person then thou canst be, and yet it pleased GOD to shut him in prison for two years, and in that interval, GOD secured and promoted the work of the Gospel: and although *Epaphroditus* was an excellent Minister, yet GOD laid a great sicknesse upon him, and even in his disease gave him work enough to do, though not of his own choosing; and therefore fear it not, but the ends of religion or duty will well enough proceed without thy health; and thy own eternal interest, when GOD so pleases, shall better be served by sickness and the vertues which it occasions, then by the opportunities of health, and an ambulatory active charity.

When thou art resigned to GOD, use fair and appointed means for thy recovery; trust not in thy spirit upon any instrument of health; as thou art willing to be disposed by GOD, so look not for any event upon the stock of any other cause or principle; be ruled by the Physician and the people appointed to tend thee, that thou neither become troublesome to

### Part III.

them, nor give any signe of impatience or a peevish spirit. But this advice onely meanes, that thou do not disobey them out of any evil principle; and yet if reason be thy guide to choose any other aide, or follow any other counsel, use it temperately, prudently and charitably. It is not intended for a duty, that thou shouldest drink oyl instead of wine, if thy Minister reach it to thee, as did Saint Bernard; nor that thou shouldest accept a cake tempered with Linseed oil instead of oil of Olives, as did F. Stephen, mentioned by *Rufinus*; but that thou tolerate the defects of thy servants, and accept the evil accidents of thy disease, or the unsuccessfullnesse of thy Physicians care, as descending on thee from

*2 Chro. 16.12.* the hands of GOD. Asa was noted in Scripture, that in his sicknesse he sought not to the LORD, but to the Physicians. Lewis the 11. of France, was then the miserablest person in his Kingdom, when he made himself their servant, courting them with great pensions and rewards, attending to their rules as Oracles, and from their mouthes waited for the sentence of life or death: we are in these great accidents, especially to look upon GOD as the disposer of the events, which he very often disposes contrary to the expectation we may have of probable causes; and sometimes without physick we recover, and with physick and excellent applications we grow worse and worse; and GOD it is, that makes the remedies unprosperous; in all these and all other accidents if wee take care that the sicknesse of the body derive not it self into the soul, nor the pains of one procure impatience of the other, we shall alleviate the burden and make it supportable and profitable: and certain it is, if Men knew well to bear their sicknesses, humbly towards GOD, charitably towards our Ministers, and cheerfully in themselves, there were no greater advantage in the world to be received then upon a sick bed; and that alone hath in it the benefits of a Church, of a religious Assembly, of the works of charity and labour. And since our souls eternal well-being depends upon the charities and providence and veracity of GOD, and we have nothing to shew for it but his word and goodnesse, and that is infinitely enough, it is but reason we be not more nice and scrupulous about the usage and accommodation of our body; if we accept at GODS hand sadness and drynesse of affection and spirituall desertion patiently and with indifferency, it is unhandsome to expresse our selves lesse satisfied in the accidents about our body.

19.  
Νομίζει μὲν γὼ  
αὐτὸν εἰσαγάγειν  
αὐτὸν εἴη, τὸ δὲ  
Σθέατον γένεται  
εἰς τὸ οὔπω λίγο  
καὶ τὸ πλεύρακόν  
τοῦ εἰλιστόφορον  
**Strab. l. 15.**  
Perio Nata, sulphur  
colum : Non enim  
tibialis cripitus, sed  
maturus in melius  
est, dixit master Sym-  
phorianus apud Ambro-  
sium in vita Symphori-  
anus c. 7. Jobi.

ject of desires. And we finde that many Saints have prayed for death, that they might not see the persecutions and great miseries incumbent upon the Church, and if the desire be not out of impatience, but of charity, and with resignation, there is no reason to reprove it. Elias prayed that GOD would take his life, that he might not see the evils of *Ahab* and *Iezabel*, and their vexations intendments against the Prophets of the LORD. And S. Austin upon the incursion of the Vandals into Africa, called his Clergy together, and at their chapter told them, he had prayed to GOD either to deliver his people from the present calamity, or grant them patience to bear it, or that he would take him out of the world, that he might not see the miseries of his Diocese; adding that GOD had granted him the last; and he presently fell sick, and dyed in the siege of his own Hippo. And if death in many cases be desirable, and for many reasons, it is alwaies to be submitted to, when GOD calls. And as it is alwaies a misery to fear death, so it is very often a sin, or the effect of sin. If our love to the world hath fastened our affections here, it is a direct sin; and this by the son of Sirach noted to be the case of rich and great personages. *How bitter o' death is thy remembrance to a man, that is at rest in his possessions!* But if it be a fear to perish in the ruins of eternity, they are not too blame for fearing, but that their own ill lives hath procured the fear. And yet there are persons in the state of grace, but because they are in great imperfection, have such lawfull fears of death and of entring upon an uncertain sentence, which must stand eternally irreversible, be it good or bad; that they may with piety and care enough pray *Davids* prayer, *O spare me a little that I may recover my strength, before I go hence and be no more seen.* But in this and in all other cases, death must be accepted without murmur, though without fear it cannot. A man may pray to be delivered from it, and yet if GOD will not grant it, he must not go as one hal'd to execution, but if with all his imperfect fears he shall throw himself upon GOD, and accept his sentence as righteous, whether it speak life or death, it is an act of so great excellency, that it may equall the good actions of many succeeding and surviving dayes; and peradventure a longer life will be yet more imperfect, and that GOD therefore puts a period to it, that thou mayest be taken into a condition more certain, though less evident. However, let not the fears of nature or the fear of reason or the fears of humility become accidentally criminall by a murniure or a pertinacious contesting against the event, which we cannot hinder, but ought to accept by an election secondary, rationall and pious, and upon supposition, that GOD will not alter the sentence passed upon thy temporall life; alwaies remembering that in Christian philosophy, death hath in it an excellency, of which the Angels are not capable. For by the necessity of our nature we are made capable of dying for the holy JESUS: and next to the priviledge of that act, is our willingness to die at his command, which turns necessity into vertue, and nature into grace, and grace to glory.

When the sick person is thus disposed, let him begin to trim his wedding garment, and dress his lamp with the repetition of acts of repentance, perpetually praying to GOD for pardon of his sins, representing to him-

*Hoc homo moratur ne  
te lucratur ne  
malum immor-  
tale effet. Naz.  
Fossum posce ani-  
mum mortis terrorre  
cretem  
Qui spurius vita  
extremum intermu-  
nera penas,  
Nature qai ferre  
queat quicquid la-  
borer,  
Nec iat irasci, cupiat  
nisi... Juvena  
Ecclius.41.1.*

## Part III.

himself the horror of them, the multitude, the obliquity, being helped by arguments apt to excite contrition, by repetition of penitential Psalms and holy Prayers ; and he may by accepting and humbly receiving his sicknesse at GODS hand, transmit it into the condition of an act or effect of repentence, acknowledging himself by sin to have deserved and procured it, & praying that the punishment of his crimes may be here , and not reserved for the state of separation, and for ever ; but above all single acts of this exercize, we are concerned to see that nothing of other Mens goods stick to us, but let us shake it off as we would a burning coal from our flesh ; for it will destroy us, it will carry a curse with us , and leave a curse behinde us. Those who by thy meanes or importunity have become \* vicious, exhort to repentence and Holy life ; those whom thou hast cozened into crimes restore to a right understanding ; those who are by violence and interest lead captive by thee to any undecency, restore to their liberty, and encourage to the prosecution of holinesse ; discover and confess thy fraud and unlawfull arts, cease thy violence and give as many advantages to vertue as thou hast done to viciousnesse. Make reconipence for bodily wrongs, such as are wounds, dismembrys, and other disabilities ; restore every man as much as thou canst to that good condition from which thou hast removed him, restore his fame, give back his goods, return the pawn, release forfeitures, and take off all injust invasions or surprizes of his estate, pay debts, satisfy for thy fraud and injustice as far as thou canst, and as thou canst, and as soon, or this alone is weight enough, no lesse then a milstone about thy necke. But if the dying man be of God, and in the state of grace, that is, if he have lived a holy life, repented seasonably, and have lead a just sober and religious conversation in any acceptable degree, it is to be supposed he hath no great account to make for unrepented injuries and unjust detentions : for if he had detained the goods of his neighbour fraudulently or violently without amends, when it is in his power and opportunity to restore, he is not the man we suppose him in this present question ; and although in all cases he is bound to restore according to his ability, yet the art is lesse excellent, when it is compelled, and so it seemes to be, if he have continued the injustice, till he is forced to quitt the purchase. However, if it be not done till then, let it be provided for then ; and that I presse this duty to pious persons at this time, is only to oblige them to a diligent scrutiny concerning the lesser omissions of this duty in the matter of fame, or lesser debts, or spirituall restitution ; or that those unevenesses of account, which were but of late transaction may now be regulated, and that whatsoever is undone in this matter from what principle soever it proceeds, whether of sin, or only of forgetfulness, or of imperfection, may now be made as exact as we can, and are obliged, and that those excuses which made it reasonable and lawfull to deferre restitution, as want of opportunity, cleernes of ability, and accidentall inconvenience be now laid aside, and the action be done or provided for in the midst of all objections and inconvenient circumstances, rather then to omit it and hazard to perform it.

Hither also I reckon resolutions, and forfeited purposes of emendation, and greater severity, in case God return us to hopes of life ; which therefore must be reinforced, that we may serve the ends of God and understand all his purposes, and make use of every opportunity ; every sicknesse

\* *Proceriores sunt qui  
vitam, mortem, bona-  
rum corrumptunt, his  
qui substantias et  
pradia ditipiunt. S.  
Gregor.*

nesse laid upon us being with a designe of drawing us nearer to God ; and even holy purposes are good actions of the spirit, and principles of Religion ; and though alone they cannot do the work of grace or change the state when they are ineffectuall, that is, when either we will not bring them into act, or that God will not let us, yet to a man already in the state of grace they are the additions of something good, and are like blowing of coales, which although it can put no life into a dead coale yet it makes a live coale shine brighter, and burne clearer, and addes to it some accidentall degrees of heat.

Having thus disposed himselfe to the peace of God, let him make peace with all those in whom he knows or suspects any minutes of anger, or malice, or displeasure towards him, submitting himselfe to them with humilitie, whom he unworthily hath displeased, asking pardon of them who say they are displeased, and offering pardon to them that have displeased him ; and then let him crave the peace of holy Church. For it is all this while to be supposed that he hath used the assistance and prayers, the counsel and the advices of a spiritual Man, and that to this purpose he hath opened to him the state of his whole life, and made him to understand what emendations of his faults he hath made, what acts of repentance he hath done, how lived after his fall and reparation, and that he hath submitted all that he did or undid, to the discerning of a holy Man , whose office it is to guide his soul in this agony and last offices. All Men cannot have the blessing of a wise and learned Minister, and some dye, where they can have none at all ; yet it were a safer course to do as much of this as we can ; and to a competent person if we can ; if we cannot, then to the best we have, according as we judge it to be of spiritual advantage to us ; for in this conjuncture of accidents, it concernes us to be sure, if we may, and not to be deceived, where we can avoid it ; because we shall never return to life to do this work again ; and if after this entercourse with a spiritual guide, we be reconciled by the solemn prayer of the Church , the prayer of absolution , it will be of great advantage to us ; we depart with our fathers blessing, we dye in the actual communion of the Church, we hear the sentence of GOD applyed after the manner of Men, and the promise of pardon made circumstantiate, material, preuent, and operative upon our spirits, and have our portion of the promise, which is recorded by S. James, that *if the elders of the Church pray over a sick person fervently and effectually (adde solemnly) his sins shall be forgiven him* (that is, supposing him to be in a capacity to receive it) because such prayers of such a Man are very prevalent.

All this is in a spiritual sense, *washing the hands in innocency*, and then let him go to the altar : let him not for any excuse lesse then impossibility omit to receive the holy Sacrament ; which the Fathers assembled in the great Nicene Council have taught all the Christian world to call *the most necessary provisions for our last journey*, which is the memory of that death by which we hope for life , which is the seed of immortality and the resurrection of our bodies, which unites our spirit to CHRIST , which is a great defensative against the hostilities of the Devil, which is the most solemn prayer of the Church, united and made acceptable by the sacrifice of CHRIST, which is then represented and exhibited to GOD, which is the great instrument of spiritual increase , and the growth of grace , which is duty and reward, food & physick, health and pleasure, deleterious and cordial, prayer and thanksgiving,

22.

αρχίτην πειθεῖ-  
στει τέλεσον καὶ  
σφράγια  
Ἄλλος δὲ τοι,  
πιστεύει φίλος τοσο.

23.

αὐτὸν τὸν οἰκο-  
δοτὸν δὲ πα-  
λαιόν τοι εξερω-  
καί τοι φυ-  
λαχθίσασταί τοι  
τὸν ἄρτον εἰ τοι  
ἴσχει τοῦτο, τοῦτο  
λαυτάς τοι αἴρε-  
καρπάτες εργασίε-  
μενοσερβερετοί.  
Conc. Nicen.c.

13.

## Part III.

giving an union of mysteries, the marriage of the soul, and the perfection of all the rites of Christianity: Dying with the holy Sacrament in us is a going to GOD with CHRIST in our arms, and interposing him between us and angry sentence; but then we must be sure that we have done all the duty, without which we cannot communicate worthily. For else Satan comes in the place of CHRIST, and it is a horror not lese then infinite to appear before GODS tribunall, possessed in our souls with the spirit of darknesse. True it is, that by many laws of the Church the Bishop and the minister are bound to give the holy Eucharist to every person, who in the article or apparent danger of death desires it; provided that he hath submitted himself to the imposition and Counsels of the Bishop or Guide of his soul, that in case he recovers he may be brought to the peace of GOD and his Church by such steps and degrees of repentance by which other publike sinners are reconciled. But to this gentlenesse of Discipline, and easinesse of administration those excellent persons who made the *Canons* thought themselves compelled by the rigour of the Novatians; and because they admitted not lapsed persons to the peace of the Church upon any termes, though never so great, so publike, or so penall a repentance, therefore these, not only remitted them to the exercise and station of penitents, but also to the Communion. But the Fathers of the Council of *Eliberis* denied this favours to persons, who after baptisme were Idolaters; either intending this as a great argument to affright persons from so great a crime, or else believing that it was unpardonable after baptisme, a contradiction to that state, which we entred into by Baptisme, and the Covenant Evangelicall: However, I desire all learned persons to observe it, and the lese learned also to make use of it, that those *more ancient councils of the Church* which commanded the holy Communion to be given to dying persons, meant onely such, which according to the custome of the Church were under the conditions of repentance, that is, such to whom punishment and Discipline of divers yeers were injoyed, and if it hapned they died in the interuall, before the expiration of their time of reconciliation, then they admitted them to the Communion: which describes to us the doctrine of those ages, when religion was purer and discipline more severe, and holy life secured by rules of excellent government; that those onely were fit to come to that feast, who before their last sicknesse had finished the repentance of many years, \* or at least had undertaken it: and certainly it were great charity to deny the communion to persons, who have lived vitiously till their death; provided it be by competent authority, and done sincerely, prudently and without temporall interest; to other persons who have lived good lives or repented of their bad, thongh lese perfectly, it ought not to be denied, and they lese ought to neglect it.

*Mit a διαμετρίας  
ε δύονος ὅμ-  
ότων. Concil.  
Nicen.c.13.  
Τέτοις ὅμοιοι  
σεξδιώκη. Conc.  
Ancy.c.6.  
De his qui in  
penitentia positi  
vita excesserūt,  
placuit nullum  
communioneva-  
cuum debere  
dimitiri. Conc.  
Aurel.2.c.12.  
\* Vnde Concil.  
Eliber.c.46.  
G.cap.69.*

24-

But as every man must put himselfe, so also he must put his house in order, make his will, if he have an estate to dispose of; and in that he must be carefull to do justice to every man, and charity to the poor, according as GOD hath enabled him: and though charity is then very late, if it begins not earler, yet if this be but an act of an ancient habite it is still more perfect, as it succeeds in time, and superaddes to the former stock; and among other acts of duty let it be remembred that it is excellent charity to leave our will and desires clear, plain, and determinate, that contention and law-

law-sutes may be prevented by the explicite declaration of the legacies. At last and in all instances and periods of our following dayes let the former good acts be renewed; let GOD be praised for all his graces and blessings of our life, let him be intreated for pardon of our sins, let acts of love and contrition, of hope, of joy, of humility be the work of every day, which GOD still permits us, alwaies remembiring to ask remission for those sins we remenber not; and if the condition of our sicknesse permits it let our last breath expire with an act of love that it may begin the charities of eternity, and like a taper burnt to its lowest base, it may go out with a great emission of light, leaving a sweet smell behinde us to perfume our coffin, and that these lights newly made brighter or trimmed up in our sicknesse, may shine about our hearse, that they may become arguments of a pious sadness to our friends, (as the charitable coats, which *Dotes* made were to the widows) and exemplar to all those, who observed, or shall hear of our holy life and religious death. But if it shall happen, that the disease be productive of evil accidents, as a disturbed phansie, a weakned understanding, wilde discourlings, or any deprivation of the use of reason, it concerns the sick persons in the happy intervals of a quiet untroubled spirit to pray earnestly to God that nothing may passe from him in the rages of a feaver or worse distemper, which may lesse become his duty, or give scandal, or cause trouble to the persons in attendance; and if he shall also renounce and disclaime all such evil words, which his disease may speak, not himself, he shall do the duty of a Christian and a prudent person, and after these preparatives, he may with piety and confidence resign his soul into the hands of GOD to be deposited in holy receptracles till the day of restitution of all things. And in the mean time with a quiet spirit descend into that state, which is the lot of Cæsars and where all Kings and Conquerors have laid aside their glories.

... Ut se vice  
isse beatum  
Dicat & exalte  
contentus tem-  
pore vita  
Cedat uia con-  
viva satur--  
Hor. Ser. I.

## THE PRAYER.

**O** Eternall and Holy JESUS; who by death hast overcome death, and by thy passion hast taken out its sting, and made it to become one of the gates of heaven, and an entrance to felicity; have mercy upon me now and at the hour of my death; let thy grace accompany me all the dayes of my life, that I may by a holly conversation, and an habituall performance of my duty, waite for the coming of our LORD, and be ready to enter with thee at whatsoeuer hour thou shalt come. LORD let not my death be in any sense unprovided, nor untimely, nor hasty, but after the common manner of men, having in it nothing extraordinary, but an extraordinary piety, and the manifestation of a great and miraculous mercy. Let my senses and my understanding be preserved intire till the last of my dayes, and grant that I may die the death of the righteous, having first discharged all my obligations of justice, leaving none miserable and unprovided in my departure, but be thou the portion of all.

## Part III.

all my Friends and relatives, and let thy blessing descend upon their heads, and abide there, till they shall meet me in the bosom of our L O R D . Preserve me ever in the communion and peace of the Church; and blesse my Death-bed with the opportunity of a holy and a spirituall Guide, with the assistance and guard of Angels, with the perception of the holy Sacrament, with patience and dereliction of my own desires, with a strong faith, and a firm and humble hope, with just measures of repentance, and great treasures of charity to thee my GOD, and to all the world, that my soul in the arms of the holy J E S U S may be deposited with safety and joy, there to expect the revelation of thy day, and then to partake the glories of thy kingdom, O eternall and holy J E S U S . Amen.



## Ad. Sect. 15.

### Considerations upon the Crucifixion of the holy J E S U S .

1.

**W**hen the sentence of death pronounced against the L O R D was to be put in execution, the Soldiers pulled off the robe of mockery, the scarlet mantle, which in jest they put upon him, and put on his own garments. But as Origen observes, the Evangelist mentioned not, that they took off the crown of thornes; what might serve their interest they pursue, but nothing of remission or mercy to the afflicted Son of Man; But so it became the King of sufferings not to lay aside his imperiall thornes, till they were changed into diademies of glory. But now Abel is lead forth by his brother to be slain. A gay spectacle to satisfie impious eyes, who would not stay behind, but attended and waited upon the hang-man to see the Catastrophe of this bloody tragedy. But when piety looks on, she beholds a glorious mystery. Sin laughed to see the King of heaven and earth and the great lover of soules in stead of the sceptre of his kingdom to bear a tree of cursing and shame. But piety wept tears of pity, and knew they would melt into joy, when she should behold that Crosie which loaded the shoulders of her L O R D , afterward sit upon the sceptres, and be engraved and signed upon the foreheads of Kings.

2.

It cannot be thought, but the ministers of Jewish malice used all the circumstances of affliction which in any case were accustomed towards malefactors, and persons to be crucified, and therefore it was that in some old figures we see our blessed L O R D described with a table appendant to the fringe of his garment, set full of nailes, and pointed iron; for so sometimes they afflicted persons condemned to that kind of death: and S. Cyprian affirms,

S. Aug. tract.  
119. in Johan.

## Part III.

firms that CHRIST did stick to the wood, that he carried, being galled with the iron at his heelles, and nailed even before his crucifixion. But this and the other accidents of his journey and their malice so crushed his wounded, tender, and virginall body, that they were forced to lay the load upon a Cyrenian, fearing that he should die with lesse shame and smart, then they intended him: but so he was pleased to take man unto his aid, not onely to represent his own need, and the dolorousnesse of his passion, but to consigne the duty unto man, that we must entre into a fellowship of CHRISTS sufferings, taking up the Crosse of Martyrdom, when GOD requires us, enduring affronts, being patient under affliction, loving them that hate us, and being benefactors to our Enemies, abstaining from sensuall and intemperate delight, forbidding to our selves lawfull festivitie s and recreations of our weariness, when we have an end of the spirit to serve upon the ruins of the bodies strength, mortifying our desires, breaking our own will, not seeking our selves, being entirely resigned to GOD; these are the crosse, and the nailes and the spear, and the whip, and all the instruments of a Christians passion. And we may consider, that every man in this world shall in some sense or other bear a crosse, few men escape it, and it is not well with them that do; but they onely bear it well that follow CHRIST, and tread in his steps, and bear it for his sake, and walk as he walked; and he that follows his own desires, when he meetes with a crosse there, (as it is certain enough he will) bears the crosse of his concupisence, and that hath no fellowship with the crosse of CHRIST. By the precept of bearing the crosse we are not tyed to pull evil upon our selves, that we may imitate our LORD, in nothing but in being afflicted; or to personate the punitive exercises of mortification and severe abstinencies, which were eminent in some Saints and to which they had speciall assistances, as others had the gift of chastity, and for which they had speciall reaon, and as they apprehended some great necessities; but it is required, that we bear our own crosse, so said our dearest LORD; for when crosse of CHRIST is laid upon us, and we are called to Martyrdom, then it is our own, because GOD made it to be our portion; and when by the necessities of our spirit, and the rebellion of our body we need exterior mortifications, and acts of self deniall, then also it is our own crosse, because our needs have made it so; and so it is, when GOD sends us sicknesse or any other calamity; whatever is either an effect of our ghostly needs, or the condition of our temporall estate, it calls for our sufferance; and patience and equanimity; for therefore CHRIST hath suffered for us (saith S. Peter) leaving us an example that we shoud follow his steps; who bore his Crosse as long as he could, and when he could no longer, he murmured not, but sank under it, and then he was content to receive such aid, not which he chose himself, but such as was assigned him.

Matth. 16.24.

I. Peter 2.21.

JESUS was lead out of the gates of Jerusalem, that he might become the sacrifice for persons without the pale, even for all the world; and the daughters of Jerusalem followed him with pious tears till they came to Calvary, a place difficult in the ascent, eminent and apt for the publication of shame, a hill of death and dead bones, polluted and impure, and there beheld him stript naked, who clothes the field with flowers, and all the world with robes, and the whole globe with the canopy of heaven; and so dress't, that now every circumstance was a triumph; by his disgrace he trampled upon our pride; by his poverty and nakednesse he triumphed over our covetousse.

3.

O Carnificinum  
Cribrum quod  
crudo fore  
ita teorabunt  
patibulatum  
per vias  
Stimulis, si noster  
huc reverenter se-  
nes, plaut, in  
ostell.  
Tu ipse patibili  
tui bajulus ha-  
bas ligno quod  
tuleras, evictio-  
nis & passionis  
anxietates suffi-  
nentes & labores.  
S. Cypr. de pass.

Part III.

*Athanas. de  
pass. & cruce  
Dom.*

nesse and love of riches ; and by his pains chastised the delicacies of our flesh, and broke in pieces the fetters of concupiscense. For as soon as *Adam* was clothed he quitted Paradise, and JESUS was made naked, that he might bring us in again. And we also must be despoil'd of all our exterior adherencies, that we may passe through the regions of duty and divine love, to a society of blessed spirits and a clarified, immortal, and beatified estate.

4.

\*---*xixii. xviii. viii.  
sic d. p. t. l. c. a. n. m.  
l. a. v. o. p. --- N. o. m.  
Albigenses pri-  
m. i. p. i. n. x. e. r. u. n. t  
i. m. a. g. i. n. e. m. C. r. u. c. t.  
f. i. x. i. u. n. c. l. o. l. i.  
m. u. l. u. t. r. u. m. q. p. e.  
d. e. m. c. o. n. f. i. g. e. n. t.  
& v. i. r. g. i. n. e. m. M. a.  
r. i. a. m. M. o. n. o. c.  
l. a. m. ; u. t. r. u. m. q. i.  
d. e. r. i. l. e. n. e. m. ; i. d.  
p. o. s. t. e. a. p. r. i. o. r. f.  
g. u. r. a. r. e. t. e. n. t.  
& i. r. e. p. i. t. i. n. v. u.  
g. a. r. e. m. f. a. r. a. m.  
L. u. c. a. s. T. u. d. e. n. l. 2.  
c. o. n. t. r. A. l. b. i. g.*

5.

There they nailed JESUS with four nails \*, fixed his Croſſe in the ground, which with its fall into the place of its station gave infinite torture by so violent a concussion of the body of our LORD, which rested upon nothing but four great wounds ; where he was designed to ſuffer a long and lingering torment. For crucifixion as it was an excellent pain, sharp and paſſionate, ſo it was not of quick effect towards taking away the life. S. Andrew was two whole dayes upon the Croſſe ; and ſome Martyrs have upon the Croſſe been rather starved and devoured with birds, then killed with the proper torment of the tree. But JESUS took all his paſſion with a voluntary ſuſception, GOD heightning it to great degrees of torment ſuper-naturally, and he laid down his life voluntarily, when his Fathers wrath was totally appeased towards mankind.

Some have phantied, that CHRIST was pleased to take ſomething from every condition, of which Man ever was, or ſhall be poſſeffed ; taking immunity from ſin, from Adams ſtate of innocence, punishment and miſery from the ſtate of Adam fallen, the fulneſſe of grace from the ſtate of renovation, and perfect contemplation of the Divinity, and beatifick joyes from the ſtate of comprehension, and the bleſſedneſſe of Heaven ; meaning that the humanity of our bleſſed SAVIOUR did in the sharpeſt agony of his paſſion behold the face of GOD and communicate in glory. But I conſider, that although the two naſtres of CHRIST were knit by a myſterious union into one perſon, yet the naſtres ſtill retain their incommunicable properties. CHRIST as GOD is not ſubject to ſufferings, as a Man he is the ſubject of miſeries ; as GOD he is eternal, as Man mortal and commenſurable by time ; as GOD, the ſupreme Lawgiver ; as Man moft humble and obedient to the Law ; and therefore that the humane naſture was united to the Divine, it does not inferre that it muſt in all iſtants partake of the Divine felicitieſ, which in GOD are eſſential, to Man communicated without neceſſity, and by an arbitrary diſpenſation. Adde to this, that ſome vertues and exelleſſencies were in the ſoul of CHRIST, which could not conſift with the ſtate of glorified and beatified perſons, ſuch as are humility, poverty of ſpirit, hope, holy deſires, all which having their ſeat in the foul, ſuppoſe even in the ſupremest faculty a ſtate of pilgrimage ; that is, a condition which is imperfect, and in order to ſomething beyond its preſent. For therefore CHRIST ought to ſuffer (ſaiſh our bleſſed LORD himſelf) and ſo enter into his glory. And S. Paul affirms, that, we ſee JESUS made a little lower then the Angels for the ſuffering of death crowned with glory and honour. And again, CHRIST humbled himſelf, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the Croſſe, wherefore GOD alſo hath highly exalted him, and given him a name above every name. Thus his preſent life was a ſtate of merit and work, and as a reward of it he was crowned with glory and immortality, his Name was exalted, his Kingdom glorified, he was made the LORD of all the Creatures, the firſt-fruits of the Resurrecſtion, the exemplar of glory, and the Prince and

Luke 24.26.  
ſecundum vulg.  
i. n. t. r. p. r.  
Febr. 2.9.  
Philip 2.8 9.

and head of the Catholike Church ; and because this was his recompence and the fruits of his humility and obedience it is certain it was not a necessary consequence and a naturall efflux of the personall union of the Godhead with the humanity. This I discourse to this purpose, that we may not in our esteem, lessen the suffering of our dearest LORD by thinking he had the supports of actuall glory in the midst of all his sufferings. For there is no one minute or ray of glory, but its fruition does outweigh and make us insensible of the greatest calamities, and the spirit of pain, which can be extracted from all the infelicities of this world. True it is, that the greatest beauties in this world are receptive of an alloy of sorrow, and nothing can have pleasure in all capacities. The most beauteous feathers of the birds of Paradise, the *Estridge*, or the *Peacock*, if put into our throat are not there so pleasant as to the eye ; but the beatifick joys of the least glory of heaven take away all pain, *wipe away all tears from our eyes* ; and it is not possible, that at the same instant, the soul of JESUS should be ravished with glory, and yet abated with pains, grievous and afflictive. On the other side some say, that the soul of JESUS upon the crosse suffered the pains of hell, and all the torments of the damned, and that without such sufferings it is not imaginable he should pay the price, which GODS wrath should demand of us : But the same that reproves the one does also reprehend the other ; for the hope that was the support of the soul of JESUS, as it excludes the despaire, that is, the torments of accursed souls, so it confesses an imperfection, that is not consistent with the state of glory. Our dearest LORD suffered the whole condition of humanity, sin only excepted, and freed us from hell with suffering those sad pains, and merited heaven for his own humanity, as the head, and all faithfull people as the members of his mysticall body. And therefore his life here was only a state of pilgrimage, not at all trimmied with beatifick glories. Much lesse was he ever in the state of Hell, or upon the Crosse felt the formal misery and spirit of torment, which is the portion of damned spirits ; because it was impossible CHRIST should despair, and without despair it is impossible there should be a Hell. But this is highly probable, that in the intension of degrees and present anguish the soul of our LORD might feel a greater load of wrath then is incubinent in every instant upon perishing souls. For all the sadness, which may be imagined to be in Hell consists in acts produced from principles, that cannot surpassee the force of humane or Angelical nature ; but the pain which our blessed LORD endured for the expiation of our sins was an issue of an united and conceneterd anger, was received into the heart of GOD and MAN, and was commenfurate to the whole latitnde of the grace, patience, and charity of the word incarnate.

And now behold the Priest and the Sacrifice of all the world laid upon the altar of the Crosse, bleeding, and tortured, and dying to reconcile his Father to us ; and he was arrayed with ornaments more glorious then the robes of Aaron. The Crown of Thorns was his Mirer, the Crosse his pastoral staff, the Nails piercing his hands were instead of rings, the ancient ornament of Priests, and his flesh, rac'd and checkerd with blew and blood, instead of the particoloured robe. But as this object calls for our devotion, our love and Eucharist to our dearest L O R D, so it must needs irreconcile us to sin, which in the eye of all the World brought so great shame, and

Part III.

pain, and amazement upon the Son of GOD, when he only became engaged by a charitable substitution of himself in our place ; and therefore we are assured, by the demonstration of sense and experience it will bring death and all imaginable miseries as the just expresses of GODS indignation & hatred ; for to this we may apply the words of our LORD in the prediction of miseries to Jerusalem, *if this be done in the green tree, what shall be done in the dry?* For it is certain, CHRIST infinitely pleased his Father even by becoming the person made guilty in estimate of law ; and yet so great charity of our LORD, and the so great love and pleasure of his Father exempted him not from suffering pains intolerable ; and much lesse shall those escape who provoke and displease G O D, and despise so great salvation, which the holy JESUS hath wrought with the expence of blood, and so precious a life.

7.

But here we see a great representation and testimony of the Divine justice , who was so angry with Sin, who had so severely threatened it, who does so essentially hate it, that he would not spare his onely Sonne , when he became a conjunct person , relative to the guilt by undertaking the charges of our nature. For although GOD hath set down in holy Scrip-  
*Deut. 24.16.*  
*Ezek. 18.2,3,*  
*4,5. &c.*  
ture the order of his justice, and the manner of its manifestation, that one soul shall not perish for the sinnes of another , yet this is meant for justice and for mercy too, that is, he will not curse the Sonne for the Fathers fault , or in any relation whatsoever substitute one person for another to make him involuntarily guilty ; but when this shall be desired by a person that cannot finally perish , and does a mercy to the exempt persons , and is a voluntary act of the suspicent , and shall in the event also redound to an infinite good, it is no deflexion from the Divine Justice to excuse many by the affliction of one , who also for that very suffering shall have infinite compensation. We see that for the sinne of *Cham* all his posterity were accursed ; the Subjects of *David* dyed with the plague, because their Prince numbred the people : Idolatry is punished in the children of the fourth generation. *Sauls* seven sons were hang'd for breaking the league of *Gibeon*, and *Ababs* sin was punished in his posterity, he escaping, and the evil was brought upon his house in his sons dayes. In all these cases the evil descended upon persons in neer relation to the sinner , and was a punishment to him and a misery to these, and were either chastisements also of their own sinnes, or if they were not, they served other ends of providence, and lead the afflicted innocent to a condition of recompence accidentally procured by that infliction. But if for such relations sake and Oeconomical and political conjunction as between Prince and People , the evil may be transmitted from one to another, much rather is it just, when by contract a competent and conjunct person undertakes to quit his relative. Thus when the hand steals , the back is whipt, and an evil eye is punished with a hungry belly. Treason causes the whole Family to be miserable , and a sacrilegious Grandfather hath sent a Locust to devour the increase of the Nephews.

But in our case it is a voluntary contract, and therefore no injustice ; all parties are voluntary ; GOD is the supreme L O R D, and his actions are the measure of justice ; we who had deserved the punishment had great reason to desire a Redeemer ; and yet CHRIST who was to pay the ransom was more desirous of it then wee were , for wee asked it not before

## Part III.

Before it was promised and undertaken. But thus we see that sureties pay the obligation of the Principall Debtor, and the pledges of contracts have been by the best and wisest nations slain when the articles have been broken. The *Theffalians* slew 250 pledges; the *Romans* 300 of the *Volsci*, and threw the *Tarentines* from the *Tarpeian* rock; and that it may appear CHRIST was a person in all senses competent to do this for us, himself testifies that he had power over his own life to take it up or lay it down; and therefore as there can be nothing against the most exact justice and reason of laws and punishments; so it magnifies the Divine mercy, who removes the punishment from us, who of necessity must have sunk under it, and yet makes us to adore his severity, who would not forgive us without punishing his Son for us; to consign unto us his perfect hatred against sin, to conserve the sacrednesse of his laws, and to imprint upon us great characters of fear and love. The famous *Locrian Zaleucus* made a law, that all adulterers should loose both their eyes, his son was first unhappily surprised in the crime, and his Father to keep a temper between the piety and soft spirit of a parent and the justice and severity of a judge put out one of his own eyes, and one of his Sons. So GOD did with us, he made some abatement, that is, as to the person with whom he was angry, but inflicted his anger upon our Redeemer whom he essentially loved, to secure the dignity of his sanctions and the sacrednesse of obedience; so marrying justice and mercy by the intervening of a commutation. Thus David escaped by the death of his SON, GOD choosing that penalty for the expiation; and *Cimon* offered himself to prison to purchase the liberty of his Father *Miltiades*; it was a filiall duty in *Cimon*, and yet the law was satisfied, and both these concurred in our great Redeemer; For GOD, who was the sole arbitrator, so disposed it, and the eternall son of GOD submitte to this way of expiating our crimes; and became an argument of faith and belief of the great article of remission of sins, and other its appendant causes and effects, and adjuncts; it being wrought by a visible and notorious passion; it was made an encouragement of hope; for he that spared not his own son to reconcile us will with him give all things else to us so reconciled; and a great endearment of our duty and love, as it was a demonstration of his. And in all the changes and traverses of our life he is made to us a great example of all excellent actions and all patient sufferings.

In the midst of two theeves three long hours the holy JESUS hung clothed with pain, agony and dishonour, all of them so eminent and vast, that he who could not but hope, whose soul was enchaſed with Divinity, and dwelt in the bosome of GOD, and in the cabinet of the mysterious Trinity, yet had a cloud of misery so thick and black drawn before him, that he complained as if GOD had forsaken him; but this was the pillar of cloud, which conducted Israel into Canaan: and as GOD behind the cloud supported the holy JESUS and stood ready to receive him into the union of his glories, so his soul in that great desertaſion had internall comforts proceeding from consideration of all those excellent persons which should be adopted into the fellowship of his sufferings, which should imitate his graces, which should communicate his glories; and we follow this cloud to our country having CHRIST for our guide; and

Livius videt. si  
quis rerum D de-  
cument & exhib.  
reorum. I. si a  
r. o. D. de fide.  
iusforibus.

John 10. 10.

*Apud Diodes-  
rum Sicul.  
& Aelian.  
ια μὲν οὐκί-  
ον Θεοφάνη  
πλέονται οὐκ μὲν  
διαθέσην τὸ  
“ποτες” μεμφ-  
ένετο.*

## Part III.

though he trod the way, leaning upon the Crosse, which like the staffe of Egypt pierced his hands, yet it is to us a comfort and support, pleasant to our spirits as the sweetest Canes, strong as the pillars of the earth, and made apt for our use by having been born and made smooth by the hands of our elder brother.

10.

In the midst of all his torments JESUS onely made one prayer of sorrow to represent his sad condition to his Father; but no accent of murmur, no syllable of anger against his enemies: Instead of that he sent up a holy, charitable, and effectual prayer for their forgivenesse, and by that prayer obtained of GOD that within 55. dayes 8000. of his enemies were converted; so potent is the prayer of charity, that it prevaleth above the malice of Men, turning the arts of Satan into the designes of GOD, and when malice occasions the prayer, the prayer becomes an antidote to malice: and by this instance our blessed LORD configned that duty to us, which in his Sermons he had preached, that we should forgive our enemies and pray for them; and by so doing, our selves are freed from the stings of anger, and the stormes of a revengeful spirit, and oftentimes procures servants to GOD, friends to our selves, and heirs to the Kingdom of Heaven.

II.

\* Latro non semper blasphemus aut blasphemator deponit, sed [Militem] qui forsitan ob zelum Iudeorum aliquid contra leges Romanas fecerat: aliqui viri fuit non omnino blasphematores.

\* Titabaverunt qui viderunt Christum morenos susciantem; credit illi quem videbat secum in ligno pendente. Recolamus fidem factronis quam non inventi Christus post resurrectionem in Discipulis suis. S. Aug. serm. 144. de tempore.

Of the two \* Theevies, that were crucified together with our LORD, the one blasphemed, the other had at that time the greatest piety in the World, except that of the blessed Virgin, and particularly had such a faith, \* that all the ages of the Church could never shew the like. For when he saw CHRIST in the same condemnation with himself, crucified by the Romanes, accused and scorned by the Jewes, forsaken by his own Apostles, a dying distressed Man, doing at that time no miracles to attest his Divinity or innocence; yet then he confesses him to be a *LORD and a King, and his SAVIOUR*: He confessed his own shame and unworthiness, he submitted to the death of the Crosse, and by his voluntary acceptation and tacite volition of it, made it equivalent to as great a punishment of his own susception: He shewed an incomparable modesty, begging but for a remembrance onely, he knew himself so sinful, hee durst ask no more; hee reproved the other Thief for blasphemy; he confessed the World to come, and owned CHRIST publickly, he prayed to him, he hoped in him, and pitied him, shewing an excellent patience in this sad condition. And in this I consider, that besides the excellency of some of these acts, and the goodnesse of all the like occasion for so exemplar faith never can occurr; and until all these things shall in these circumstances meet in any one Man, hee must not hope for so safe an exit after an evil life upon the confidence of this example. But now CHRIST had the key of Paradise in his hand, and GOD blessed the good Thief with this opportunity of letting him in, who at another time might have waited longer, and been tyed to harder conditions. And indeed it is very probable, that hee was much advantaged by the intervening accident of dying at the same time with CHRIST; there being a natural compassion produced in us towards the partners of our miseries. For CHRIST was not void of humane passions, though he had in them no imperfection or irregularity, and therefore might bee invited by the society of misery, the rather to admit him to participate his joyes; and Saint Paul proves him

to be a *merciful High Priest*, because he was touched with a feeling of our infirmities; the first expression of which was to this Blessed Thief; CHRIST and he together, sat at the Supper of bitter herbs, and CHRIST payed his symbole, promising that he should that day be together with him in Paradise.

By the Crosse of CHRIST stood the holy Virgin Mother, upon whom old Simeons prophesie was now verified. For now she felt a sword passing thorow her very soul; she stood without clamour and womanish noises, sad, silent, and with a modest grief, deep as the waters of the abyffe, but *S. Ambr. l. 10.* smooth as the face of a Pool, full of love, and patience, and sorrow, and hope. Now she was put to it to make use of all those excellent discourses, her holy Son had used to build up her spirit and fortifie it against this day. Now she felt the blessings and strengths of Faith, and she passed from the griefs of the Passion to the expectation of the Resurrection, and she rested in this death as in a sad remedy; for she knew, it reconciled GOD with all the World. But her hope drew a veil before her sorrow, and though her greif was great enough to swallow her up, yet her love was greater and did swallow up her grief. But the sun also had a vail upon his face, and taught us to draw a curtain before the passion, which would be the most artificiall expression of its greatness, whilst by silence and wonder we confess it great, beyond our expression, or which is all one, great as the burden and basenesse of our sins; and with this veil drawn before the face of JESUS let us suppose him at the gates of Paradise, calling with his last words in a loud voice to have them opened; *That the King of glory might come in.*

Part. III.

12.



## The Prayer.

O Holy JESUS, who for our sakes didst suffer incomparable anguish and paines commensurate to thy love and our miseries, which were infinite, that thou mightest purchase for us blessings upon Earth, and an inheritance in Heaven; dispose us by love, thankfulness, humility, and obedience to receive all the benefit of thy passion, granting unto us and thy whole Church remission of all our sinnes, integrity of minde, health of body, competent maintenance, peace in our dayes, a temperate air, fruitfulness of the earth, unity and integrity of faith, extirpation of Heresies, reconcilement of Schismes, destruction of all wicked counsels intended against us; and binde the hands of rapine and sacrilege, that they may not destroy the vintage and root up the Vine it self. Multiply thy blessings upon us sweetest JESUS, increase in us true religion, sincere and actual devotion in our prayers, patience in troubles, and whatsoever is necessary to our soules health, or conducing to thy glory. Amen.

## Part III.

2.

O Dearest SAVIOUR, I adore thy mercies and thy incomparable love expressed in thy so voluntary susception and affectionate suffering such horrid and sad tortures, which cannot be remembred without a sad compassion; the waters of bitternesse entred into thy soul, and the storms of death and thy Fathers anger broke thee all in pieces; and what shall I do, who by my sinnes have so tormented my dearest L O R D ? what contrition can bee great enough, what tears suffisiently expressive, what hatred and detestation of my crimes can be equal and commenjurate to those sad accidents, which they have produced? Pity me O LORD, pity mee dearest GOD, turn those thy merciful eyes towards me, O most merciful Redeemer, for my sinnes are great, like unto thy passion, full of sorrow and shame, and a burden too great for me to bear. L O R D , who hast done so much for me, now onely speak the word and thy servant shall be whole; let thy wounds heal me, thy vertues amend me, thy death quicken me, that I in this life suffering the crosse of a sad and salutary repentance, in the union and merit of thy Crosse and Passion, may dye with thee and rest with thee, and rise again with thee, and live with thee for ever in the possession of thy glories O Dearest SAVIOUR JESUS. Amen.



## Sect. 16.

### *Of the Resurrection and Ascension of J E S U S.*



Gen. 50.  
Tacit. annal. l.  
21.

Hile it was yet early in the morning, upon the first day of the week *Mary Magdalen*, and *Mary the Mother of James and Salome* brought sweet spices to the sepulchre, that they might again embalme the Holy Body; for the rites of embalming among the Hebrews used to last fourty dayes, and their love was not satisfied with what *Joseph* had done; they therefore hastned to the grave, and after they had expended their money, and bought the spices, then begin to consider, who shall reniove the stone; but yet they still go on, and their love answers the objection, not knowing how it should be done, but yet resoluing to go through all the difficulties; but never remember or take care to passe the guards of Souldiers. But when they came to the Sepulchre they found the guard affrighted and removed, and the stone rolled away, for there had a little before their arrival been

## Part III.

been a great Earthquake, and an Angel descending from Heaven, rolled away the stone and sat upon it, and for fear of him the guards about the tomb became astonished with fear and were like dead men, and some of them ran to the high Priest and told them what hapned : But they now resolving to make their iniquity safe and unquestionable by a new crime, hire the Souldiers to tell an incredible and a weak fable, that his Disciples came by night and stole him away : Against which accident the wit of Man could give no more security, then themselves had made. The Women entered into the Sepulchre , and missing the body of JESUS, *Mary Magdalen* ran to the eleven Apostles, complaining that the body of our LORD was not to be found : Then *Peter* and *John* ran as fast as they could to see ; for the unexpectednesse of the relation, the wonder of the story, and the sadnessse of the person moved some affections in them , which were kindled by the first principles and sparks of faith, but were not made actual and definite , because the faith was not raised to a flame ; they looked into the sepulchre, and finding not the body there, they returned. By this time *Mary Magdalen* was come back, and the Women who stayed weeping for their LORDS body saw two Angels sitting in white , the one at the head , the other at the feet , at which unexpected sight they trembled , and bowed themselves ; but an Angel bid them not to fear, telling them, that JESUS of Nazareth, who was crucified, was also risen, and was not there, and called to minde, what JESUS had told them in Galilee concerning his crucifixion and resurrection the third day.

And *Mary Magdalen* turned her self back and saw JESUS, but supposing him to be the Gardiner, to him she said, *Sir, if thou have born him hence tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.* But JESUS said unto her, *Mary*, then she knew his voice, and with extasie of joy and wonder was ready to have crushed his feet with her embraces ; but he commanded her not to touch him, but go to his Brethren, and say , *I ascend unto my Father, and to your Father, to my GOD and your GOD.* Mary departed with satisfaction beyond the joyes of a victory or a full vintage , and told these things to the Apostles ; but the narration seem'd to them as talk of abused and phantaſtick persons. About the same time JESUS also appeared unto *Simon Peter*. Towards the declining of the day , two of his Disciples going to Emmaus sad and discourſing of the late occurrences , JESUS puts himself into their company , and upbraids their incredulity, and expounds the Scriptures, that *CHRIST* ought to suffer and rise again the third day, and in the breaking of bread disappeared, and so was known to them by vanishing away, whom present they knew not : And instantly they hasten to *Jerusalem*, and told the Apostles what had hapned.

And while they were there, that is, the same day at evening, when the Apostles were assembled all , save *Thomas*, secretly for fear of the Jews, the doors being shut, JESUS came and stood in the midst of them. They were exceedingly troubled , supposing it had been a Spirit , but JESUS confuted them by the Philosophy of their ſeneses , by feeling his flesh and bones, which Spirits have not. For he gave them his benediction , ſhewing them his hands and his feet. At which ſight they rejoiced with exceeding joy, and began to be restored to their indefinite hopes of ſome future felicity by the returns of their LORD to life , and there he first breathed on them, giving them the holy Ghost, and performing the promise twice made before

Aurora lucis
rutilat
Cœlum laudibus intonat
Mundus exultans jubilat,
Gemens internus ululat.
Cum Rex ille
fortissimus
Mortis confratens viribus
Pede conculcans
Tartara
Solvit a poena
miseros.
Ille qui clausus
lapide
Culloiditur sub
milite
Triumphans
pompa nobili
Victor surgit de
funere.
Hymn. Paschal.

2.

3.

Part III.

his death, the promise of the keyes, or of binding and loosing, saying [whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted to them, and whose soever sins ye retain they are retained,] and that was the second part of Clericall power, with which J E S U S instructed his Disciples in order to their great commission of preaching, and government Ecclesiastical. These things were told to *Thomas*, but he believed not and refolved against the beleef of it unlesle he might put his finger into his hands and his hand into his side. J E S U S therefore on the octaves of his Resurrection appeared again to the Apostles met together, and makes demonstration to *Thomas* in conviction and reproof of his unbelief, promising a speciall benediction to all succeeding ages of the Church; for they are such who saw not, and yet have beeleeved.

4. But J E S U S at his early appearing had sent an order by the women, that the Disciples should go into *Galilee*, and they did so after a few dayes. And *Simon Peter* being there went a fishing, and six other of the Apostles with him to the sea of *Tiberias*, where they laboured all night and caught nothing. Towards the morning J E S U S appeared to them, and bade them cast the net on the right side of the ship, which they did and inclosed an hundred fifty three great fishes; by which prodigious draught *John* the beloved Disciple perceived, it was the L O R D, at which instance *Peter* threw himself into the Sea, and went to J E S U S; and when the rest were come to shore, they din'd with broiled fish. After dinner J E S U S taking care for those scattered sheep, which were dispersed over the face of the earth, that he might gather them into one sheepfold under one Shepheard, asked *Peter*, *Simon son of Jonas* lovest thou me more than these? *Peter* answered, yea L O R D thou that knowest all things knowest that I love thee. Then J E S U S said unto him feed my lambs. And J E S U S asked him the same question, and gave him the same precept the second time, and the third time, for it was a considerable and a weighty imployment, upon which J E S U S was willing to spend all his endeavours and stock of affections that *Peter* owed him, even upon the care of his little flock; and after the intrusting of this charge to him he told him, that the reward he should have in this world shoulde be a sharp and an honourable Martyrdome, and withall checkes at *Peters* curiositie in buisying himself about the temporall accidents of other men, and enquiring what should become of *John* the beloved Disciple? J E S U S answered his Question with some sharpnesse of reprehension, and no satisfaction; If I will, that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Then they phansied, that he shoulde not die; But they were mistaken, for the intimation was expounded and verified by S. *Johns* surviving the destruction of Jerusalem; for after the attempts of persecutors and the miraculous escape of prepared torments he died a naturall death in a good old age.

After this, J E S U S having appointed a solemne meeting, for all the Brethren, that could be collected from the dispersion, and named a certain mountain in Galilee, appeared to five hundred brethren at once, and this was his most publick and solemne manifestation; and while some

some doubted, JESUS came according to the designation, and spake to the eleven, sent them to preach to all the World, *repentance and remission of sinnes in his Name, promising to be with them to the end of the World.* He appeared also unto *James*, but at what time is uncertain. Last of all, when the Apostles were at dinner, he appeared to them, upbraiding their incredulity; and then he opened their understanding, that they might discern the sense of Scripture, and again commanded them to preach the Gospel to all the World, giving them power *to do miracles, to cast out Devils, to cure diseases;* and instituted the Sacrament of Baptisme, which he commanded should together with the Sermons of the Gospel be administred to all Nations *in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost.* Then he led them into Judea, and they came to Bethany, and from thence to the mount Olivet, and commanded them to *stay in Jerusalem, till the holy Ghost, the promise of the Father, should descend upon them,* which should be accomplished in few dayes; and then they shoulde know the times, and the seasons, and all things necessary for their ministracion and service, and propagation of the Gospel. And while he discoursed many things concerning the Kingdom, behold a Cloud came and parted JESUS from them, and carried him in their sight, up into Heaven; where he sits at the right hand of GOD blessed for ever. Amen.

While his Apostles stood gazing up to Heaven two Angels appeared to them, and told them, that JESUS should come in like manner as he was taken away, *viz.* with glory and majesty, and in the clouds, and with the ministry of Angels. Amen. *Come LORD JESUS, Come quickly.*

Ad Sect.



## *Ad Sect. 16.*

### *Considerations of the accidents happening in the interuall after the death of the holy JESUS:*

*And of his Resurrection.*

I



\* Symbolum Aquileiensis, & ex eo Romanum bodiernum.  
— Ubi duas magnas revelationes subiobtigisse dixit (Paulus) bil que in sublire se raptus; semel ad caenum tertium, semel ad paradisum Methodius con. Origen. apud Epiphian Idem ait Moses Barcephas l.de. Paradi op. 4. c. 7 Dial. adv. Tryph. a 15. c. 3. b 1. de anima: & de prescriptiōnē feniunt: scriptor resp. ad Orthod. q. 76. S. Greg. Naz. orat. 10. S. Chrysostom. homil. 15. in Matt S. Amb. in Michea. Cyrilli liturg. Epiphanius apud S. Hieron. Theodoreus. Theophilus & vett psalm. till

HE holy JESUS promised to the Blessed Thief, that he should that day be with him in paradise, which therefore was certainly a place or state of blessedness; because it was a promise; and in the society of JESUS, whose penal and afflictive part of his work of redemption was finished upon the Cross. Our blessed LORD did not promise he should that day be with him in his kingdom, for that day it was not opened, and the everlasting doors of those interior recesses were to be shut till after the resurrection, that himself was to ascend thither, and make way for all his servants to entre, in the same method, in which he went before us. Our blessed LORD descended into hell, saith the Creed \* of the Apostles, from the sermon of S. Peter, as he from the words of David, that is into the state of separation and common receptacle of spirits, according to the stile of Scripture. But the name of [hell] is nowhere in Scripture an appellative of the kingdom of CHRIST, of the place of finall and supreme glory. But concerning the verification of our LORDS promise to the beatified thief, and his own state of separation we must take what light we can from Scripture, and what we can from the doctrine of the Primitive Church. S. Paul had two great revelations. He was *rapt up into Paradise*, and he was *rapt up into the third heaven*; and these he calls *visions and revelations*, not one, but divers: for *Paradise* is distinguished from *the heaven of the Blessed*, being it self a receptacle of holy souls, made illustrious with visitation of Angels, and happy by being a repository for such spirits, who at the day of judgement shall go forth into eternall glory. In the interim CHRIST hath trod all the paths before us and this also we must passe thorough to arrive at the courts of heaven. *Justin Martyr* said it was the doctrine of heretical persons to say that the souls of the Blessed, instantly upon the separation from their bodies enter into the highest heaven. And a *Irenaeus* makes heaven and the intermediate receptacle of souls to be distinct places: both blessed, but hugely differing in degrees: b *Tertullian* is dogmaticall in the assertion, that till

till the voice of the great Archangel be heard, and as long as CHRIST sits at the right hand of his Father, making intercession for the Church, so long, Blessed souls must expect the assembling of their brethren, the great congregation of the Church, that they may all passe from their outer courts into the inward tabernacle, the Holy of holies, to the throne of GOD. And as it is certain, that no soul could enter into glory, before our LORD entred, by whom we hope to have access: so it is most agreeable to the proportion of the mysteries of our Redemption, that we believe the entrance into glory to have been made by our LORD at his glorious ascension, and that his soul went not thither before then, to come back again, to be contracted into the span of humanity and dwell forty dayes in his body upon earth. But that he shoulde return from Paradise, that is, from the common receptacles of departed Spirits, who dyed in the love of GOD, to earth again, had in it no lessening of his condition, since himself in mercy called back Lazarus from thence, and some others also returned to live a life of grace, which in all senses is leſſe then the leaſt of glories. Sufficient it is to us that al holy souls departing, go into the hands that is, into the custody of our Lord, that *they rest from their labours*, that *their works shall follow them*, and overtake them too, at the day of judgement, that they are happy presently, that they are visited by Angels, \* that GOD sends as he pleaseth, excellent irradiations and types of glory to entertain them in their mansions: that their condition is secured: but the crown of *righteousnesſe* is laid up against the great day of judgement, and then to be produced and given to S. Paul, and to all that love the coming of our LORD, that is, to all who either here in duty, or in their receptacles with joy and certain hope long for the revelation of that day. At the day of judgement Christ will send the Angels, and they shall gather together the elect from the four winds; and all the refuse of men, evil persons, they shall throw into everlasting burning. Then our blessed LORD shall call to the elect to enter into the kingdom, and reject the cursed into the portion of Devils: for whom the fire is but now prepared in the intervall. For we must all appeare before the judgment seat of Christ (saith S. Paul) that every man may receive in his body according as he hath done, whether it be good or evil. Out of the body the reception of the reward is not. And therefore S. Peter affirms, that God hath delivered the evil Angels into chaines of darknesſe to be reserved unto judgement. And S. Jude saith, that the Angels which kept not their first faith, but left their first habitation he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darknesſe unto the judgement of the great day. And therefore the Devils expostulated with our blessed Saviour: Art thou come to torment us before the time? And the same also he doeth to evil men, reserving the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished. For since the actions, which are to be judged are actions of the whole man, so also must be the judicature: And our blessed Saviour intimated this to his Apostles: In my Fathers house are many mansions: but I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go away I will come again, and take you unto me, that where I am, there ye may be also. At CHRISTs second coming this is to be performed. Many outer courts, many different places, or different states; and yet there is a place, whither holy souls shall arrive at last which was not then ready for us, and was not to be entred into, untill the entrance of our LORD had made the preparation, and that is, certainly the highest heaven, called by S. Paul, the third heaven; because the *Pſal. 17.15.*

Revel. 14.13.

\* Iuli. n. Mat. 7.5  
inter quæst Gen-  
tles at bonos  
et in dacia  
morte ad Paradis-  
tu n. ubi consu-  
tudo & aspectus  
est Angelorum,  
& visus Christi  
S. vatoris.  
2.Tim.4.8.  
Math.13.41.

2.Cor.5.10.

in reuisione  
Exod. 12.13. Isra-  
el et co. obsec. Sic  
quidam Codd.  
Jude.5.  
Math.8.29.

2.Pet.2.4.  
Laßtan.l.7.c.21  
Nec tares quili-  
q; an putet ani-  
mas post mortem  
protinus Judicari  
Nam omnes in  
una communiq;  
custodia detinen-  
tur, donec tempus  
adveniat atq;  
Maximus Judec  
meritorum faciat  
e. amen

John.14.2.

3.  
Satiabor cum  
anparueris  
other

Part III.

*Heb. 11. 40.*  
*Irenæ. l.5.adv.*  
*heres. ad fin.*  
*Origen.homil.7*  
*in Levit.*  
*Chrys. hom.39*  
*in 1. Cor.*  
*Theodoret*  
*Theophilact*  
*Oecumenius*  
*in Hebr. xi.*  
*S. Aug.l.1.re-*  
*traß. c. 14.*  
*Victorin.Mart.*  
*in c. 6. Apocal.*  
*Ambros. de bo-*  
*no mortis.c.10.*

C. II.

*2. Tim. 1.18.*  
*1. Thess.5.23.*  
*Vide Irenæum*  
*in hunc locum.*  
*lib.5. c.6.adv.*  
*heres. ubi pro-*  
*bat absq; unio-*  
*ne corporis,ani-*  
*ma, & spiritus,*  
*hominem non*

other receptacles were ready, and full of holy souls, Patriarks and Prophets, and holy men of GOD ; concerning whom S. Paul affirms expreſſly, that the Fathers received not the promises, GOD having provided ſome better thing for us, that they without us ſhould not be made perfect : Therefore certain it is, that their condition was a ſtate of imperfection, and yet they were placed in Paradise, in Abrahams beſom, and thither CHRIST went, and the bleſſed Thief attended him. And then it was, that CHRIST made their condition better ; for though ſtill it be a place of relation in order to ſomething beyond it, yet the terme and object of their hope is changed ; they ſate in the regions of darkneſſe, expeſting that great promise made to Adam, and to the Patriarks, the promife of the *Meffias*. But when he that was promised came, he preached to the *ſpirits in prison*, he communicated to them the mysteries of the Gofpell, the ſecrets of the kingdome, the things hidden from eternall ages, and taught them to look up to the glories purchased by his Paſſion ; and made the terme of their expectation be his ſecond coming, and the objeſts of their hope, the glories of the beatifick viſion. And although the ſtate of ſeparation is ſometimes in Scripture called [heaven,] and ſometimes [hell,] (for theſe words in Scripture are of large ſignifications) yet it is never called the third heaven, nor the hell of the damned ; for althoſh concerning it nothing is clearly revealed, or what is their portion till the day of judgement, yet it is intimated in a parable, that between good and evil ſpirits even in the ſtate of ſeparation there is diſtance of place ; certain it is, there is great diſtance of condition ; and as their holy ſouls in their regions of light are full of love, joy, hope, and longing for the coning of the great day, ſo the accideſt Irenæum curſed do expect it with an inſupportable amazement, and are preſently tormented with apprehenſions of the future. Happy are they that through paradise paſſe into the kingdom, who from their highest hope paſſe to the greatest charity, from the ſtate of a bleſſed separation to the merceſies and gentle ſentencē of the day of judgement, which S. Paul prayed to GOD to grant to Onesiphorus ; and more explicitly for the Thesſalonians ; that their whole ſpirit and ſoul and body be preserved blameleſſe unto the coming of our LORD JESUS, and I pray GOD to grant the ſame to me, and all faithfull people wharſoever.

## 2.

As ſoon as the LORD had given up his ſpirit into the hands of GOD, the veil of the Temple was rent, the Angels Guardians of the place deſerted it, the rites of Moses were laid open, and the incloſures of the Tabernacle were diſparked, the earth trembled, the graves were opened, and all the old world, and the old religion were ſo shaken towards their firſt Chaos, that if GOD had not ſupported the one, and reſerved the other for an honourable buriall, the earth had left to ſupport her children, and the synagogue had been thrown out to an inglorious exiſtence and contempt. But yet in theſe ſymploles they were changed from their firſt condition, and paſſed into a new dominion, all old things paſſed away, and all things became new, the earth and the heavens were reckoned as a new creation, they paſſed into another kingdom, under CHRIST their LORD : and as before, the creatures were ſervants of humane neceſſities they now become ſervants of election, and in order to the ends of grace, as before of nature : CHRIST having now the power to diſpoſe of them in order to his kingdom, and by the administration of his own wiſdom. And at the iſtant of theſe

these accidents, GOD so determined the persuasions of men that they referred these prodigies to the honour of CHRIST, and took them as testimonies of that truth, for the affirmation of which the High Priest had condemned our dearest LORD; and although the heart of the Priest rent not, even then when rocks did tear in pieces, yet the people, who saw the Passion, smote their breasts and returned and confessed CHRIST.

The graves of the dead were opened at the death, but the dead bodies of the Saints that slept, arose not till the resurrection of our LORD; for he was the first fruits, and they followed him as instant witnesses, to publish the resurrection of their head, which it is possible they declared to those, to whom they appeared in the holy city. And amongst thele, the curiosity or pious credulity of some have supposed Adam and Eve, Abraham, Isaack and Jacob who therefore were carefull to be buried in the land of promise, as having some intimation or hope, that they might be partakers of the earliest glories of the *Messias*, in whose faith and distant expectation they lived and died; and this calling up of company from their graves did publish to all the world, not onely that the LORD himself was risen according to his so frequent and repeated predictions, but that he meant to raise up all his servants, and that all who believe in him, should be partakers of the resurrection.

When the fouldiers observed that JESUS was dead, out of spite and impotent ineſtive malice, one of them pierced his holy ſide with a ſpear; and the rocke being ſmitten it gushed out with water and blood, streaming forth two Sacraments to refresh the Church, and opening a gate that all his brethren might enter in, and dwell in the heart of GOD. And ſo great a love had our Lord, that he ſuffered his heart to be opened, to ſhew it, that as Eve was formed from the ſide of Adam, ſo was the Church to be from the ſide of her LORD, receiving from thence life, and ſpiritual nutriment; which he miniftriſt in ſo great abundance, and ſuffered himſelfe to be pierced, that all his blood did ſtreame over us, untill he made the fountain dry, and reſerved nothing of that, by which he knew, his Church was to live and move and have her being. Thus the ſtreame of blood iſſued out to become a fountain for the ſacrament of the chalice, and water gushed out to fill the fonts of baptism and repenſance. The blood being the testimony of the Divine love, calls upon us to dye for his love, when he requires it, and the noise of the water calls upon us to purify our ſpirits, and preſent our conſcience to CHRIST holy and pure without ſpot or wrinkle; the blood running upon us makes us to be of the cognition and family of GOD; and the water quenches the flames of hell, and the fires of conciſpicence.

The freinds and Disciples of the H. JESUS having devoutly composed his body to buriall, anointed it, washed it, and condited it with ſpices and perfumes, laid it in a ſepulchre hewen from a rocke in a garden, which (ſayes Euthymius) was therefore done, to represent, that we were by this death returned to paradise, and the gardens of pleaſures and divine favours, from whence by the prevarication of Adam man was expelled. Here he finished the worke of his paſſion as he had begun it in a garden, and the place of ſepulchre being a rock, ſerves the ends of pious ſucceeding ages; for the place remaines in all changes of government, of warres, of earth-quakes, and ruder accidents to this day, as a memoriall of the ſepulchre of our dearest LORD, as a ſenſible and proper confirmation of the persuasions of ſome persons.

6

Zech. 9. 11, 12

But now it was that in the darke and undiscoverd mansions, there was a scene of the greatest joy and the greatest horrour represented, which yet was known since the first falling of the morning starres. Those holy soules, whom the Prophet Zechary calls, prisoners of hope lying in the lake where there is no water, that is, no constant stremme of joy to refresh their present condition : but they were supported with certain shewres and gracious visitations from GOD, and illuminations of their hope; and now that they saw their Redeemer come to change their condition, and to improve it into the neighbourhoods of glory and clearer revelations, must needs have the joy of intelligent and beatified understandings of redeemed captives, of men forgiven after the sentence of death, of men satisfied after a tedious expectation, enjoying and seeing their LORD, whom for so many ages they had expected. But the accursed spirits seeing the darknesse of their prison shine with a new light, and their Empire invaded, and their retirements of horror discovered, wondered how a man durst venture thither, or if he were a GOD, how he should come to dye. But the H. JESUS was like that body of light, receiving into himselfe the reflexion of all the lesser rayes of joy, which the Patriarks felt, and being united to his fountain of felicity, apprehended it yet more glorious. He now felt the effects of his bitter passion to return upon him in comforts; every hour of which was abundant recompence for three hours passion upon the Crosse; and became to us a great precedent to invite us to a toleration of the acts of repentance, mortification, and Martyrdome and that in the times of suffering wee live upon the stock and expence of faith, as remembering that these few moments of infelicity are infinitely paid with every minute of glory, and yet that the glory, which is certainly consequent, is so lasting and perennall, that it were enough in a lower joy to make amends by its continuall

"Ἄντι περίτελλος μὲν τόντος ἀδόπι, οὐ μηδέ πόνος ὁ καθό, τὸ δὲ αἰδήσιον μέτειν· ἀποτινάχισις εἰδοῖς, μὲν ἀδόπι, τὸ μηδέ αἰδήσιτεν, τὸ δὲ αἰδήσιον μέτειν.  
Musonius apud A. Gellium. l. 16. c. 1.

petual, that it were enough in a lower joy to make amends by its continuation of eternity. And let us but call to mind, what thoughts we shall have, when we dye, or are dead, how we shall then without prejudice consider, that if we had done our duty, the trouble and the affliction would now be past, and nothing remain but pleasure and felicities eternall, and how infinitely happy we shall then be, if we have done our duty, and how miserable, if not all the pleasures of sinne disappearing, and nothing surviving, but a certain and everlasting torment. Let us carry alway the same thoughts with us, which must certainly then intervene, and we shall meet the H. JESUS, and partake of his joyes, which overflowed his holy soule, when he first entered into the possession of those excellent fruits and effects of his passion.

7.

When the third day was come, the soul of JESUS returned from Paradise, and the visitation of separate spirits and reentered into his holy body, which he by his divine power did redintegrate, filling his vaines with blood, healing all the wounds, excepting those five of his hands feet and side, which he referred as trophies of his victory, and argument of his passion; and as he had comforted the soules of the Fathers with the presence of his spirit, so now he saw it to be time to bring comfort to his holy Mother, to reestablish the tottering faith of his Disciples, to verify his promise, to make demonstration of his Divinity, to lay some superstructures of his Church upon the foundation of his former sermons, to instruct them in  
the

the mysteries of his kingdome, to prepare them for the reception of the holy Ghost, and as he had, in his state of separation triumphed over hell, so in his resurrection he set his foot upon death, and brought it under his dominion; so that although it was not yet destroyed, yet it is made his subject, it hath as yet the condition of the Gibeonites, who were not banished out of the land, but they were made drawers of water, and hewers of wood; so is death made instrumental to CHRIST'S kingdom, but it abides still, and shall till the day of judgement; but shall serve the ends of our LORD, and promote the interests of eternity, and do benefit to the Church.

And it is considerable, that our blessed LORD having told them that after three dayes he would rise again, yet he shortned the time as much as was possible, that he might verifie his own prediction, and yet make his absence the leſſe troublesome; he rises early in the morning the first day of the week; for so our dearest LORD abbreviates the dayes of our sorrow, and lengthens the years of our consolation; for he knows that a day of sorrow seems a year, and a year of joy passes like a day, and therefore GOD lessens the one and lengthens the other, to make this perceived and that supportable. Now the Temple which the Jews destroyed, GOD raised up in six and thirty hours; but this second temple was more glorious then the first; for now it was clothed with robes of glory, with clarity, agility, and immortality, and though like Moses descending from the mount he wore a veil, that the greatnesse of his splendour might not render him unapt for conversation with his servants; yet the holy Scripture affirms, that he was now no more to see corruption; meaning that now he was separate from the passibility and afflictions of humane bodies, and could suffer S. Thomas to thrust his hand into the wound of his side, and his finger into the holes of his hands without any grief or smart.

But although the graciousnesse and care of the LORD, had prevented all diligence and satisfied all desires, returning to life before the most forward faith could expect him; yet there were three Maries went to the grave so early that they prevented the rising of the Sun, and though with great obedience they stayed till the end of the Sabbath, yet assoon as that was done, they had other parts of duty and affection, which called with greatest importunity to be speedily satisfied. And if obedience had not bound the feet of love, they had gone the day before, but they became to us admirable patterns of obedience to the Divine commandments. For though love were stronger then death, yet obedience was stronger then love, and made a rare dispute in the spirits of those holy women; in which the flesh and the spirit were not the litigants, but the spirit and the spirit, and they resisted each other as the Angel Guardian of the Jews resisted the tutelar Angel of Persia, each striving who should with most love and zeal perform their charge, and GOD determined. And so he did here too. For the law of the Sabbath was then a Divine Commandment, and although piety to the dead, and to such a dead, was ready to force their choice to do violence to their will, bearing them up on wings of desire, to the grave of the LORD, yet at last they reconciled love with obedience. For they had been taught that love is best expressed in keeping of the Divine Commandments. But now they were at liberty; and sure enough they made use of its first minute; and going so early to seek CHRIST, they were sure they should finde him.

8.

9.

## Part III.

The Angels descended Guardians of the sepulchre ; for GOD sent his guards too, and they affrighted the watch appointed by Pilate and the Priests ; but when the women came they spake like comforters, full of sweetnesse and consolation, laying aside their affrighting glories, as knowing it is the will of their LORD, that they should minister good to them that love him. But a conversation with Angels could not satisfie them, who came to look for the LORD of the Angels, and found him not ; and when the LORD was pleased to appear to Mary Magdalen she was so swallowed up with love and sorrow, that she entred into her joy and perceived it not ; she saw the LORD and knew him not. For so, from the closets of darknesse they that immediately stare upon the sun, perceive not the beauties of the light, and feel nothing but amazement. But the voice of the LORD opened her eyes, and she knew him, and worshipped him, but was denied to touch him, and commanded to tell the Apostles ; for therefore GOD ministers to us comforts and revelations, not that we dwell in the sensible fruition of them our selves alone, but that we communicate the grace to others. But when the other women were returned, and saw the LORD, then they were all together admitted to the embracement, and to kisse the feet of JESUS. For GOD hath his opportunities and periods, which at another time he denies, and we must then rejoice in it, when he vouchsafes it, and submit to his Divine will, when he denies it.

III.

These good women had the first fruits of the apparition : for their forward love, and the passion of their religion made greater haste to entertain a grace, and was a greater endearment of their persons to our LORD, than a more sober, reserved and lesse active spirit. This is more safe, but that is religious : this goes to GOD by the way of understanding, that by the will : this is supported by discourse, that by passions : this is the sobriety of the Apostles, the other was the zeal of the holy women ; and because a strong phansy and an earnest passion fixed upon holy objects are the most active and forward instruments of devotion, as devotion is of love, therefore we finde, GOD hath made great expressions of his acceptance of such dispositions. And women lesse knowing persons, and tender dispositions and pliant natures will make up a greater number in heaven, then the severe and wary, and enquiring people, who sometimes love because they believe, and believe because they can demonstrate, but never believe, because they love. When a great understanding, and a great affection meet together it makes a saint, great like an Apostle ; but they do not well who make abatement of their religious passions by the severity of their understanding. It is no matter by which we are brought to CHRIST, so we love him, and obey him, but if the production admit of degrees, that instrument is the most excellent, which produces the greatest love : and although discourse and a sober spirit be in it self the best, yet we do not alwayes suffer that to be a parent of as great religion as the good women make their fansy, their softnesse and their passion.

12.

Our blessed LORD appeared next to Simon, and though he and John ran forth together, and S. John outran Simon, although Simon Peter had denied and forsworn his LORD, and S. John never did, and followed him to his passion and his death, yet Peter had the favour of seeing JESUS first ; which some spirituall persons understand as a testimony, that penitent sinners have accidentall eminencies and privileges sometimes indulged to them

them beyond the temporall graces of the just and innocent ; as being such, who not onely need defensatives against the remanent and inherent evils even of repented sins, and their aptnesse to relapse : but also because those, who are true penitents, who understand the infinitenesse of the divine mercy, and that for a sinner to passe from death to life, from the state of sin into pardon and the state of grace, is a greater gift, and a more excellent and improbable mutation, then for a just man to be taken into glory ; out of gratitude to GOD, and endeerment for so great a change, added to a fear of returning to such danger and misery will reinforce all their industry and double their study, and observe more diligently, and watch more carefully, and *redeem the time*, and make amends for their omissions, and oppose a good to the former evils, beside the duties of the present imployment ; and then, commonly the life of a holy penitent is more holy, active, zealous and impatient of vice, and more rapacious of virtue and holy actions, and arises to greater degrees of sanctity then the even and moderate affections of just persons, who (as our B.Saviours expression is) need no repentance, that is, no change of state, nothing but a perseverance, and an improvement of degrees. *There is more joy in heaven before the Angels of GOD over one sinner that repenteth, than over ninety nine just persons, that need it not ; for where sin hath abounded there doth grace superabound ; and that makes joy in heaven.*

*Majus est, pec-  
cato rem ex pec-  
cato in gratiam  
migrare, quam  
ex hoc mundo  
in calum.*  
S. August.

Luc. 15. 7.

The holy JESUS having received the affections of his most passionate Disciples, the women and S. Peter, puts himself upon the way into the company of two good men going to Emmaus, with troubled spirits and a reeling faith, shaking all its upper building, but leaving some of its foundation firm ; to them the LORD discourses of the necessity of the death and resurrection of the Messias, and taught them not to take estimate of the counsels of GOD by the designes and proportions of man : for GOD, by waies contrary to humane judgement brings to passe the purposes of his eternall providence. The glories of CHRIST were not made pompous by humane circumstances, his kingdom was spirituall, he was to enter into felicities through the gates of death ; he refused to do miracles before Herod, and yet did them before the people, he confuted his accusers by silence, and did not descend from the Croffe, when they offered to believe in him, if he would ; but left them to be persuaded by greater arguments of his power, the miraculous circumstances of his death, and the glories of his resurrection ; and by walking in the secret paths of divine election hath commanded us to adore his footsteps, to admire and revere his wisdom, to be satisfied with all the events of providence, and to rejoice in him, if by afflictions he makes us holy, if by persecutions he supports and enlarges his Church, if by death he brings us to life ; so we arrive at the communion of his felicities we must let him choose the way, it being sufficient, that he is our guide, and our support, and our exceeding great reward. For therefore CHRIST preached to the two Disciples going to Emmaus, the way of the croffe, and the necessity of that passage, that the wisdom of GOD might be glorified, and the conjectures of man ashamed. But whilest his discourse lasted, they knew him not, but in the breaking of bread he discovered himself. For he turned their meal into a Sacrament, and their darknesse to light, and having to his Sermon added the Sacrament, opened all

13.

## Part III.

their discerning faculties, the eyes of their body, and their understanding too, to represent to us that when we are blessed with the opportunities of both those instruments, we want no exterior assistance to guide us in the way, to the knowing and enjoying of our LORD.

14.

But the apparitions, which JESUS made were all upon the designe of laying the foundation of all Christian graces; for the begetting and establishing faith, and an active confidence in their persons, and building them upon the great fundamentals of the religion. And therfore he appointed a general meeting on a mountain in Galilee, that the number of witnesses might not only disseminate the fame, but establish the article of the resurrection; for upon that, are built all the hopes of a Christian; and if the dead rise not, then are we of all men most miserable, in quitting the present possessions, and entertaining injuries and affronts without hopes of reparation. But we lay two gages in severall repositories; the body in the bosome of the earth, the soul in the bosome of GOD; and as we here live by faith, and lay them down with hope, so the resurrection is a restitution of them both, and a state of reunion; and therefore although the glory of our spirits, without the body were joy great enough to make compensation for more then the troubles of all the world: yet because one shall not be glorified without the other, they being of themselves incomplet substances and GOD having revealed nothing cleerely concerning actuall and compleat felicities till the day of judgement, when it is promised our bodies shall rise, therefore it is that the resurrection is the great article, upon which we relie, and which CHRIST took so much care to prove and ascertain to so many persons, because if that should be disbelieved, with which all our felicities are to be received, we have nothing to establish our faith, or entertain our hope, or satisfie our desires, or make retribution for that state of secular inconveniences, in which by the necessities of our nature, and the humility and patience of our religion we are engaged.

15.

But I consider that holy Scripture onely instructs us concerning *the life of this world*, and *the life of the resurrection*, *the life of grace* and *the life of glory*; both in the body; that is, a life of the whole man; and whatsoeuer is spoken of the soul, considers it as an essentiaall part of man, relating to his whole constitution; not as it is of it self an intellectual and separate substance: for all its actions, which are separate and removed from the body are relative and incomplet. Now because the soul is an incomplete substance, and created in relation to the body, and is but a part of the whole man, if the body were as eternall and incorruptible as the soul, yet the separation of the one from the other would be as now it is; that, which we call *naturall death*; and supposing that GOD should preserve the body for ever, or restore it at the day of judgement to its full substance and perfect organs, yet the man would be dead for ever, if the soul for ever should continue separate from the body. So that the other life; that is, the state of resurrection, is a reuniting soul and body: and although in a philosophicall sense the resurrection is of the body, that is, a restitution of our flesh and blood and bones, and is called *resurrection* as the entrance into the state of resurrection may have the denomination of the whole, yet in the sense of Scripture the resurrection is the restitution of our life, the

renovation of the whole man, the state of *reunion*; and until that be, the man is not, but he is dead, and only his essential parts are deposited and laid up in trust; and therefore whatsoever the soul does or perceives in its incomplete condition, is but to it as embalming and honourable funerals to the body, and a safe monument to preserve it in order to a living again; and the felicities of the interval are wholly in order to the next life; and therefore if there were to be no resurrection, as these intermediate joys should not be at all: so as they are, they are but relative and incomplete: and therefore all our hopes, all our felicities depend upon the resurrection: without it we should never be *persons*, men or women, and then the state of separation could be nothing but a phantasm, trees ever in blotsome, never bearing fruit, corn for ever in the blade, egges alwaies in the shell, a hope eternall, never to passe into fruition, that is, for ever to be deluded, for ever to be miserable. And therefore it was an elegant expression of Saint Paul; *Our life is hid with CHRIST in GOD*; that is, our life is passed into custody, the dust of our body is numbed and the Spirit is refreshed, visited and preserved in celestiall mansions; but it is not properly called a life; for all this while the man is dead, and shall then live when C H R I S T produces this hidden life at the great day of restitution: But our faith of all this article is well wrapt up in the words of S. John: *Beloved now we are the Sonnes of GOD, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him, for we shall see him as he is.* The middle state is not it which Scripture hath propounded to our faith, or to our hope: the reward is then when CHRIST shall appear; but in the mean time, the soul can converse with G O D, and with Angels just as the holy Prophets did in their dreams, \* in which they received great degrees of favour and revelation. But this is not to be reckoned any more than an entrance or a waiting for the state of our felicity. And since the glories of heaven is the great fruit of election, we may consider that the body is not predestinate, nor the soul alone, but the whole man; and untill the parts embrace again in an essential complextion, it cannot be expected, either of them should receive the portion of the predestinate. But the article and the event of future things is rarely set in order by S. Paul; but ye are come into the Mount Sion; and to the city of the living G O D, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, to the generall assembly and Church of the first born, which are written in heaven, and to G O D the judge of all ( and then follows ) after this generall assembly, after the Judge of all appears [ to the spirits of just men made perfect ] that is, reunited to their bodies and entring into glory. The beginning of the contrary opinion brought some new practises and appendant persuasions into the Church, or at least promoted them much. For those Doctors, who receding from the primitive belief of this article, taught, that the glories of heaven are fully communicated to the souls before the day of judgement, did also upon that stock teach the invocation of Saints, whom they believed to be received into glory, and insensibly also brought in the opinion of purgatory, that the lese perfect souls might be glorified in the time that they affigned them. But the safer opinion and more agreeable to piety is, that which I have now described from Scripture and the purest ages of the Church.

Coloss. 3. 3.

I John. 3. 2.

"Οταν ει τη ψυχού, καὶ οὐκ  
τίνι γένεται ἐν φυσι, τίνι εἰδεῖ  
εἰδος θεωρατού ποιεῖ, οὐκ εἴδει  
τινόν τι νοεῖν τὰ  
πενιστά. τινά τινα καὶ  
τη καλή τι διαβάλει, ξειράδει  
τη σωματική. Αριστ. apud  
Sextum Empiric.

Hebr. 12. 22.

## Part III.

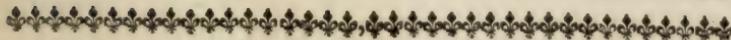
16.

When JESUS appeared to the Apostles he gave them his peace for a benediction, and when he departed, he left them peace for a legacy, and gave them according to two former promises the power of making peace, and reconciling souls to GOD by a ministeriall act; so conveying his Fathers mercie, which himself procured by his passion and actuates by his intercession, and the giving of his grace; that he might comply with our infirmities and minister to our needs by instruments even and proportionate to our selves; making our brethren the conduits of his grace, that the excellent effect of the spirit might not descend upon us as the Law upon mount Sinai in expresses of greatnesse and terror, but in earthen vessels, and images of infirmity: so GOD manifesting his power in the smallnesse of the instrument, and descending to our needs not onely in giving the grace of pardon, but also in the manner of its ministratiōn: And I meditate upon the greatnesse of this mercy by comparing this grace of GOD and the blessing of the judgement and sentencē we receive at the hand of the Church, with the judgement which GOD makes at the houre of death upon them, who have despised this mercy and neglected all the other parts of their duty. The one is a judgement of mercy, the other of vengeance; In the one the Devil is the accuser, and heaven and earth beare witness; in the other the penitent sinner accuses himself. In that the sinner gets a pardon, in the other he finds no remedy; In that all his good deeds are remembred and returned, and his sinnes are blotted out; in the other all his evill deeds are represented with horrour, and a sting, and remain for ever; In the first, the sinner changes his state for a state of grace, and onely smarts in some temporall austerties, and acts of exterior mortification; in the second his temporall estate is changed to an eternity of paine. In the first the sinner suffers the shame of one man or one society, which is sweetned by consolation, and homilies of mercy and health; in the latter, all his sins are laid open before all the world, and himselfe confounded in eternall amazement and confusions. In the judgement of the Church the sinner is honoured by all for returning to the bosome of his Mother, and the embraces of his heavenly Father; in the judgement of vengeance he is laughed at by GOD, and mocked by accursed spirits, and perishes without pity. In this he is prayed for by none, helped by none, comforted by none, and he makes himself a companion of Devils to everlasting ages; but in the judgement of repentance and tribunal of the Church, the penitent sinner is prayed for by a whole army of militant Saints, and caufes joy to all the Church triumphant; and to establishe this tribunall in the Church and to transmit pardon to penitent sinners, and a salutary judgement upon the person and the crime, and to appoint Physicians and Guardians of the soule was one of the designes and mercies of the resurrection of JESUS; and let not any Christian man either by false opinion, or an unbelieveing spirit, or an incurious apprehension undervalue or neglect this ministry, which Christ hath so sacredly and solemnly established. Happy is he, that dashes his sinnes against the rocke, upon which the Church is built, that the Church gathering up the planks and fragments of the shipwracke, and the shivers of the broken heart may reunite them, pouring oile into the wouds made by the blowes of sinne, and restoring with meekenesse, gentlenesse, care, counsell, and authority persons over-

*overtaken in a fault.* For that act of ministry is not ineffectual which GOD hath promised shall be ratified in Heaven ; and that authority is not contemptible , which the holy JESUS conveyed by breathing upon his Church the holy Ghost. But CHRIST intended that those whom he had made guides of our soules , and judges of our consciences in order to counsel and ministerial pardon, should also be used by us in all cases of our souls, and that we go to Heaven the way he hath appointed, that is, by offices and ministeries Ecclesiastical.

When our blessed LORD had so confirmed the faith of the Church, and appointed an Ecclesiastical ministry , he had but one work more to do upon earth, and that was the institution of the holy Sacrement of Baptism, which he ordained as a solemn initiation and mysterious profession of the faith, upon which the Church is built ; making it a solemn publication of our profession, the rite of stipulation or entring covenant with our LORD, the solemnity of the paction Evangelical ; in which we undertake to be Disciples to the holy JESUS, that is, to believe his doctrine , to fear his threatenings , to rely upon his promises, and to obey his Commandments all the dayes of our life ; and he for his part actually performs much, and promises more ; he takes off all the guilt of our preceding dayes, purging *Mark 16.16.* our souls and making them clean as in the day of innocence , promising *Acts 2.38. &c.* with all , that if we perform our undertaking and remain in the state in *22.16.* which he now puts us, he will continually assist us with his \* Spirit, prevent and attend us with his grace , he will deliver us from the power of *Rom.6.3.4.* the Devil , he will keep our soules in merciful, joyful, and safe custody till *Ephes.4.5. &c.* the great day of the LORD, he will then raise our bodies from the grave, *Coloss.2.12.* he will make them to be spiritual and immortal, he will reunite them to *Gal.3.17.* our soules, and beatifie both bodies and souls in his own kingdom , admitting *I Cor.12.13.* them into eternal and unspeakable glories : all which that he might \* *I Pet.3.21.* verifie and prepare respectively, in the presence of his Disciples he ascended into the bosome of GOD, and the eternal comprehensions of celestial *Mat.28.20.* glory.

17.





## The Prayer.

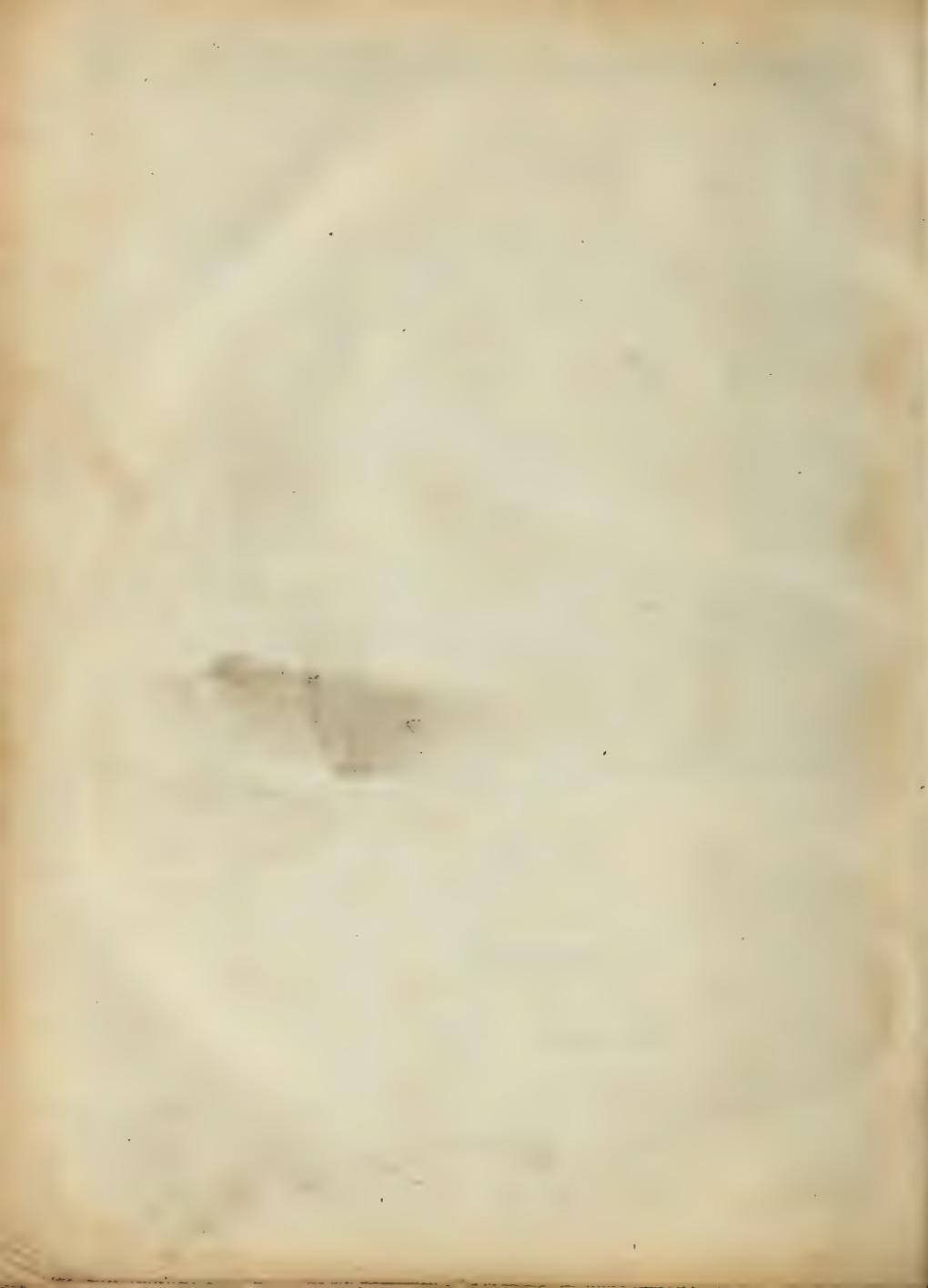
O Holy and eternal JESUS, who hast overcome Death, and triumphed over all the powers of Hell, Darknesse, Sinne, and the Grave, manifesting the truth of thy promises, the power of thy Divinity, the Majesty of thy person, the rewards of thy glory, and the mercies and excellent desigues of thy Evangelical kingdom by thy glorious and powerful Resurrection; preserve my soul from eternal death, and make me to rise from the death of sin, and to live in the life of grace, loving thy perfections, adoring thy mercy, pursuing the interest of thy kingdom, being united to the Church under thee our Head, conforming to thy holy lawes, established in faith, entertained and confirmed with a modest, humble, and a certain hope, and sanctified by charity, that I engraving thee in my heart, and submitting to thee in my spirit, and imitating them in thy glorious example may be partaker of thy Resurrection; which is my hope and my desire, the support of my faith, the object of my joy, and the strength of my confidence. In thee holy JESUS do I trust: I confess thy faith, I believe all that thou hast taught; I desire to perform all thy injunctions and my own undertaking: my soul is in thy hand, do thou support and guide it, and pity my infirmities; and when thou shalt reveal thy great day, shew to me the mercies and effects of thy advocation, and intercession and redemption; Thou shalt answer for me O LORD my GOD, for in thee have I trusted, let me never be confounded. Thou art just, thou art merciful, thou art gracious, and compassionate, thou hast done miracles and prodigies of favour to me, and all the world. Let not those great actions and sufferings be ineffective, but make me capable and receptive of thy mercies, and when I am certain to receive them. I am thine, O save me, thou art mine O holy JESUS, O dwell with me for ever, and let me dwell with thee, adoring and praising the eternal glories of GOD the Father, Son, and holy Ghost. Amen.

---

## The End.

\*ΑΓΙΟΣ ΑΘΑΝΑΤΟΣ.







# THE TABLE.

The former number signifies the Part.  
The second number the Page.

A	Esolution of dying persons of what benefit, whether to be given to all that desire it? ib.	3.155	Necessities of all indigent people is the object of our almes,	2.139
	Acceptable year of the Lord:what it means,	2.45	Manner of Almes, an office of Christian prudence,	ibid.
	Actions of Jesus confuted his accusers, 3.	133	The two Altars in <i>Solomons</i> temple what they did represent,	1.121
	Acts of vertue to be done by sick and dying persons, 3.153,&c.	3.153	Ambitions seeking Ecclesiastical dignities very criminal,	1.138
	Accusation of criminals not to be aggravated odiously, 3.136	3.136	Ambition is an affliction to him that hath it,	1,103
	it ought to be onely for purposes of charity, ibid.		Amorous young man cured of his vanity by a stratagem,	2.157
	Accusation of innocent persons ought to be born patiently by the innocent, 3.137	3.137	Angels ministred at the birth of Jesus, 1.27	
	Accusation of Jesus, 3.85	3.85	Angels invited shepherds to see the new-born Prince,	1.42
	Adam buried in Golgotha, 3.88	3.88	Angels multiplyed into a quire to sing <i>Gloria Patri</i> at the birth of Christ,	ibid.
	Adoption of sons, 3.37	3.37	Angels taught the Church the Christian hymn,	ibid.
	Advent of our Lord must be entertained with joy,	1.22	Angels rejoiced greatly when mankinde was redeemed,	1.45
	Adultery made more criminal under the Gospel, then under the Law, 2.124	2.124	Angels faln,not admitted to repentance, & why ?	2.60
	Adultery of the eyes, 2.125	2.125	Angels appointed to observe them that fast piously,	2.158
	Adrian the Emperour built a Temple to Venus and <i>Adonis</i> in the place of Christs birth, 1.27	1.27	Angel comforted Jesus,	3.126
	Agony of Jesus in the garden, 3.83	3.83	In what manner,	ibid.
	<i>Ageſilaus</i> was more commended for his modesty & obedience,then for his prosperous good conduct, 1.76	1.76	Angel rolled the stone from the grave of Jesus,	3.166
	Albes or white garments worne by the Church, and why? 3.137	3.137	Angels guardians of the Sepulchre, 3.175	
	Almes intended for a defensative against covetousnesse, 2.138	2.138	Anger forbidden in the 6.command. 2.121,	
	Almes ordinarily to be according to our ability, ibid.		122	
	Sometimes beyond. In what cases? Ib.		Anger in what cases allowable?	2.122
			Anger how long to abide?	ibid.
			Anger of the heart forbidden,	2.123
			Remedies against Anger,	2.124
			<i>Annas</i> chief of the Sanhedrim,	3.84
			<i>Annos</i>	

T H E T A B L E.

<i>Annas</i> sent Jesus to <i>Caiphas</i> ,	<i>ib.</i>	grave saying his offices,	2.35
Anniversaries of Christ's Nativity, Resurrection, and Ascension to be religiously observed,	2.120	<i>Basil</i> prayed for head ach,	1.124
Anniversaries of Saints,	<i>ib.</i>	The <i>Baptists</i> character of himself, 2.1. His death and the occasion, 2.23. His death revenged,	ibid.
<i>Annah</i> the Propheteſſe received Christ as a reward for her long fasting and prayers, 1.	56 & 82	Beginners in religion to be ruled by an experienced guide, 1.156. They have a conditional certainty of salvation,	3.38
<i>M. Anthony</i> to stir the peoples affections presented the body of <i>Cæſar</i> ,	1.86	Beginnings of evil to be resisted,	1.159
Antichrists pretence not furthered but hindered by his miracles,	2.166	Birth of Christ illustrated with miracles, 1.	
Apostacie from Christianity unpardonable: In what ſense true?	2.65	41. Its place turned to a Church, 1.27. Peace universal at his birth, 1.41. It was ſignified to Jews and Gentiles in the persons of the Shepherds and Wise men,	1.
Apoſtles chosen by Christ,	3.2	49. & 53	
Apoſtles ſent to preach by two and two, <i>ib.</i>		Binding Jesus with cords, with circumſtan-	
Apoſtles rejoice at their power over Devils,	3.17	ces of cruelty,	3.129
Apoſtles that ſaw the transfiguration, ſaw also the agony,	3.124	Blasphemey falsely charged upon Jesus,	3.48
Apocryphal miracles fain'd of Chrifts younger years,	2.3	Bloody sweat of Christ, what it did then effect, and what it did prefigure,	3.127
<i>Aſenius</i> ſad and troubled upon his deathbed,	3.148	Blessings of the Gospel,	3.181
Armes not to be taken up againſt our Prince for Religion,	3.130	Breasts that are dry, a curse,	1.39
Ascension of Jesus into Heaven,	3.169	Bramble of Judea an embleme of anger,	2.
Attention to our prayers. <i>Vide Prayers.</i>		122	
<i>S. Augustine</i> entred into the tomb of <i>Cæſar</i> ,	1.163	Buffeting of Jesus foretold by a <i>Sibyl</i> ,	3.132
Authority of Ecclesiastical censures,	3.180	C.	
<i>Augustus Cæſar</i> refuled to be called Lord about the time of Chrifts Nativity,	1.41	<i>Cambyses</i> ſent the Ethiopian King a box of Nard,	3.3
Balaams prophesie of Chrifts star,	1.43	Care for our families how far to regard the future,	2.139
Balaams prayer explicated,	3.17	<i>Ceadwallas</i> vow,	2.153
Eabes of Bethlehem had the reward of Martyrs,	1.105	Centurion of the iron legion comes to Christ,	3.3
Baptism ſanctifies the worthy ſuſcipient,	1.	Charity makes us partake of the joyes and ſufferings of all Christians,	1.45
In Baptism all our ſins are forgiven,	2.62	It is the measure of our own peace,	1.46
To Baptism, Faith and Repentance are neceſſary preparatories,	2.62	Charity of Christians converted <i>Pachomius</i> ,	1.115
Baptism neceſſary before reception of the Eucharift,	3.89. & 115	Charity conſists with repeating our own,	2.
Baptism ordained by Christ,	3.181. what it operates and ſignifies,	135	
<i>S. Barbara</i> ſtrip'd naked to execution; miraculously vail'd,	3.138	Charity is part of the definition of Christian faith,	2.12, 13
<i>Basil</i> recalled from exile for his reverent &		Charity of Christians greater then civill relations,	2.8
		Charity is the laſt of graces,	2.26
		Charity to Chrifts ſervants accepted as done to Christ,	2.48
		Charity muſt increase with our wealth,	2.139
		<i>S. Chad</i> prayed for others in times of ſtorme,	
		3.56 Charity	

# THE TABLE.

Chastity wittily represented by Libanius,	Christis servants are most Honourable,
1.159	2.131
Easier to dye for Chastity then to live with it,	Christ did no miracles before 30 years of age,
2.100	2.3
Chastity of the minde, of the eyes, of all the members enjoyned,	Christ entertaines 5 Disciples,
2.125	2.8
Chastity abstaines from all undecencies,	Christ to be sought for in his ordinances,
2.125	2.5
<i>Caiphas</i> prophetyed and determined the death of Jesus,	Christ ejected merchants out of the Temple,
3.76	2.24
<i>Caiphas</i> rent his cloths against the law,	Christ mingled no injury with his zeale,
3.85	2.12
Casuall and contingent causes cut off the life of a sinner,	Christ baptized Peter onely,
3.23	2.38
Certainty of salvation,	Christ ends the Samaritan Qu. about the place of worship,
3.38,&c.	2.40
Cheape offering not accepted, when a better may be given,	Christ made a covenant of faith and repentence,
2.35	2.63
Christ chose to doe all the ministeries of religion,	This is configned in baptism, <i>ibid.</i>
1.137	Christis miracles were greater then any man did before him,
Christis passion in every minute was sufficient for reconcilement of all the world,	Christis passion cured our miseries,
1.3	Christ was <i>Viator</i> , not <i>Comprehensor</i> in his passion,
The surplusage for example.	Christis prayer for his enemies was effectual,
<i>ibid.</i>	3.163
Christ paid more for our obedience then our pardon,	Christ first ascended into Heaven,
1.4	3.165
Christ our patterne,	Christis fide streamed forth two Sacraments,
1.5	3.167
Christ how far imitable by us,	Christ raised the Widows son to life,
1.8	3.3
Christis sufferings of value infinite,	Christ shewed the power of a God with the infirmities of a Man,
1.16	3.129
Christ honoured virginity and Mariage in the choice of his Mother,	Christ crowned with thorns,
1.16	3.138
Christ manifested his power in the instances of mercy,	Christis commission to Peter,
1.7. et 2,162	3.168
Christ to be followed in the like proportions as he followed his Father,	Christ is our Advocate for actions relative to him,
1.8	3.96
Christis life easie, complyant, and imitable,	Christians ought to be exemplary in their lives,
1.22	2.103
It helpe us to i:ts owne imitation,	Christian righteousness to exceed the Pharisical,
1.7	2.104,106
Christis life imitable by practise, and by religion,	Christian prudence,
1.10	2.6
Christ is God and Man,	Christian simplicity,
1.29	2.6
Christ first revealed to poore Men,	Christians for the most part choose not their religion,
1.45	2.10
Christ by his humility, his poverty and uneasiness fought against the lust of the flesh, of the eyes and the pride of life,	Christianity an easie yoke, 3.7. more pleasant then sin, <i>ib.</i> more natural <i>ib.</i> & <i>Preface.</i> Not so troublesome, 3.10,11. It is the way of peace, 13. Of content, <i>ibid.</i> Of riches 14. Of long life 16. Of health, <i>ibid.</i> Of wisdom
1.47	25
Christ put himselfe to payne to be reckoned amongst sinners,	Christians to be like children,
1.58	3.46
Christ was redeemed at first, and sold at last for an ignoble price,	Christian liberty not to be betrayed,
1.80	3.57
Christ is best relished by them, who least relish wordly things,	Children
1.81	
Christ a Physician and a lawgiver,	
2.125	

# THE TABLE.

	D.
Children of God exposed to temptations,	1.140
Church deserves great revenues, but needs them not,	1.103
Church endowments of advantage to the people,	<i>ibid.</i>
Church ought to be more apt to remit of temporall rights then others,	<i>ibid.</i>
Church tribunall to be of great mercy,	3.175
Compared with Gods tribunall,	<i>ibid.</i>
Church built upon the Confession of Peter,	3.43
Church impregnable against Hell-gates, <i>ib.</i>	ib.
Churches built upon mount Tabor,	3.44
Churches are holy places, in what sence, and to what purposes,	2.28
Churches how to be used,	2.34
Church in Paradise,	2.33
The residence of Angels,	<i>ibid.</i>
Churches best ornament is the Holinesse of worshippers,	2.36
Churches defecrated by vice,	<i>ib.</i>
Circumcision an earnest of the passion,	1.57
Circumcision not declared to be remissive of original sin,	<i>ibid.</i>
Circumcision of Christ served many purposes,	<i>ibid.</i>
It was An act of obedience,	<i>ibid.</i>
Complying with customes of civility sometimes a temptation,	1.154
Company keeping to be avoyded as it can,	<i>ibid.</i>
Communion of Saints profitable and pleasant,	1.109
Comforts more necessary to new Converts,	1.53
Clergies duty under the parable of the steward,	3.49
Coveteousnesse its fruits,	3.134
Confession to a Minister of Religion,	2.87
Contrition alone not sufficient for pardon.	2.87
Crosse layd upon JESUS as long as he could stand under it,	3.88.
Consecration of the Eucharist mysterious,	3.108.
Cure of souls a dangerous and grave imployment,	1.128
Description of Jesus by way of Meditation and mystery,	1.29
Decalogue expounded,	2.103
Death untimely happening does not always consign to damnation,	3.65
preparation to Death,	3.144
Death comes by all accidents,	3.142
Deaths sudden and rare,	3.142
Death bed repentance too late,	3.144
<i>vide</i> Repentance.	
Death is desirable,	3.152
how far it may be prayed against,	<i>ibid.</i>
to be submitted to in all cases,	<i>ibid.</i>
Death of man sanctified and conquered by Christs death,	3.176
Dying persons how to be treated and assisted,	3.145,&c.
Devils confessed Christ,	3.2
Devil deaf and dumb ejected,	3.42
Devil furnishes evil persons with apt instruments,	3.97
Devils how they did appear to Jesus in the desert,	1.136
Devils impotent in their malice,	1.144
Devils hurt no soul without its consent,	1.143
Diligence in our calling accepted, though the calling be mean,	1.51
Dispensations not too freely to be accepted,	1.57
Disobedience to God in great and small instances compared,	1.67.
Disobedience to God and man compared,	1.72
Defence of our selves permitted,	2.130
not against our Prince,	<i>ibid.</i>
Defence of our innocence in judgement permitted,	3.130
Dove descending upon Christ was mysterious,	1.139
Doubting the issue of our prayers in what sense lawfull,	2.149
Duels unlawfull,	2.131
Doubting in an article of faith how to be cured,	3.145
Despair how to be cured,	3.147
	E.
Egyptian Idols fell to the ground at Christs comming thither,	1.99

THE TABLE.

in Egypt Christ dwelt in a garden of bal-		charity is part of its constitution. <i>ibid.</i>
sam,	<i>ibid.</i>	Faith of Christians how it differs from the
Egyptians worshipped an infant in a cradle	<i>ibid.</i>	faith of Devils, <span style="float: right;">2.15.</span>
and a virgin in bed.	<i>ibid.</i>	Excellencies and effects of Faith. <i>ib.</i>
Envy reproved by the example of Angels,	1.45	The marks of a truly Christian faith, <span style="float: right;">2.15</span>
Envie spirituall,	3.96.	<i>Vide Discourse of faith per totum,</i> <span style="float: right;">2.10</span>
Eli's family short lived,	3.25	Fasting before the Sacrament, <span style="float: right;">2.156</span>
cur'd by repentance,	<i>ibid.</i>	Degrees, manner and rules of fasting, <span style="float: right;">2.159. 160</span>
Election what it signifies in scripture,	3.33	Fasting no duty of it self, but in order to
It depends upon duty,	3.34	certain ends, <span style="float: right;">2.156</span>
uncertain to us,	<i>ibid.</i>	<i>Vide Discourse of Fasting per totum,</i> <span style="float: right;">2.156</span>
Ecclesiasticall regiment how differing from	3.45	Why Jesus Fasted 40 dayes, <span style="float: right;">1.141</span>
secular,		Fear hallowed by Christs fear, <span style="float: right;">3.125</span>
Ecclesiasticall power verified in Heaven,	3.46.	it is the first of graces, <span style="float: right;">2.26</span>
Ecclesiasticall persons bound to communiate often,	3.119	Farewell sermon made by Jesuſ, <span style="float: right;">3.82</span>
They are to imitate Christ in meeknesse,		<i>Flamininus condemned to death for wanton</i>
innocence, and ſuffering,	3.137	cruelty, <span style="float: right;">2.23</span>
Ecclesiasticall judicatoryes compared with		Fornication againſt the law of God in all
the Divine,	3.175	ages, <span style="float: right;">2.124</span>
Earnest of the ſpirit, what it signifies,	3.37.	permitted to ſtrangers among the Jews. <i>ibid.</i>
Eclipte of the ſun at the paſſion was miraculous,	3.89	Forgiving injuries a Christian duty, <span style="float: right;">2.129</span>
Enemies occation to us of much good,	3.128	G.
Erting perſons how to be treated,	1.23	<i>Gadara built by Pompey,</i> <span style="float: right;">2.43.</span>
Evil counſels come to nougħt,	1.100	full of ſepulchres and witches, <i>ibid.</i>
Evil counſels ſucceeding, is not proſperity.	<i>ibid.</i>	<i>Gabriel ministers to the exaltation of his</i>
<i>Elizabeth carried her ſon, the Baptiſt into</i>		inferioriſ. <span style="float: right;">1.16</span>
the wildernesſe,	1.113	<i>Galileans why slain by Pilate,</i> <span style="float: right;">3.50</span>
ſhe dyed after 40 dayes.	<i>ibid.</i>	Garden why chosen for the place of the a-
Example of preachers is the beſt Sermon.	1.115. 3.101.	gony, <span style="float: right;">3.124</span>
Eſaus repenſance,	3.135.	Gentlenesse a duty of Christians, <span style="float: right;">3.46</span>
Excuses from frequent communion not valid.	3.121.	<i>Giachettus of Genevaſ death in the midſt of</i>
Examples of Divine Judgements,	3.68	his luſt, <span style="float: right;">3.68</span>
Evenneſſe and moderation of a religious		Gods gifts effects of predeſtination, <span style="float: right;">2.6</span>
ſtate moſt neceſſary for young beginners;		how to be prayed for, <span style="float: right;">2.144</span>
and ſafeſt for all men,	1.157	God gives his ſervants more then they look
Expences unneceſſary, to be cut off, and		for, <span style="float: right;">2.4</span>
ſpent in alms,	2.100	God gives more grace to them that uſe the
		firſt well, <i>ibid.</i> & 1.57
F.		God rejoices in his own works of mercy, <span style="float: right;">2.46</span>
False witneſſe highly criminal,	2.126	and in ours, <span style="float: right;">2.97</span>
Familiarity with God what it ſhould ſigni-		God requires not always the greatest degree
fie,		of vertue, <span style="float: right;">2.108</span>
Faith deſcribed,	1.93	Grace helps our faculties, but creates no new
	2.12	ones, <span style="float: right;">1.24. &amp; 49</span>
		Grace works ſeverally at ſeverall times, <span style="float: right;">1.50. 52</span>
		God

# T H E T A B L E.

God is never wanting in necessaries to us,	1.51	Honour due to what the supream power se- parates from common usages,	2.28
God changeth his purpose of the death of a man for severall reasons,	3.25	Honour how to be estimated,	2.131
God works his ends by unlikely means,	3.176	Honorable and sacred all one,	2.28
Grace refused hardens our hearts,	3.130	S. <i>Hilarion</i> a great faster,	2.157
Governement supported by Christianity,	1.103	S. <i>Hieroms</i> advice concerning fasting, <i>ibid.</i>	
Gospel and the law how they differ,	2.54	Holy Ghost descended upon Jesuſ at his baptisme,	1.135
<b>H.</b>		Holinesse of religious places,	2.28
Hasty persons and actions always unreason- able, sometimes criminal,	1.28	Holinesse a great preservative of life,	3.16
Herod mocked by the <i>Magi</i> ,	1.97. & 100	Hope of salvation increases according to degrees of holy walking,	3.35
Herods stratagem to surprize all the male children,	1.101	Hope necessary in our prayers,	2.149
cause why Herod flew <i>Zecharias</i> ,	1.98	House of <i>John Mark</i> , consecrated into a Church,	2.31
Cesars saying concerning Herod,	1.101	Hosannah what it signifies,	3.78
Herodians what they were?	3.2	only sung to God,	<i>ibid.</i>
Herod left the Divine vengeance,	1.98	Humane nature by the incarnation exalted above the Angels,	1.16
Herods malice towards his death defeated,	1.99	Humane infirmity to be pittied, not to be upbraided,	3.125
Herod pretended religion to his secret de- signe,	1.100	Humility of Jesus,	1.27
Herods fear of the child Jesus proceeded from his mistake,	1.103	Humility the sureſt way to Heaven.	1.57
Herod the Tetrarch overthrown by the King of Arabia,	2.23	Humility of the Baptist,	1.118
Herodias daughter beheaded with ice,	<i>ibid.</i>	Humility makes good men more honoura- ble,	2.45
Herod and Herodias banished,	<i>ibid.</i>	Humility its excellencies,	3.106
Herodias thrust the Baptists tongue through with a needle,	<i>ibid.</i>	Its properties and acts,	3.104
Herods reception of Christ,	3.86	Humility of the young Marquis of Castili- on,	3.105
Herod carelesſe of inquiring after Christ,	3.129	Hunger after righteousness,	2.95
Heron the Monk abused with an illusion,	1.92	Hunger and thirst spiritual, how they differ?	<i>ibid.</i>
<i>Hermonigilda</i> refused to communicate with an Arrian Bishop,	2.47	Its acts,	3.96
Heretics served their ends of heresie upon women, upon whom also they served their lusts,	2.49	Its reward,	3.96
Heroicall actions of repentance at our death bed more prevalent then any other hope then left,	2.87	Husbands converted by their wives,	2.48
Health promised and consigned in the Gof- pel by miracles and by an ordinary mini- ſtry,	3.19	<b>I.</b>	
Honour done to us to be returned to God,	1.22	Jairus begs help of Jesus for his daughter,	2.44
		Jairus daughter restored to life,	2.45
		Jesus discoursing wonderfully with the DD,	1.108
		Jesus wrought in the carpenters trade before and after Josephs death,	1.109
		Jesus baptized by John	1.135
		attended by good Angels in the wilder- ness	1.136
		was angry when the Devill tempted him to dishonour God	1.136 & 144
		slept	

slept in a storne,	2 42	the <i>Messias</i> ,	1.14
preached the first year in peace,	2.45	Jews looked to be justified by exterrnall innocence,	2.121
appeared severall times after his resurrection,	3.167	they were scrupulous in rites, carelesse of morall duties,	3.136
he was known in the breaking of bread,	ibid.	Jewes could not put any man to death at Easter,	3.86
Jesus had but two dayes of triumph all his life,	3.94	they eat not till the solemnities of their festivall is over.	2.156
they were both allayed with sorrow,	3.95	<i>Jesabel</i> pretended religion to her designes of murder and theft,	1.100
he was used inhospitably at Jerusalem, <i>ib.</i>		Illusions come often in the likenesse of visions,	1.93
infinitely loving,	3.96	sins of Infirmitie explicated,	1. 150, 151, 152
he received all his Disciples with a kisse,	3.128	Intentions though good excuse not evill actions.	1.153
civil to his enemies, and beneficiale to his friends,	ibid.	Incontinence destroyes the spirit of government,	2.49
he was strip'd naked. and why,	3.138	Instruments weak and unlikely used by God to great purposes,	2.58
Jesus came eating and drinking, and why,		Incarnation of Jesus instrumentall to Gods glory, and our peace,	1.50
he invites all to him,	3.3	Inevitable infirmities consistent with a state of grace,	2.74
the Pharisees report him mad,	3.4	Injuries great and little to be forgiven,	2. 130
refused to be made a King,	3.40	Intension of spirit how necessary in our prayers,	2.151
transfigured,	3.44	Images their lawfulness or unlawfulness considered,	2.111
payed the tribute of the temple,	3.45	admitted into the church with difficulty, and by degrees,	2.112
shamed the aceusers of the adulteresse,	3.47	Images of <i>Jupiter</i> , and <i>Diana Cyndiss</i> did ridiculous and weak miracles,	2.164
teaches his disciples to pray,	3.49	Imprisonment sanctified by the binding of Jesus,	3.129
refuses to judge a title of land,	ibid.	Ingratitude of <i>Judas</i> ,	3.96
blesseth infants.	3.52	John the Baptists life and death,	1.98, 113, 116, 117, 118. 134. & 3.7
wept for <i>Lazarus</i> ,	3.76	Johns baptisme,	1.134
and over Jerusalem,	3.78	Joyes spiritual increase by communication,	2.5
answered the Pharisees concerning tribute to <i>Cesar</i> ,	3.79	Joyes of eternity recompence all our sorrows in every instant of their fruition,	3.
prayed against the bitter cup,	3.83		174
smitten upon the face,	3.84	Joyes sudden and violent how to be allayed,	2.57
accused of blasphemy before the High Priest,	3.85	John Patriarck of Alexandr. appeased the anger of <i>Nicetas Patricius</i> ,	2.122
of treason before <i>Pilate</i> ,	3.86		Innocence
nailed with four nails,	3.88		
provided for his Mother after his death,	3.89		
recited the two and twentieth psalm, or part of it, upon the croffe.	ibid.		
Jesus felt the first recompence of his sorrows in the state of separation,	3.174		
at the resurrection he did redintegrate all his body but the five wounds, <i>ibid.</i>			
he arose with a glorified body,	3.175		
but vaild with a cloud of common appearance,	ibid.		
Jewish women hoped to be the mother of			

# THE TABLE.

Innocence is security against evil accidents,		sufferable calamity rather then not to breake them,	1.72
Judgement of life and death is to be onely by the Supreme power or its deputy,	2.132	Lawes of Superiors not to be too freely disputed by subjects,	1.75
Judging our brother how far prohibited,	2.139	Lawes of order to be observed even when the first reason ceases,	1.79.
<i>Judas</i> name written in heaven, and blotted out again,	3.32	It is not safe to do all that is Lawful,	1.69,70
<i>Judas</i> manner of death,	3.85	Law and Gospel how differ : 2.54,& 2.104,	105. & 3.7
ingratefull,	3.96	Law of Nature perfected by Christianity,	Preface
<i>Julian</i> desired but could not be a Magician,	3.97	Law of <i>Moses</i> a Law of works, How ? 2.104.	
<i>Judas</i> valved the ointment at the same rate he sold his Lord,	3.97	Law of Jesus a Law of the spirit, and not of works ? In what sense,	ibid.
<i>Judas</i> enjoyed his money not ten hours,	3.	Law suits to be managed charitably,	2.134
Judgements of God upon sinners, their causes and manner,	3.64,&c	When Lawfull to be undertaken ?	ibid.
Judgements Nationall,	3.71	Lazarus restored to Life,	3.76
not easily understood by men,	3.69	<i>Leonigildus</i> kil'd his daughter for not com- municating with the Arians,	2.47
<i>Joseph Arimath.</i> embalmed the body of Je- sus,&c.	3.91	Leaven of <i>Herod</i> , what ?	3.43
K			
<i>King</i> and <i>Church</i> have the same friends and enemies,	3.64	Lepers cured, 3.46. Sent to the Priest, <i>ibid.</i>	
Kingdom of Christ not of this world,	3.86	Unthankfull,	ibid.
what it is,	3.136	Levantine Churches afflicted. The cause un- certain,	3.66
<i>Christ</i> a King,	1.43	S. <i>Laurence</i> gridiron leffe hot then his love,	
a star was his evidence,	<i>ibid.</i>	3.92,& 1.11	
a King came to Jesus in behalf of his son,	2.40	Life of man cut off for sin, 3.21, it hath se- veral periods, <i>ibid.</i> good Life necessary to make our prayers acceptable,	2.148
Kingdom of God what ?	2.145	Lords Supper the greatest of Christian rites,	
Kingdom of grace and glory,	<i>ibid.</i>	3.108, it manifests Gods power, 3.110, his wisedome and his charity, <i>ibid.</i> it is a Sacrament of union, <i>ibid.</i> a Sacrament and a sacrifice. in what sense, 3. 112, as it is an act of the Ecclesiastical officer, of what efficacy ? <i>ibid.</i> as it is a communion, of what efficacy it is ? 3. 113, 114. It is expressed in mysterious words when the value is recited, <i>ibid.</i> not to be admiini- stered to vicious persons, 3. 115, 116. How to be received, 3.118. What deportment to be used after it ? 3. 119,to be received by dying persons, 3. 155, of what benefit it is to them ?	<i>ibid</i>
Kings especially to be prayed for,	2.148	Love and obedience duties of the first com- mand :	2.107
Kings enemies how to be prayed against,	<i>ibid.</i>	Love of God, its extension, <i>ibid.</i> its intensi- on, 3. 108. It is the fulfilling the Law]	
to Kill the assaulting person in what cases lawfull.	2.130	explicated,	2.106.
L.			
Lawes evill make a Nationall sin.	3.72	Love confits in Latitude, 3. 110. it must exclude	
Law of Nature. <i>Preface per tot : &amp;c.</i> 1.83,&c.			
Lawes of Man to be obeyed, but not al- ways to be thought most reasonable,	1.		
Laws of God and man in respect of the great- nesse of the subject matter compared,	1.		
71,76			
Lawes of man binde not to death or an in-			

# THE TABLE.

exclude all affection to sin, 2. 110.	signes of true love to God, <i>ibid.</i>	Master of the feasts his office among the Jewes,
Love to God with all our hearts &c. possi- ble, and in what sense ? 3. 110,	Love of God and Love of money compared, 3. 97	Mercy a Mark of predestination, 2.97, to be expressed in affections and actions, <i>ibid.</i> Iss objects, acts, reward,
Lords day by what authority to be obser- ved, 2. 120. and how,	<i>ibid.</i>	2. 98
<i>Lucians Cynick an hypocrite,</i>	3. 104	Meeknes its parts, actions, and reward, 2.93, &c. inheritance of the earth explicated, <i>ib.</i>
Likenesse to God being desired at first rui- ned us, now restores us,	3. 101	<i>Meropes answer to Polyphontes,</i> 2.132
Lying in that degree is criminall as it is in- jurious.	2.126.	A Masons wither'd hand cur'd by Jesus, 3.7
		Members of Christ ought not to be soft and nice,
		3.138
		Miracles of Christ and his Apostles weakly imitated by the devil, 2.164, greater then the pretences of their enemies, 2.165
		Miracles of Christ were primarily for con- viction of Jewes, of the Apostles for the Gentiles, 2.164, <i>vide</i> 162,&c.
		Miracles were confirmed by Prophesies of Jesus,
		<i>ibid.</i>
		Mount Olivet the place of the Romans first incamping,
		3.73
		Mourning a duty, its acts, duty and reward,
		2.92
		Multitudes fed by Christ, 3.40, & 3.42
		Miseries of this life not always tokens of precedent sinne,
		3. 48, & 3.50
		N.
		Name of God put into H. places ; In what sense,
		2.27
		Name of Jesus, its mysteriousnesse explica- ted, 1. 60, its excellency and efficacy, 1.6x
		Good Nature an instrument of vertue, 1.132
		Good Name to be sought after, 3.105
		Names of some of the 7.2.
		3.49
		Names of some of that were supposed to rise after the passion of Jesus,
		3. 173
		Nard Pifstick powred upon Jesus head and feet,
		3. 197, & 3.96
		Naturall to love God, when we understand him,
		3.8
		Natures of Christ communicated in effects,
		3.129
		Nationall sins and judgements, 3.71. Their cure,
		<i>ibid.</i>
		Necessity to sin laid upon no man,
		1.750
		Necessity to be obeyed before positive con- stitutions,
		3.8
		Necessity of holy living,
		2.69,70
		Necessities of our selves and other men in severall manner to be prayed for,
		2.148

T H E T A B L E.

<i>Nicodemus's colloquy with Jesus,</i>	2.21	Patrons to present able Persons to their be-
New creation at the passion,	3.172	nefices, 2. 53, how farre lawfull to preferre their Kindred, <i>ibid.</i>
<i>Nero first amongst the Romanes anointed with Nard,</i>	3. 3	Parents in order of Nature next to God, 2.
<i>Nursing children a duty of Mothers,</i> 1.	33, &c.	120
O.		Duty to Parents the band of republike, <i>ibid.</i>
Ordinary meanes of salvation to be pursued,	1.52. et 3. 31	what it consists of, <i>ibid.</i>
Originall sin disputed to evill purposes,	1.58	Passion of Jesus, 3. 89, & 160
Considered and stated in order to practise.	1.59	Paſchal rites representative of moral duties, 3. 100.
Obedience to God and Man ; its parts,act- ions,necessity, definition and conſtitution,	1.65.&c,et 2.107. et 2. 69	Passions sanctified by Jesus, 3.125
Obedience to God our onely security for defence and provissons.	1.101	Patience to be preserved by Innocents ac- cused ; 3. 137, and in sicknesse, 3.150
Obedience of Jesus to his parents.	1.168	Paul called himself the greatest sinner. In what ſense he understood it, 2. 147, he hoped for ſalvation more confidently to- wards his end, 3.38
Obedience and love strove in the holy wo- men,	3. 175	Palmes cut down for the reception of Je- sus, 3.78
Occasions of sin to be avoided,	1.158	Perfecution an earnest of future blife, 2.100
Offending hand or eye to be cut off or put out,	3. 46	It is lawfull to fly it, 3. 2, &c 1. 102, Not to fight againſt it, 1. 104, the duty of suf- fering explicated, 2.100
Opinion of our ſelves ought to be ſmall and true, 3. 102, It was the Duke of Candia's harbinger, 3. 103, In what,mean opinion of our ſelves conſifts,	<i>ibid.</i>	Peacefulneſſe its acts and reward, 2. 99
Outward ſtate addes reverence to religion,	2.35	Peace derivative from God by Christ, 1.45
Oaths forbidden, and how,	2.115	Personal priviledges not to be insisted upon ſo much as ſtrict duty, 1.57
Oaths in judicature, contradictory not to be admitted,	2.116	Personall infirmity of Princes excuses not our diſobedience, 1.71
Oaths promiſſory not to be exacted by Princes but in great neceſſity, 2. 115, <i>Vide</i> ſweareng.		Person of a man firſt accepted, and then his gift ; in what ſense true, 1. 53
<i>Swis vow,</i>	2.153.	Parentall piety of the V. <i>Mary,</i> 1.28
P.		Person of Christ of great Excellency, 1.29
Paradife diſtinct from Heaven,	3. 171	Preſentation of Jesus the onely prefent that was commensurate to Gods excellencies,
Patriarks why deſirous to be buried in the land of promife,	3.173	1.80
Pardon of finnes by Christ is moſt properly of finnes committed before Baptisme, 2.	63, 64	Poverty of Chrifts birth in many circum- ſtances, 1.28
Pardon of finnes after Baptisme how con- ſigned 2.65, it is more uncertain, & diſſi- cult, <i>ibid.</i> it is leſſe, and to fewer purpoſes		Poverty better then riches, <i>ibid.</i> & 2. 90, No ſhame to be poor, <i>ibid.</i> & 1. 46, Chrift was revealed firſt to poor men, 1. 46
2. 68, alwayes imperfect after baptisme,		Poverty of ſpirit deſcribed, 2. 90, Its parts, acts, and offiſes, <i>ibid.</i>
2. 69, it is by parts,	2.68,69	Peter for want of faith ready to drown, 3.41
Poſſibility of Pardon hath a Period in this life,	2.77	Place of Gods ſpeciall appearance in Para- dife, 2. 32
		Providene of God provides bread for us,
		2. 146, it unites cauſes diſparate in one event, 1. 26
		Providene of God diſposes evil men to evil events, 1.100, and good men to good, fe- cretly,

THE TABLE.

cretly, but certainly, <i>ibi</i> . it is wholly to be relied upon for provisions and defence, 1.101.105.142. it supplyes all our needs. 3.93.98. & 3.14. Sometinies it shortens mans life, 3.3.	
<i>S. Papernutius</i> converted a harlot by the argument of the Divine presence, 1.161	
<i>Platos</i> reproof of Diogenes, 1.159	
Passions if violent, though for God, are irregular, 1.23	
Publike and private devotions compared, 1.109	
Presence of God an antidote against temptations, 1.159	
Publication to be made of the Divine excellencyes, 1.21	
Prosperity, dangerous, how to be managed, 1.21	
Podavivus imitation of Wenceslaus, 1.6	
Prodigies of greatnessse and goodnesse in Christs person, 1.29	
Prayer the easiest & most pleasant duty, and yet we are averse from it, and why? 1.121. a great remedy against temptation. 1.164. it must be joyned with our own endeavour. <i>ibid</i> . its definition. Its excellency, conditions, matter, manner, efficaciy, rules. 2. 143. &c. Lords prayer explicated, 2.144	
Presumption in dying persons carefully to be distinguished from confidence, 3.149 means of curing it, <i>ibid</i> .	
Physicians to be obeyed in sicknesse or suffered how far, 3.152	
Presumption upon false opinions in religion, how to be cured, 3.149	
Predetermination to be searched for in the books of scripture and conscience, 3.32	
It is Gods great secrer, not to be inquired into curioufly, <i>ibid</i> . It was revealed to the Apostles concerning their own particulars, and how? <i>ibid</i> . It was conditio-nall, <i>ibid</i> . the ground of true joy. 3. 6. to be estimated above privileges.	
<i>Phavorinus</i> 's discourse concerning inquiring into fortunes, 3.32	
Preparation to the Lords Supper, 3.115. of two sorts, <i>viz.</i> of necessity, and of ornament, 3.117. a duty of unlimited time, <i>ibid</i> .	
Preparation to death, no other but a Holy life, 3.141	
Parables, 3.5.49.52.76. <i>ibid</i> alibi.	
Pilates usage, and deportment towards Jesus, 3.86.87.139.	
Pilate broke the Jewish and Tiberian law in the execution of Jesus. 3. 87. sent to Rome by <i>Vitellius</i> . 3.139. banished to Vienna, <i>ibid</i> . killed himself. <i>ibid</i> .	
Prayer of Jesus in the Garden made excellent by all the requisites of prayer, 3.125	
Prelates are shepherds and Fishers. 3.56. their duty, and qualifications. <i>ibid</i> . vide 2.4	
Pride incident to spirituall persons. 1.143. & 128. gifts extraordinary ought not to make us proud, 2.6	
Promise to God and swearing by him in the matter of vows, is all one. 2.103	
Promises made to singe graces, not effectuall but in conjunction with all the parts of our duty, 2.87	
Promises temporall do also belong to the Gospel, 3.18	
<i>Pierre Calceon</i> condemned the <i>Pucelle</i> of France, 3.66	
Peter rebuked for fighting. 3.84. he rebuked the saying of his Lord concerning the pas-sion. 3.43. he was sharply reprooved for it. <i>ibid</i> . & 3.93. He received the power of the Keyes for himself and his succe-sors in the Apostlate. 3.43. & 3.46. de-nied his Master 3.84. repented. <i>ibid</i> . & 3.134	
Prophets must avoyd suspicion of inconti-nence. 2.49	
Prophecy of Jesus. 3.81	
Prudence of a Christian described. 2.6	
Piety an excellent disposition to justifying faith. 2.50	
Publican, an office of Honour among the Romanes. 2.43. hated by the Jews and Greeks. <i>ibid</i> .	
Prejace an enemy to religion; 2.48. It btings a curse. <i>ibid</i> .	
Publike fame a rule of honour. 2.28	
Purity Evangelicall described. 2.98. Its acts, and reward. <i>ibid</i> .	
Q.	
Quarrell between Jews and Samaritans. 2.39. the ground of it. <i>ibid</i> .	
Question of originall sin stated in order to practise, 1.59.60. & 3.8. Questions.	
1. Whether we are bound to suffer death or imprisonment, rather then breake a hu-mane	

THE TABLE.

- |   |                |   |              |
|---|----------------|---|--------------|
| mane law?   | 1.72           | 22. Whether Christ was in the state of comprehension during his passion?  | 3.160        |
| 2. Whether Christ did truly or in appearance only increase in wisdom?   | 1.108          |   | <i>ibid.</i> |
| 3. Whether is of more advantage to piety, a retir'd and contemplative, or a publike and active life?              | 1.116          | 23. Whether Christ suffered the pains of hell upon the Croſſe?  | <i>ibid.</i> |
| 4. Whether way of serving God is better, the way of understanding, or the way of affections,                      | 1.66 & 3.176   | 24. How the Divine justice could consist with punishing the innocent Jesus?   | 3.161        |
| 5. Whether faith of ignorant persons, be faith produced by insufficient arguments be acceptable?                  | 2.7 & 2.10, II | 25. Whether saints enjoy the beatifick vision before the day of judgement?  | 3.170 &c     |
| 6. Whether purposes of a good life upon our death bed can be effectuall?  | 2. 35, &c      |   | R.           |
| 7. How low long time must repentance of an evill life begin before our death?                                     | 2.86           | Rashnesse an enemy to good Counſels, and happy events,  | 1.24         |
| 8. Whether we be alwayes bound to doe absolutely the best thing?  | 2. 108         | Religion as excellent in its silent affections, as in its exterior actions,   | 1.17 & 1.46  |
| 9. Whether it be lawfull for Christians to ſwear?   | 2.111          | Religious actions to be ſubmitted to the conduct of ſpiritual Guides,   | 1.75         |
| 10. Whether it be lawfull to swear by a Creature, in ſuch caſes in which it is permitted to swear by God?         | 2. 117         | a Religious person left a viſion, to obey his orders,   | 1.76         |
| 11. Whether a Virgin may not kill a Ra-виſher?  | 2. 132,        | Comforts and refreshments of Religion, 1. 89 when neceſſary <i>ibid.</i> not greedily to be ſought after, 1.142 vide ſpiritual ſadneſſe.                                      |              |
| 12. Whether it be lawfull to pray for revenge?  | 2. 139         | Religion pretended to evil purpoſes, 1.100  |              |
| 13. Whether it be lawfull for Christians to go to law, and in what caſes?   | 2.134          | Religion is a publike virtue, 1.110 it ob-ſerves the ſmallest things, 2.156 its pre-ten-ſe does not hallow every action, 2.24   |              |
| 14. Whether actual attention in our prayers be ſimply neceſſary?  | 2.150          | Religion of holy places   | 2.27 &c      |
| 15. Whether is better publike or private prayer?  | 2.154          | In diſſer-ting Religions how the parties are to demean themſelves.  | 2.46         |
| 16. Whether is better, vocall or mentall prayer?  | 2.155          | Ministers of religion to be content if their labours be not ſucceſſe-ful, 2.56 they are to have a calling from the Church, 2.57 ought to live well,                           | <i>ibid.</i> |
| 17. Whether a Christian ought to be, or can be in this life ordinarily certain of his ſalvation?                  | 3.32           | Religion of a Christian puriſyes and reigns in the ſoul, 2.104 it beſt ſerves our Tem-porall ends, 3.16 not to be neglected, upon preten-ſe of charity,                       | 3.77         |
| 18. Whether a thing in its own nature in-different is to be thrown off, if it have been abuſed to ſuperſtitio-ny? | 3.35           | Affec-tions of Religion are estimated by their own excellency, not by the dona-tive, ſo it be our beſt,   | 3.96         |
| 19. Whether is better to communicate often or ſeldom?   | 3.119          | Religious actions to be repeated often by ſick and dying perſons,   | 3.153        |
| 20. Whether a death-bed-penitent after a wicked life is to be absolved if he de-fires it?                         | 3.148          | Rebellion against prince and priest more ſeverely puniſhed then murmu-rius against God,   | 1.77         |
| 21. Whether the ſame perſon is to be com-municated?   | 3.155          | Repentance neceſſary to humane na-ture, 2.60 the ends of its inſtitu-tion, 2.59 re-vealed firſt by Christ as a Law, 2.61 Nor al-lowed in the Law of Moſes for greater crimes, |              |

# THE TABLE.

Crimes, <i>ibid.</i> Repentance and faith the two hands to apprehend Christ, <i>ibid.</i> After baptism not so clearly expressed to be accepted, nor upon the same termes as before, 2.59 & 65 It is a collection of holy duties, 2.77 the extirpation of all vicious habits, 2.78 described, <i>ibid.</i> it is not meerly a sorrow, 2.79 not meerly a purpose, 2.80 too late upon our death-bed, 83 &c. publike repentance must use the instruments of the Church, 2.87	Resurrection of Jesus, 3.167 given for a signe, 2.12 & 2.165 It is the support of Christianity, 3.177
Repenting often, and finning often, and still changing, is a sign of an ill condition, 1.151	Resignation of himself to be made by a dying or sick person, 3.150, 152
Repentance to begin immediatly after sin, 3.134 & 142	Rich men lesse disposed for reception of Christianity, 1.46
Repentance promoted by the Devil, when it is too late, 2.135	Riches are surst and to best purposes obtained by Christianity, 3.14
Repentance of Esau, <i>ibid.</i>	Rites of buriall among the Jewes lasted 40. dayes, 3.166
Repentance accidentally may have advantages beyond innocence, 3.134	S.
Revenues not to be greedily sought for by Ecclefaisticks, 1.104 they are dangerous to all men, <i>ibid.</i>	<i>Sarabait</i> great mortifyers, but not obedient 1.76
Recidivation or relapse into a state of sinne unpardonable, and how, 2.6	Sacrilege a robbing of God, 1.80.
Revenge forbidden. 2.122 & 129	Saints to inherit the earth in what sense, 2.93
Reproachfull language prohibited, 2.124	Sacraments ineffectuall without the con-junction of something morall, 1.139
Reprehension of evill persons may bee in language properly expressive of the crime, 2.124	They operate by way of prayers, 1.139
Resisting evill, in what sense lawfull, 2.130	Sabbath of the Jewes abolished, 3.50, 2.119
Reverence of posture to be used in prayers, 2.154	Second Sabbath after the first, what it meanes, 3.1
Remedies against anger. 2.124	Sabbatick poore streamed onely upon the Sabbath, 3.50
Repetiion of prayers. 2.153	Sacrament of the Lords supper instituted, 3.82
Relations secular must be quitted for Religion, in what sense, 1.110	its manner <i>ibid.</i> to be received fasting, 2.156
They must not hinder religious duties, 2.8	Salome presented John Baptists head to her Mother, 2.23
Reformation begins ill if it begins with sacrifedge, 2.26	Shee was killed with ice, <i>ibid.</i>
Reward propounded in the beginning and end of Christian duties, 2.89	Samaritans were schismaticks, 2.39
it makes the labour easie, 3.7	they hated the Jewes, <i>ibid.</i> they were cast in their appeale to Ptolomy, <i>ibid.</i>
Restitution to the state of grace is divisible and by parts. 3.34	Samaritan woman a concubine after the death of her fist husband, 2.46
Restitution made by Zacheus, 3.77 & 3.153	Scandal cannot be given by any thing that is our duty, 3.54, 61
Resurrection proved and described by JESUS, 3.80 All relations of kindred or affinity cease then, <i>ibid.</i>	Sinne of Scandal; and the indiscretion of Scandal, 3.54
	Scandalous persons, who? 3.58, et 54.
	No man can say that himselfe is Scandalized, 3.59
	The rules, measure and judgement of Scandal, 3.54, &c.
	Between a friend and an enemy how we are doe in the question of scandal, 3.61.
	Scandal how to be avoyded in making and execu-

# THE TABLE.

executing of lawes,	3.62	Shepherds by night watchful had a revelation of Christ,	1.47
Scorne must not be cast upon our calamitous brother,	3.69.	Spiritual shepherds must be warchful,	1.47
Secular persons tyed to a frequent communion,	3.120	Spiritual sednesse is often a mercy and a grace,	2.110. when otherwise,
Secular and spirituall objects, their difference,	3.121	Spiritual persons apt to bee tempted to pride,	1.143. & 1.128
Serapions reproose of a yong proud Monke,	3.104	Spiritual mourning,	2.92
Sepulchre of Jesus sealed,	3.91	Spiritual pleasures distinguisched from temporal,	2.51
Sermon of Christ upon the mount,	2.41	Spiritual good things how to be prayed for,	2.144.148
Sermon of Christ for his farewell,	3.82	Spiritual envy,	3.96
Severity to our selves and gentlenesse to others,a duty,	3.46	Spirit makes religion easie, 3.7. It is the earnest of Salvation, 3.37. Spirit of adoption,	ib.
Sensuality. <i>vide</i> temptations,		it is quenched by some,	ib.
Simons name changed, 2.1. his wives mother cured,	2.42	Spirit is chiefly to be offered by God,	2.34
Simeon Stylites commended for obedience,	1.76	Solemnities of Christs kingdom,	3.135
Simon Magus brought a new sin into the world,	1.148	Souldiers plunged Jesus in the brook Cedron, 3.130. they pierced his side, 3.90	
Sins of infirmitie. <i>vide</i> infirmity,		they mock and beat him, 3.88. & 3.86.	
Sins small in themselves are made great when they come by designe, 1.68. when they are acted by deliberation. <i>ibid.</i> when they are often repeated, and not interrupted by repentance. <i>ibid.</i> when they are affected,	1.69	they cover his face at his attachment, 3.84.	
Sinne pleasant at first, bitter in the end, 2.9 it carries a whippe with it, 2.25. they are forgiven when the punishment is remitted, 2.43. after pardon they may return in guilt, 2.77. it is more troublesome then vertue is, 3.10. not cared for unless it be difficult, 3.12. it shortens our lives naturally, 3.21. it made Jesus weepe, 3.95. to be accounted to be as great blemishes to us as we account them to others,	3.102	they fall to the ground at the glory of his person,	<i>ibid.</i>
Sinners prayers not heard, in what sense?	2.148	Suns eclipse at the Passion, miraculous, 3.89	
Sinners in need are to be relieved,	2.138	Stones of the Temple of what bigness, 3.80	
Sinners are fools,	3.27	Star at Christs birth moved irregularly, 1.	
State of sin totally opposed to the mercies of the covenant,	2.66	44	
Sin against the holy Ghost, what it is?	2.64	Swine kept by the Jews, and why?	2.43
Simplicity of spirit a Christian duty,	2.7	Statue of braffe erected by the woman cured of her bloody issue,	2.43
Shame of lust more violent to nature, then the severities of continence,	3.8	Suceesse of our endeavours depends on God,	2.55
The good Shepherd,	3.48	Sudden joyes are dangerous,	2.57
		Schism to be avoided in the occasions,	2.53
		Swearing in common talk a great crime,	2.
		117	
		Swearing by creatures forbidden,	<i>ibid.</i>
		Suits at law with what cautions permitted,	
		2.134	
		Syrophanician importunate with Jesus for her daughter,	3.42
		Solomons porch a fragment of the first Temple,	3.50
		Sweat of Christ in the agony, as great as drops of blood,	3.83. & 3.127
		T.	
		Table with nails fastned to Christs garment when he bore the croffe,	3.158
		Teachers of others should be exemplary, 1.	
		52.115. They	

# T H E T A B L E.

They should learne first of their superiors,		3.91.	she caused ministers to take her sons
I.111. not to make too much hast into		3.90.	body from the Crosse,
the employmēt,	1.115	3.99.	full of sorrow at the passion,
Teresa's Jesu her vow,	2.1c9	3.5	she was saluted blessed by a Caphernaite,
Temporall privileges inferiour to spiritual,	3.5	Vice a great spender,	
Temporall good things how to be prayed	2,144.148	3.15.	it differs from
for,		Virtue sometimes but in one nice degree,	
Temptation not alwayes a signe of immor-		1.69	
tification,	1.133.	A Virgin shut her self up twelve years in a	
entred into,	1.133.158.	sepulchre to eure her temptation,	
argument of Gods disfavour.	1.140. 3,	1.162	
97. it is every mans lot.	1.149.	Vitiuous persons not to be admitted to the	
alwayes to be removied by prayer,	1.146.	Sacrament,	
the severall manners of temptation.	1.146.	3.115	
&c. their remedyes. <i>ibid.</i> to be prayed		Vnitive way of religion to bee practised	
against,	12.147	with caution,	
Temple of Jerusalem how manyhigh Priests		1.91	
it had in succession,	3.17	Vowes are a good instance of importunity	
Transmigration of soules maintained by the		in prayer,	
Pharisees,	3.43	2.153. to be made with much	
Tribute to be payed,	3.79	caution and prudence,	
Traytor discovered by a Sop,	3.82	<i>ibid.</i>	
Trinity meeting at the baptisme of our		Vncleannessesse of body and spirit forbidden	
blessed Lord by some manners of exteri-		to Christians,	
our communication,	1.135	2.125	
Triumphant riding of Jesus,	3.95	W.	
Theife upon the croffe pardoned, and in		Waterpots among the Jews at feasts, and	
what sense,	2.62.	why,	
an excellent penitent,	3.88	2.3	
<i>Themistocles</i> appeased king <i>Admetus</i> by offer-		Way to heaven narrow, in what sense,	
ing his son to his fight,	3.112	3.11	
<i>Thomas</i> infidelity,	3.167	Washing the feet a hospitable civility to	
Tongue-murder,	2.124	strangers,	
V.		3.81	
Vaine repetitions in prayer to be avoyded,	2.153	Wandring thoughts in prayer to be praide	
Value of the silver pieces <i>Judas</i> had,	3.81	against,	
Value of Jesus in this world was alwayes at		2.150	
a low rate,	1.80	Washing the Disciples feet,	
Vespasian upon the propheccies concerning		3.81	
the Messias flattered himselfe into hopes		Watchfulnesse designed in the parable of	
of the Empire,	1.41	ten Virgins,	
Vinegar and gall offered to Jesus,	1.89	3.80	
Virginity perferred before marriage,	3.51	Want cannot be where God undertakes the	
Vertue is honourable,	3.16.	provison,	
productive of content,	3.13.	1.113	
The holy Virgin encouraged <i>Joseph</i> of Ari-		Wenceslaus King of Bohemia lead his servant	
mathea to a publick confession of Jesus,	1.103	by a vigorous example,	
		1.7	
		Widows two mites accepted,	
		3.80	
		Widowhood harder to preserve continence	
		then virginity,	
		1.126	
		Wife mens expectation lessened at the sight	
		of the Babe, lying in a stable,	
		1.44. but	
		not offended, <i>ib.</i> they publickly confesse	
		him,	
		1.52	
		Wildernesse chosen by Christ, he was not	
		involuntarily driven by the evil spirit,	
		1.	
		135	
		Works of religion upon our death-bed af-	
		ter a pious life are of great concernment,	
		3.150	
		Women must be lovers of privacy,	
		1.22. in-	
		strumental to conversion of men,	
		2.48. Of	
		Herefie, <i>ibid.</i> not to be conversed withall	
		mo freely by spiritual persons,	
		2.49. they	
		contracted	

# THE TABLE.

contracted religious friendships with A-		Y.
postles and BB. <i>ibid.</i> cautions concerning		2.7
conversation with women, <i>ib.</i> they min-		
istered to Christ, 3.6. go early to the Se-		
pulchre,	3.166	
Will for the deed accepted, how to be un-		
derstood,	2.81	
Will of God is to be chosen before our		
own,	2.143. 149	
World to be refused when the Devil offers		
it,	1.144	
Wine mixt with myrrhe offered to Jesus, 3.	88	
		Z.
Yoke of Christianity easie,		3.18
Yoke of Moses, and the yoke of sin broken		
by Christ,		2.8
		ibid.
Zeal of <i>Elias</i> not imitable by us,		3.77
Zeal of prayer of great efficacy, 2.151. it		
discomposed <i>Moses</i> and <i>Elijah</i> ,		1.123
Zacheus his repentance,		
Zebedees sons petition,		ibid.
Zechariy slain by <i>Herod</i> , and why ? 1.98. his		
blood left a tincture in the pavement for		
a long while after,		ibid.

---

F I N I S.

---





**University of Toronto  
Library**

**DO NOT  
REMOVE  
THE  
CARD  
FROM  
THIS  
POCKET**

Taylor, Jeremy, Bp.  
The Great Exemplar. 1649 ed.

RT  
T

---

Acme Library Card Pocket  
**LOWE-MARTIN CO. LIMITED**

UTL AT DOWNSVIEW



D RANGE BAY SHLF POS ITEM C

39 13

14

13

03

001

4